

# **The Journals**

**of**

# **George Whitefield**

**The Journals**  
of  
**George Whitefield**  
as originally published and unedited.

**Quinta Press**

Quinta Press, Meadow View, Weston Rhyn, Oswestry, Shropshire, England,  
SY10 7RN

The format of this book is copyright  
© 2009 Quinta Press

The text was taken from copies of George Whitefield's First Account, Further Account, First Journal, Second Journal, Third Journal, Fourth Journal, Fifth Journal and Seventh Journal found at Eighteenth Century Collections Online (ECCO) which are taken from the British Library copies. The text of the Sixth Journal (which is not on ECCO) is taken from a copy held in the Bodleian Library.

Text in red indicates that which was omitted from William Wales's 1905 edition (reprinted by the Banner of Truth in 1960).

Line breaks are the same as in the original.

This draft edition has not yet been proof-read.

Quinta Press has published the Works of George Whitefield on CDROM and is working on a complete printed edition.

SHORT ACCOUNT

3

A SHORT

**ACCOUNT**

OF

***GOD's Dealings***

With the REVEREND

**Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.**

A SHORT  
**ACCOUNT**  
 OF

*GOD's Dealings*  
 With the REVEREND

**Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD, A.B.**

LATE OF *PEMBROKE-COLLEGE, OXFORD*

FROM

HIS Infancy, TO THE TIME OF HIS ENTERING  
 INTO Holy Orders

Written by HIMSELF, on board the *Elizabeth*,  
 Captain *Stephenson*, bound from *London* to  
*Philadelphia*, and sent over by HIM to be  
 published for the Benefit of the *Orphan-house*  
 in *Georgia*.

*Thou, O God, hast taught me from my Youth up until*  
*now: therefore will I tell of thy wondrous Works.*  
 Psalm lxxi. 15.

**LONDON:**

Printed by W. STRAHAN, and sold by JAMES  
 HUTTON, at the *Bible and Sun*, without  
*Temple-Bar*, for the Benefit of the *Orphan-*  
*house* in *Georgia*. 1740.

A SHORT  
**ACCOUNT OF**  
***GOD'S Dealings***  
 With the REVEREND

**Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.**

*The* INTRODUCTION

ALTHOUGH the following Account of what GOD has done for my Soul, will undoubtedly be differently judg'd of by different People; yet, since I believe a single Eye to GOD's Glory moves me to write, and I find myself much press'd in Spirit to publish it at this Time, I am not in the least solicitous about the Reception it will meet with in the World.

THE

6

THE Benefit I have received from reading the Lives of others, the Examples we have in Scripture of the sacred Authors composing their own Histories, and more especially the Assistance I have had from the Holy Spirit, in bringing many Things to my Remembrance, which otherwise I would have forgotten, seem'd to me Reasons sufficient to justify my Conduct in the Sight of GOD and good Men.

FURTHER, as GOD has been pleas'd of late to call me to a publick Work, I thought his Children would be glad to know how I

was trained up for it.—And tho' some may think this had been as well deferred till after my Death, or written by some other Person, yet I thought it might be more beneficial, and be better credited, if wrote with my own Hand, and published whilst I was yet alive.

IN the Accounts of good Men which I have read, I have observed that the Writers of them have been partial. They have given us the bright, but not the dark Side of their Character. This, I think, proceeded from a Kind of pious Fraud, lest mentioning Persons Faults should encourage others in Sin.—It cannot, I am sure, proceed from the Wisdom which cometh from above.—

The

7

The sacred Writers give an Account of their Failings as well as their Virtues. *Peter* is not ashamed to confess that with Oaths and Curses he thrice denied his Master; nor do the Evangelists make any Scruple of telling us, that out of *Mary Magdalene* *Jesus Christ* cast seven Devils.

I have therefore endeavoured to follow their good Example.—I have simply told what I was by Nature, as well as what I am by Grace.—I am not over cautious as to any supposed Consequences, since none can be hurt by these but such as hold the Truth in Unrighteousness.—*To the Pure all Things will be pure.*

As I have often wished, when in my best Frames, that the first Years of my Life might be put down as a Blank, and had no more in Remembrance, so I could almost wish now to pass them over in Silence.—But as they will, in some Degree, illustrate GOD's Dealings with me in my riper Years,

I shall, as I am able, give the following  
brief Account of them.

---

8

## SECT. I.

*From my Infancy, till my being for a  
some Time at the University.*

I Was born in Gloucester, in the Month of  
December, 1714. My Father and Mother  
kept the Bell-Inn. The former died  
when I was two Years old; the latter is now  
alive, and has often told me how she endured  
fourteen Weeks Sickness after she brought  
me into the World; but was used to say,  
even when I was an Infant, that she expected  
more Comfort from me than any other of  
her Children.—This, with the Circumstance  
of my being born in an Inn, has been often  
of Service to me in exciting my Endeavours  
to make good my Mother's Expectations,  
and so follow the Example of my dear Sa-  
viour, who was born in a Manger belonging  
to an Inn.

MY very Infant Years must necessarily not  
be mentioned; yet I can remember such ear-  
ly stirrings of Corruption in my Heart, as  
abundantly convinces me that I was conceived  
and born in Sin;—that in me dwelleth no

good

---

9

good Thing by Nature, and that if GOD  
had not freely prevented me by his Grace,  
I must have been for ever banished from his  
divine Presence.

I can truly say I was froward from my  
Mother's Womb.—I was so brutish as to



hate Instruction, and used purposely to shun all Opportunities of receiving it.—I can date some very early Acts of Uncleanness.—I soon gave pregnant Proofs of an impudent Temper.—Lying, filthy Talking, and foolish Jest ing I was much addicted to, even when ve ry young.—Sometimes I used to curse, if not swear.—Stealing from my Mother I thought no Theft at all, and used to make no Scruple of taking Money out of her Poc ket before she was up.—I have frequently betrayed my Trust, and have more than once spent Money I took in the House, in buying Fruits, Tarts, &c. to satisfy my sen sual Appetite.—Numbers of Sabbaths have I broken, and generally used to behave my self very irreverently in GOD's Sanctuary.—Much Money have I spent in Plays, and in the common Entertainments of the Age.—Cards, and reading Romances, were my Heart's Delight.—Often have I joined with others in playing roguish Tricks, but was

B

gene

10

generally. if not always, *happily detected*.—For this I have often since, and do now bless and praise GOD.

It would be endless to recount the Sins and Offences of my younger Days. They are more in Number than the Hairs of my Head.—My Heart would fail me at the Re membrance of them, was I not assured that my Redeemer liveth, ever to make Interces sion for me.—However the young Man in the Gospel might boast how he had kept the Commandments from his Youth, with Shame and Confusion of Face I confess that I have broken them all from my Youth.—Whatever foreseen Fitness for Salvation others

may talk of and glory in, I disclaim any such Thing; if I trace myself from my Cradle to my Manhood, I can see nothing in me but a Fitness to be damned.—I speak the Truth in *Christ*, I lie not. If the Almighty had not prevented me by his Grace, and wrought most powerfully upon my Soul, quickening me by his free Spirit when dead in Trespasses and Sins, I had now either been sitting in Darkness, and in the Shadow of Death, or condemned, as the due Reward of my Crimes, to be for ever lifting up my Eyes in Torments.

BUT

11

BUT such was the free Grace of GOD to me, that tho' Corruption worked so strongly in my Soul, and produced such early and bitter Fruits, yet I can recollect very early Movings of the blessed Spirit upon my Heart, sufficient to satisfy me that GOD loved me with an everlasting Love, and separated me even from my Mother's Womb, for the Work to which he afterwards was pleased to call me.

I had some early Convictions of Sin, and once I remember, when some Persons (as they frequently did) made it their Business to teeze me, I immediately retired to my Room, and kneeling down, with many Tears, prayed over that Psalm wherein *David* so often repeats these Words, *But in the Name of the Lord will I destroy them.* I was always fond of being a Clergyman, used frequently to imitate the Ministers reading Prayers, &c. Part of the Money I used to steal from my Parent I gave to the Poor, and some Books I privately took from others,

(for which I have since restored four-fold) I remember were Books of Devotion.

MY Mother was very careful of my Education, and always kept me in my tender Years (for which I can never sufficiently

B 2

thank

12

thank her) from intermeddling in the least with the publick Business.

ABOUT the tenth Year of my Age, it pleased GOD to permit my Mother to marry a second Time. It proved what the World would call an unhappy Match as for Temporal, but GOD over-ruled it for good.—It set my Brethren upon thinking more than otherwise they would have done, and made an uncommon Impression upon my own Heart in particular.

WHEN I was about twelve, I was placed at a school called *St. Mary de Crypt*, in *Gloucester*,—the last Grammar School I ever went to. Having a good Elocution and Memory, I was remarked for making Speeches before the Corporation at their annual Visitation. But I cannot say I felt any Drawings of GOD upon my Soul for a Year or two, saving that I laid out some of the Money that was given me on one of those forementioned Occasions, in buying *Ken's Manual* for *Winchester* Scholars, a Book that had much affected me when my Brother used to read it in my Mother's Troubles, and which, for some Time after I bought it, was of great Benefit to my Soul.

DURING

13

DURING the Time of my being at School, I was very fond of reading Plays, and have kept from School for Days together

## SHORT ACCOUNT

II

to prepare myself for acting them. My Master seeing how mine and my Schoolfellows Vein run, composed something of this Kind for us himself, and caused me to dress myself in Girls Cloaths (which I had often done) to act a Part before the Corporation. The Remembrance of this has often covered me with Confusion of Face, and I hope will do so, even to the End of my Life.

AND I cannot but here observe, with much Concern of Mind, how this Way of training up Youth has a natural Tendency to debauch the Mind, to raise ill Passions, and to stuff the Memory with Things as contrary to the Gospel of *Jesus Christ*, as Light to Darkness, Heaven to Hell. However, tho' the first Thing I had to repent of was my Education in general, yet I must always acknowledge my particular Thanks are due to my Master, for the great Pains he took with me and his other Scholars, in teaching us to speak and write correctly.

BEFORE I was fifteen, having, as I thought, made a sufficient Progress in the Classicks, and, at the Bottom, longing to be

set

14

set at Liberty from the Confinement of a School, I one Day told my Mother, "Since her Circumstances would not permit her to give me an University Education, more Learning I thought would spoil me for a Tradesman; and therefore I judged it best not to learn *Latin* any longer." She at first refused to consent, but my Corruptions soon got the better of her good Nature. Here upon for some Time I went to learn to write only. But my Mother's Circumstances being much on the Decline, and being tractable

that Way, I from time to time began to assist her occasionally in the publick House, till at length I put on my blue Apron and my Snuffers, washed Mops, cleaned Rooms, and, in one Word, became professed and common Drawer for nigh a Year and a Half.

BUT he who was with *David* when he was following the Sheep big with young, was with me even here. For notwithstanding I was thus employed in a common Inn, and had sometimes the Care of the whole House upon my Hands, yet I composed *two or three Sermons, and dedicated one of them* in particular to my elder Brother. One Time I remember I was much pressed to Self-exa-

mination,

15

mination, and found myself very unwilling to look into my Heart.—Frequently I read the Bible when sitting up at Night. Seeing the Boys go by to School has often cut me to the Heart.—And a dear Youth (now with GOD) would often come intreating me, when serving at the Bar, to go to *Oxford*. My general Answer was, I wish I could.

AFTER I had continued about a Year in this servile Employment, my Mother was obliged to leave the Inn. My Brother, who had been bred up for the Business, married; whereupon all was made over to him; and, I, being accustomed to the House, it was agreed that I should continue there as an Assistant. But GOD's Thoughts were not as our Thoughts.

BY his good Providence it happened that my Sister-in-law and I could by no Means agree; and at length the Resentment grew to such an Height, that my proud Heart would

scarce suffer me to speak to her for three Weeks together. But notwithstanding I was much to blame, yet I used to retire and weep before the Lord, as *Hagar* when flying from her Mistress *Sarah*, little thinking that GOD by this Means was forcing me out of the publick Business, and calling me from

drawing

16

drawing Wine for Drunkards, to draw Water out of the Wells of Salvation for the Refreshment of his spiritual Israel.

AFTER continuing for a long while under this Burden of Mind, I at length resolved (thinking my Absence would make all Things easy) to go away. Accordingly, by the Advice of my Brother, and Consent of my Mother, I went to see my elder Brother then settled at *Bristol*.

HERE GOD was pleased to give me great Foretastes of his Love, and fill me with such unspeakable Raptures, particularly once in *St. John's Church*, that I was carried out beyond myself.—I felt great Hungrings and Thirstings after the blessed Sacrament, and wrote many Letters to my Mother, telling her I would never go into the publick Employment again. *Thomas a Kempis* was my great Delight, and I was always impatient till the Bell rang to call me to tread the Courts of the Lord's House. But in the midst of these Illuminations something surely whispered, *This will not last*.

AND indeed so it happened. For (Oh that I could write it in Tears of Blood!) When I left *Bristol* (as I did in about two Months) and returned to *Gloucester*, I changed my

Devotion

17

Devotion with my Place. Alas! all my Fervour went off.—I had no Inclination to go to Church, or draw nigh unto GOD.—In short, my Heart (tho' I had so lately tasted of his Love) was far from him.

HOWEVER, I had so much Religion left, as to persist in my Resolution not to live in the Inn; and therefore my Mother gave me Leave, tho' she had but a little Income, to have a Bed upon the Ground, and live at her House, till Providence should point out a Place for me.

HAVING now, as I thought, nothing to do, it was a proper Season for *Satan* to tempt me.—Much of my Time I spent in reading Plays, and in sauntering from Place to Place. I was careful to adorn my Body, but took little Pains to deck and beautify my Soul.—Evil Communications with my old School-fellows soon corrupted my good Manners.—By seeing their evil Practices, the Sense of the Divine Presence I had vouchsafed unto me insensibly wore off my Mind, and I at length fell into an abominable secret Sin, the dismal Effects of which I have felt, and groaned under ever since.

BUT GOD, whose Gifts and Callings are without Repentance, would let nothing pluck

C

me

18

me out of his Hands, tho' I was continually doing Despite to the Spirit of Grace.—He saw me with Pity and Compassion, when lying in my Blood.—He passed by me, He said unto me, *Live*, and even gave me some Foresight of his providing for me.

ONE Morning, as I was reading a Play to my Sister, said I, "Sister, GOD intends

“something for me which we know not of. As I have been diligent in Business, I believe many would gladly have me for an Apprentice, but every Way seems to be barred up, so that I think GOD will provide for me some Way or other that we cannot apprehend.”

HOW I came to say these Words I know not.—GOD afterwards shewed me they came from him.—Having thus lived with my Mother for some considerable Time, a young Student, who was once my Schoolfellow, and then a Servitor of *Pembroke-College, Oxford*, came to pay my Mother a Visit. Amongst other Conversation, he told her how he had discharged all College Expenses that Quarter, and received a Penny. Upon that my Mother immediately cried out, “This will do for my Son.”—Then turning to me, she said, “Will you go to *Oxford, George?*” I

replied,

19

replied, *With all my Heart.* Whereupon, having the same Friends that this young Student had, my Mother, without Delay, waited on them. They promised their Interest to get me a Servitor’s Place in the same College. She then applied to my old Master, who much approved of my coming to School again.

IN about a Week I went and re-entered myself, and being grown much in Stature, my Master addressed me thus; *I see, George, you are advanced in Stature, but your better Part must needs have gone backwards.* This made me blush. He set me something to translate into *Latin*; and tho’ I had made no application to my Classicks for so long a Time, yet I had but one inconsiderable Fault



in my Exercises. This, I believe, somewhat surprized my Master then, and has afforded me Matter of Thanks and Praise ever since.

BEING resettled at School, I spared no Pains to go forward in my Book. GOD was pleased to give me his Blessing, and I learned much faster than I did before. But all this while I continued in secret Sin; and at length got acquainted with such a Set of debauched, abandoned, atheistical Youths, that if GOD, by his free, unmerited, and especial Grace,

had

20

had not delivered me out of their Hands, I should long since have sat in the Scorner's Chair, and made a Mock at Sin.—By keeping Company with them, my Thoughts of Religion grew more and more like theirs.—I went to publick Service only to make Sport and walk about.—I took Pleasure in their lewd Conversation.—I began to reason as they did, and to ask why GOD had given me Passions, and not permitted me to gratify them? Not considering that GOD did not originally give us these *corrupt* Passions, and that he had promised Help to withstand them, if we would ask it of him.—In short, I soon made a great Proficiency in the School of the Devil.—I affected to look rakish, and was in a fair Way of being as infamous as the worst of them.

BUT (Oh stupendous Love!) GOD even here stopped me, when running on in a full Career to Hell.—For, just as I was upon the Brink of Ruin, he gave me such a Distaste of their Principles and Practices, that I discovered them to my Master, who soon put a Stop to their Proceedings.

BEING thus delivered out of the Snare of the Devil, I began to be more and more serious, and felt GOD at different Times work

ing

21

ing powerfully and convincingly upon my Soul. One Day in particular, as I was coming down Stairs, and overheard my Friends speaking well of me, GOD so deeply convicted me of Hypocrisy, that tho' I had formed frequent but ineffectual Resolutions before, yet I had then Power given me over my secret and darling Sin. Notwithstanding, some Time after being overtaken in Liquor (as I have been twice or thrice in my Lifetime) *Satan* gained his usual Advantage over me again.—An experimental Proof to my poor Soul, how that wicked one makes use of Men as Machines, working them up to just what he pleases, when by Intemperance they have chased away the Spirit of GOD from them!

BEING now near the seventeenth Year of my Age, I was resolved to prepare myself for the holy Sacrament, which I received on *Christmas-day*. I began now to be more and more watchful over my Thoughts, Words, and Actions. I kept the following *Lent*, fasting *Wednesday* and *Friday* Thirty six Hours together.—My Evenings, when I had done waiting upon my Mother, were generally spent in Acts of Devotion, reading *Drelin court* upon Death, and other practical Books,

and

22

and I constantly went to publick Worship twice a Day. Being now upper Boy, by GOD's Help I made some Reformation amongst my Schoolfellows. I was very dili

gent in reading and learning the Classics, and in studying my *Greek* Testament, but was not yet convinced of the absolute Unlawfulness of playing at Cards, and of reading and seeing Plays, tho' I began to have some Scruples about it.

NEAR this Time I dreamed that I was to see GOD on Mount *Sinai*, but was afraid to meet him.—This made a great Impression upon me: And a Gentlewoman to whom I told it, said, *George, this is a Call from GOD.*

STILL I grew more serious after this Dream; but yet Hypocrisy crept into every Action.—As once I affected to look more rakish, I now strove to appear more grave than I really was—However, an uncommon Concern and Alteration was visible in my Behaviour, and I often used to find fault with the Lightness of others.

ONE Night, as I was going on an Errand for my Mother, an unaccountable, but very strong Impression was made upon my Heart that I should preach quickly. When I came home, I innocently told my Mother what

had

23

had befallen me; but she (like *Joseph's* Parents, when he told them his Dream) turned short upon me, crying out, *What does the Boy mean? Prithee hold thy Tongue;* or something to that Purpose. GOD has since shewn her from whom that Impression came.

FOR a Twelvemonth, I went on in a Round of Duties, receiving the Sacrament monthly, fasting frequently, attending constantly on publick Worship, and praying often more than twice a Day in private.—One of my Brothers used to tell me, He feared this would not hold long, and that I should for

get all when I came to *Oxford*. This Caution did me much Service, for it set me upon praying for Perseverance: And, under GOD, the Preparation I made in the Country was a Preservative against the manifold Temptations which beset me at my first coming to that Seat of Learning.

BEING now near eighteen Years old, it was judged proper for me to go to the University. GOD had sweetly prepared my Way. The Friends before applied to, recommended me to the Master of *Pembroke-College*. Another Friend took up ten Pounds upon Bond (which I have since repaid) to defray the first Expence of entring;—and the

Master,

24

Master, contrary to all Expectations, admitted me Servitor immediately.

SOON after my Admission I went and resided, and found my having been used to a Publick-house was now of Service to me. For many of the Servitors being sick at my first coming up, by my diligent and ready Attendance, I ingratiated myself into the Gentlemen's Favour so far, that many, who had it in their Power, chose me to be their Servitor.

THIS much lessened my Expence; and indeed, GOD was so gracious, that with the Profits of my Place, and some little Presents made me by my kind Tutor, for almost the first three Years I did not put all my Relations together to above 24 *L.* Expence. And it has often grieved my Soul to see so many young Students spending their Substance in extravagant living, and thereby in tirely unfitting themselves for the Prosecution of their Studies.

I had not been long at the University, before I found the Benefit of the Foundation I had laid in the Country for a holy Life. I was quickly sol<sup>l</sup>icited to joyn in their Excess of Riot with several who lay in the same Room. GOD, in answer to Prayers

before

25

before put up, gave me Grace to withstand them; and once in particular, it being cold, my Limbs were so benum<sup>m</sup>ed by sitting alone in my Study, because I would not go out amongst them, that I could scarce sleep all Night. But I soon found the Benefit of not yielding: For when they perceived they could not prevail, they let me alone as a singular odd Fellow.

ALL this while I was not fully satisfied of the Sin of playing at Cards and reading Plays; till GOD upon a Fast-day was pleased to convince me. For, taking a Play, to read a Passage out of it to a Friend, GOD struck my Heart with such Power, that I was obliged to lay it down again; and, blessed be his Name, I have not read any such Book since.

BEFORE I went to the University, I met with Mr. *Law's Serious Call to a devout Life*, but had not then Money to purchase it. Soon after my coming up to the University, seeing a small Edition of it in a Friend's Hand, I soon procured it. GOD worked powerfully upon my Soul, as he has since upon many others, by that and his other excellent Treatise upon *Christian Perfection*.

D

I now

26

I now began to pray and sing Psalms thrice every Day besides Morning and Evening,

and to fast every *Friday*, and to receive the Sacrament at a Parish-church near our College, and at the Castle where the despised Methodists used to receive once a Month.

THE young Men, so called, were then much talked of at *Oxford*. I had heard of, and loved them before I came to the University; and so strenuously defended them when I heard them reviled by the Students, that they began to think that I also in Time should be one of them.

FOR above a Twelvemonth my Soul longed to be acquainted with some of them, and I was strongly pressed to follow their good Example, when I saw them go through a ridiculing Crowd to receive the Holy Eucharist at *St. Mary's*.—At length, GOD was pleased to open a Door.—It happened that a poor Woman in one of the Workhouses had attempted to cut her Throat, but was happily prevented. Upon hearing of this, and knowing that both the Mr. *Wesleys* were ready to every good Work, I sent a poor aged Aple-woman of our College to inform Mr. *Charles Wesley* of it, charging her not to discover who sent her. She went; but,

con-

27

contrary to my Orders, told my Name. He having heard of my coming to the Castle and a Parish-church Sacrament, and having met me frequently walking by myself, followed the Woman when she was gone away, and sent an Invitation to me by her, to come to breakfast with him the next Morning.

I thankfully embraced the Opportunity; and, blessed be GOD, it was one of the most profitable Visits I ever made in my Life.—My Soul, at that Time, was a-thirst for

some spiritual Friends to lift up my Hands when they hung down, and to strengthen my feeble Knees.—He soon discovered it, and, like a wise Winner of Souls, made all his Discourses tend that Way.—And when he had put into my Hands Professor *Francke's* Treatise against the Fear of Man, and a Book, entitled, *The Country Parson's Advice to his Parishioners* (the last of which was wonder fully blessed to my Soul) I took my Leave.

IN a short Time he let me have another Book, intituled, *The Life of God in the Soul of Man*; and, tho' I had fasted, watched and prayed, and received the Sacrament so long, yet I never knew what true Religion was, till GOD sent me that excellent Treatise by

D 2

the

28

the Hands of my never to be forgotten Friend.

AT my first reading it, I wondered what the Author meant by saying, "That some falsely placed Religion in going to Church, doing hurt to no one, being constant in the Duties of the Closet, and now and then reaching out their Hands to give Alms to their poor Neighbours,"—Alas! thought I, "If this be not Religion, what is?" GOD soon shewed me. For in reading a few Lines further that "true Religion was an Union "of the Soul with GOD, and *Christ* formed "within us;" a Ray of divine Light was instantaneously darted in upon my Soul, and from that Moment, but not till then, did I know that I must be a new Creature.

UPON this (like the Woman of *Samaria*, when *Christ* revealed himself to her at the Well) I had no Rest in my Soul till I wrote Letters to my Relations, telling them there

was such a Thing as the New-birth.—I imagined they would have gladly received it.—But, alas! my Words seemed to them as idle Tales!—They thought that I was going beside myself, and by their Letters confirmed me in the Resolutions I had taken not to go down into the Country, but continue

where

29

where I was, lest that by any Means the good Work which GOD had begun in my Soul, might be made of none Effect.

FROM Time to Time Mr. *Wesley* permitted me to come unto him, and instructed me as I was able to bear it.—By Degrees he introduced me to the rest of his christian Brethren.—They built me up daily in the Knowledge and Fear of GOD, and taught me to endure Hardness like a good Soldier of *Jesus Christ*.

I now began, like them, to live by Rule, and to pick up the very Fragments of my Time, that not a Moment of it might be lost. Whether I ate or drank, or whatsoever I did, I endeavoured to do all to the Glory of GOD. Like them, having no weekly Sacrament (altho' the Rubric required it) at our own College, I received every *Sunday* at *Christ Church*. I joyned with them in keeping the Stations by Fasting *Wednesdays* and *Fridays*, and left no Means unused, which I thought would lead me nearer to *Jesus Christ*.

REGULAR Retirement, Morning and Evening, at first I found some Difficulty in submitting to; but it soon grew profitable and delightful. As I grew ripe for such Exercises, I was from Time to Time engaged

to



30

to visit the Sick and the Prisoners, and to read to poor People, till I made it a Custom, as most of us did, to spend an Hour every Day in doing Acts of Charity.

THE Course of my Studies I soon intirely changed; whereas before, I was busied in studying the Dry Sciences, and Books that went no farther than the Surface, I now resolved to read only such as entered into the Heart of Religion, and which led me directly into an experimental Knowledge of *Jesus Christ*, and him crucified.—The lively Oracles of GOD were my Soul's Delight.—The Book of the divine Laws was seldom out of my Hands;—I meditated therein Day and Night, and ever since that GOD has made my Way signally prosperous, and given me abundant Success.

GOD enabled me to do much Good to many, as well as to receive much from the despised Methodists, and made me instrumental in converting one who is lately come into the Church, and, I trust, will prove a burning and a shining Light.

SEVERAL short Fits of Illness was GOD pleased to visit and to try me with after my first Acquaintance with Mr. *Wesley*. My new Convert was a Help meet for me in those

and

31

and in all other Circumstances; and in Company with him, and several other christian Friends, did I spend many sweet and delightful Hours.—Never did Persons, I believe, strive more earnestly to enter in at the strait Gate.—They kept their Bodies under even to an Extreme.—They were dead to the World, and willing to be accounted as the Dung and

Offscouring of all Things, so that they might win *Christ*.—Their Hearts glowed with the Love of GOD, and they never prospered so much in the inward Man, as when they had all Manner of Evil spoken against them falsely without.

MANY came amongst them for a while, who, in Time of Temptation, fell away.—The Displeasure of a Tutor or Head of a College, the changing of a Gown from a lower to a higher Degree; above all, a Thirst for the Praise of Men, more than that which cometh from GOD, and a servile Fear of Contempt, caused Numbers that had set their Hand to the Plow, shamefully to look back.—The World (and not themselves) gave them the Title of Methodists, I suppose, from their Custom of regulating their Time, and planning the Business of the Day every Morning.—Mr. *John* and *Charles Wes*

*leys,*

32

*leys,* were two of the first that thus openly dared to confess *Christ*; and they, under GOD, were the spiritual Fathers of most of them.—They had the Pleasure of seeing the Work of the Lord prosper in their Hands before they went to *Georgia*.—Since their Return, the small Grain of Mustard-seed has sprung up apace.—It has taken deep Root.—It is growing into a great Tree.—Ere long I trust it will fill the Land, and Numbers of Souls will come from the East and from the West, from the North and from the South, and lodge under the Branches of it.

But to return. Whilst I was thus comforted on every Side, by daily conversing with so many christian Friends, GOD was pleased to permit *Satan* to sift me like Wheat. A

general Account of which, I shall, by the  
divine Assistance, give in the following Sec  
tion.

SECT.

## SECTION II

### *A brief and summary Account of my Temptations.*

AT my first setting out, in Compassion  
to my Weakness, I grew in Favour  
both with GOD and Man, and used to be  
much lifted up with sensible Devotion, espe  
cially at the blessed Sacrament.—But when  
Religion began to take Root in my Heart,  
and I was fully convinced my Soul must to  
tally be renewed ere it could see GOD, I was  
visited with outward and inward Trials.

THE first Thing I was called to give up  
for GOD, was what the World calls my fair  
Reputation.—I had no sooner received the Sa  
crament publicly on a Week-day at *St.*  
*Mary's*, but I was set up as a Mark for all  
the polite Students that knew me to shoot  
at.—By this they knew that I was commen  
ced Methodist; for tho' there is a Sacra  
ment at the Beginning of every Term, at which  
all, especially the Seniors, are by Statute, obli  
ged to be present; yet so dreadfully has that  
once faithful City played the Harlot, that very

E

few

few Masters, and no under Graduates (but the  
Methodists) attended upon it.

MR. *Charles Wesley* (whom I must al  
ways mention with the greatest *Deference* and  
Respect) walked with me (in order to con

firm me) from the Church even to the College.—I confess, to my Shame, I would gladly have excused him; and the next Day going to his Room, one of our Fellows passing by, I was ashamed to be seen to knock at his Door. But, blessed be GOD, this Fear of Man gradually wore off.—As I had imitated *Nicodemus* in his Cowardice, so, by the divine Assistance, I followed him in his Courage.—I confessed the Methodists more and more publicly every Day.—I walked openly with them, and chose rather to bear Contempt with those People of GOD, than to enjoy the Applause of Almost-Christians for a Season.

SOON after this I incurred the Displeasure of the Master of the College, who frequently chid, and once threatned to expel me, if ever I visited the Poor again.—Being surprized at this Treatment, and over-awed by his Authority, I spake unadvisedly with my Lips, and said, if it displeased him, I would not.—My Conscience soon pricked me for this sin

ful

35

ful Compliance.—I immediately repented, and visited the Poor the first Opportunity, and told my Companions, if ever I was called to a Stake for *Christ's* Sake, I would serve my Tongue as Archbishop *Cranmer* served his Hand, *viz.*, make that burn first.

MY Tutor, being a moderate Man, did not oppose me much, but thought, I believe, that I went a little too far. He lent me Books, gave me Money, visited me, and furnished me with a Physician when sick. In short, he behaved in all Respects like a Father; and I trust GOD will remember him for good,

in answer to the many Prayers I have put up in his Behalf.

My Relations were quickly alarmed at the Alteration of my Behaviour, conceived strong Prejudices against me, and, for some Time, counted my Life Madness.—I daily under went some Contempt at College.—Some have thrown Dirt at me; others, by Degrees, took away their Pay from me.—And two Friends, that were dear unto me, grew shy of, and forsook me, when they saw me resolved to deny myself, take up my Cross daily, and follow *Jesus Christ*.—But our Lord, by his Spirit, soon convinced me that I must know no one after the Flesh; and I soon

E 2

found

36

found that Promise literally fulfilled, “That “no one hath left Father or Mother, Bre “thren or Sisters, Houses or Lands, for “*Christ’s* Sake and the Gospel’s, but he shall “receive a hundred-fold in this Life, with “Persecution, as well as eternal Life in the “World to come.”

THESE, tho’ little, were useful Trials.—The[[y]] inured me to Contempt, lessened Self-love, and taught me to die daily.—My inward Sufferings were of a more uncommon Nature.—*Satan* seemed to have desired me in particular to sift me as Wheat.—GOD permitted him, for wise Reasons I have seen already, viz., that his future Blessings might not prove my Ruin.

FROM my first Awakenings to the divine Life, I felt a particular hungering and thirsting after the Humility of *Jesus Christ*.—Night and Day I prayed to be a Partaker of that Grace, imagining that the Habit of Humility would be instantaneously infused into

my Soul. But as *Gideon* taught the Men of *Succoth* with Thorns, so GOD (if I am yet in any Measure blessed with true Poverty of Spirit) taught it me by the Exercise of strong Temptations.

I ob

37

I observed before how I used to be favoured with sensible Devotion; those Comforts were soon withdrawn, and an horrible Fearfulness and Dread permitted to overwhelm my Soul.—One Morning in particular, rising from my Bed, I felt an unusual Impression and Weight upon my Breast, attended with inward Darkness.—I applied to my Friend Mr. *Charles Wesley*;—he advised me to keep upon my Watch, and referred me to a Chapter in *Kempis*.

IN a short Time I perceived this Load gradually encrease, till it almost weighed me down, and fully convinced me that *Satan* had as real a Possession of, and Power given over my Body, as he had once over *Job's*.—All Power of meditating, or even thinking, was taken from me.—My Memory quite failed me.—My whole Soul was barren and dry, and I could fancy myself to be like nothing so much as a Man locked up in Iron Armour.

WHENEVER I kneeled down, I felt great Heavings in my Body, and have often prayed under the Weight of them till the Sweat came through me. At this Time *Satan* used to terrify me much, and threatned to punish me if I discovered his Wiles.—It being my Duty, as Servitor, in my Turn to knock at

the

38

the Gentlemens Rooms by ten at Night, to see who were in their Rooms, I thought the

Devil would appear to me every Stair I went up.—And he so troubled me when I lay down to Rest, that for some Weeks I scarce slept above three Hours at a Time.

GOD only knows how many Nights I have lain upon my Bed, groaning under the Weight I felt, and bidding *Satan* depart from me in the Name of *Jesus*.—Whole Days and Weeks have I spent in lying prostrate on the Ground, and begging for Freedom from those proud hellish Thoughts that used to crowd in upon, and distract my Soul.—But GOD made *Satan* drive out *Satan*.—For these Thoughts and Suggestions created such a Self-Abhorrence within me, that I never ceased wrestling with GOD, till he blessed me with a Victory over them.—Self-love, Self-will, Pride and Envy, so buffeted me in their Turns, that I was resolved either to die or conquer.—I wanted to see Sin as it was, but feared, at the same Time, least the Sight of it should terrify me to Death.

WHILST my inward Man was thus exercised, my outward Man was not unemployed. I soon found what a Slave I had been to my sensual Appetite, and now resolved to get

the

the Mastery over it by the Help of *Jesus Christ*.—Accordingly, by Degrees I began to leave off eating Fruits and such like, and gave the Money I usually spent in that Way to the Poor.—Afterward I always chose the worst Sort of Food, tho' my Place furnished me with Variety.—I fasted twice a Week.—My Apparel was mean.—I thought it unbecoming a Penitent to have his Hair powdered.—I wore woollen Gloves, a patched Gown and dirty Shoes;—and tho' I was then convinced

that the Kingdom of GOD did not consist in Meats and Drinks, yet I resolutely persisted in these voluntary Acts of Self-denial, because I found them great Promoters of the spiritual Life.

FOR many Months I went on in this State, faint, yet pursuing, and travelling a long in the dark, in hope that the Star I had (before once) seen, would hereafter appear again.—During this Season I was very active; but finding Pride creeping in at the End of almost every Thought, Word and Action, and meeting with *Castaniza's Spiritual Combat*, in which he says, “That he that is “employed in mortifying his Will, was as “well employed as tho’ he were converting “*Indians*,” or Words to that Effect, *Satan*

so

40

so imposed upon my Understanding, that he persuaded me to shut myself up in my Study, till I could do good with a single Eye, lest, in endeavouring to save others, as I did now, I should, at last, by Pride and Self-complacence, lose myself.

HENCEFORWARD, he transformed himself into an Angel of Light, and worked so artfully, that I imagined the good, and not the evil Spirit suggested to me every Thing that I did.

HIS main Drift was to lead me into a State of Quietism, (He generally ploughed with God's Heifer) and when the Holy Spirit put into my Heart good Thoughts or Convictions, he always drove them to Extremes.—For Instance, having, out of Pride, put down in my Diary what I gave away, *Satan* tempted me to lay my Diary quite aside.—When *Castaniza* advised to talk but little,



*Satan* said I must not talk at all.—So that I, who used to be the most forward in exhorting my Companions, have sat whole Nights almost without speaking at all. Again, when *Castaniza* advised to endeavour after a silent Recollection and Waiting upon GOD, *Satan* told me I must leave off all Forms, and not use my Voice in Prayer at all.—The Time

would

41

would fail me to recount all the Instances of this Kind in which he had deceived me.—But when Matters came to an Extreme, GOD always showed me my Error, and, by his Spirit, pointed out a Way for me to escape.

THE Devil also sadly imposed upon me in the Matter of my College Exercises.—When ever I endeavoured to compose my Theme, I had no Power to write a Word, nor so much as tell my Christian Friends of my Inability to do it.—*Saturday* being come (which is the Day the Students give up their Compositions) it was suggested to me, that I must go down into the Hall, and confess I could not make a Theme, and so publicly suffer, as if it were, for my Master's Sake. When the Bell rung to call us, I went to open the Door to go down Stairs, but feeling something give me a violent inward Check, I entered my Study, and continued instant in Prayer, waiting the Event.—For this my Tutor fined me half a Crown. The next Week *Satan* served me in like Manner again;—but having now got more Strength, and perceiving no inward Check, I went into the Hall.—My Name being called, I stood up, and told my Tutor I could not make a Theme.—I think he fined me a second Time; but, imagining that I would

F

not

42

not willingly neglect my Exercise, he after wards called me into the Common-Room, and kindly enquired whether any Misfortune had befallen me, or what was the Reason I could not make a Theme? I burst into Tears, and assured him that it was not out of Contempt of Authority, but that I could not act otherwise. Then at length he said, he believed I could not; and when he left me, told a Friend (as he very well might) that he took me to be really mad.—This Friend hearing from my Tutor what had happened, came to me, urging the Command of Scripture, to be subject to the higher Powers. I answered, Yes; but I had a new Revelation. Lord, what is Man!

As I daily got Strength, by continued, tho' almost silent Prayer, in my Study, my Temptations grew stronger also, particularly for two or three Days before Deliverance came.—Near five or six Weeks I had now spent in my Study, except when I was obliged to go out. During this Time I was fighting with my Corruptions, and did little else besides kneeling down by my Bed-side, feeling, as it were, a heavy Pressure upon my Body, as well as an unspeakable Oppression of Mind, yet offering up my Soul to GOD, to do with

me

43

me as it pleased him. It was now suggested to me, that *Jesus Christ* was amongst the wild Beasts when he was tempted, and that I ought to follow his Example; and being willing, as I thought, to imitate *Jesus Christ*, after Supper I went into *Christ-Church* Walk, near our College, and continued in silent Prayer under one of the Trees for near

two Hours, sometimes lying flat on my Face, sometimes kneeling upon my Knees, all the while filled with Fear and Concern lest some of my Brethren should be overwhelmed with Pride.—The Night being stor my, it gave me awful Thoughts of the Day of Judgment. I continued I think till the great Bell rung for Retirement to the College, not without finding some Reluctance in the natural Man against staying so long in the Cold.

THE next Night I repeated the same Exercise at the same Place. But the Hour of Extremity being now come, GOD was pleased to make an open Shew of those Diabolical Devices by which I had been deceived.

BY this Time I had left off keeping my Diary, using my Forms, or scarce my Voice in Prayer, visiting the Prisoners, &c. No thing remained for me to leave, unless I forsook publick Worship, but my religious

F 2

Friends.—

44

Friends.—Now it was suggested that I must leave them also for *Christ's* Sake.—This was a sore Trial, but rather than not be, as I fancied, *Christ's* Disciple, I resolved to renounce them, tho' as dear to me as my own Soul.—Accordingly, the next Day being *Wednesday*, whereon we kept one of our weekly Fasts, instead of meeting with my Brethren as usual, I went out into the Fields, and prayed silently by myself.—Our Evening Meeting I neglected also, and went not to Breakfast, according to Appointment, with Mr. *Charles Wesley* the Day following.—This, with many other concurring Circumstances, made my honoured Friend, Mr. *Charles Wesley*, suspect something more than ordinary was the Matter. He came to my Room,

soon found out my Case; apprized me of my Danger if I would not take Advice, and recommended me to his Brother *John*, Fellow of *Lincoln-College*, as more experienced in the spiritual Life.—GOD gave me (Blessed be his holy Name!) a teachable Temper; I waited upon his Brother, with whom from that Time I had the Honour of growing intimate.—He advised me to resume all my Externals, tho' not to *Depend* on them in the least.—From Time to Time he gave me Di

rections

45

rections as my various and pitiable State required; And at length, by his excellent Advice and Management of me, under GOD, I was delivered from those Wiles of *Satan*.—Praise the Lord, O my Soul, and all that is within me praise his holy Name!

DURING this, and all other Seasons of Temptation, my Soul was inwardly supported with great Courage and Resolution from above.—Every Day GOD made me willing to renew the Combat, and tho' my Soul, when quite empty of GOD, was very prone to seek Satisfaction in the Creature, and sometimes I fell into Sensuality, yet I was generally enabled to wait in Silence for the Salvation of GOD, or to persist in Prayer, till some Beams of spiritual Light and Comfort were vouchsafed me from on high. *Thomas a Kempis* (since translated and published by Mr. *John Wesley*) *Castaniza's* Combat, and the *Greek Testament* (every Reading of which I endeavoured to turn into a Prayer) were of great Help and Furtherance to me. On receiving the holy Sacrament, especially before Trials, I have found Grace in a very affecting Manner, and in abundant Measure

sometimes imparted to my Soul; an irrefragable Proof to me of the miserable De

lusion

46

lusion of the Author of that work called, *The Plain Account of the Sacrament*, which sinks that holy Ordinance into a bare Memorial, who, if he obstinately refuse the Instruction of the Most High, will doubtless, without Repentance, bear his Punishment, whosoever he be.

To proceed. I had now taken up my Externals again;—and tho' *Satan* for some Weeks had been biting my Heel, GOD was pleased to shew me that I should soon bruise his Head.—A few Days after, as I was walking along, I met with a poor Woman, whose Husband was then in Bocardo, or Oxford Town-Gaol, which I constantly visited. Seeing her much discomposed, I enquired the Cause.—She told me, not being able to bear the crying of her Children, ready to perish for Hunger, and having nothing to relieve them, she had been to drown herself, but was mercifully prevented, and said she was coming to my Room to inform me of it.—I gave her some immediate Relief, and desired her to meet me at the Prison with her Husband in the Afternoon.—She came, and there GOD visited them both by his free Grace;—she was powerfully quickened from above; and when I had done reading, he

came

47

came to me like the trembling Gaoler, and grasping my Hand, cried out, "I am upon the Brink of Hell!"—From this Time forward both of them grew in Grace.—GOD, by his Providence, soon delivered him from his

Confinement.—Tho' notorious Offenders against GOD and one another before, yet now they became Helps meet for each other in the great Work of their Salvation.—They are both now living, and, I trust, will be my Joy and Crown of rejoicing in the great Day of our Lord *Jesus*.

SOON after this the holy Season of *Lent* came on, which our Friends kept very strictly, eating no Flesh during the six Weeks, except on *Saturdays* and *Sundays*. I abstained frequently on *Saturdays* also, and ate no thing on the other Days, (except on *Sunday*) but Sage-tea without Sugar, and coarse Bread.—I constantly walked out in the cold Mornings, till Part of one of my Hands was quite black.—This, with my continued Abstinence, and inward Conflicts, at length so emaciated my Body, that at Passion-week, finding I could scarce creep up Stairs, I was obliged to inform my kind Tutor of my Condition, who immediately sent for a Physician to me.

THIS

48

THIS caused no small Triumph amongst the Collegians, who began to cry out, "What is his fasting come to now?" But I rejoiced in this Reproach, knowing that tho' I had been imprudent, and lost much of my Flesh, yet I had nevertheless increased in the Spirit.

THIS Fit of Sickness continued upon me for seven Weeks, and a glorious Visitation it was.—The blessed Spirit was all this Time purifying my Soul.—All my former gross and notorious, and even my Heart-sins also, were now set home upon me, of which I wrote down some Remembrance immediately, and

confessed them before GOD Morning and Evening.—Tho' weak, I often spent two Hours in my Evening Retirements, and prayed over my *Greek Testament*, and Bishop Hall's most excellent Contemplations, every Hour that my Health would permit. About the End of the seven Weeks, and after I had been groaning under an unspeakable Pressure both of Body and Mind for above a Twelve-month; GOD was pleased to set me free in the following Manner.—One Day, perceiving an uncommon Drought and a disagreeable Clamminess in my Mouth, and using Things to allay my Thirst, but in vain, it was sug

---

gested

49

gested to me, that when *Jesus Christ* cried out, "I thirst," his Sufferings were near at an End. Upon which, I cast myself down on the Bed, crying out, I thirst! I thirst!—Soon after this, I found and felt in myself that I was delivered from the Burden that had so heavily oppressed me! The Spirit of Mourning was taken from me, and I knew what it was truly to rejoice in GOD my Saviour, and, for some Time, could not avoid singing Psalms wherever I was; but my Joy gradually became more settled, and, blessed be GOD, has abode and increased in my Soul (saving a few casual Intermissions) ever since.

THUS were the Days of my Mourning ended.—After a long Night of Desertion and Temptation, the Star, which I had seen at a Distance before, began to appear again, and the Day-star arose in my Heart.—Now did the Spirit of GOD take Possession of my Soul, and, as I humbly hope, seal me un to the Day of Redemption.

## SECT. III

*From the Time of my first leaving the  
University to go to Gloucester, till  
the Time of my Ordination.*

AS fast as I got Strength after my Sick  
ness, my Tutor, Physician, and some  
others, were still urging me to go into the  
Country, hoping thereby to divert me, as  
they thought, from a too intense Application  
to Religion.—I had, for some Time, been  
aware of their Design, and wrote Letters,  
beseeching my Mother, if she valued my  
Soul, not to lay her Commands on me to  
come down. She was pleased to leave me to  
my Choice; but finding at last it was neces  
sary for my Health, and many other provi  
dential Circumstances pointing out my Way,  
after earnest Prayer for Support, by the Ad  
vice of my Friends, I left my sweet Retire  
ment at *Oxford*, and went to *Gloucester*, the  
Place of my Nativity.

HAVING now obtained Mercy from GOD,  
and received the Spirit of Adoption in my  
Heart,

Heart, my Friends were surprized to see me  
look and behave so chearfully, after the ma  
ny Reports they had heard concerning me.  
However, I soon found myself to be as a  
Sheep sent forth amongst Wolves in Sheeps  
Clothing: For they immediately endeavour  
ed to dissuade me (as they had lately done a  
Friend that began with me) from a con  
stant Use of the Means of Grace, especially



from weekly Abstinence, and receiving the blessed Sacrament.—But GOD enabled me to resist them steadfast in the Faith, and by keeping close to him in his holy Ordinances, I was made to triumph over all.

BEING unaccustomed for some Time to live without spiritual Companions, and finding none who would joyn heartily with me, no, not one, I watched unto Prayer all the Day long, beseeching GOD to raise me some religious Associates in his own Way and Time.

“I will endeavour either to find or make a Friend,” had been my Resolution now for some Time; and therefore, after importunate Prayer one Day, I resolved to go to the House of one Mrs. W——, to whom I had formerly read Plays, Spectators, *Pope’s* *Homers*, and such like trifling Books,—hop

G 2

ing

52

ing the Alteration she would now find in my Sentiments might, under GOD, influence her Soul.—GOD was pleased to bless the Visit with the desired Effect.—She received the Word gladly.—She wanted to be taught the Way of GOD more perfectly, and soon became a Fool for *Christ’s* Sake.—Not long after, GOD made me instrumental to awaken several young Persons, who soon formed themselves into a little Society, and had quickly the Honour of being despised at *Gloucester*, as we had been before them at *Oxford*: Thus, *all* that will live godly in *Christ Jesus*, must suffer Persecution.

MY Mind being now more open and enlarged, I began to read the holy Scriptures (upon my Knees) laying aside all other Books, and praying over, if possible, every Line and

Word.—This proved Meat indeed, and Drink indeed, to my Soul.—I daily received fresh Life, Light, and Power from above.—I got more true Knowledge from reading the Book of GOD in one Month, than I could *Ever* have acquired from *All* the Writings of Men.—In one Word, I found it profitable for Re proof, for Correction, for Instruction in Righteousness, every Way sufficient to make  
the

53

the Man of GOD perfect, thoroughly furnished unto every good Word and Work.

DURING my Absence from *Oxford*, I spent three Weeks at *Bristol*, whither I went to see some Relations, but could not do them much good because of the Prejudices they had conceived against me.—However, I daily walked with GOD, and going to visit an Aunt then in an Alms-house there, GOD brought in my Way a young Woman, who was hungering and thirsting after Righteousness.—She received the Word into an honest and good Heart, and since has proved a true Follower of *Jesus Christ*.—So gracious was the Lord, even in these my very early Days, not to leave himself without Witness, in that he *thus* vouchsafed to bless my poor Endeavours in *every* Place whereto his Providence *now* sent me!

ACCORDING to his abundant Mercy he also raised me up some temporal Supplies. For some considerable Time I had followed the Example of Professor *Frank*, and when ever I wanted any worldly Assistance, pleaded the Scripture Promises for the Things of this Life, as well as that which is to come, in the Name of *Jesus Christ*.—This is still my Prac

tice, and I never yet failed of Success.—When I came from *Oxford*,—on account of my Sick-

ness,

54

ness, and other extraordinary and unavoidable Expences, I owed, I think, about twelve or thirteen Pounds; and when I went to *Bristol*, I was so poor that I was obliged to borrow Money of my kind Hostess, Mrs. H—, with whom I lodged at *Gloucester* (and whose Husband and Family I pray GOD eternally to bless) to bear my Charges on the Road. This, I bless GOD, did not dishearten me; but I continued pleading the Promises in the Name of *Christ*, and soon after my coming to *Bristol* I received an Answer.—For a Brother of mine coming from the Sea, GOD inclined him to give me four Guineas, and some other Necessaries. And when I returned to *Gloucester* (as I did after I had continued a short Time at *Bristol*) those I expected should assist me, did not; but Persons I never spoke to, and who, I thought, were my Enemies, were raised up to supply my Wants, and fulfil that Promise which I always pleaded, “Seek first the Kingdom of “GOD and his Righteousness, and all these “Things shall be added unto you.”

OH, what sweet Communion had I daily vouchsafed with GOD in Prayer after my coming again to *Gloucester*!—How often have I been carried out beyond myself when sweetly meditating in the Fields!—How assuredly have

I felt

55

I felt that *Christ* dwelt in me, and I in him, and how did I daily walk in the Comforts of the Holy Ghost, and was edified and refreshed in the Multitude of Peace! Not that I was always

upon the Mount, sometimes a Cloud would overshadow me: But the Sun of Righteousness quickly arose and dispelled it, and I knew it was *Jesus Christ* that revealed himself to my Soul.

I always observed, as my inward Strength increased, so my outward Sphere of Action increased proportionably.—In a short Time therefore, I began to read to some poor People twice or thrice a Week.—I likewise visited two other little Societies besides my own, and almost every Day, both then, and since, have found the Benefit of being tempted myself, because that alone taught me how to give proper Advice to those that came to me when tempted.

OCCASIONALLY, as Business and Opportunity permitted, I generally visited one or two sick Persons every Day; and tho' Silver and Gold I had little of my own, yet, in Imitation of my Lord's Disciples, who entertained in the Behalf of the fainting Multitude, I used to pray unto him; and he, from Time to Time, inclined several that

were

56

were rich in this World to give me Money, so that I generally had a little Stock for the Poor always in my Hand. One of the Poor whom I visited in this Manner, was called effectually by GOD as at the eleventh Hour: She was a Woman above threescore Years old, and, I really believe, died in the true Faith of *Jesus Christ*.

ABOUT this Time GOD was pleased to enlighten my Soul, and bring me into the Knowledge of his free Grace, and the Necessity of being justified in his Sight by *Faith only*; This was more extraordinary, because my Friends

at *Oxford* had rather inclined to the Mystic Divinity.—And one of them (a dear Servant of the Lord) lately confessed he did not like me so well at *Oxford*, as the rest of his Brethren, because I held Justification by Faith *only*.—And yet he observed I had most Success.—But, blessed be GOD, most of us have now been taught this Doctrine of *Christ*, and, I hope, shall be willing to die in the Defence of it. It is the good old Doctrine of the Church of *England*; it is what the holy Martyrs in Queen *Mary's* Time sealed with their Blood, and which, I pray GOD, if need be, that I and my Brethren may seal with ours.

BUR-

57

*Burkitt's* and *Henry's Expositions* were of admirable Use to lead me into *this*, and all other Gospel Truths. For many Months have I been almost always upon my Knees, to study and pray over these Books. The Holy Spirit from Time to Time has led me into the Knowledge of divine Things, and I have been directed, by watching and reading the Scripture in this Manner, even in the minutest Circumstances, as plainly as the *Jews* were, when consulting the *Urim* and *Thummim* at the High-priest's Breast!

ALLEN's *Alarm*, *Baxter's Call to the Unconverted*, and *Janeway's Life*, which I read at leisure Hours, much benefited me. I bless GOD, the Partition-wall of Bigotry and Sect-religion was soon broken down in my Heart.—For as soon as the Love of GOD was shed abroad in my Soul, I loved all of whatever Denomination, *that* loved the Lord *Jesus* in Sincerity of Heart.

DURING my Stay here, GOD enabled me to give a publick Testimony of my Repen

tance as to seeing and acting Plays.—For hearing the Strollers were coming to Town, and knowing what an egregious Offender I had been, I wrestled with GOD in Prayer to put me in a Way to manifest my Abhorrence of

H

my

58

my former Sin and Folly. In Answer to this, I was stirred up to extract Mr. *Law's* excellent Treatise, intituled *The absolute Unlawfulness of the Stage Entertainment*.—GOD gave me Favour in the Printer's Sight; and at my Request he put a little of it in the News for six Weeks successively, and GOD was pleased to give it his Blessing.

HAVING been absent for about six Months from the University, I thought it Time to think of returning thither; but before I came to a Resolution, was convinced of the contrary.

AT my first coming to *Gloucester*, being used to visit the Prisoners at *Oxford*, I prayed most earnestly that GOD would open a Door for me to visit the Prisoners here also. Quickly after, I dreamed that one of the Prisoners came to be instructed by me; and it was impressed much upon my Heart.—In the Morning I went to the Door of the County-Gaol; I knocked, but no Body came to open it.—I thought the Hour was not yet come.—I waited still upon GOD in Prayer, and in some Months after came a Letter from a Friend at *Oxford*, desiring me to go to one *Pebworth*, who had broken out of *Oxford* Gaol, and was retaken at *Gloucester*. As soon as I read

this

59

this Letter, it appeared to me that my Prayer was now answered. Immediately I

went to the Prison, assuredly gathering that the Lord called me thither.—I met with the Person, and finding him and some others willing to hear the Word of GOD, and having gained Leave of the Keeper and two Ordinaries, I constantly read to, and prayed with them every Day I was in Town.—I also begged Money for them, whereby I was enabled to release some of them, and cause Provision to be distributed weekly amongst them, as also to put such Books into their Hands as I judged most proper.—I cannot say any one of the Prisoners was effectually wrought upon; however, much Evil was prevented, many were convinced, and my own Soul was much edified and strengthened in the Love of GOD and Man.

THUS employed I continued in my own City three Months longer.—Despised indeed by Man, but highly blessed by the Grace of God.—My Understanding was enlightened, my Will broken, and my Affections more and more enlivened with a Zeal for *Christ*.—Many such, I believe, were added to our little Society as shall be saved.—Fresh Supplies came from unexpected Hands to defray my Ex

H 2

pences

60

pences at the University.—And at the End of nine Months I returned thither, to the mutual Joy and Comfort of my Friends, till I was called to enter into Holy Orders.—The particular Circumstances of which I shall relate in the following Section.

## SECT. IV

*Of my Preparation for Holy Orders.*

FROM the Time I first entered at the University, especially from the Time I knew what was true and undefiled Christianity, I entertained high Thoughts of the Importance of the Ministerial Office, and was not solicitous what Place should be prepared for me, but how I should be prepared for a Place. The Saying of the Apostle, "Not a Novice, lest being puffed up with Pride, he fall into the Condemnation of the Devil"; And that first Question of our excellent Ordination Office, "Do you trust that you are inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost to take upon you this Office and Administration?" used even to make me tremble whenever I thought of entering into

the

61

the Ministry. The Shyness that Moses and some other Prophets expressed, when GOD sent them out in a publick Capacity, I thought was sufficient to teach me not to run till I was called.—He who knoweth the Hearts of Men, is Witness that I never prayed more earnestly against any Thing than I did against entering into the Service of the Church *so soon*.—Oftentimes I have been in an Agony in Prayer, when under Convictions of my Insufficiency for so great a Work.—With strong Cryings and Tears I have often said, "Lord, I am a Youth of uncircumcised Lips; Lord, send me not into thy Vineyard yet;" And sometimes I had Reason to think GOD was angry with me for resisting his Will. However, I was resolved to pray *thus*, as long as I could. If GOD did not grant my Request in keeping me out of *it*, I knew his Grace would be



sufficient to support and strengthen me whenever he sent me into the Ministry.

To my Prayers I added my Endeavours, and wrote Letters to my Friends at *Oxford*, beseeching them to pray GOD to disappoint the Designs of my Country Friends, who were for my taking Orders as soon as possible. Their Answer was, "Pray we the

"Lord

62

"Lord of the Harvest to send thee and "many more Labourers into his Harvest." Another old and worthy Minister of *Christ*, when I wrote to him about the Meaning of the Word *Novice*, answered, it meant a *No vice* in Grace, and not in Years; and he was pleased to add, if *St. Paul* were then at *Gloucester*, he believed *St. Paul* would ordain me.—All this did not satisfy me.—I still continued instant in Prayer against going into Holy Orders, and was not thoroughly convinced it was the divine Will, till GOD, by his Providence, brought me acquainted with the present Bishop of *Gloucester*.

BEFORE I conversed with his Lordship, GOD was pleased to give me previous Notice of it. Long e'er I had the least Prospect of being called before the Bishop, I dreamed one Night, I was talking with him in his Palace, and that he gave me some Gold, which seemed to sound again in my Hand.—Afterward this Dream would often come into my Mind; and whenever I saw the Bishop at Church, a strong Persuasion would arise in my Mind that I should very shortly go to him: I always checked it, and prayed to GOD to preserve me from ever desiring that Honour which cometh of Man.—One After

noon

63

noon it happened that the Bishop took a so-  
litary Walk (as I was told afterwards) to  
Lady *Selwyn's*, near *Gloucester*, who, not long  
before, had made me a Present of a Piece of  
Gold. She, I found, recommended me to  
the Bishop; and a few Days after, as I was  
coming from the Cathedral Prayers, think-  
ing of no such Thing, one of the Vergers  
called after me, and said, the Bishop desired  
to speak with me. I, forgetful at that Time  
of my Dream, immediately turned back,  
considering within myself what I had done  
to deserve his Lordship's Displeasure. When  
I came to the Top of the Palace Stairs, the  
Bishop took me by the Hand, told me he  
was glad to see me, and bid me to wait a little  
till he had put off his Habit, and he would  
return to me again. This gave me an Op-  
portunity of praying to GOD for his Assi-  
stance, and adoring him for his Providence  
over me.

AT his coming again into the Room, the  
Bishop told me he had heard of my Charac-  
ter, liked my Behaviour at Church, and en-  
quired my Age, "Notwithstanding, says  
"he, I have declared I would not ordain any  
"one under Three and twenty, yet I shall  
"think it my Duty to ordain you whenever

"you

64

"you come for Holy Orders." He then  
made me a Present of Five Guineas to buy  
me a Book, which sounding again in my  
Hand, put me in mind of my Dream,  
whereupon my Heart was filled with a Sense  
of GOD's Love.

BEFORE I came home this News had  
reached my Friends; who, being fond of

my having such a great Man's Favour, were very solicitous to know the Event of my Visit. Many Things I hid from them; but when they pressed me hard, I was obliged to tell them how the Bishop, of his own Accord, had offered to give me Holy Orders whenever I would. On which they, knowing how I had depended on the Declaration his Lordship had made some Time ago, that he would ordain none under Three and twenty, said,—and I then began to think myself, “That if I held out any longer, I “should fight against GOD.”—At length I came to a Resolution, by GOD's Leave, to offer myself for Holy Orders the next Ember-days.

THE only Thing now in Dispute was into what Part of my Lord's Vineyard I should be sent to labour first.—GOD had given me much Success in *Gloucester*; and my Friends being desirous of having me near them, I

---

had

65

had Thoughts of settling amongst them. But when I came to *Oxford*, my Friends urged several Reasons for my continuing at the University.—“The Mr. *Wesleys* had not long “been gone abroad, and now no one was left “to take Care of the Prison Affairs, &c.—” They further urged, “That GOD had blessed my Endeavours *there* as well as at “*Gloucester*; that the University was the “Fountain-head, that every Gownsmen's “Name was Legion, and that if I should “be made instrumental in converting one of “*them*, it would be as much as converting a “whole Parish.” At the same Time (unknown to me) some of them sent to that great and good Man, the late Sir *John Phillips*, who was a great Encourager of the Ox

*ford* Methodists; and, tho' he had never seen, but only heard of me, yet he sent Word he would allow me thirty Pounds a Year, if I would continue at the University. Upon this, finding the Care of the Prisoners would be no more than under GOD I could undertake with Pleasure, and knowing the University was the best Place to prosecute my Studies, I resolved, GOD willing, to wait at *Oxford* a Blessing on the first Fruits of my ministerial Labours.

I

IN

66

IN the mean while, having before made some Observations upon the Thirty nine Articles, and proved them by Scripture, I strictly examined myself by the Qualifications required for a Minister in St. *Paul's* Epistle to *Timothy*, and also by every Question that I knew was to be publicly put to me at the Time of my Ordination. *This* latter I drew out in writing at large, and sealed my Ap probation of it every *Sunday* at the blessed Sacrament.—At length *Trinity-Sunday* being near at hand, and having my Testimonials from the College, I went a Fortnight before hand to *Gloucester*, intending to compose some Sermons, and to give myself more particularly to Prayer.

BUT GOD's Thoughts are not as our Thoughts.—When I came to *Gloucester*, notwithstanding I strove and prayed for several Days, and had Matter enough in my Heart, yet I was so restrained that I could not compose any Thing at all, I mentioned my Case to one Clergyman. He said, "I was an Enthusiast." I wrote to another who was experienced in the divine Life; he

gave me some Reasons why GOD might deal with me in that Manner, and withal pro

mised

67

mised me his Prayers.—I joyned with him in importunate Supplication to know whether this Restraint was of GOD or not?—At last, in reading Mr. Henry, upon the *Acts of the Apostles*, this Passage was much pressed upon my heart, “*We assayed to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit suffered us not.*” Looking a little farther, I found a Quotation out of *Ezekiel*, wherein GOD said to that young Prophet, just after he had given him a divine and publick Commission, “*Thou shalt be dumb; but when I speak unto thee, then shalt thou speak.*” This made me quite easy. The Remainder of the Fortnight I spent in reading the several Missions of the Prophets and Apostles, and wrestled with GOD to give me Grace to follow their good Examples.

ABOUT three Days before the Time appointed for Ordination the Bishop came to Town. The next Evening I sent his Lordship an Abstract of my private Examination upon these two Questions, “*Do you trust that you are inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost to take upon you this Office and Administration?*” And, “*Are you called according to the Will of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Laws of this Realm?*” The next

I 2

Morning,

68

Morning, I waited on the Bishop. He received me with much Love, telling me, “He was glad I was come; that he was satisfied with the Preparation I had made, and with the Allowance given me by Sir John Phillips. I had myself (said he) made Provision for

“you of two little Parishes, but since you choose to be at *Oxford*, I am very well pleased.—I doubt not but you will do much good.”—Upon this I took my Leave, abashed with GOD’s Goodness to such a Wretch, but withal exceedingly rejoiced, that in every Circumstance he made my Way into the Ministry so very plain before my Face!

THIS, I think, was on *Friday*. The Day following I continued in Abstinence and Prayer.—In the Evening I retired to a Hill near the Town, and prayed fervently for about two Hours, in Behalf of myself and those who were to be ordained with me.

ON *Sunday* Morning I rose early, and prayed over *St. Paul’s* Epistle to *Timothy*, and more particularly over *that* Precept, “*Let no one despise thy Youth.*”—When I went up to the Altar, I could think of nothing

but

69

but *Samuel’s* standing a little Child before the Lord with a Linen Ephod.—When the Bishop laid his Hands upon my Head, my Heart was melted down, and I offered up my whole Spirit, Soul and Body, to the Service of GOD’s Sanctuary!—I read the Gospel, at the Bishop’s Command, with Power, and afterwards sealed the good Confession I had made before many Witnesses, by partaking of the holy Sacrament of our Lord’s most blessed Body and Blood!

BEING restrained from writing, as was before observed, I could not preach in the Afternoon, tho’ much solicited thereto. But I read Prayers to the poor Prisoners, being wil

ling to let the first Act of my ministerial Office be an Act of Charity.

THE next Morning, waiting upon GOD in Prayer to know what he would have me to do, these Words, "*Speak out, Paul,*" came with great Power to my Soul. Immediately my Heart was enlarged.—GOD spake to me by his Spirit, and I was no longer dumb.—I finished a Sermon I had in hand some Time before, I began another, and preached the *Sunday* following to a very crowded Audience, with as much Freedom as tho' I had been a Preacher for some Years.

OH,

70

OH, the unspeakable Benefit of reading to the Poor, and exercising our Talents while Students at the University! Such previous Acts are very proper to prepare us for the Work of our Lord, and make *us* not unapt to teach in a more publick Manner.—It is remarkable that our Lord sent out his Apostles on short Missions, before they were so solemnly authorized at the Day of *Pentecost*. Would the Heads and Tutors of our Universities but follow his Example, and, instead of discouraging their Pupils from doing any Thing of this Nature, send them to visit the Sick and the Prisoners, and to pray with, and read practical Books of Religion to the Poor, they would find such Exercises of more Service to *them*, and to the Church of GOD, than *all* their private and publick Lectures put together.

THUS GOD dealt with my Soul.—At the same Time, by his gracious Providence, he supplied me with all Things needful for my Body also.—For he inclined the Bishop's Heart to give me five Guineas more, and,

by this Time, a Quarter's Allowance was due to me from Sir *John Phillips*, both which Sums put together fully served to defray the

---

Expenses

71

Expenses of my Ordination, and taking my Batchelor's Degree, which was conferred on me at *Oxford* the Week after my being ordained, when I was about One and twenty Years of Age.

THESE Changes from a Servitor to a Batchelor of Arts, from a common Drawer to a Clergyman, were no doubt Temptations to think more highly of myself than I ought to think; and some were therefore jealous over me, as I trust they always will be, with a godly Jealousy; GOD, who is rich in Mercy, thereby forwarned me of my Danger, stirred up my Heart to pray against spiritual Pride, and kept me (as I hope he will to the End) in some Measure always humbled before him!

THUS did GOD, by a Variety of unforeseen Acts of Providence and Grace, train me up for, and at length introduce me into the Service of his Church.

WHAT has happened to me since that Time, especially for these two last Years, is so known as to need no Repetition; how ever, as I find Freedom in myself, and Leisure from my ministerial Employ, I shall hereafter relate GOD's further Dealings with

my

72

my Soul, and how he led me into my present Way of acting.

IN the mean while, my dear Reader, whosoever thou art, I pray GOD what I have now written may not prove a Saviour of



Death unto Death, but a Saviour of Life unto Life unto thy Soul!—Many, I fear, thro' Ignorance, Prejudice, and Unbelief, when they read this, will contradict and blaspheme. Be not thou of this Number; but if thou art yet uninfected with the Contagion of the World, I pray GOD to keep thee so: For, (believe me) Innocence is better than Repentance; and tho' Sin may afford thee some brutish present Pleasure, yet the Remembrance of it afterwards is exceedingly bitter.—If thou art immersed in Sin as I was, take no Encouragement from me to continue in *it* on the one Hand, nor despair of Mercy on the other.—Let GOD's Goodness to me lead thee also to Repentance.—The same Lord is rich unto ALL that call upon him thro' Faith in *Christ Jesus*. If thro' divine Grace I have done any Thing Praise-worthy, not unto me, not unto me, but unto GOD give all the Glory!—If thou art awakened to a Sense of the divine Life, and art hungering

and

and thirsting after that Righteousness which is by Faith only in *Jesus Christ*, and the Indwelling of his blessed Spirit in thy Heart.—Think it not absolutely necessary to pass thro' all the Temptations that have beset *me* round about on every Side.—It is in the spiritual as in the natural Life; some feel more, others less, but all experience some Pangs and Travails of Soul, ere the Man *Christ Jesus* is formed within them, and brought forth and arrived unto the Measure of His Fulness who filleth All in All! If GOD deals with thee in a more gentle Way, yet so as that a thorough Work of Conversion is effected in thy Heart, thou oughtest to be exceeding thankful.—

Or if he should lead thee through a longer Wilderness than I have passed through, thou needest not complain.—The more thou art *humbled now*, the more thou shalt be *exalted hereafter*.—One Taste of *Christ's Love* in the Heart, will make Amends for all.—And, if thou *hast felt the Powers of the World to come*, and *been made a Partaker of the Holy Ghost*, know thou wilt rejoice, and give Thanks for what GOD has done for my Soul.—To conclude; may all who peruse these few Sheets be as much affected al

K

ternately

74

ternately with Grief and Joy in reading, as I have been in writing them; they will then have the desired Effect, and cause many Thanksgivings to be offered in my Behalf to that GOD who has called me out of Darkness into his marvellous Light! And that thou, O Reader, whoever thou art, mayst experience the like and greater Blessings, is the hearty Prayer of thy Soul's Friend and Servant.

GEO. WHITEFIELD.

A HYMN

75

A

## HYMN

1. *WHEN all thy Mercies, O my GOD,†  
My rising Soul surveys,†  
Why my Heart, art thou not lost†  
In Wonder, Love, and Praise?*
2. *Thy Providence my Life sustain'd,†  
And all my Wants redrest,†*

*While in the silent Womb I lay,†  
And hung upon the Breast.*

3. *To all my weak Complaints and Cries†  
Thy Mercy lent an Ear;†  
E'er yet my feeble Thoughts had learn'd†  
To form themselves in Prayer.*

4. *Unnumber'd Comforts on my Soul,†  
Thy tender Care bestow'd,†  
Before my Infant Heart conceiv'd,†  
From whom those Comforts flow'd.*

---

5. *When*

5. *When in the slippery Paths of Youth†  
With heedless Steps I ran,†  
Thine Arm unseen convey'd me safe,†  
And led me up to Man.*

6. *Thro' hidden Dangers, Toils and Deaths,†  
It gently clear'd my Way,†  
And thro' the pleasing Snares of Vice,†  
More to be fear'd than they.*

7. *Ten thousand thousand precious Gifts†  
My daily Thanks employ;†  
Nor is the least a cheerful Heart,†  
That tastes those Gifts with Joy.*

8. *Thro' every Period of my Life†  
Thy Goodness I'll pursue,†  
And after Death in distant Worlds†  
The pleasing Theme renew.*

9. *Thro' all Eternity to thee†  
A grateful Song I'll raise:†  
But O! Eternity's too short†  
To utter all thy Praise.*

FURTHER ACCOUNT

59

FINIS.  
A FURTHER  
**ACCOUNT**  
OF

GOD'S DEALINGS  
With the Reverend

Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD,

FROM

The Time of his ORDINATION to his  
EMBARKING for GEORGIA.

To which is Annex'd,

A BRIEF Account OF THE *RISE, PROGRESS, AND PRESENT SITUATION*  
OF THE

*Orphan-House* in GEORGIA.

IN A LETTER TO A FRIEND.

BY GEORGE WHITEFIELD, A.B.

**Late of Pembroke-College, OXON.**

GENESIS xxxii. 10. *I am not worthy of the least of all the Mercies, and of all the Truth, which thou hast shewed unto thy Servant.*

LONDON:

Printed by W. STRAHAN; and sold by JOHN LEWIS, in *St Bartholomew-Close*, near *West-Smithfield*; at the *Tabernacle*, *St* near *Moor-Fields*; and may be had at all Booksellers and *St* Pamphlet-Shops in Town and Country. 1747.

[Price Sixpence.]

## THE PREFACE.

**T**HE Royal Psalmist, filled no  
doubt with a deep Sense of the  
Divine Goodness in general, and  
of the many Mercies conferred  
upon himself in particular, breaks out into  
this moving Language, Come all ye that  
fear God, and I will tell you what he  
hath done for my Soul.—And great  
Reason he had for so doing. Experience  
daily convinces devout Souls, that nothing  
has a more immediate Tendency to affect  
themselves, and recommend their glorious  
and bountiful Benefactor to the Choice and  
Adoration of others, than an artless,  
humble Narration of the many Favours,  
Spiritual or Temporal, which they have

A 2

received

iv

received from him, in whom they live, and  
move, and have their Being.—This and  
such like Considerations (if I know any  
thing of my Heart) led me some Years  
ago to publish a short Account of God's  
Dealings with me, from the Time of  
my Birth, to my entering into Holy Or  
ders.—And as it has pleased a Sovereign  
God to bless that little Tract in a manner  
I durst not expect, both at home and  
abroad, I now sit down, in his Fear,  
to fulfil a Promise made at the End of  
it, viz. To give a farther Account of the

FURTHER ACCOUNT

61

*Lord's Dealing with me from that Time  
to my Embarking for America.*

## A

## Further ACCOUNT, &amp;c.

HAVING been ordained at *Gloucester*, on *Trinity* Sunday 1736, and preached my Sermon on the *Necessity and Benefit of religious Society*, to a very crowded Auditory, (in the Church in which I was baptized) the Lord's Day following, I set out the next *Wednesday* to *Oxford*, where I was received with great Joy by my religious Friends.—For about a Week I continued in my Servitor's Habit, and then took my Degree of *Batchelor of Arts*, after having been at the University three Years and three Quarters, and going on towards the 22d Year of my Age. My dear and honour'd Friends the Reverend Messrs. *John* and *Charles Wesley*, being now for some time embarked for *Georgia*, and one or two more having taken Orders, the Interest of METHODISM, as it was then and is now termed, had visibly declined, and very few of this reputed mad Way were left at the University. This somewhat discouraged me at times, but the Lord JESUS supported my Soul, and made me easy by giving me a strong Conviction, that I was where He would have me to be. My Degree I soon found was of Service to me, as it gave me Access to those I could not be free with when in an inferior Station; and, as Opportunity offered, I was enabled to converse with them about the Things which belonged to the Kingdom of GOD.—The Subscriptions for the poor Prisoners (which amounted to about *Forty Pounds* per

Annum,

Annum) were soon put into my Hands—Two or Three small Charity-Schools, maintained by the *Me*

*thodists*, were under my more immediate Inspection, which, with the Time I spent in following my Studies, private Retirement, and religious Converse, sweetly filled up the whole of my Day, and kept me from that unaccountable, but too common, Complaint of having any Time hang upon my Hands. The distributing Money and Books amongst the poor Prisoners, and employing such as could work, I found was of admirable Service:—For hereby they were kept from that worst of Gaol Diseases, Idleness; and were not only convinced, that we bore a good Will towards them, but also laid them as it were under an Obligation to hear the Instructions we gave them from time to time. —This Practice was first taken up by the Messrs. *Wesleys*, and would to God all Ordinaries of Prisons would copy after their good Example—They would deserve well of the Common-wealth, and if actuated by the Love of God, would receive a glorious Reward from him who hath said, *I was sick and in Prison, and ye came unto me.*

In a short Time I began to be more than content in my present State of Life. *God was pleased to be with me of a Truth,—My Strength was proportioned to my Day, and I* had Thoughts of abiding at the University, at least for some Years, to finish my Studies, and do what good I could amongst the poor despised *Methodists*.—But *God's Thoughts are not as Man's Thoughts, neither are our Ways as his Ways.*—By a Series of unforeseen, unexpected, and unsought for Providences, I was called in a short Time from my beloved Retirement to take a Journey to the Metropolis of *England*.—Whilst I was an Undergraduate, amongst other religious Friends, I was very intimate with one Mr. *B*—*n* [[Broughton]], a professed *Methodist*, who had lately taken Orders, and was Curate at the *Tower of London*.—With him, when absent, I frequently corresponded, and when present took sweet Counsel, and walked to the House of God as Friends.

He



7

He mentioned me to that late good and great Man Sir *John Philips*.—And being called down for a while into *Hampshire*, he wrote to me to be of good Courage, and in the Strength of God, bid me hasten to Town to officiate in his Absence, and be refreshed with the Sight and Conversation of many who loved me for CHRIST's sake, and had for a long Time desired to see me.—

On *Wednesday August 4th*, (the Prisoners being provided for by the coming of Mr. *Harvey*, another young worthy Methodist, who had lately taken Deacon's Orders) with Fear and Trembling I obeyed the Summons, and went in the Stage-Coach to *London*.—There being no other Passenger, I employed myself, a good Part of the Way, in earnest Supplication to the God of all Grace to be my Guide and my Comforter; at the same time I could not help praising him for changing my Heart, and calling me to preach the Gospel at a Place to which, not many Years ago, I would have given much Money, would my Circumstances have permitted, to have went up and seen a Play. In the Evening I reached the Tower, and was kindly received by my dear Friend.—The Remainder of the Week was spent in visiting Sir *John Philips*, &c. who were too glad to see me.—But God sent me something to ballast it.—For as I passed along the Streets, many came out of their Shops, admiring to see so young a Person in a Gown and Cassock. One I remember in particular cried out, "*There's a Boy Parson.*"—which, as it served to mortify my Pride, put me also upon turning that apostolical Exhortation into Prayer, "*Let no Man despise thy Youth.*"

On *Sunday August 8th*, in the Afternoon, I preach'd at *Bishopsgate Church*, the Largeness of which, and the Congregation together, at first a little dashed me; but by adverting to God, and considering in whose Name I was about to speak, my Mind was calmed, and I was enabled to preach with Power.—The Effect

was immediate and visible to all; for as I went up the Stairs almost all seem'd to sneer at me on Account of

my

8

my Youth; but they soon grew serious, and exceedingly attentive, and after I came down shewed me great Tokens of Respect, blessed me as I passed along, and made great Enquiry who I was.—The Question no one could answer, for I was quite a Stranger. I speedily slipped through the Crowd, and came to the *Tower*, blessing God for his Goodness to me the unworthiest of the Sons of Men.—

Here I continued for the Space of two Months, reading Prayers twice a Week, catechising and preaching once, besides visiting the Soldiers in the Infirmary and Barracks daily. I also read Prayers every Evening at *Wapping Chapel*, and preached at *Ludgate Prison* every *Tuesday*.—God was pleased to give me Favour in the Eyes of the Inhabitants of the *Tower*.—The Chapel was crowded on Lord's-Days.—Religious Friends from divers Parts of the Town attended the Word, and several young Men came on Lord's-Day Morning, under serious Impressions, to hear me discourse about the *New-Birth*, and the *Necessity of renouncing all in Affection, in order to follow JESUS CHRIST*.

After I had been about a Month in Town, Letters came from the Messrs. *Wesleys*, and the Revd. Mr. *Ingham*, their Fellow-Labourer, an *Israelite indeed*, from *Georgia*. Their Accounts fired my Soul, and made me even long to go abroad for God too—But having no outward Call, and being, as I then thought, too weak in Body ever to undertake a Voyage to Sea, I endeavoured to lay aside all Thoughts of going abroad.—But my Endeavours were all in vain—For I felt at times such a strong Attraction in my Soul towards *Georgia*, that I thought it almost irresistible.—I strove against it with all my Power, begged again and again with many Cries and Tears, that the Lord

would not suffer me to be deluded, and at length opened my Mind to several dear Friends.—All agreed that Labourers were wanted at home, that I had as yet no visible Call abroad, and that it was my Duty not to be rash, but wait and see what Providence

might

9

might point out to me.—To this I consented with my whole Heart, and having stayed in *London* till Mr. *B*—*n* [[Broughton]] came out of the Country, I returned to my little Charge at *Oxford*, and waited upon my Deaconship according to the Measure of Grace imparted to me.

But, oh what a delightful Life did I lead there! What Communion did I daily enjoy with God! And how sweetly did my Hours in private glide away in reading and praying over Mr. *Henry's* Comment, upon the Scriptures! Whilst I am musing on and writing about it, the Fire I then felt again kindles in my Soul—Nor was I alone happy—For several dear Youths were quickened greatly, and met daily at my Room, to build up each other in their most holy Faith—God raised up Friends for our temporal Support—The late Honourable *Betty Hastings*, that elect Lady, allowed some of them two or three small Exhibitions.—I also partook of her Ladyship's Bounty; and a Gentleman, whose Heart was in an especial Manner knit to me when last at *London*, was stirred up, without being solicited, to send me not only Money for the Poor, but also a Sufficiency to discharge Debts I had contracted for Books before I took my Degree. Upon his Recommendation, I was chosen a corresponding Member of the Society for promoting Christian Knowledge, which I rejoiced in, as it gave me an Opportunity of procuring Books at a cheap and easy Rate for the poor People.—May the great high Priest and Apostle of our Profession continue to bless that Society, and prosper all their pious Undertakings, to

the Advancement of his own Glory, and his Peoples eternal Good!

About the Middle of *November*, Providence once more called from my beloved, though little, Scene of Action.—The Revd. Mr. *Kinchin*, now with God, had lately been awakned, and accordingly resolved to associate with the despised *Methodists*, determining to *know nothing but JESUS CHRIST and him crucified*.—He was then Minister of *Dummer*, in

B

Hampshire,

10

*Hampshire*, and being likely to be chosen Dean of *Corpus Christi* College, he desired me to come and officiate for him, till that Affair should be decided.—By the Advice of Friends, I went, and he came to supply my Place at *Oxford*.—His Parish consisting chiefly of poor and illiterate People, my proud Heart at first could not well brook it.—I would have given all the World for one of my *Oxford* Friends, and mourned for lack of them as a Dove that has lost her Mate—But upon giving myself to Prayer, and reading Mr. *Law's* excellent Character of *Ouranios*, in his *Serious Call to a Devout Life*, my Mind was reconciled to such Conversation as the Place afforded me.—Before I came to *Dummer*, Mr. *Kinchin* had used his People, according to the Rubric, to have publick Prayers twice a Day, *viz.* In the Morning, it being the Winter-season, before it was Light, and in the Evening after the People returned from their Work. He also catechised the Lambs of the Flock daily, and visited from House to House.—He loved his People, and was beloved by them.—I prosecuted his Plan, and generally divided the Day into three Parts, eight Hours for Study and Retirement, eight Hours for Sleep and Meals, and eight Hours for reading Prayers, catechising, and visiting the Parish.—The Profit I reaped by these Exercises, and conversing with the poor Country People, was unspeakable.—I soon began to be as much de

lighted with their artless Conversation, as I had been formerly with the Company of my Oxford Friends; and frequently learnt as much by an Afternoon's Visit, as in a Week's Study.—During my Stay here, an Invitation was sent me to a very profitable Curacy in London; but I had no Inclination to accept it.—The Thoughts of going to Georgia still crowded continually in upon me, and at length Providence seemed to point my Way thither. About the Middle of December, came a Letter from Mr. B——n [[Broughton]], informing me, that Mr. Charles Wesley was arrived at London. Soon after came a Letter from Mr. Charles

himself,

II

himself, wherein he informed me, that he had come over to procure Labourers; but, added he, “I dare not prevent God's Nomination.”—In a few Days after this, came another Letter from Mr. John Wesley, wherein were these Words—“Only Mr. Delamott is with me, till God shall stir up the Hearts of some of his Servants, who putting their Lives in his Hands, shall come over and help us, where the Harvest is so great, and the Labourers so few. What if thou art the Man, Mr. Whitefield?” In another Letter were these Words—“Do you ask me what you shall have? Food to eat, and Raiment to put on, a House to lay your Head in; such as your Lord had not; and a Crown of Glory that fadeth not away.” Upon reading this my Heart leaped within me, and as it were, echoed to the Call.—Many things concurred to make my Way clear.—Mr. Kinchin was now elected Dean of Corpus Christi College, and being thereby obliged to reside at Oxford, he willingly took upon him the Charge of the Prisoners.—Mr Harvey was ready to serve the Cure of Dummer.—Mr. Wesley was my dear Friend, and I thought it would be a great Advantage to me to be under his Tuition.—Georgia was an infant, and likely to be an encreasing Colony; and the Government seemed to have its

Welfare much at heart.—I had heard many *Indians* were near it, and thought it a Matter of great Importance, that serious Clergymen should be sent there. Retirement and Privacy **was** what my Soul delighted in.—A Voyage to Sea would, in all Probability, not do my Constitution much hurt: nay, I had heard the Sea was sometimes beneficial to weakly People. And supposing the worst, as I must necessarily return to take Priest's Orders, it would then be left to my Choice, whether I would fix in my native Country, or go abroad any more.—These things being thoroughly weighed, I at length resolved within myself to embark for *Georgia*: and knowing that I should never put my Resolution into Practice, if I conferred with Flesh and Blood, wrote to my Re

B 2

lations

12

lations to inform them of my Design, and withal told them, "If they would promise not to dissuade me "from my intended Voyage, I would come and take "a personal Leave of them; if otherwise, knowing "my own Weakness, I was determined to embark "without visiting them at all." A few Days after Mr. *Kinchin* came to *Dummer*, and introduced Mr. *Harvy* into the Cure.—I apprised them of my Intention.—They gave me some friendly Council, and having spent the Beginning of *Christmas* sweetly together, and taken an affectionate Leave of the *Dummer* People, I returned once more to *Oxford*, to bid adieu to my Friends, who were as dear to me as my own Soul.—My Resolution at first a little shocked them, but having Reason to think, from my Relation of Circumstances, that, I had a Call from Providence, most of them said, "*The Will of the Lord be done.*"

On *New-Year's-Day*, 1736–7, I went to *Gloucester* **in order** to hear the Bishop's *Opinion*, and to take my Leave of my Mother and other Relations.—His Lordship received me, as he always did, like a Father, approved of my Design, wished me much Suc

cess, and said, "He did not doubt but God would "bless me, and that I should do much Good abroad." My own Relations at first were not so passive.—My aged Mother wept sore, and others urged what pretty Preferment I might have, if I would stay at home—But at length they grew more quiet, and finding me so fixed gainsayed no longer.—During my Stay here, I began to grow a little popular. God gave me Honour for a while, even in my own Country.—I preached twice on the Sabbaths. Congregations were very large, and the Power of God attended the Word; and some I have Reason to believe were truly converted, who will be my Joy and Crown of rejoicing in the Day of the Lord JESUS.

In about three Weeks, I went to *Bristol*, to take leave of some more of my Relations who lived there. As it was my constant Practice, go where I would to attend on the daily publick Offices of the Church,

I

I

13

I went, the *Thursday* after my coming, to hear a Sermon at St. *John's* Church. Whilst the Psalm was singing, after Prayers, the Minister came to my Seat, and asked me to give the Congregation a Sermon. Having my Notes about me, I complied. The Hearers seemed startled, and after Sermon Enquiry was made, who I was? The next Day there was another Lecture at St. *Stephens*. Many crowded thither in Expectation of hearing me again. The Lecturer asked me to preach, as the other did the Day before. I again complied, and the Alarm given here was so general, that on the following Lord's-Day, many of all Denominations were obliged to return from the Churches where I preached for want of Room. Afterwards I was called by the Mayor to preach before him, and the Corporation. And for some time following, I preached all the Lectures on Week-Days, and twice on *Sundays*, besides visiting the religious Societies. The Word, through the mighty Power

of God, was sharper than a two-edged Sword. The Doctrine of the *New Birth* and *Justification by Faith in Jesus Christ* (though I was not so clear in it as afterwards) made its Way like Lightning into the Hearers Consciences. The *Arrows of Conviction* stuck fast; and my whole Time between one Lecture and another, except what was spent in necessary Refreshment, was wholly taken up in talking with poor Souls under Concern. Large Offers were made me, if I would stay at *Bristol*; and many I believe would have almost plucked out their own Eyes to have given me! All wondered that I would go to *Georgia*, who might be so well provided for at home! And some urged, if I had a Mind to convert *Indians*, I might go amongst the *King's-Wood* Colliers, and find *Indians* enough. But none of these Things moved me. Having put my Hand to the Plow, I was determined, thro' divine Grace, not to look back. And therefore, at length, I took my leave, but with what mutual Affection and Concern cannot easily be expressed.

During

14

During my Stay at *Bristol*, I made a little Elopement to *Bath*, where I was kindly received by a dear Friend the Reverend Mr. *Chapman*, and some elect and honourable Women who befriended the *Oxford* Methodists. I preached at the *Abbey-Church* twice. —The late Dr. *Cockman* was pleased to thank me for my Sermon; and Application was made to me by several to print both my Discourses. But I scarce allowed such a Thought to enter, much less to lodge within my Heart.

It was now about the Middle of *February*. *Lent* was at hand, and I was obliged to be at *Oxford* to perform the Remainder of my College-Exercise, which they call *Determining*. I went through *Gloucester*, as it lay in my Way, and abode there a Week, visiting the Prisoners, and encouraging the awakened Souls. Having staid about ten Days at the University, I



took, as I thought, my last Farewel of my dear Friends, and came up to *London* in the Beginning of *March*, in order to wait upon *James Oglethorp*, Esq; and the Honourable *Trustees*. I was kindly received by both. The former introduced me to his Grace the present *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*; and the Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. *Arthur Bedford*, at the Desire of the latter, (with whom I dined at their publick Anniversary), went with me to the present Lord Bishop of *London*. Both approved of my going abroad; the former was pleased to say, "He would take particular Notice of such as went to *Georgia*, if they did not go out of any *sinister View*. This put me upon Enquiry what were my Motives in going? And, after the strictest Examination, my Conscience answered, "*Not to please any Man living upon Earth, nor out of any sinister View; but simply to comply with what I believe to be thy Will, O God, and to promote thy Glory, thou great Shepherd and Bishop of Souls.*"

I continued in *London* about three Weeks, waiting for Mr. *Oglethorp*, who expected to sail every Day. In this Season I preached more frequently than when there before. Many more came to hear me, and the

last

15

last *Sunday* I was in Town, I read Prayers twice, and preached four times.—But finding Mr. *Oglethorp* was not likely to go for some time, and having lain under particular Obligation to the Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. *Sampson Harris*, Minister of *Stone-House*, in *Gloucestershire*, I went down thither, at his Request, to supply his Place, whilst he came up to dispatch some Affairs in Town.

Hither I had Reason to think God sent me in Answer to Prayer: For there was a little sweet Society of seeking Souls, who had heard me preach at an adjacent Town, and wrestled with God, if it was his Will, to send me amongst them. They received me with all Joy, and most of the Parishioners were very

civil, when I came to visit them from House to House. Upon Examination I found them more knowing than I expected. Their Pastor had **used to** catechise the little Ones in the Summer-season, and expounded the four Lessons every Lord's-Day in the Church. I followed his good Example, and found great Freedom and Assistance given me both in my publick and private Administrations. Having the Use of the Parsonage-House, I expounded every Night. Many **that** were not Parishioners came to hear, and were edified. On *Sundays*, besides expounding the Lessons, catechising and preaching, I repeated my Sermons to the Soci[[e]]ty. Neither Church nor House could contain the People that came. I found uncommon Manifestations granted me from above. Early in the Morning, at Noon-Day, Evening, and Midnight, nay, all the Day long, did the blessed JESUS visit and refresh my Heart. Could the Trees of a certain Wood near *Stone-House* speak, they would tell what sweet Communion I and some **more dear Souls** enjoyed with the ever blessed God there. Sometimes, as I was walking, my Soul would make such Sallies as though it would go out of the Body. At other times, I would be so overpowered with a Sense of God's infinite Majesty, that I would be constrained to throw myself **prostrate** on the Ground, and

offer

16

offer my Soul as a Blank in his Hands, to write on it what he pleased. One Night was a Time never to be forgotten. It happened to lighten exceedingly. I had been expounding to many People, and some being afraid to go home, I thought it my Duty to accompany them, and improve the Occasion, to stir them up to prepare for the coming of the Son of Man, **But O what did my Soul feel!** In my Return to the Parsonage-House, whilst others were rising from their Beds, **and** frightened almost to Death, **to see the Lightning run upon the Ground, and shine from one**

Part of Heaven unto the other, I and another, a poor, but pious Countryman, were in the Field, praying to, praising of, and exulting in our God, and longing for that Time, when JESUS should be revealed from Heaven in a Flame of Fire! Oh that my Soul may be in a like Frame, when he shall actually come to call me! For I think I never had been happier than that Night, or, all things considered, more blessed than during my Abode at *Stone-House*. Every Week the Congregations increased; and on *Ascension-Day*, when I took my leave, the Concern they shewed at my Departure was inexpressible. Their Sighs and Tears almost broke my Heart. Many cried out with *Ruth*, *Whither thou goest I will go, where thou lodgest I will lodge*. But I only took one with me, who proved a good Servant, and is, I believe, a true Follower of our ever Blessed JESUS.

The Incumbent being returned from *London*, and the People of *Bristol* having given me repeated Invitations, nay having insisted upon my coming again, since the Time of my embarking was deferred; on *May* 23d, I paid them a second Visit. Multitudes came on Foot, and many in Coaches a Mile without the City to meet me, and almost all saluted and blessed me as I went along the Street. Upon my coming here, I received Letters from *London*, informing me, that Mr. *Oglethorp* would not embark these two Months. This gladden'd many Hearts, though I cannot say it did mine; because I counted the Hours,

as

17

as it were, till I went abroad. I preached as usual, about five times a Week; but the Congregations grew, if possible, larger and larger. It was wonderful to see how the People hung upon the Rails of the Organ-Loft, climbed upon the Leads of the Church, and made the Church itself so hot with their Breath, that the Steam would fall from the Pillars like Drops of Rain. Sometimes almost as many would go away

for want of Room as came in, and it was with great Difficulty that I got into the Desk to read Prayers, or preach. Persons of all Denominations flocked to hear. Persons of all Ranks, not only publicly attended my Ministry, but gave me private Invitations to their Houses. A private Society or two were erected. I preached and collected for the poor Prisoners in *Newgate* twice or thrice a Week, and many made me large Offers if I would not go abroad.

During my Stay here I paid another Visit to *Bath*, and preached three times in the *Abbey-Church*, and once in *Queen's-Chapel*. People crowded, and were affected as at *Bristol*. And God stirred up some elect Ladies to give upwards of a *hundred and sixty Pounds* for the Poor of *Georgia*.

*June 21st*, I took my last Farewel at *Bristol*. But when I came to tell them, it might be, that they would see my Face no more, high and low, young and old burst into such a Flood of Tears, as I had never seen before: Drops fell from their Eyes like Rain, or rather gushed out like Water out of the Stony Rock. Multitudes, after Sermon, followed me home weeping; and the next Day I was employed from seven in the Morning till Midnight, in talking and giving spiritual Advice to awakened Souls.

About three the next Morning, having thrown my self on the Bed for an Hour or two, I set out for *Gloucester*, because I heard that a great Company on Horseback, and in Coaches, intended to see me out of Town. Some finding themselves disappointed, followed me thither, where I staid a few Days, and preached to a very crowded Auditory. Then I went

on

18

on to *Oxford*, where we had, as it were, a general Rendezvous of the *Methodists*; and, finding their Interests flourishing, and being impatient to go abroad, I hastened away, after taking a most affectionate Leave, and came to *London* about the End of

*August*, I hope, in some degree, thankful for the great Things the Lord had done for me in the Country.

Every Hour now seemed a Week, and every Week a Year, till I was embarked.

I knew there was no Minister at *Frederica*, for which Place I was then appointed, and I did not care to be absent longer from my proper Charge. Mr. *Oglethorp*'s going was still retarded, and I had thought it my Duty to go immediately without him, had not he and my other Friends urged, that the Soldiers would shortly embark, and that I had best go over with them. This somewhat pacified me, and having now taken a final Farewel of all my Friends in the Country, I was resolved to abide at *London*, and give myself wholly to Prayer, the Study of the Scriptures, and my own Heart, till the Soldiers should embark.

The House I lodged at was good old Mr. *Hutton*'s in *College-street*, *Westminster*, where I had the pleasure of seeing my dear Friend, Mr. *Ingham*, lately returned from *Georgia*; and perceiving him, as I thought, remarkably grown in Grace. I longed still more to be sent to the same School, hoping to catch some of that holy Flame with which his Soul was fired. We freely and solemnly conversed together about my Call abroad. It seemed to both quite clear, though we could have wished, had it been the Divine Will, to have lived and died together. Our Hearts were knit to each other, like the Hearts of *David* and *Jonathan*. At Midnight we would rise to sing Praises to God, and to intercede for the whole State of CHRIST's Church militant here on Earth.

With this dear Friend I one Day paid a Visit to a worthy Doctor of Divinity near *London*,

who

---

19

who introduced us to some Honourable Ladies, who, as I had heard, delighted in doing good. It being

my constant Practice to improve my Acquaintance with the Rich for the Benefit of the Poor, I recommended two poor Clergymen, and another pious Person, to their Charity. They said little, but between them, **unknown to each other, they** gave, I think, *thirty-six Guineas*. When we came to the Doctor's House, and saw the Ladies Liberality, he said, "you had not spoke for others, you would have had "a good deal of that yourself." God gave me to rejoice that I had nothing, and the Poor all. The next Day, upon my Return to *London*, in the first Letter that I opened, was a Bank-note of Ten Pounds, sent from an unexpected Hand as a Present for myself. This **I took as a Hint from Providence** to go on doing good to others, with a full Assurance that the Lord would not let me want. Blessed be his Name I have had many such Instances of his tender Concern for my temporal, as well as my eternal Welfare.

About this time, through the Importunity of Friends, and Aspersions of Enemies, I was prevailed upon to print my Sermon *on the Nature and Necessity of our Regeneration or New-Birth in CHRIST JESUS*, which under God began the awakening at *London, Bristol, Gloucester, and Gloucestershire*. The Dissenters I found were surprized to see a Sermon on such a Subject from a Clergyman of the Church of *England*, and finding the Author came from *Oxford*, were ready to say, **(how justly I will not determine)** "*Can any good come out of Nazareth?*" This Sermon sold well to Persons of all Denominations, and was dispersed very much **in many Parts**, both at home and abroad. A second Impression was soon called for; and finding another of my Sermons was printed without my Leave, and in a very incorrect Manner, at *Bristol*, I was obliged to publish in my own Defence, and afterwards thought I had a clear Call to print any other Discourses, though in themselves mean, that I found blessed to the Good of Souls.

20

But to return to my publick Administrations. Being determined to abide in *London* till the Time of my Departure, I followed my usual Practice of reading and praying over the Word of God upon my Knees. Sweet was this Retirement to my Soul, but it was not of long Continuance.—Invitations were given me to preach at several Places.—The Stewards and Members of the religious Societies were very fond of hearing me.—I was invited to preach at *Cripplegate*, *St. Ann's*, and *Forster-lane* Churches, at Six on the Lord's-Day Morning, and to assist in administring the Holy Sacrament.—I embraced the Invitations, and so many came, that sometimes we were obliged to consecrate fresh Elements two or three Times, and the Stewards found it somewhat difficult to carry the Offerings to the Communion-Table.—I also preached at *Wapping-Chapel*, the *Tower*, *Ludgate*, *Newgate*, and many of the Churches where weekly Lectures were kept up.—The Congregations continually increased, and generally, on a Lord's-Day, I used to preach four Times to very large, and very affected Auditories, besides reading Prayers twice or thrice, and walking, perhaps, twelve Miles in going backwards and forwards from one Church to the other—But God made my Feet like Hind's Feet, and filled me with Joy unspeakable at the End of my Day's Work.—This made me look upon my friends kind Advice which they gave me, *to spare myself*, as a Temptation.—For I found by daily Experience, the more I did, the more I might do for God.—

About the latter End of *August*, finding there were many young Men belonging to the Societies that attended my Administrations, I entered into one of their singing Societies, hoping thereby to ingratiate myself the more, and have greater Opportunities of doing them good.—It answered my Design.—Our Lord gave me to spiritualize their singing.—And after they had taught me the *Gamut*, they would gladly

hear me teach them some of the Mysteries of the *New-Birth*, and the *Necessity of living to God*.—Many

sweet

21

sweet Nights we spent together in this Way.—And many of these Youths afterwards, to all Appearance, walked with God, and will, I trust, join the heavenly Choir in singing Praises to the Lamb, and him that sitteth upon the Throne for ever.

About the Middle of *September*, my Name was first put into the publick *News-papers*, but upon what particular Occasion I cannot now recollect.—The *Sunday* before, with great Reluctance, I was prevailed on to preach a Charity Sermon at *Wapping-Chapel*.—The Congregation was very large, and more was collected than had been for many Years upon a like Occasion.—This got Air—My Friends improved the Occasion, and intreated me to preach another Charity Sermon, at *Sir George Wheeler's Chapel*.—I absolutely refused; but at length, through the Importunity of *Mr. Habersham*, since my faithful Assistant in the *Orphan-House*, I agreed to do it.—I discoursed upon the *Widow's giving her two Mites*—God bowed the Hearts of the Hearers as the Heart of one Man.—Almost all, as I was told, by the Collectors, offered most willingly.—Scarce one appeared before the Lord empty.—This still drew on fresh Applications. The *Sunday* following I preached in the Evening at *St. Swithens*, where eight Pounds were collected instead of ten Shillings.—The next Morning, as I was at Breakfast with a Friend at the *Tower*, I read in one of the *News-Papers*, “That there was a young Gentleman going Volunteer to *Georgia*: That he had preached at *St. Swithens*, and collected eight Pounds instead of ten Shillings; three Pounds of which were in *Halfpence*: And that he was to preach next Wednesday before the Societies, at their General Quarterly Meeting.” This Advertisement chagrined me very much—I immediately sent to the Printer,



desiring he would put me in his Paper no more.—His Answer was, That “*He was paid for doing it, and that he would not lose two Shillings for any body.*” By this means Peoples Curiosity was stirred up more and more.—On the *Wednesday* Evening,

*Bow-*

22

*Bow-Church*, in *Cheapside*, was crowded exceedingly.—I preached my Sermon on early Piety, and at the Request of the Societies printed it.—Hence-forwards, for near three Months successively, there was no End of the Peoples flocking to hear the Word of God.—The Church-Wardens, and Managers of Charity-Schools, *perceiving what Effect my preaching had upon the Populace*, were continually applying to me to preach for the Benefit of the Children.—And as I was to embark shortly, they procured the Liberty of the Churches on Week Days; a thing never known before.—I sometimes had more than a Dozen Names of different Churches, at which I promised to preach, upon my Slate-Book at once.—And when I preached, Constables were obliged to be placed at the Door, to keep the People in order.—The Sight of the Congregations was awful.—One might, as it were, walk upon the Peoples Heads, and thousands went away from the largest Churches for want of Room. They were all Attention *when the Word was delivered*, and heard like People hearing for Eternity.—I now preached generally nine Times a Week. The early Sacraments were exceeding awful. At *Cripplegate*, *St Ann’s*, and *Forster-lane*, how often have we seen JESUS CHRIST crucified, and evidently set forth before us! On *Sunday* Mornings, long before Day, you might see Streets filled with People going to Church, with their Lan thorns in their Hands, and hear them conversing about the Things of God.—Other Lecture Churches near at hand, would be filled with Persons who could not come where I was preaching: And those that did

come, were so deeply affected, that they were like Persons struck with pointed Arrows, or mourning for a first-born Child! People gave so liberally to the Charity Schools, that this Season near a thousand Pounds *Sterling* was collected at the several Churches, besides many private Contributions and Subscriptions sent in afterwards.—I always preached gratis, and gave myself. The *Blue-Coat* Boys and Girls looked

upon

23

upon me as their great Benefactor; and I believe frequently sent up their Infant Cries in my Behalf. Worthy Mr. *Seeward*, afterwards my dear *Fellow-Traveller*, was their hearty Friend and Advocate.—He was concerned in above twenty Charity Schools; and, as I found some Months afterwards, inserted the Paragraph that so chagrined me. The Tide of Popularity now began to run very high.—In a short time I could no longer walk on Foot as usual, but was constrained to go in a Coach from Place to Place to avoid the *Hosannas* of the Multitude.—They grew quite extravagant in their Applauses, and had it not been for my compassionate High-Priest, Popularity would have destroyed me: But he knew it was quite unthought of and unsought by me.—I used therefore to plead with and intreat him, to take me by the Hand and lead me unhurt through this fiery Furnace!—He heard my Request, gave me to see the Vanity of all Commendations but his own, and, in some measure, enabled me to give back all the Respect I received, to that Fountain from whence it had its Source.—

Not that all spoke well of me—No, as my Popularity increased, Opposition increased also.—At first many of the Clergy were my Hearers and Admirers: But some soon grew angry, and Complaints were made, that the Churches were so crowded, that there was no Room for the Parishioners, and that the Pews were spoiled.—Some called me a Spiritual Pick-Pocket, and others thought I made use of a

kind of Charm to get the Peoples Money.—A Report was spread abroad, that the Bishop of *London*, upon the Complaint of the Clergy, intended to *silence* me.—I immediately waited upon his Lordship, and enquired whether any Complaint of this Nature had been lodged against me? He answered, “No.” I asked his Lordship whether any Objection could be made against my Doctrine? He said, “No: *For he knew a Clergyman who had heard me preach a plain Scriptural Sermon.*” I asked his Lordship, whether he would grant me a Licence? He said, “*I needed*

“*none*

24

“*none, since I was going to Georgia.*” I replied, “Then your Lordship would not forbid me?” He gave me a satisfactory Answer, and I took my leave.—Soon after this, two Clergymen sent for me, and told me, they would not let me preach in their Pulpits any more, unless I renounced that Part of my Sermon on *Regeneration*, wherein I wished, “*That my Brethren would entertain their Auditories oftner with Discourses upon the New-Birth.*”—This I had no Free dom to do, and so they continued my Opposers.—What I believe irritated some of my Enemies the more, was my free Conversation with many of the serious Dissenters, who invited me to their Houses, and repeatedly told me, “*That if the Doctrine of the New-Birth and Justification by Faith, was preached powerfully in the Church, there would be but few Dissenters in England.*”—My Practice in visiting and associating with them I thought was quite agreeable to the Word of God.—Their Conversation was savoury, and I **thought** the best Way to bring them over, was not by Bigotry and Railing, but Moderation and Love, and undissembled Holiness of Life.—But these Reasons were of no Avail.—One Minister called me *Pragmatical Rascal*, and vehemently inveighed against the whole Body of Dissenters.—This stirred up the Peoples Corruptions, and having an overweening

Fondness for me, whenever they came to Church and found that I did not preach, some of them would go out again.—This Spirit I always endeavoured to quell, and made a Sermon on purpose, from those words, *Take heed how ye hear*. One time upon hearing that a Church-warden intended to take eight Pounds a year from his Parish Minister, because he refused to let me preach his Lecture, I composed a Sermon upon **those Words**, *Love your Enemies*; and delivered it where I knew the Church-warden would be.—It had its desired Effect.—He came after Sermon and told me, he was convinced by my Discourse, that he should not resent the Injury the Doctor had done me, and then thanked me for my Care.—Nor was I

without

25

without Opposition from Friends, who were jealous over me with a Godly Jealousy.—**For I carried high Sail**, thousands and thousands came to hear. My Sermons were every where called for. News came from time to time of the springing up and Increase of the Seed sown in *Bristol*, *Gloucester*, and elsewhere. Large Offers were made me, if I would stay in *England*.—And all the Opposition I met with, joined with the Consciousness of my **private** daily Infirmities, were but *Ballast* little enough to keep me from over-setting.

However, the Lord (Oh infinite Condescension!) was pleased to be with and bless me Day by Day.—I had a sweet Knot of Religious Friends, with whom I at first attempted to pray *extempore*. Some time, I think in *October*, we began to set apart an Hour every Evening, to intercede with the Great Head of the Church for carrying on the Work begun, and for the Circle of our Acquaintance, according as we knew their Circumstances required.—I was their Mouth unto God, and he only knows what Enlargement I felt in that divine Employ. Once we spent a whole Night in Prayer and Praise; and many a time, at Midnight

and at one in the Morning, after I have been wearied almost to Death in Preaching, Writing, and Conversation, and going from Place to Place, God imparted new Life to my Soul, and would enable me to intercede with him for an Hour and a half and two Hours together.—The Sweetness of this Exercise made me compose my Sermon upon *Intercession*; and I cannot think it Presumption to give it as my Opinion, that partly, at least, in Answer to Prayers, then put up by his dear Children, the Word for some Years past has ran and been glorified, not only in *England*, but in many other Parts of the World.

It was now, I think, that I was prevailed on to sit for my Picture.—The Occasion was this.—Some ill-minded Persons had painted me leaning on a Cushion, with a Bishop looking very enviously over my Shoulder.—At the Bottom were six Lines, in one of which

D

the

26

the Bishops were styled *Mitred Drones*.—The same Person published in the Papers, that I had sat for it.—This I looked upon as a Snare of the Devil to incense the Clergy against me. I consulted Friends what to do. They told me I must sit for my Picture in my own Defence.—At the same time my aged Mother laid her Commands upon me to do so in a Letter, urging, “*That if I would not let her have the Substance, I would leave her at least the Shadow.*” She also mentioned the Painter, and meeting with him one Night very accidentally, I at length with great Reluctance complied, and endeavoured, whilst the Painter was drawing my Face, to employ my Time, in beseeching the great God, by his holy Spirit, to paint his blessed Image upon his and my Heart.

*Christmas* now drew near.—Notice was given me, that the Soldiers were almost ready to embark for *Georgia*, but Mr. *Oglethorp* being yet detained, I was resolved to throw myself into the Hands of God, and go with the Soldiers. But the nearer the Time of

my Departure approached, the more affectionate and eager the People grew. There was no End of Persons coming to me under Soul Concern. I preached, and God blessed me more and more, and supported me for some time with but very little Sleep.

At the Beginning of *Christmas* Week I took my leave: But, Oh, what Groans and Sighs were to be heard, when I said, "Finally, Brethren, farewell!" At great St. *Helen's*, the Cry was amazing. I was nearly half an Hour going out to the Door. All Ranks gave vent to their Passions. Thousands and thousands of Prayers were put up for me. They would run and stop me in the Allies, hug me in their Arms, and follow me with wishful Looks. Once in the *Christmas* before my Departure, with many others, I spent a Night in Prayer and Praise; and in the Morning helped to administer the Sacrament at St. *Dunstan's*, as I used to do on Saints-Days.—But such a Sacrament I never before saw.—The Tears of the Communicants mingled with the Cup, and had not

JESUS

27

JESUS given us some of his new Wine to drink, to comfort our Hearts, our parting would have almost been insupportable. At length *December* 28th I left *London*, and went in the Strength of God, as a poor *Pilgrim* on board the *Whitaker*, after having preached in a good Part of the *London* Churches, collected about a thousand Pounds for the Charity-Schools, and got upwards of three hundred Pounds *Sterling* for the Poor of *Georgia* among my Friends, for which I have since publicly accmpted. At the same time God raised me a Sufficiency to supply my own temporal Necessities; and gave me repeated Proofs, that *if we seek first the Kingdom of God and his Righteousness, all other things* (I mean Food and Raiment, which is all a Christian should desire) *shall be added unto us.*—For which, and all his other unmerited Mercies, I

desire to praise him in time, and magnify his holy Name, through the boundless Ages of Eternity.

Some Particulars that befel me whilst abroad, and how this Tide of Popularity rose still higher at my return home: How I came to commence a Field-Preacher, and part with my Friends, who were as dear to me as my own Soul: How they **that** would now have plucked out their Eyes, and have given them unto me, afterwards accounted me their Enemy because I told them the Truth: By what Means the Seed now sown sprang up, and grew into a great Tree, **both** in *England*, *Scotland*, and *America*: How Divisions arose among God's People, and what were the Effects and Consequences of them, all this I say must be reserved for another Tract, if God should continue my Life and Strength, and give me Leisure and Freedom to prosecute and finish it.

In the mean while, let me exhort thee, O Reader, if serious and a Child of God, to bless him for what he has done for my Soul: Or if thou art yet in the Gall of Bitterness, and, thro' Prejudice, thinkest that I have either not told Truth, or wrote out of a vain-glorious View, let me only intreat thee to suspend thy Judgment for a little while, and JESUS shall decide

---

D 2

the

28

the Question. At his TRIBUNAL we shall meet, and there thou shalt know what is in my Heart, and what were the Motives which led me out into such a Scene of Life. At present I will trouble thee no more; but beg thee, whether serious or not, to endeavour to calm thy Spirit, by singing or reading over the following Lines, translated by that sweet Singer of *Israel*, and my worthy and honoured Friend Doctor *Watts*.

**PSALM LXXI. 5-9. First.**

## I.

*MY God, my everlasting Hope, ‡  
 I live upon thy Truth; ‡  
 Thine Hands have held my Childhood up, ‡  
 And strength'ned all my Youth.*

## II.

*My Flesh was fashion'd by thy Power, ‡  
 With all these Limbs of mine; ‡  
 And from my Mother's painful Hour, ‡  
 I've been entirely thine.*

## III.

*Still has my Life new Wonders seen, ‡  
 Repeated ev'ry Year; ‡  
 Behold my Days that yet remain, ‡  
 I trust them to thy Care.*

## IV.

*Cast me not off should Health decline, ‡  
 Or hoary Hairs arise; ‡  
 And round me let thy Glory shine, ‡  
 When e'er thy Servant dies.*

## V.

*Then in the History of my Age, ‡  
 When Men review my Days, ‡  
 They'll read thy Love in every Page, ‡  
 In ev'ry Line thy Praise.*

A



**OF THE**  
**RISE, PROGRESS, and PRESENT**  
**SITUATION,**  
**OF THE**

*Orphan-House* in GEORGIA.

IN A LETTER TO A FRIEND

*Bethesda, in Georgia, March 21st. 1745-6*

*My very dear Friend,*

IT being now some Months since I arrived here, I think it high Time, according to my Promise, to send you as explicite an Account as I well can, of the *Rise, Progress, and present Situation* of the *Orphan-House*, where I now am.—Some have thought, that the erecting such a Building was only the Produce of my own Brain: but they are much mistaken. For it was first proposed to me by my dear Friend the Revd. Mr. *Charles Wesley*, who, with his Excellency General *Oglethorp*, had concerted a Scheme for carrying on such a Design, before I had any Thoughts of going abroad myself. It was natural to think, that as the Government intended this Province for the Refuge and Support of many of our poor Countrymen, that Numbers of such Adventurers must necessarily be taken off, by being exposed to the Hardships which unavoidably attend a new Settlement. I

thought

<sup>31</sup>

thought it therefore a noble Design in the general to erect a House for fatherless Children. And believing such a Provision for Orphans would be some Inducement with many to come over, I fell in with the Design, when mentioned to me by my Friend, and was resolved, in the Strength of God, to prosecute it with all my Might.—This was mentioned to

the Honourable the Trustees. They took it kindly at my Hands; and as I then began to be pretty popular at *Bristol*, and elsewhere, they wrote to the *Bishop of Bath and Wells*, for Leave for me to preach a Charity-Sermon on this Occasion in the Abbey-Church. This was granted, and I accordingly began immediately to compose a suitable Discourse: But knowing my first Stay at *Georgia* would be but short, on account of my returning again to take Priests Orders, I thought it most prudent first to go and see for myself, and defer prosecuting the Scheme till I came home: because I could then be better able to judge, whether the Scheme was practicable, and consequently could be able to recommend it with the greater Earnestness.—When I came to *Georgia*, I found many poor Orphans, who, tho' taken notice of by the Honourable Trustees, yet thro' the Neglect of Persons that acted under them, were in miserable Circumstances.—For want of a House to breed them up in, the poor little Ones were tabled out here and there, and besides the Hurt they received by bad Examples, forgot at home what they learnt at School.—Others were at hard Services, and likely to have no Education at all.—Upon seeing this, and finding that his Majesty and Parliament had the Interest of this Colony much at heart, I thought I could not better shew my Regard to God and my Country, than by getting a House and Land for these Children, where they might learn to labour, read, and write, and at the same time be brought up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord.—Accordingly, at my Return to *England*, in the Year 1738, to take Priests Orders, I applied to the Ho

nourable

31

nourable Society for a Grant of 500 Acres of Land, and laid myself under an Obligation to build a House upon it, and to receive from time to time, as many Orphans as the Land and Stock would maintain. As

I had always acted like a Clergyman of the Church of *England*, having preached in a good Part of the *London* Churches, and but a few Months before collected near a thousand Pounds *Sterling*, for the Children belonging to the Charity-Schools in *London* and *Westminster*; it was natural to think, that I might now have the Use at least of some of these Churches to preach in for the Orphans hereafter more immediately to be committed to my Care.—But by that time I had taken Priests Orders, the Spirit of the Clergy began to be much imbittered.—Churches were gradually denied to me.—And I must let this good Design drop, and thousands (I might add ten thousands) go without hearing the Word of God, or preach in the Fields.—Indeed two Churches, one in *London*, viz. *Spittle-Fields*, and one in *Bristol*, viz. *St. Philips* and *Jacob*, were lent me upon this Occasion; but those were all. However, God kept me from being discouraged.—I collected for the Orphan-House in *Moorfields*, two and fifty Pounds one Sabbath-Day Morning: twenty-two Pounds of which was in Copper. It would have rejoiced your Heart to see the People give. They offered him willingly, and took more Pains to come through the Croud and put their Contributions into my Hat, than some would to have got them—Thousands of Prayers were put up with the Alms that were given, and I trust both went up as a Memorial before God. In the Afternoon I collected again at *Kennington-Common*, and continued to do so at most of the Places where I preached. Besides this, two or three of the *Bishops*, and several Persons of Distinction contributed, till at length, having gotten about a thousand and ten Pounds, I gave over collecting, and went with what I had to *Georgia*. At that time Multitudes offered to accompany me; but I chose to take over only a

Surgeon,

32

Surgeon, and a few more of both Sexes, that I thought would be useful in carrying on my Design. These cheerfully embarked with me, desiring nothing for their Pains, but Food and Raiment. My dear Fellow-Traveller, *William Seward*, Esq; also joined with them, and was particularly useful to me on this Occasion. Our first Voyage was to *Philadelphia*, where I was willing to go for the sake of laying in Provision. Having a Captain of a Ship with me, who had been my spiritual Child, by his Advice, I laid out in *London* a good Part of the thousand Pounds for Goods; and by his Care and my other Fellow-Travellers, without any Trouble to myself, got as much by them at *Philadelphia* as nearly defrayed the Family's Expense of coming over. Here God blessed my Ministry daily, and begun that Work in *Philadelphia*, which, I am persuaded, will be remembered thro' the endless Ages of Eternity. *January* following, 1739, I met my Family at *Georgia*, and being unwilling to lose any time, I hired a large House, and took in all the Orphans I could find in the Colony. A great many also of the Town's Children came to School gratis, and many poor People that could not maintain their Children, upon Application, had Leave given them to send their little Ones for a Month or two, or more, as they could spare them, till at length my Family consisted of between 60 and 70. Most of the Orphans were in poor Case; and three or four almost eat up with Lice.—I likewise erected an *Infirmary*, in which many sick People were cured and taken care of gratis. I have now by me a List of upwards of a hundred and thirty Patients, which were under the Surgeon's Hands, exclusive of my own private Family. This Surgeon I furnished with all proper Drugs and Utensils, which put me to no small Expences: And this was still increased by clearing Land, buying Stock, and building a large Dwelling-House, sixty by forty, and Out-Houses,

commodious for a large Family to live in. Sometimes (Labourers and all) I have had a hundred and

twenty

33

twenty to provide for daily. My Friends, as well as myself, seemed to have particular Courage and Faith given us for the Season; and we went on chearfully, believing that he for whose Sake we began, would enable us to finish this good Work. About *March* I began the great House, having only about one hundred and fifty Pounds in Cash. I called it *Bethesda*, because I hoped it would be a House of Mercy to many Souls. Blessed be God, we have not been disappointed of our Hope. It has proved a House of Mercy indeed to many. Several of our Labourers, as well as Visitors, have (in a Judgment of Charity) been born of God here, and given evident Proofs of it, by bringing forth the Fruits of the Spirit. Many Boys have been put out to Trades, and many Girls put out to Service. I had the Pleasure the other Day of seeing three Boys work at the House in which they were bred, one of them out of his Time a Journeyman, and the others serving under their Masters. One that I brought from *New-England* is handsomely settled in *Carolina*; and another from *Philadelphia* is married, and lives very comfortably at *Savannah*. How so large a Family has been supported in such a Colony, without any visible Fund, is wonderful! I am surprized when I look back, and see how for these six Years last past, God has spread a Table in the Wilderness for so many Persons. Were all the particular Providences that have attended this Work recorded, perhaps they would be found not inferior to those mentioned by Professor *Frank*, in his *Pietas Hallensis*, whose Memory is very precious to me, and whose Example has a thousand Times been blessed to strengthen and encourage me in the carrying on this Enterprize. Hereafter, perhaps, when I have more Leisure, I may give you an Account of some of them.

My being detained so long in *England*, has been a little detrimental to me, my Friends not knowing so well how to act, because they expected to see me daily. And I cannot yet say that I have surmounted the first Years Expence, which indeed was very great,

E

and

34

and greater no doubt than it would be now, after my Friends have had so many Years Experience in the Colony.—However I doubt not, but by the Blessing of God, in a short time to pay off my Arrears, and then the Family will be maintained at a small Expence.—My standing annual Charges are now but trifling to what they have been; and my Friends have raised an annual Subscription sufficient for discharging it till the Family may be able to provide for itself.—This, God willing, I hope will be, in a good measure, speedily effected. We have lately begun to use the Plow; and next Year I hope to have many Acres of good Oats and Barley. We have near twenty Sheep and Lambs, fifty Head of Cattle, and seven Horses. We hope to kill a thousand Weight of Pork this Season. Our Garden, which is very beautiful, furnishes us with all Sorts of Greens, &c. We have plenty of Milk, Eggs, Poultry, and make a good deal of Butter weekly. A great Quantity of Wool and Cotton has been given me, and we hope to have sufficient spun and wove for the next Winter's Cloathing.—If the Vines hit, we may expect two or three Hogsheads of Wine out of the Vineyard. The Family now consists of twenty-six Persons. Two of the Orphan Boys are blind, one is little better than an Idiot.—But notwithstanding they are useful in the Family; the one in the Field, and the other in the Kitchen. I have two Women to take care of the Houshold Work, and three Men and two Boys employed about the Plantation and Cattle. A Sett of *Dutch* Servants has been lately sent over: The Magistrates were pleased to give me two; and I

took in a poor old Widow, aged near 70, whom no body else cared to have. A valuable young Man from *New-England* is my School-Master, and in my Absence performs Duty in the Family. On Sabbaths the grown People attend publick Worship at *Savannah*, or at *White-bluff*, a Village near *Bethesda*, where a *Dutch* Minister officiates. My dear Friends who have hitherto been my Assistants, being married

---

and

35

and having each one or two Children, thought it best, as most suitable to the Institution to remove. God has mercifully provided for them, and they are comfortably settled; some at *Savannah*, and some elsewhere. We frequently write to and hear from one another. I need not trouble you with the Order of our Family. It is pretty near the same as usual, and I do not think to make any material Alteration for some time. Many have applied to me to take in their Children as Boarders, and erect a publick School: But I have not yet determined. It is certain such a School would be exceeding useful in this Part of the World, if there should be a Peace, not only for these southern Parts of the Colony, but also for the more southern Parts of *Carolina*, *Purisburgh*, and *Frederica*, where are many fine Youths. I have been prevailed on to take one from *Frederica*, and another from *Purisburgh*, and it may be shall admit more. For the present, considering the Situation of Affairs, I think it most prudent to go on in making what Improvements I can on the Plantation, and bring a Tutor with me from the Northward in the Fall, to teach a few Youths the Languages, and enlarge the Family when Affairs are more settled. The House is a noble commodious Building, and every thing sweetly adapted for bringing up Youth. Here is Land to employ them in to exercise their Bodies, and to keep them from Idleness out of School Hours. Here are none of the Temptations to debauch their tender Minds, which are common to

more populous Countries, or in Places where Children must necessarily be brought up with Negroes. What God intends to do with the Colony is not for me to enquire: Secret Things belong to him. It has hitherto been wonderfully preserved, and the Orphan-house, like the burning Bush, has flourished unconsumed. In fine, the Government has, no doubt, its Welfare much at heart: And, God willing, I intend to carry on my Design till I see the Colony sink or swim. The Money that has been expended on the Orphan-house, and Orphan-house Family, has been of vast Service to

E 2

this

36

this northern Part of the Colony. And tho' it has been greatly detrimental to my own private Interest, yet I do not repent of the Undertaking. No, I rejoice in it daily, and hope yet to see many more Souls born unto God here. I have had a very comfortable Winter. The People of *Savannah*, having no Minister till lately, gladly accepted my Labours; and at *Frederica*, the Gentlemen and Soldiers of General *Oglethorp's* Regiment, as well as the Inhabitants of that Town, received me very gladly. Major *Horton* seems to behave very well. He has a very fine growing Plantation.—I saw Barley in the Ear the first of *March*. *Georgia* is very healthy.—Not above one, and that a little Child, has died out of our Family, since it removed to *Bethesda*. I think the Colony (were the Inhabitants sufficiently numerous) is capable of as good Improvement as any on the Continent.

For the Satisfaction of my Friends, and silencing, if possible, my Enemies, I have had my Accounts from the very beginning to *January* last, publicly audited and examined, Debtor and Creditor, Article by Article; and an Oath for Confirmation, being an End of all Strife, I have sworn to them. A Copy of the Audit, with the particular Names of the Children, I have annexed hereunto. If it gives you or others



any Satisfaction I shall be glad. I have no more to add, but to beg a continued Interest in your Prayers, and subscribe myself,

*Very dear Sir,*

*Your most affectionate Friend,*

*and Servant,*

GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

---

*Orphan-House, in Georgia, D<sup>r</sup>. Sterling,*

*l. s. d.*

To Cash received from the 15th *December*, 1738, to the 1st *Jan.* 1745-6, by publick Collections, private Benefactions, and annual Subscriptions, *per* Account,

4982 12 8

To Ballance super-expended, *Jan.* 1, 1745-6

529 05 1¼

£5511 17 9¼

*Orphan-House, in Georgia. C<sup>r</sup>. Sterling,*

*l. s. d.*

By Cash paid Sundries by particular Accounts examined, from the 15th *Decem.* 1738, to the 1st *Jan.* 1745-6, for Buildings, Cultivation of Lands, Infirmary, Provisions, Wearing Apparel, and other incident Expenses.

£5511 17 9¼

## SAVANNAH in GEORGIA

S. L. THIS Day personally appeared before us *Henry Parker* and *William Spencer*, Bailiffs of *Savannah* aforesaid, the Reverend Mr. *George Whitefield*, and *James Habersham*, Merchant of *Savannah* aforesaid, who, being duly sworn, say, That the Accounts relating to the Orphan-house, now exhibited before us, of which the above is an Abstract amounting on the Debit Side (namely, for Collections and Subscriptions received) to the Sum of Four Thousand Nine Hundred Eighty-two Pounds Twelve Shillings and Eight Pence, *Sterling*, and on the Credit Side (namely, for Disbursements paid) to the Sum of Five Thousand Five Hundred Eleven Pounds Seventeen Shillings and Ninepence Farthing, *Sterling*, do, to the best of their Knowledge, contain

a just and true Account of all the Monies collected by, or given to them, or any other, for the Use and Benefit of the said House; and that the Disbursements, amounting to the Sum aforesaid, have been faithfully applied to and for the Use of the same. And the Reverend Mr. *Whitefield* further declareth, that he hath not converted or applied any Part thereof to his own private Use and Property, neither hath charged the said House with any of his travelling, or any other private Expences whatsoever.

GEORGE WHITEFIELD,  
JAMES HABERSHAM.

---

38

## SAVANNAH *in* GEORGIA.

THIS Day personally appeared before us, *Henry Parker* and *William Spencer*, Bailiffs of *Savannah* aforesaid, *William Woodrooffe*, *William Ewen*, and *William Russel* of *Savannah* aforesaid, who being duly sworn say, That they have carefully and strictly examined all and singular the Accounts relating to the Orphan house in *Georgia*, contained in forty-one Pages, in a Book intituled, *Receipts and Disbursements for the Orphan-house in Georgia*, with the original Bills, Receipts, and other Vouchers, from the fifteenth Day of *December*, in the Year of our Lord One Thou sand Seven Hundred and Thirty-eight, to the first Day of *January*, in the Year of our Lord One Thou sand Seven Hundred and Forty-five; and that the Monies received on Account of the said Orphan-house amounted to the Sum of Four Thousand Nine Hundred Eighty-two Pounds Twelve Shillings and Eightpence, *Sterling*, as above; and that it doth not appear, that the Reverend Mr. *Whitefield* hath converted any Part thereof to his own private Use and Property, or charged the said House with any of his travelling, or other private Expences; but, on the contrary, hath contributed to the said House many valuable Be-

nefactions; and that the Monies disbursed on Account of the said House, amounted to the Sum of Five Thousand Five Hundred Eleven Pounds Seventeen Shillings and Ninepence Farthing, *Sterling*, as above, which we, in justice to the Reverend Mr. *Whitefield*, and the Managers of the said House, do hereby declare, appear to us to be faithfully and justly applied to and for the Use and Benefit of the said House only.

WILLIAM WOODROOFFE,

WILLIAM EWEN,

WILLIAM RUSSEL.

Sworn this 16th Day of *April*, 1746, before us Bailiffs of *Savannah*; in Justification whereof we have hereunto fixed our Hands, and the common Seal.

HENRY PARKER,

WILLIAM SPENCER.

---

IF any Person, upon reading the foregoing Account shall be stirred up to contribute any Thing to wards the defraying the Arrears of further Cloathing and Educating the Children, or furnishing the House, they desired to send their Contributions to Mr. *Branson*, Iron-merchant, in *Philadelphia*; the Revd. Mr. *Smith*, in *Charlestown*, *South-Carolina*; Mr. *John Smith*, Merchant, in *Boston*; the Revd. Mr. *Shutlift*, in *Portsmouth*, in *New-Hampshire*; the Revd. Mr. *Pemberton*, in *New-York*; Mr. *James Habersham*, Merchant, in *Savannah*, *Georgia*; *Gabriel Harris*, Esq; in *Gloucester*; Mr. *James Smith*, at *St. Philip's-Plain*, in *Bristol*; Mr. *John Kennedy*, at *Exon*; Mr. *Jonathan Houlliere*, in *Queen-street*, *Upper Moorfields*; and Mr. *William Strahan*, Printer, in *Wine-Office-Court*, *Fleet-street*.

FIRST JOURNAL

99

A

JOURNAL  
OF A  
**VOYAGE**  
FROM  
**LONDON**  
TO

***Savannah in* GEORGIA**

In two PARTS.

PART I. From *London* to *Gibraltar*.

PART II. From *Gibraltar* to *Savannah*.

By GEORGE WHITEFIELD A.B.

of *Pembroke College, Oxford*.

*With a short Preface, shewing the Reasons of its Publication.*

LONDON,

Printed for JAMES HUTTON at the *Bible and Sun* next the  
*Rose Tavern* without *Temple-Bar*. MDCCXXXVIII.

(Price Six-pence)

## THE PREFACE

*THE following Journal would never have been published, had not a surreptitious Copy of Part of it been printed without the Author's Knowledge or Consent: He knows himself too well to obtrude his little private Concerns upon the World; especially when intermixed with such Passages relating to others, as none but an unthinking Person could judge proper to divulge.*

*Had I (to whom alone Mr. W. gave Authority to print, what his Friends should think proper) been advised to publish this Journal, all Names would certainly have been left out, with those less material Circumstances which manifest the Persons: And it was at the earnest Sollicitation of several of Mr. W's Friends that I determined to print the whole, lest some-*  

*a*

*thing*

*ii*

*thing should be trump'd up for a Voyage from London to Gibraltar.*

*Those who are mentioned in the surreptitious Copy, will we doubt not wholly acquit Mr. W. and his Friends of it; and several of them, we hope by this Time, think it no Scandal to be Convicted CHRISTIANS.*

*Mr. Cooper, it seems, is offended with my calling his Edition of Mr. W's Journal a surreptitious one: But as it crept into the World by Stealth, without any just Warrant or Authority, I know not how to give it a softer Epithet.*

*Mr. W. and every Author has an undoubted Right to suppress any Work of his, so long as*

he pleases; and if he thinks fit to have it printed, He is to determine who shall print it. He likewise has a Power to submit his Work to the Judgment and Correction of Friends chosen by himself, either entirely to suppress it, if they think that proper; or, if they think more proper to publish it, then to prepare it for the Press.

Now Mr. W. gave Mr. Cooper no Leave to print his Journal, nor to any Person from whom Mr. Cooper received it. He sent the

*Journal*

iii

Journal to me, to be communicated privately to his Friends; but not to be made publick without the Advice and Correction of certain Persons particularly known to me, of whose Judgment he has a better Opinion than of his own. But neither have those Friends of Mr. W. approved the publishing of this Journal by Mr. Cooper, nor given him any Copy prepared for the Press.

This I think sufficiently justifies my calling his surreptitious.

Mr. Cooper likewise knows, Mr. W. has published (in Advertisements with his Name affixed,) That for the future every Thing wrote by him should be published by me only, and no other. Had therefore Mr. Cooper paid a due Regard to Justice and his Neighbour's Property, He would have asked the Person, who offered the Copy to Sale, this Question, very often asked by Honest Tradesmen: How He came by it? What Right He had to dispose of it? A little Enquiry would have satisfied him that the Person, whoever he was, could give him no just Warrant to print it.

By not making this Enquiry, Mr. Cooper has been guilty of a great Oversight, to say no

---

*worse*

iv

*worse of it. And it is to be hoped, that no  
Persons of Honour or Worth, whether Mr. W's  
Friends or others, will buy any of these sur  
reptitious Copies, and encourage Practises so  
utterly inconsistent with Fair Trading.*

James Hutton.

*Temple-Bar,*

Aug. 18. 1738.

[[image of phoenix rising]]

Mr.

I

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s  
JOURNAL.

PART I.

From *London* to *Gibraltar*.

*My Dear Friends,*

ACcording to your Request, I have herewith sent you an Account of what GOD has done for my Soul since I left *England*.—The sole Motive (if my Heart doth not deceive me) which induced me to leave my native Country was a full Conviction that it was the Divine *Will I should*. What Reasons I can urge for this Persuasion, is needless to mention, because few in this Case would judge impartially; and what seems a Reason to me, may not be deem'd so by another: Let it suffice to inform you, that after earnest Prayer for a Year and half that if the Design was not of GOD, it might come to naught, tho' strongly solicited to act in a contrary Manner, I found myself as eagerly bent on going abroad as ever.

Accordingly, *Wednesday December* 28, 1737, after having continued instant in Prayer with my Friends at Mr. *J. H.*'s, and afterwards receiving the Holy Sacrament at St. *Dunstan*'s, being recommended to the Grace of GOD by a great Number of weeping Christian Brethren at the Rev. Mr. *H.*'s, I set out at Night for *Deptford* in a Coach, accompanied by four Friends, and got there safe at Ten.—Here a Widow Woman gladly received us into her House; and many of my Friends gave me the Meeting, who came on Foot from *London*, with intent to accompany me to the Ship;

B

and



2

and with them I took a little bodily Refreshment; spent two or three Hours in particular Intercession for our Friends and Enemies, and all Mankind; sung Psalms and Hymns and spiritual Songs, and then betook ourselves to Rest, and *the Lord made us to dwell in Safety*, [*Oh who can express the unspeakable Joy of religious Friends!*]

*Thursday, December 29.* Rose early in the Morning, and continued instant in Intercession, chanting, and singing of Psalms with my Friends 'till Nine, at which our Hearts were much rejoiced. After this we went in quest of our Ship, but finding she was fallen down to *Purfleet*, and was not to remove to *Gravesend* for some time, we returned to *Deptford* praising God, and praying for a Blessing on our intended Voyage. *The Lord perform all our Petitions!*

Being returned to *Deptford* with my Friends, we dined comfortably together, joined in a Psalm, read the Lessons for the Day, and concluded with Prayer: some were then obliged to depart for *London*. After they were gone I continued with the rest in particular Intercession for near two Hours, and then GOD was pleased to comfort my Heart. *If parting from a few earthly Friends for a Season be so grievous, How will the Wicked bear to be parted from God and good Men for all Eternity!*

It happened providentially that a Lecture was to be preached that Evening at *Deptford*, and several importuned me to preach it; at first I was fearful (O me of little Faith) having no Notes. But afterwards (having got the Consent of the Minister) I went up, depending on the Promise, *Lo! I am with you always even unto the End of the World*, and was enabled to preach to a large Congregation without the least Hesitation. *Did any one yet ever trust in the Lord and was forsaken?* What gave me great Comfort, and made me more thankful, was, that the Opportunity, I believe, was granted in Answer to Prayer.

*Friday, December 30.* Went with our Baggage and nine or ten Friends in a *Gravesend* Boat to *Purfleet*, where the *Whitaker* was fallen down. Spent the Time we were on

the Water in singing Psalms, and particular Intercession and came on board about Ten in the Morning.

I spoke some few Things to my new Charge, spent the Remainder of the Day on Shore with my Friends, in singing Psalms, Prayer, and exhorting one another to Love and good Works: Returned at Night to our Ship, and lay with my friend *H. [[Habersham]]* upon the Ground in a Matress, in the great Cabin, and GOD was pleased to give me a Proof that he was with me in the Ship.

*Satur-*

3

*Saturday, Dec. 31.* Began this Morning to have publick Prayers on open Deck, at which the Officer and Soldiers attended with Decency and Reverence. After Prayer I enlarged a little on those Words of *St. Paul, I am determined to know nothing among you save JESUS CHRIST and him crucified*; told them how my future Conduct would be; made some Professions of my hearty Love and sincere Affection for their Souls; and then dismiss'd them, I believe somewhat moved. *Oh! that I may have Grace to act suitably to this Profession!*

To-day also I began to visit the Sick, and took that Opportunity of discoursing on the Uncertainty of Life and the Certainty of a future Judgment, to those around me; and GOD was pleased not to let my Words fall to the Ground.

About Twelve, I went and paid my Friends a Visit who were on Shore, and spent two or three delightful Hours in praising and blessing God.

Soon came another Friend with two honest Men from *Gravesend* desiring me in the Name of the Minister to come and preach to them the following Lord's Day; at first I was unwilling to leave my own Flock in the Ship, but my Friends Reasonings overbalanced mine, and I went on board, read publick Prayers, visited the Sick, gave the Soldiers an Exhortation (at which the Soldiers were **surprisingly** affected) and then took Boat with them for *Gravesend*. My Heart was much enlarged in Intercession. The Evening was exceeding calm, the Sky clear, and all things conspired to praise that glorious and lofty one that inhabits Eternity, who

*stretcheth forth the Heavens like a Curtain, and holdeth the Waters in the Hollow of his Hand.*

About Seven at Night, GOD brought us safe to *Gravesend*, where Mr. H. [[Hutton]] received both me and my Friends most courteously, and loaded us with many Benefits, *the good Lord have Mercy on him in that Day.*

We spent the Evening very agreeably in Prayer, and Singing, and then betook ourselves to Sleep, having before exhorted one another to prepare our Spices and Ointments of Praise and Thanksgiving, and to rest on the approaching Sabbath *according to the Commandment.*

*Sunday, January 1.* Blessed be God for the happy Beginning of a new Year; for it has been a Day of fat Things: We rose in the Morning, and retired to an adjacent Hill with my Friends to Prayer, and afterwards were most agreeably surprised with the Coming of several more *London*

B 2

Friends

4

Friends (*whom I love as my own Soul*) who came all Night on the Water to see me.

About Ten we went to Church, where I preach'd; and the Curate was so kind, at our Request, as to give us the Sacrament.

In the Afternoon I preach'd again to a more numerous Congregation than in the Morning: And being to stay there but one Lord's Day, I was pressed to preach and read Prayers a third Time, at Six in the Evening. It was a Thing I found entirely new; but, upon the Curate's readily complying to lend the Pulpit, and my Friends and the People's Importunity, I look'd upon it as a Call of Providence, and accordingly read Prayers and preached to a very thronged Auditory; and this I did without Notes, having brought but two written Sermons with me. *Oh! who can express the loving Kindness of the Lord, or shew forth all his Praise!*

*Monday, Jan. 2 1737/8.* Sate up 'till Twelve at Night, to take leave of some of my Friends, whose Business obliged them to be at *London* the next Morning; and then, after three or four Hours Rest, rose and walk'd to *Greenhith* with the

Remainder of my Friends, intending to take a Boat there, and so return to my Charge at *Purfleet*. But just as we were entring the Boat, providentially came a Boy, telling us, the *Whitaker* was fallen down to *Gravesend*, and ready to sail, if not actually under Sail; we immediately hasted back from whence we came, and went on our Way rejoicing.

About Eleven, we reach'd *Gravesend*, and happily found the Ship was not to sail 'till the Morrow. This put Gladness into my Heart, as it gave me an Opportunity of settling some Affairs of Consequence, and conversing a little longer with my dear Friends.

About Twelve o' Clock I went on board, leaving my Friends to dine on Shore: And as I went along, GOD was pleased to shew me he had given a Blessing to my Discourses; The People seem'd greatly alarm'd, and wish'd me heartily a good Voyage, and the very Sailors were surprisingly affectionate. *Blessed be God for setting his Seal to my unworthy Ministry!* Spent the remainder of the Day in settling Things on Board, visiting the Sick, teaching the Children, and reading Prayers, and Preaching. *All Love, all Glory be to God through Christ!*

In the Evening, I went on Shore again to my Friends, pray'd, sung Psalms, and expounded (*I think*) a Chapter out of the holy Scriptures to them, and was not a little comforted. *Praise the Lord, O my soul.*

*Tuesday,*

5

*Tuesday, January 3.* Went on board, read Prayers, and preached, visited the Sick, and then took a final Leave, as I thought, of my Friends. Spent the Afternoon in writing Letters, and putting Things in Order. And (*what I esteemed a great Blessing*) though I had been used to so large a Sphere of Action, yet my Change of Life gave me not the least Uneasiness, but my Heart was refreshed with Joy unspeakable, and full of Glory.

This Evening began to read Prayers between Decks, judging it would be too cold above.

At Night I went, according to Custom, on Shore to *Gravesend*, where I was agreeably surprised by seeing my Friends.

I took Leave of them in the Morning once more, the Weather preventing their going to *London*. Here also Mr. *C.W.* and Mr. *W.H.* gave me the Meeting, with whom we prayed, sung Psalms, commended one another to God, and parted the next Morning, like Christian Brethren.

*Wednesday, January 4.* Came on board at ten in the Morning; but I could not have publick Prayers, because the Soldiers were engaged with their Officer: But I visited the Sick, and perceived the Soldiers were attentive to hear me, when I applied myself to those around the sick Persons. I also distributed amongst the Sick of my *London* Friends kind Presents, to convince them I had a Love for, and to gain an Access to their Souls. I visited the Sick, read Prayers, and preached Extempore (as I constantly do Morning and Evening) and went with Mr *H.* in the Evening on Shore to *Gravesend*, where we interceded for Friends, expounded a Chapter, and went to Bed, with *that Peace of Mind which passeth all Understanding. Oh that the sensual, careless, half Christian could but know the Comforts of Religion!*

*Thursday, January 5, 1737/8.* This Day **GOD was with me of a Truth:** I was refreshed in Spirit, by hearing from some *London* Friends, and receiving some kind Presents from Persons I could never have thought of; was assisted much in writing Letters; came on board, read Prayers, and preached; visited the Sick, and had GOD with me all the Day long: Begun to catechise six or seven of the young Soldiers on open Deck. I was surprised they would submit to it; but GOD has the Hearts of all Men in his Hands.

Great Civility was shewn me on board by the Officers; and Captain *W.* sent his Boat to fetch me to *Gravesend*, whither I went; having first visited the Sick, read Prayers, and preached on Deck.

When

---

6

When on Shore, I wrote several Letters, expounded a Chapter to a Room full of People. Catechised the Children of the House, and three of my own Companions, and then went to Bed, full of *Peace and Joy in the Holy Ghost.*

My Health of Body, I could perceive, increased, and my Soul was much refreshed. I now began once more to feel the Comforts of a retired Life, and blessed GOD from my Heart, that he had called me whither I was going.

*Friday, January 6.* About Nine I came on board, read Prayers, and preached between Decks; and Mr *H.* sung a Psalm, as he generally does. In the mean while, the Ship loosed from *Gravesend*, and sail'd by Twelve o' Clock to the *Nore*. We had a very brisk Gale of Wind.

GOD gave me great Comfort, and I went between Decks, and sate down on the Ground, and read *Arndt's True Christianity*: And part of the Time I stood upon Deck, and admired the Wonders of GOD in the Deep.

Three or four were added to-day to my Catechumens, some of whom I had great Hopes of. Read Prayers, preach'd upon Deck, catechised my own Companions; interceded upon Deck near the Stern, (having no Place for Retirement); talked to the Sailors on the Fore-Castle; wrote my Journal; and climb'd up into my Cabin to Bed, where my Friend *H.* [[\*]] and I lay as comfortably as on a Bed of State.

Some of the Passengers, amongst whom was Mr. *H.* [[\*]] began now to be sick: But I felt very little of it; on the contrary GOD enabled me to rejoice with exceeding great Joy; my Heart was warmed by talking to the Sailors, and I was so lifted even above myself, *that I could have watched unto Prayer* and Praise all Night.

I found that above an hundred exclusive of the Ship's Company were on board: *God grant that not one of them may perish through my Neglect!*

*Saturday, Jan. 7.* Breakfasted with some of the Gentlemen in the Great Cabbin, who were very civil, and let me put in a Word for GOD.

Read publick Prayers, and began to expound the *Lord's Prayer* to the Soldiers by way of Sermon, and GOD enabled me to do it with Power. After that I instructed my Catechumens, who now amounted to twelve or thirteen. *God make them Soldiers of CHRIST as well as of the King.*

Had an Hour's Conversation with a Gentleman on board, on our Fall in *Adam*, and the Necessity of our New Birth in CHRIST JESUS, and hope it was not unpleasant to him.

To-

7

To-day obtained what I prayed for, *viz.* a Place to retire into: for Capt. *W.* on my bare mentioning my Want of such a thing, offered me the free Use of his own Cabbin, a Place very commodious for that Purpose.

Catechised those that went with me on open Deck, for Example to others, and found they improved. Capt. *W.* [[Whiting]] the two Cadets, and Serjeants, sate very serious and attentive. But when the Captain of the Soldiers came, my Heart sunk a little (though without any Reason); however I did not leave off. *O Corruption, thou art my Sister!*

Read publick Prayers, and finished my Exposition of the *Lord's Prayer* to the Soldiers, at which they attended very orderly.—At Night I and my five Companions went upon Deck, and interceded and sung Psalms, by which my Heart was much enlarged. The Weather was very cold, and the Wind magnified that GOD, *at whose Word the stormy Wind ariseth.*

Now I fulfilled my Promise to the Lord's People, and while the Winds and Storms were blowing over me, I made earnest Supplication to GOD for them.

The Ship continued at the *Nore* all this Day, but I hope we made some Advances towards Eternity.

In the Evening the Wind blew very fresh indeed; and had our Ship been in the *Downs*, we should have been in great Danger. *How wisely doth God provide for us!* Most People began now to be Sea-sick, particularly *J.D.* one of my Companions was grievously afflicted.

*Sunday, Jan. 8.* My Friend *H.* and I have great Reason to be thankful to God; for we slept as well as we could desire, though the Wind blew very hard, and the Sailors were very busy in taking care of the Ship, which by the Morning had drag'd her Anchor two Miles.

Went early and visited the sea-sick Soldiers and their Families between Decks, gave them some Sage Tea and Sugar,

## FIRST JOURNAL

III

&c. and excited them all to Thankfulness and Repentance, out of Gratitude for their Preservation from the last Night's Storm; and returned publick Thanks at Morning Prayers.

Thought much of my dear *London* Friends; though absent in Body, was present in Spirit in Sacred Ordinances; and interceded for them and all Mankind **most fervently**. Read publick Prayers and preached twice to the Soldiers: and read Prayers once in the great Cabbin to the Officers, at their Request, which I liked very well. Catechised my own Companions, but had not Time to catechise the Soldiers, on account of attending the Sick.

To-

8

To-day being the first Lord's Day I have spent this long time in so private a manner, I could not avoid reflecting on the following Lines:

## I.

*I sigh when-e'er my musing Thoughts  
Those happy Days present, &  
When I with Troops of pious Friends  
Thy Temple did frequent;*

## II.

*When I advanc'd with Songs of Praise, &  
My solemn Vows to pay, &  
And led the joyful sacred Throng  
That kept the Festal Day.*

But I considered it was the Divine Will that placed me here, and therefore I rejoiced. *He is unworthy the Name of a Christian, who is not as willing to hide himself when God commands, as to act in a publick Capacity.*

Began now to live a little by Rule, and to examine into the Interiors of those **that** came with me; which I found a most useful Exercise both for them and me.—Continued all this Day at the *Nore*, being quite becalmed; and at Night had a most comfortable Intercession for all Friends, &c.



*Monday, Jan. 9.* Mr. *H.* began to learn *Latin*. Had near twenty Catechumens with my own Companions, who I believe made some Advances.

Weigh'd from the *Nore*, and sail'd before the Wind in company with several others, which carried us on so briskly that we anchor'd before *Margate* about One. Here I enjoyed a wish'd-for Opportunity of writing to some of my *London* Friends, and found my Heart greatly enlarged towards them.

After Dinner having some Necessaries to buy, Mr *H.* and I went on Shore to *Margate*. The Wind blew very fresh, and the Sea raged horribly, but He that dwelleth on high was mightier, and kept us from the least Fright, and filled me with great Joy, and brought us safe on Shore.

We had the most abandon'd Man with us I ever saw, who came out of an *East-India* Ship: He had so much of the Devil in him, that the very Boat-men, profane as they were, abhor'd him: From whence I infer, that was the Devil himself to appear as he is, the wickedest Sinners could not but detest him.

This Afternoon I began to feel the Power of Faith more than ever I did before, and to find that as the Day, so will

our

9

our Strength be. When I went into the Boat the Sea run dangerously high; but I could boldly say:

*God is our Refuge in Distress,†*  
*A present Help when Dangers press;†*  
*In Him undaunted we'll confide,†*  
*Tho' Earth were from her Center toss'd,†*  
*And Mountains in the Ocean lost,†*  
*Torn piecemeal by the roaring Tide.*

About Five we got safe to *Margate*, where having received a little bodily Refreshment, and recommended ourselves to GOD in Prayer, we went about the Town to buy the Things we came for. The Generality of the People we met with were civilized and teachable.

After we had done our secular Business, we paid the Curate a Visit, the Minister being at *Canterbury*; He received us most courteously: Our Conversation *was such as tended to the Use of Edifying*; it ran chiefly upon the great Importance of the Ministerial Function; the Necessity of preaching *up* the Doctrine of the New Birth; and the Necessity and Benefit of Visiting from House to House.

About Ten we left him, greatly refreshed in Spirit, and thankful to GOD for exciting Persons every where to entertain us.

On the Morrow I sent him Mr. *Law's Serious Call* and *Christian Perfection*, with some other Books; and also a few Catechisms and Sermons to some other serious People, whom Providence put in our way. Now *Thanks be to God*, saith the Apostle, *which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the Savour of his Knowledge to us in every Place!*

*Tuesday, Jan. 10.* About Four this Morning, Mr. *H.* and I arose, intending to go on board immediately; But the Wind blew so *very* violent, that by the Advice of the Boat-men we deferred going on board 'till Day-light; and therefore after we had kneeled on the Shore, and prayed for ourselves and others, we went back to the Inn; and took that Opportunity of writing to a Friend or two.

About Seven we took Boat and praised and blessed GOD to see the Floods clap their Hands. About Eight we came on board, and found we had great Reason to be thankful that we were on Shore last Night: The Sailors told us, that the Lightning shone on the Sea all Night; that the Storm was very great, and the Ship's Long-Boat was lost.

I read publick Prayers, returned publick Thanks for our Deliverance, and expounded by way of Sermon the Second

C

Article

10

Article of the *Creed*, which I began yesterday. Did the same after Evening Prayers. Spent the Remainder of the Day in writing Letters; and have not enjoyed a more calm delightful Frame of Mind a long time.

The Sick increased on my Hands, but were very thankful for furnishing them with Sage Tea, Sugar, Broth, &c. At

the Sight of so many Objects of Pity, I was sensibly touched with a fellow feeling of their Miseries. I could not but transverse the *Prodigal's* Complaint, *How many of my Father's Children are ready to perish with Hunger, whilst I have enough and to spare?*

Had a most comfortable Sense of the Divine Presence with me in many Particulars: And in the Evening, joined in Intercession with my other Companions on Deck, in behalf of absent Friends and all Mankind.

*Wednesday, Jan. 11.* Weigh'd from *Margate* Road, and cast Anchor in the *Downs*, the Ship sailing most pleasantly before the Wind. Wrote several Letters whilst the Ship was under Sail. Had my Spirits mightily refreshed upon our Arrival in the *Downs*, by hearing from two or three Christian Brethren at *London*; and was desirous to bless GOD for a providential Opportunity that was offered of sending a whole Packet to them and some other Friends, to acquaint them how lovingly the LORD had dealt with me. *O that the Mercies bestowed on me, may through the Thanksgiving of many redound to the Glory of GOD!*

Had no publick Prayers this Morning, being much hurried in writing Letters to go by Post; and when I went to read, the Soldiers were engaged in their Military Affairs upon Deck: so that I did nothing but visit the Sick. I fear I did foolishly: *Father, forgive me, for thy dear Son's sake!*

Went on in explaining the *Creed* after Evening Prayers, and was enabled to talk of the Crucifixion of our LORD: I believe it pricked them to the Heart. *O that I could hear them cry out, What shall we do to be saved?*

Had the Comfort to hear good was done among the Soldiers; and the Captain was pleased to express his Approbation of my Conduct. *God grant I may with a single Eye seek to please the Captain of my Salvation!*

After Evening Prayers and visiting the Sick, went ashore with Mr. H. *[[\*]]* to *Deal*; and were so highly delighted with a Prospect of the *Downs*, that we expressed our Thankfulness in singing of Psalms all the way. The Boat-men, I believe, wonder'd at it at first: but they were not ashamed to *blaspheme*, and I thought I had no reason to be ashamed to *praise* GOD.

---

I had

11

I had the Satisfaction before we got to *Deal*, to hear one of them join seriously with us; and perceived a surprizing Alteration in their Behaviour always after, *Blessed be GOD!*

About Five we got to *Deal*, and not knowing a single Person, went (as at *Margate*) to pay my respects to the two Ministers of the Place; but finding neither of them at Home, spent the Remainder of the Evening with my Friend *H.* very comfortably in religious Talk, Family Prayer, interceding for absent Friends and all Mankind, and writing to Christian Brethren. And even here GOD did not leave my Ministry without a Witness; for he was pleased to impress something I said on a poor Woman's Heart, that providentially came in, and joined with us in Family Prayer: for which we endeavoured to thank Him. *Behold how great a Fire this little Spark kindled before we left Deal!*

*Thursday, Jan. 12.* Spent most of the Morning in Writing Letters: Went about Eleven on board, and was highly delighted with the Prospect on the *Downs*, which was exceeding calm; and a great many beautiful Ships which were riding here added to the Prospect. *O that Men who occupy their Business in the great Waters would (since they cannot but see) admire GOD's Wonders in the Deep!*

Read Prayers and went on explaining the *Creed* to the Soldiers; visited and prayed with the Sick; and began this Afternoon to explain the *Catechism* to the Women by themselves: I find they are in Number about sixteen; and blessed be GOD were much affected. *Prosper thou, O LORD, this Work of my Hands upon me!*

Had some religious Talk with the Surgeon of the Soldiers, who seems very well disposed. I seldom (if ever) see him idle, and find he has many good Qualities. *GOD grant Christianity may be grafted in him!*

After Evening Prayers and expounding the *Creed*, went again to *Deal* with Mr. *H.* to buy some Necessaries for our Companions. Spent the Remainder of the Evening in writing Letters, and reading and praying with eight or nine poor

People, who came I suppose at the Report of the other poor Woman to hear me.

*Friday, Jan. 13.* Remained all Day on Shore, the Weather being too rough to go on Board: Was in Care about leaving my Flock so long; but hope this short Absence will make our Meeting more agreeable to-morrow. Had the Pleasure of joining in publick Worship at *Deal*, in a pretty Chapel; which was more agreeable on account of our being confined for some time within the narrow Limits of a Ship.

Set

12

Set apart this Day as a Day of Humiliation, Abstinence, and Intercession for Friends and all Mankind, and found my Heart greatly enlarged in that divine Exercise. *Intercession is a glorious Means to sweeten the Heart.*

Spent the Remainder of the Day, and set up 'till One in the Morning in writing to Friends.

Had two or three added to my Company at Night, who seemed very attentive, and prayed for me most heartily. *The Poor receive the Gospel.* I dispersed some Books among them, as I saw proper: *I hope GOD will give them his Blessing.*

Expected Letters to-night from *London*, but was disappointed: *GOD enable me in every thing to give Thanks!*

Fancied myself all this Day in my little Cell at *Oxford*: for I have not spent so many Hours in sweet Retirement since I left the University. *The Pleasure I felt was inexpressible.*

*Saturday, Jan. 14.* Spent the Morning in writing Letters, and was much pleased with the pious Conversation of a poor Woman, who was one of my Auditors last Night, and who I believe, has passed through the Pangs of the new Birth.

Hasted on board about Eleven, (the Wind promising fair) to take us out of the Channel, and was affectionately received by the People.

I was greatly delighted to see all the Ships sail together from the *Downs*. Nature, indeed, would have been glad to have staid till the Morrow, that I might have received Letters from my *London* Friends, but GOD, I considered, ordereth all Things for the Good of those that love him, and therefore gave Thanks from my Heart. Examined into the

State of my little Ones, (my Friend *H*'s Charge) and had Reason to hope well of them.

Was enlarged in preaching after Prayers to the Soldiers, and spent two most pleasant Hours in reading God's holy Word. At Night, though it was piercingly cold, we continued instant in Intercession on Deck; and the Prospect of a clear Sky, the Stars glittering, and the Moon shining bright, warmed my Heart, and made me *greatly rejoice in Spirit*. I now began to be more reconciled to a Ship Life; for God gave me Health of Body, and, without which all is nothing, Content of Mind. Had near an Hour's Conversation with one who, I hope, will become an altogether Christian. *Oh! that that blessed Time would come.*

Sunday, January 15, 1737. God gave me and Mr *H*. sweet Sleep. Had near two Hours Retirement in the Captain's round House, and was much delighted with singing Psalms on Deck with my Companions. Read publick Pray-

ers

13

ers in the Cabbin this Morning, and was much enlarged in preaching to the Soldiers on this Article, *I believe in the Holy Ghost*: In treating of which, I took Occasion to shew the Nature and Necessity of the New Birth; a Subject on which I delight to dwell.

Catechised the Soldiers, and, blessed be GOD, find some of them improved. Was enlarged again in my Evening Sermon to the Soldiers, and had Prayers a second Time in the great Cabbin, which gave me no small Satisfaction; the Officers, &c. willingly comply'd as soon as I imposed it; *GOD be praised!*

Had great Delight in reading the Holy Scriptures, enjoy'd an unspeakable Peace of Mind, and was much comforted in interceding for Friends, &c. on Deck. The Weather was cold, and the Wind blew very hard; but when the Heart is full of God, outward Things affect it little. *Surely my Friends in England pray for me; methinks I feel they do.*

All the Day the Sea was entirely becalm'd; every Thing about us seem'd hush'd and quiet, as though it would remind us of that sacred Rest the Day was set apart to com-

memorate. In the Evening the Wind blew very fresh, but being full against us, we were obliged to sail back to the *Downs* (though we had got near fifty Miles) where we arrived about Twelve a Clock.

*Monday, January 16.* After private Prayer, was most agreeably entertain'd with some Letters from my *London* Friends, which fill'd my Soul with unspeakable Pleasure, and caused me to shed Tears of Joy. *If the Correspondence of good People is so transporting here, O! how unspeakably ravishing must the Personal Communion of Saints be hereafter. Hasten, O Lord, that blessed Time, and let thy Kingdom come.*

Was a little affected by seeing a poor Soldier tied Neck and Heels, for several mutinous Words he had spoken. The Captain related the Case to me, and said, if I could make him sensible of his Crime, I might beg him off. I endeavoured to do it, but, alas, in vain; he continued obstinate, and thereby hindered my Design taking Effect. After this, the Captain ordered him to be tied down between Decks; from whence I took Occasion, in my Morning Sermon, to exhort the Soldiers to obey them that *had the Rule over them*, and to avoid those Sins, that would provoke GOD to command them to be *tied Hand and Foot, and to be cast into outer Darkness, where would be weeping and gnashing of Teeth.*

About

<sup>14</sup>

About Twelve, a *Deal* Boat coming along Side, I was minded to go on Shore to answer my Letters. The Sea was very boisterous, but God brought us to Shore rejoicing. *O wherefore did I in the least fear? What am I, when left to myself!*

It being the 16<sup>th</sup> Day of the Month, Mr *H.* and I joined in an Hour's Intercession and Abstinence, with all those that meet together to bewail their own and the Sins of the Nation. About Four, took some Bodily Refreshment; and from thence till One in the Morning, continued answering my Correspondents, *having first spread their Letters before the Lord in Prayer, and begged that I might send them Answers of Peace.*

*Tuesday, January 17.* Was awaken'd with an Alarm, that the Ship was ready to sail, but found it soon contradicted. Spent an Hour in particular Intercession, and the rest of the Morning in writing Letters, and teaching Mr. *H.* Latin. *Oh that I may be made an Instrument of breeding him up for God!*

Came on board about Two in the Afternoon, and found all Things quiet in the Ship, was most kindly received; and I **observed** the Women were very attentive when I proceeded to explain the Catechism to them. *May God open their Hearts as he did that of Lydia, that these may give diligent Heed to the Things that are spoken.*

Was much enlarged in my Evening Discourse, and hope the Word entered into their Hearts. Was kindly invited by the Post-Master of *Deal*, to lye at his House. Gained an Opportunity, by walking at Night on Deck, after Intercession, to talk closely to the Chief Mate, and one of the Sergeants of the Regiment, and hope my Words were not altogether spoken in vain. *O that all Men would come to the Knowledge of the Truth, and be saved!*

*Wednesday, January 18.* Spent all the Morning in Retirement, reading the Scriptures, publick Prayer, and preaching; the Weather being extremely pleasant.

Began to live by Rule more than ever; for nothing I find is to be done without it. All **that** had been sick being recovered, came to Prayers, for whom I gave Thanks; **particularly to them:** At the End of my Sermon exhorting them with the utmost Earnestness, to *Sin no more, least a worse Evil should befall them*, and to shew forth their Thankfulness, not only with their Lips, but in their Lives. *O that there may be always in them such a Mind.*

Finished

15

Finished my Exposition on the *Creed*. Read publick Prayers, and preached as usual in the Afternoon. Catechised both my own Companions and the Soldiers; and was pleased to see many others were attentive to hear.



Had great Comfort in reading the Scriptures. Was afterwards a little inclined to Heaviness, but drove it off by a long Intercession. *Prayer is an Antidote against every Evil.*

Upon Examination, had Reason to hope my Companions grew in Grace; *blessed be God for it!*

About Eleven at Night, went and set down among the Sailors in the Steerage, and reasoned with them *about Righteousness, Temperance, and a Judgement to come; at which some of them almost trembled.*

Thursday, January 19. Was much comforted by hearing from my Friends. Began, after Prayers this Morning, to explain the Catechism to the Soldiers, and drew proper Inferences by way of Sermon: I find it is much approved of, and, for them, by far the fittest Way of Instruction.

Spent the Afternoon in answering Correspondents; was much assisted in my Evening Exposition on the Catechism; and had great Hopes of two Soldiers becoming Christians indeed: *Would to God all the King's Soldiers were such!*

Was enabled to compose great Part of a new Sermon this Evening. Imlarged in Intercession, and afterwards much rejoiced by three more Letters, and set up 'till One in the Morning, to answer them. *Whatsoever thou findest in thy Hand to do, saith the wise Man, do it with all thy Might.*

We had now such a calm and smooth Sea, that all the People *every where* expressed their Admiration of it. *God grant we may in a Calm provide for a Storm; and, like the primitive Christians, when the Churches had Rest, walk in the Comforts of the Holy Ghost, and be edified!*

Friday, January 20. *Rose with great Peace of Mind,* spent all the Morning in composing a Sermon.

Happily composed a Difference between a Soldier and his Wife, who were one of the four Couple I married when first I came on board: The Man had resolved to leave her, but upon my reminding him of his Marriage Vow, and entreating him with Love, he immediately took to her again. *What may not a Minister do through Christ, when his Flock love him?* Almost finished the Sermon I began Yesterday, *blessed be GOD!*

Went on in expounding the *Catechism* after Evening Prayer; and now began to read the first Lesson, which I purpose-ly omitted before, not knowing they would bear it, and wil-

5

ling

16

ling to imitate *Jacob, who was careful of his little Ones, not to over drive them.*

Proposed to the Captain to read a few Prayers in the great Cabbin every Night, which he readily consented to, and withal said, he should be glad to hear me preach, whenever I should think proper.

Was surprised in the midst of my Evening's Discourse by the chief Mate, who came and told me, that the Minister of *Upper Deal* had sent a Boat for me, desiring me immediately to come on Shore. Accordingly, after I had concluded, Mr. *H.* and I went and found the Minister, which was left to officiate, who desired me, at the Request of the Inhabitants, to preach the *Sunday* following. After this, we retired to our Lodging in *Deal*; and after a Sermon, and long Intercession, was *unspeakably* comforted by the Reception of several Letters from Persons, who, I believe, sincerely fear GOD. *At which my Heart was so full, that I could not but kneel down, pray, and return Thanks to GOD for them.*

Found the Number of my Hearers greatly increased to Night, and very joyful to see me once more on Shore. I sate up 'till One in the Morning, answering my Correspondents, and then laid down, filled with such *Joy as no Man could take from me, nor a Stranger intermeddle with. Oh that all Men knew the Comforts of Religion!*

*Saturday, January 21.* Spent all the Day in writing Letters, and delightful Conversation with Mr. *H.* [[\*]].

At Night, the Number of my Hearers was so increased, that the Stairs were full, as well as my Room. I expounded to them the 25<sup>th</sup> of St. *Matthew*, at which they were much affected, and seemed to love and pray for me most earnestly: *And I desire to have no greater Portion than the Prayers of the Poor.*

Sate up 'till One, writing Letters; gave Thanks for the Blessing of the Week, and then lay down in Peace, hoping

to rise early the next Morning, more fit for my Master's Service.

Sunday, January 22. About Nine, went on board with Captain *W.* [[\*]] who is always extremely civil. Visited the Sick, and read Prayers in the Great Cabbin. Read Prayers, and preached my Sermon on Early Piety, on open Deck to the Soldiers; the Officers, and other Gentlemen, attending *very* seriously. The Weather was very cold, *but Preaching warmed my Heart.*

About Noon went on Shore with Capt. *W.* [[\*]] and Mr. *H.* [[\*]]. Dined at the Post-Master's, who received us hospitably.

Afternoon,

17

Afternoon, preached at *Upper Deal*, on *Acts xxviii.* 26. Many seemed pricked to the Heart, and some so quickened, that they expressed a Desire to follow me wherever I should go. *O free Grace in CHRIST JESUS!* I have scarce known a Time I have preached any where, but I have seen some Effect of my Doctrine. *From the Hearts of the Mighty the Word of the LORD hath not turned back, the Sword of the Spirit returned not empty.* A Proof this, I hope, that the Words are not my own, and that God is with me of a Truth: *May I never, by Pride and Vain Glory, provoke him to depart from me.*

Stay'd all Night on Shore, to expound the LORD's Prayer, and had a large Company to hear me, and should have had seven Hundred, as my Hostess told me, would the House have held them. *So swiftly ran the Word of God and prevailed.*

Was again refreshed by receiving five Letters. Sat up till past Ten, to answer some of them, and then went to Rest, with comfortable Reflections of GOD's unmerited loving Kindness to me.

# I.

*Ten Thousand, Thousand precious Gifts,†  
My pious Thanks employ:†  
Nor is the least a thankful Heart†  
That tastes those Gifts with Joy.*

## II.

*Through all Eternity, to God  
 My grateful Song I'll raise:  
 But oh! Eternity's too short  
 To set forth all his Praise.*

*Monday, January 23.* Was much comforted by receiving five more Letters; answered some of them; and about Eleven in the Morning went on board the *Amy*, to pay my Respects to Col. C. and to visit the Soldiers, whom I looked upon as Part of my Charge. I was received very civilly by the Officers; went among the Soldiers; enquired into the State of their Souls; gave them a Word or two of Exhortation, promised to bring them some Books (I saw their Wants) and (at the Officer's Request) to come and preach to them, if Opportunity should offer, before we left the *Downs*.

After this, I visited the *Lightfoot*, our other Transport Ship, in which were about twelve Soldiers and a Serjeant; they received me kindly. I sat down and conversed with them; promised to send them some Books, and to come

D

and

18

and preach to them also, if Providence should permit. The *Downs* being exceeding calm, and the Weather clear, going from Ship to Ship was very pleasant. *Mine are but little Flocks, O that it may be my heavenly Father's good Pleasure to give them the Kingdom.*

About Two went again on board the *Amy*, to dine with the Officers, being kindly invited by them when I was before on board: They all treated me with great Kindness, and in the midst of our Meal was most agreeably surprised by the coming of two *London* Friends, who made a Journey from thence (*O unmerited Love*) on Purpose to see me.

Dinner being ended, I went and dispers'd some Books among the Soldiers; took my leave and hasted on board my own Ship; read Prayers and preached, and then went on Shore with my Friends, not being a little rejoiced to see them.

*January 23.* This Night God let me see greater Things than before, for so many came to hear me that the poor Landlady *that* owned the House where I lodged sent to her Tenants, beseeching them to let no more come in for fear the Floor should break under them; and indeed there were such Numbers that I first expounded the Creed to about eighty, and then the second Lesson to as many more; among whom I observ'd there were many of the chief Inhabitants.

About Eleven they went, and I then rejoiced with my Friends for what GOD had done for my Soul, *eat a little Food*, interceded for absent Friends, and all Mankind, and went to Bed about Two in the Morning. *Oh what shall I render unto the Lord for all the Mercies he pours down upon me!*

*Tuesday, Jan. 24.* Spent all the Morning in writing Letters, walking, singing Psalms, and Intercession all along the Sea Shore, from whence we had a most delightful Prospect of the *Downs*, which afforded me and my Friends most noble Matter for Praise and Thanksgiving. Met with a little Opposition to-day; but I should have wonder'd indeed, if such an effectual Door had been opened for *preaching Christ*, and there had been no Adversaries. Nothing has done more Harm to the Christian Church than thinking the Examples recorded in Holy Scriptures, were written only to be read and not imitated by us.

More People came to hear me to-night than ever, so that I divided them into two Companies again, and providentially from the second Lesson for the Morning, had a glorious Opportunity for shewing the absolute Unlawfulness of

Running

19

running or buying Run Goods, a Sin that *doth* most easily beset the *Deal* People.

After Exposition, paid Mr *E.* a Visit, who most kindly entertained us, and offered me his Boat to go or come on Shore when I pleased, which would save me much Expence. After we returned from his House, we kneeled down on the Sea Shore, and prayed for them *that* opposed

themselves; and then went to Bed, blessing and praising GOD.

*Wednesday, Jan. 25.* Went on board in the Morning with my Friends intending to read Prayers and preach to the Soldiers, but they were engaged about their own Affairs, and I could not stay long.—Had great Civilities shewed us by the Officers, &c. who treated my Friends respectfully, and the Captain, upon my Request, pardoned a Woman who otherwise was to have been sent on Shore.

After Breakfast, return'd on Shore with my Friends, and read Prayers, and preached at *Upper Deal* to a large Congregation; I was surprised to see such a Number of People, but all *Deal* seems to be in a holy Flame, and was I prepared for it I should see still greater Things than these.

Dined at Mr R's, a Grocer in *Deal* with my Friends; we were most hospitably entertained, and what was far better, had an excellent Opportunity given me of discoursing for a considerable Time on our Fall in *Adam*, and the Necessity of our New Birth in JESUS CHRIST.

Expounded to two Companies again at Night the Epistle for the Morning, and the two Lessons for the Evening, as most suitable for the Day, *and was enabled to do it with Power:* More People came to Night than before, so that they now did actually put a Prop under the Floor of the Room. Was agreeably entertained with more Letters, and tho' the Duty of the Day had a little fatigued me, yet GOD strengthened me to set up 'till Three in the Morning, answering my Christian Correspondents. *They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their Strength.*

*Thursday, Jan. 26.* I had a Visit paid me by an Anabaptist Teacher, who came to discourse with me about the Things that belong to the Kingdom of God. By what I could find he was a spiritual Man. I asked him several Questions about taking the ministerial Function, without being called as was *Aaron*; but he did not answer me to my Satisfaction, however, we both agreed in this, That *unless a Man be born again, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of GOD.*

D

I was

20

I was much comforted by the coming of two more Friends from *London*, with whom I took sweet Comfort, and could not but fancy myself once more at *London*, being surrounded with religious Intimates.

## I.

*How sweet must their Advantage be,†  
How great their Pleasure prove,†  
Who live like Brethren and consent†  
In Offices of Love.*

## II.

*'Tis like refreshing Dew, which does†  
On Hermon's Top distill,†  
Or like the early Drops that fall†  
On Zion's fruitful Hill.*

In the Afternoon I took my Friends on board, read Prayers and preached to the Soldiers; after this, went on Shore, sung Psalms with my Friends, and then expounded to the People, who now increased so much that I was obliged to divide them into three Companies, and GOD enabled me to continue expounding three Hours without any Intermission, or the least Weariness. *Thanks be to GOD for his strengthening Grace! as our Day is, so shall our Strength be.*

Received three more Letters, and set up 'till One in the Morning to answer some sent before, and then went to Bed rejoicing and blessing God for the great Things he had done for me. But withal desirous to say with the Divine *Herbert*,

*Less than the least of GOD's Mercies shall be my Motto still.*

*Friday, Jan. 27.* Spent the Beginning of the Morning in writing Letters, then breakfasted with all my Friends at one Mrs. *H's*, a Widow Gentlewoman, who kindly invited, and as kindly entertained us. *The LORD reward her a thousand fold.*

About Twelve I came on board being unwilling to be absent from my proper Charge long together. I was received

kindly, visited the sick and catechised the Soldiers, some of whom answered most aptly, for which I distributed amongst them all something I knew would be agreeable. *Oh! that I may catch them by a holy Guile! but that Power belongeth only unto God.*

About Two came a Clergyman on board, from a neighbouring Village to pay me a Visit, with whom I spent an Hour or two agreeably, had Prayers on open Deck, and in-

forced

21

forced the Duty of keeping holy the *Sabbath Day*, which then came in Course to be explained, but was afraid to sing a Psalm, Mr. *H.* being at Deal with Friends. *Where was my Courage then? Lord what am I when left to myself!*

At Five returned ashore with the Clergyman to whom I promised some Books for his Parishioners. Expounded three Hours to three Companies as before. Glad Tidings of great Joy sent me by four or five Correspondents, set up till One in the Morning, answering them, and then went to Bed and had a *feeling Possession of my GOD. And will GOD in very deed, dwell in this Heart of mine? O free Grace in CHRIST. Praise the LORD, O my Soul, and all that is within me praise his Holy Name!*

Spent the Morning most agreeably in Conversation, Intercession for all Friends, and all Mankind, walking on the Sea Shore.

Dined with Mrs. *S<sup>t</sup> L.* who hospitably entertained us. Went about Three in the Afternoon intending to go on board, but could not, which gave me a little Uneasiness, thinking it by no Means right to leave my Flock so long.

At Night I expounded to three Companies more numerous than before. Received Letters, and sat up 'till One in the Morning answering them, *and went to sleep in order to fit myself for the Duties of the following Sabbath.*

*Sunday, Jan. 29.* Went on board early in the Morning, read Prayers, and preached to the Soldiers, and visited the Sick; then return'd on Shore, and accompanied with a Troop of pious Friends hasted to *Shroulden Church*, about a Mile and half distant from *Deal*. Where I preached to a weeping



thronged Congregation, at the Request of the Minister, who at my Request, gave me and my Friends the Blessed Sacrament. Others staid also, to the Number of sixteen: And (which I never observed before) the Clerk pronounced a loud *Amen* to every Person **that** received either Bread or Wine: An excellent Custom, and worthy in my Opinion to be imitated in all Churches.

After this I and my Friends went on our Way rejoicing, dined **comfortably** at Mr. R's, and in the Afternoon preached at *Upper Deal*. The Church was quite crowded and many went away for Want of Room, some stood on the Leads of the Church on the outside, and looked in at the Top Windows, and all seemed eager to hear the Word of God. I preached against Worldly-Mindedness, and had great Reason to think GOD gave it his Blessing.

The

22

The Weather was exceeding pleasant, and seeing the People go in such Flocks over the Fields, put me in mind of our Blessed LORD's Words, when he saw the People coming in Companies from *Samaria: The Fields are white already to Harvest*. I then prayed, that he would be pleased to enable me to *gather Wheat into his heavenly Garner*.

In the Evening, such Numbers came to hear me, that I was obliged to divide them into four Companies; and GOD enabled me to expound to them from Six 'till Ten. Some would have persuaded me to have dismissed the last Company without Expounding, but I could not bear to let so many go empty away: **And** I find the more we do for GOD, the more we may. My Strength held out surprisingly; I was but little if at all fatigued; **or if I had, I should have been sufficiently recompensed by some Letters, which I received from my dear Friends, which gave me unspeakable Satisfaction: And after I had perused them, I took a little Refreshment, rejoiced and gave Thanks with my Friends for the Blessings of the Day, and went to our respective Beds about Twelve at Night. Oh! Who can express the Loving Kindness of the LORD, or shew forth all his Praise?**

*Monday, Jan. 30.* At the Request of the Inhabitants, and the leave of Mr. R. (who sent from *Canterbury* a most obliging Message,) I preached again at *Upper Deal* to as crouded and attentive Audience, as I had yesterday: and afterwards I with Mr H. waited upon the Rev. Mr. W. who read Prayers, and most courteously invited me to come and see him. Our Conversation run chiefly on the Expediency of Baptising Infants at *Church*. I continued with him about an Hour; and then at his Request visited a poor Woman of the Parish, who was grievously troubled in Mind: and GOD was pleased to bless my Ministry to her Comfort. *To Him be all the Glory!*

## I.

*So poor so frail an Instrument,  
If thou my God vouchsafe to use,  
'Tis Praise enough to be employ'd,  
Reward enough if Thou excuse.*

## II.

*If Thou excuse, then work thy Will,  
By so unfit an Instrument;  
It will at once thy Goodness shew,  
And prove thy Pow'r Omnipotent!*

---

Soon

23

Soon after this we went to Mr R's, where our Friends expected us: But we had not been long there before the Wind shifted about on a sudden, and a Cry came, *The Wind is fair, prepare yourselves for Sailing*. I received the News with **an humble** Joy. But Sorrow **I perceived** filled the Hearts of my dear Friends, who came from *London* to see me. We immediately retired, intending to intercede for all Mankind before we parted: But the People were in such a Hurry, for fear the Sea should grow too tempestuous to go off, that we were obliged to be very brief. Having therefore recommended ourselves to GOD, I took my Leave. But oh, what Affection did the *Deal* People express to my unworthy Person!

for no sooner were they apprized of the Wind being fair, but they came running in Drove after me to the Sea Shore, wishing me good Luck in the Name of the LORD; and with Tears and other Expressions of Kindness praying for my Success and safe Return. I was confounded with a Sense of GOD's Mercies to me.

The Sea was very boistrous indeed, and the Waves rose Mountains high: But GOD was pleased to give Mr. H. and me an unusual Degree of Faith, and we went on singing Psalms and praising GOD, the Water dashing in our Faces all the Way. *Doubtless we were in jeopardy, But wherefore should we fear, having so many on Shore praying for us?*

About Five we came on board, and were received with Joy: For the Ship was under Sail, and the People were afraid I should be left behind. As I was going into the great Cabin, I fell down the Steerage Stairs; but received little or no Hurt. After we had sailed for a short time, the Man of War not moving, we cast Anchor again. Mr. H. was so sick by the Ship's Motion after we came on board, that he was obliged to go to Bed.

*Tuesday, Jan. 31.* Spent the Morning in writing Letters, visiting the Sick, reading Prayers and preaching to the Soldiers.

About Twelve was pleasingly surprised with another Sight of my *London* Friends, who stayed at *Deal* all Night, and finding the Ship did not sail, came with some more *Deal* Friends to take me on Shore, that I might bid them once more farewell. I was a little unwilling at first, but by their Importunity and affectionate Intreaties they *even* compelled me. I accordingly went with them, singing Psalms and praising GOD all the way.

*But* I had scarce been on Shoar an Hour before the Man of War gave a Signal for sailing; and so we were obliged to

hasten

24

hasten back on board. The People expressed much Joy at seeing me come to *Deal* again, and accompanied me to the Sea Shore, as before.

The Weather being fair, we went on board with Pleasure: The Ship was under sail, but we met with it, *and were received affectionately. I hope that these frequent and sudden Removes will put me in mind that I have here no continuing City; and stir me up to live so holily, that was GOD at any time to say, This Night shall thy Soul be required of thee; I might with Pleasure say, Lo I come!*

Another Thing I could not but reflect on Yesterday, when I saw *Deal* all in a Confusion when the Wind shifted about so suddenly, some crying for one Thing, some another, but all anxious lest their Ship should sail without them: *Alas! what Confusion (thought I) will the Inhabitants of the World be in, when in a Moment, in the Twinkling of an Eye, they shall hear the Voice of the Archangel and Trump of GOD, crying aloud, Arise, ye Dead, and come to Judgment!*

After I was on board, I preached, read Prayers to the Soldiers, visited the Sick, wrote some Letters, and interceded for all Mankind on Deck; and retired to Bed about Twelve.

Our Ship sailed briskly for a few Hours; but the Wind shifting again, was obliged to return back once more, and we cast Anchor in the *Downs* about Nine at Night.

After this I went chearfully about my Ministerial Business, visited the Sick, read Prayers and preached to the Soldiers, answered some Letters I had received in the Morning.

[[*Wednesday, Feb. 1.*]] Sent some Books for the Soldiers on board the *Lightfoot*:

and at Night went on Shore at *Deal* with Mr. *H.* where we were *most kindly received and courteously* entertained and lodged at Mr. *R*'s: *The Lord reward him a thousand Fold!* Did nothing that Night, it being late, save that I visited a sick Person at her earnest Desire and the Minister's Consent, and talked about half an Hour on the Benefit of Afflictions.

Answered two or three Letters I received after I came on Shore; prayed with some well-disposed People that were at Mr. *R*'s and about Twelve went to bed.

*Thursday, Feb. 2.* Rose early in the Morning; went on board in Mr. *E*'s Boat, intending to read Prayers and preach to the Soldiers, and then return to *Upper Deal* to preach

there, being asked to do so by the Inhabitants and the Minister.

About Ten o' Clock there sprang up a pleasant fair Gale, which carried us from the *Downs* near forty Miles that Day; during which Time I read Prayers, preached to and cate-

chised

25

chised my Soldiers, wrote some Letters, and had an Opportunity of sending them as we sailed by *Dover*; for which I was desirous to bless GOD.

Any one must needs think I should have been glad to have heard from \*Mr. *Wesley*, as he went by *Deal*; but I consider'd GOD order'd all Things for the best: and therefore I now joyfully went, but not knowing whither I went; and doubted not but He that strengthened *David* when he went out against *Goliath*, would also strengthen me against all my spiritual Adversaries, and send his HOLY GHOST to guide, assist, and comfort me in all Emergencies. *The Good LORD keep me always thus minded!*

*Friday, Feb. 3.* Let this Day be noted in my Book; for GOD wrought for us a wonderful Deliverance! About Seven in the Morning, the Men upon Deck not keeping a good look-out, one of the *East India* Ships in shifting to the Wind ran near us so very briskly, that had not Captain *W.* [[\*]] providentially been on Deck, and beseeched them for GOD's sake to tack about, both the Ships must inevitably have split one against another. They were within four Yards of each other. The Captain said he never was in so great Danger in his Life. GOD so ordered it, that Mr. *H.* [[\*]] and I knew nothing of it 'till it was over: But when I was apprised of it, I endeavoured to excite all to Thankfulness, and returned publick Thanks at Prayers. Too many seemed to be unsensible of the Mercy received. But,

*Since GOD does thus his wond'rous Love,  
Thro' all our Lives extend,  
Those Lives to Him let us devote,  
And in his Service spend.*

Read publick Prayers and preached to the Soldiers as usual; explained the *Catechism* to the Women, exhorted them particularly to be obedient to their own Husbands, which they had lately been wanting in: And was pleased to hear the Captain, as I came on Deck, remind me of the Motion I made to him some time ago, about having Prayers daily in the Great Cabin; and withal desired that from henceforward I would read Prayers Morning and Evening to them. This I most readily consented to, it being what I had long desired and prayed for, and what I was just then about to propose to him again. Accordingly, I went immediately and acquainted the Lieutenant, &c. of the Captain's Desire, and

*\* He came from Georgia to England just as Mr. Whitefield left it.*

E

we

26

we began this Night to have full publick Prayers: And at the Request of Captain *W.* *[[\*]]* I expounded the second Lesson; and a glorious Lesson it was. *Blessed be GOD! for that I hope we shall now begin to live like Christians, and call upon the Name of the LORD daily.* The very Thoughts of GOD's granting me this Petition, filled me with Joy.

*Saturday, Feb. 4.* Began to have Prayers in the great Cabin in the Morning; read Prayers and preached twice to the Soldiers as usual, and expounded the second Lesson in the Evening to the Gentlemen after Prayers in the great Cabin, which from henceforward I intended, GOD willing, to continue: Unspeakable *I find is and* will be the Benefit of it; for it gives me an Opportunity of saying many salutary Truths, and affords us Matter for serious Table-talk afterwards.

Was much pleased to see our Ship sail directly before the Wind; *was enlarged in Intercession;* furnished three Soldiers with Books, who began to-day to learn to read: *GOD enable them not only to read, but to do their Duty!*

Mr. *H's* *[[\*]]* Scholars increase: *The LORD increase his Strength!*

*Sunday, Feb. 5.* Joined in Spirit with absent Friends in holy Ordinances; spent some Time most delightfully in read-

ing the Word of GOD: Read Prayers, and made some Observations on both the Lessons *in the great Cabin; and then read Prayers and expounded both the Lessons* to the Soldiers. *O that the LORD would open our Understandings! for they are but a dead Letter without the Illumination of his Holy Spirit!*

Read Prayers and preached my Sermon on *Justification* in the Afternoon to the Officers, &c. in the great Cabin.

Begun to-night to turn the Observations made on the Lessons in the Morning into catechistical Questions; and was pleased to hear some of the Soldiers and my Companions make such apt Answers. I find this an excellent Way of Instruction: It makes them bring their Bible, and give diligent heed to the Things that are spoken: It teaches them the Scriptures practically, and consequently will by the Divine Blessing make them wise unto Salvation. *Thanks be to GOD for putting this into my Heart! By His Assistance I intend to continue it.*

*Monday, Feb. 6.* Had no Prayers in the Morning between Decks; but read Prayers in the Cabin, *likewise* did the same in the Evening, and expounded the 6th chapter of St. *Matt.* *[[Mark]]* the second Lesson, which, containing an Account of *John's* reproving *Herod*, gave me an Opportunity of telling them,

that

27

that great Men should not be angry if Ministers should reprove them out of Love; and they seemed to assent to it.

Read Prayers and preached to the Soldiers as usual; interceded warmly for absent Friends and all Mankind; and went to Bed full of Peace and Joy. *Thanks be to GOD for his unspeakable Gift!*

Was pleased to see Mr. *H.* *[[\*]]* so active in teaching the Children. He has now many Scholars: *May GOD prosper the Works of his Hands upon him!*

*Had such pleasant Sailing, that Cap. W. said he never knew the like before. What Reason have I to be thankful! O that my Friends would help me to give Thanks!*

*Tuesday, Feb. 7.* Read Prayers and expounded the Lessons as usual to the Soldiers and in the great Cabin; and after

Dinner sung Psalms with Mr. H. [[\*]] and a Gentleman on board, on open Deck.

Being now in the Bay of *Biscay*, the Ship rocked very much, though there was a great Calm: *But if there's a fixed Principle of Grace, a firm Love of GOD, rooted in the Heart; what avails all outward Motions?*

*Wednesday, Feb. 8.* Had publick Worship and expounded as usual to both my Congregations. Was pleased to hear a Gentleman discourse for some time of the utter Inability of any thing to make us happy but GOD.

In the Afternoon I preached and read Prayers on open Deck, at the Captain's Desire, who ordered Chairs to be brought and Boards put across them for the Soldiers to sit upon. My Subject was, *the Eternity of Hell Torments*; and I was earnest in delivering it, being desirous that none of my dear Hearers should experience them. Praying and singing Psalms on open Deck enlarged my Heart.

Was enabled to make good part of a Sermon this Evening, and lay down to sleep. *GOD grant I may die daily!*

*Thursday, Feb. 9.* Read Prayers, expounded and catechised as usual; had delightful Sailing, and *great Joy in the HOLY GHOST, and* very thankful that GOD called me abroad to see and admire his Wonders in the Deep. *O who can serve a better Master than JESUS CHRIST?*

*Friday, Feb. 10.* Read Prayers, and according to Custom went on in explaining the *Catechism* to the Women; and after Evening Prayer expounded the 49<sup>th</sup> Psalm instead of the Lesson. Had still greater Reason to bless GOD for bringing me to Sea. *O what shall I render unto the LORD?*

*Saturday, Feb. 11.* Catechised, visited the Sick, expounded and read Prayers as usual; and met with some Soldiers who

---

E 2

could

28

could sing by Note, with whom I propose to join in Divine Psalmody every Day.

*A Psalm may win him who a Sermon flies,†  
And turn Delight into a Sacrifice.*

In the Evening gave Thanks for the Blessings, and examined into the Actions of the past Week. *It's well I have*



*a Saviour to satisfy for my Performances as well as my Person, for otherwise how should I stand before thee, O Holy LORD GOD? GOD be merciful to me a Sinner.*

*Sunday, Feb. 12.* Did as usual, and preached my Sermon on Glorification to the Gentlemen in the great Cabin. *Oh that GOD may make us Partakers of it!*

Honest Joseph,[[Periam?]] my Servant, returned Thanks after Morning Prayer for his Recovery from a late severe Fit of Sickness. I hope now CHRIST has touched him by the right Hand of his healing Power, he will arise and minister unto Him. He tells me he can say with David, *It is good for me that I have been afflicted. GOD be praised! for sanctified Afflictions are Signs of special Love.*

*Monday, Feb. 13.* Did as usual; only instead of the second Lesson, expounded the 22<sup>d</sup> Chapter of St. Matthew, at the Captain's Request, who takes all Opportunities to express his Kindness to me: *May the GOD whom I serve sanctify and save him!*

*Tuesday, Feb. 14.* May I never forget this Day's Mercies, since the LORD was pleased to deal so lovingly with me! About Twelve at Night a fresh Gale arose, which increased so **very** much by Four in the Morning, that the Waves **raged horribly indeed, and** broke in like a great River on many of the poor Soldiers, who lay near the Main Hatch Way. Friend H. [[\*]] and I knew nothing of it, but perceived ourselves restless, and could not sleep at all; he complained of a grievous Head-ach. I arose and called upon GOD for myself and those who sailed with me, absent Friends, and all Mankind. After this I went on Deck; but surely a more noble awful Sight my Eyes never yet beheld! for the Waves rose **more than** Mountain high, and sometimes came on the Quarter-Deck. I endeavoured all the while to magnify GOD, for thus making his Power to be known: **And** then creeping on my Knees (for I knew not how to go otherwise) I followed my Friend H. between Decks, and sung Psalms and comforted the poor wet People. After this, I read Prayers in the great Cabin; but we were obliged to sit all the while. **Then thinking I should be capable of doing no-**

**thing,**

29

thing, I laid myself across the Chair reading; but GOD was so good, so to assist me by his Spirit, that though Things were tumbling, the Ship rocking, and Persons falling down unable to stand, and sick about me; yet I never was more chearful in my Life, and was enabled, though in the midst of Company, to finish a Sermon before I went to Bed, which I had begun a few Days before: *So greatly was GOD's Strength magnified in my Weakness! Praise the LORD, O my Soul, and all that is within me praise his holy Name!*

Thursday, *February* 16. Did as usual in the Ship; only instead of Catechising, examined into the Proficiency of my Friend H's [[\*]] Scholars; gave them proper Encouragement, as I saw they wanted; and had Hopes some of them would become living Members of JESUS CHRIST.

Joined with those at Night, who set apart this Day as a Day of Fasting and Humiliation, to deprecate the Judgments our National Sins deserve. *Lord, hear our Prayers, and let our Cry come unto thee.*

Friday, *February* 17. Read Prayers, expounded the Lessons, and proceeded in my Explanation of the Catechism to the Women: Expounded Part of the LORD's Prayer, after Evening Prayer, in the great Cabin; and intend, after this is done, to go on with the Creed and Ten Commandments. *God give us all praying, believing, obedient Hearts.*

Found honest Mr. D. particularly useful to me, I being a little sick by the late shaking of the Ship, and the Heat and Smell of the People between Decks, who, as yet, have scarce had Time to recover themselves since the Storm. *O how soon are these frail Tabernacles of ours put out of Order! Happy the Man who serves God in his Health, and has nothing to do when Sickness seizes him, but quietly to lye down and die.*

Saturday, *February* 18. Performed the usual Duty, and finished the LORD's Prayer. Perceived my Bodily Disorders to go off, and was enabled to preach to the Soldiers *with more Enlargement than I have been for these four Days past.* The Captain observed me a little disordered, and gave Mr. H. a Cordial for me; *the good LORD note this Favour in his Book.*

After Dinner I grew **better and** better; was exceedingly delighted by sitting on Deck, praising GOD for the Pleasantness of the Weather, and reading Archbishop Cranmer's Life: *Surely he was a righteous Man.* The Account of his Fall made my Heart tremble within me. *But why shouldst thou be cast down, O my Soul? Still trust in God: He that has*

*begun*

<sup>30</sup>

*begun will carry on and finish the good Work. Even so, LORD JESUS, **come quickly.***

Though the Weather was exceedingly pleasant all the Day, yet it grew more and more **pleasant** in the Evening, and our Ship sailed at the Rate of nine Miles an Hour, and as steddy as though we were sitting on Shore. The Night was exceeding clear, and the Moon and Stars appeared in their greatest Lustre; so that not having Patience to stay below, I went upon Deck with Friend H. *[[\*]]* and praised GOD for his wonderful loving Kindness, in singing Psalms, and gave Thanks for the Blessings, and asked Pardon for the Offences of the Week, and then had a long Intercession. GOD *grant I may learn a Lesson from this good Providence of GOD; and the nearer I come to my Journey's End, the quicker may my Pace be.*

It is worth coming from *England*, to see what we have beheld this Day. *God be praised for all his Mercies.*

*Sunday, February 19.* Slept better to Night than I have a long while; *blessed be the Keeper of Israel.* Read Prayers in the great Cabin; was enlarged in expounding both the Lessons to the Soldiers; and had Prayers, and preached one of the Sermons GOD enabled me to make since I came on board, on open Deck in the Afternoon. All the Gentlemen attended, Benches were laid for the People, and the Ship sailed smoothly, and the Weather was finer than I can express; so that I know not where I have performed the Service more comfortably. **And, indeed,** I have been so delighted these two Days, with our pleasant sailing, and the Promontaries all around us, that I could not avoid thanking GOD for calling me abroad, and stirring up all to praise him, *Who by his*

*Strength setteth fast the Mountains, and is girded about with Power.*

For these two Days our Ship has sailed at the Rate of a Hundred and sixty Miles in twenty four Hours, and rode in Triumph directly before the Wind, and cast Anchor about Two in the Morning; 'till which Time I sat up on purpose to give Thanks in Gibraltar Haven. *Oh that my Friends would therefore praise the Lord for his Goodness, and extoll him for the wonderful Works he doth for me, the least of the Sons of Men.*

How Providence will be pleased to dispose of me here, I cannot yet know; but I thought proper to send you this Account of my short Voyage already, to show you how God has heard your Prayers, to provoke you to Thankfulness, and

to

31

to encourage you to persevere in praying on my Behalf. If you observe (as doubtless you may) any Thing amiss or imprudent in my Conduct, I beseech you, by the Mercies of GOD in CHRIST JESUS, tell me plainly; for, for that Cause have I been so particular: And if you should happen to see any Thing commendable, or Praise-worthy in my Behaviour, oh do not think more highly of me than you ought to think; for I am a Worm, and no Man, and deserve to be the Out-cast of the People; but *give all Glory to my blessed Master, by whose free Grace I am what I am.*

I cannot help transcribing the Verses that follow, as a Conclusion to what I have now sent you.

I.

*How are thy Servants bless'd, O Lord!†*

*How sure is their Defence!†*

*Eternal Wisdom is their Guard;†*

*Their Help Omnipotence.*

## II.

*Think, O my Soul, devoutly think,†  
 How with affrighted Eyes†  
 Thou saw'st the wide extended Deep†  
 In all its Horrors rise!*

## III.

*Confusion dwelt in ev'ry Face,†  
 And Fear in ev'ry Heart;†  
 When Waves on Waves, and Gulph on Gulph,†  
 O'ercame the Pilot's Art.*

## IV.

*Yet then from all my Griefs, O Lord!†  
 Thy Mercy set me free;†  
 Whilst in the Confidence of Prayer,†  
 My Soul took Hold on Thee.*

## V.

*For though in dreadful Whirls we hung†  
 High on the broken Wave;†  
 I knew Thou wer't not slow to hear,†  
 Nor impotent to save.*

VI. *The*

## VI.

*The Storms were laid, the Winds retir'd,†  
 Obedient to thy Will:†  
 The Sea that roar'd at thy Command,†  
 At thy Command was still.*

## VII.

*In midst of Dangers, Fears, and Death,†  
 Thy Goodness I'll adore;†*

FIRST JOURNAL

141

*And praise Thee for thy Mercies past, &  
And humbly hope for more.*

VIII.

*My Life, if Thou preserv'st my Life, &  
Thy Sacrifice shall be: &  
And Death, if Death shall be my Doom, &  
Shall join my Soul to Thee.*

Mr.

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s**JOURNAL.****PART II.****From Gibraltar to Georgia.***My Dear Friends,*

**T**HOUGH I know no Reason why you should be sollicitous about any Thing that happens to such a *dead Dog* as I am, yet, as your Love, (*O unmerited Kindness!*) abounds exceedingly towards me, I am positive you will give Thanks unto our good GOD for all the Mercies he hath conferred upon me; therefore have sent you as full and particular an Account of the Remainder of my Voyage, as the little Leisure I have had from my Ministerial Offices would permit me to give.

*Monday, February* 20, 1737[[/8]]. Spent the Morning on board, in writing Letters to my dear Friends in *England*, to acquaint them of my safe Arrival. Went in the Afternoon on Shore to *Gibraltar*, and was *unspeakably* delighted with the Prospect of the Place. My Friend *H.* [[\*]] and I dined at an Inn, and went afterwards with Capt. *W.* [[\*]] and some other Company, to view one Side of the Fort, which to us seemed impregnable; and at the Sight of it I could scarce avoid crying out, *Who is so great a God as our God?*

*The* seeing Persons of all Nations and Languages gave me great Pleasure: And the Difference of the Value of their Money and ours, gave me Occasion to reflect on the Stupidity of those who place their Happiness in that which has no intrinsic Worth in itself, but only so much as we arbitrarily put upon it.

F

Went

34

Went into a *Romish* Chapel, wherein were the Reliques of a vast deal of Pageantry, and several Images of the Virgin *Mary*, dressed up, not like a poor *Galilean*, but in her Silks and Damasks. Oh (thought I) *who hath bewitched this People, that they should thus depart from the Simplicity of CHRIST, and go a Whoring after their own Inventions?* Surely, Was the great *St. Paul* to rise from the Dead, and come and view the *Romish Church*, his Spirit would be stirred up within him, as it was at *Athens*, to see them thus *wholly given to Idolatry*.

*Tuesday, February 21.* After having read Prayers, and wrote some more Letters to my Friends in *England*, went again to *Gibraltar*, to pay my Respects to Governor S. [[Sabine]] being told by Capt. M. that he expected to see me. The worthy old Gentleman, like *Sergius Paulus*, received me with the utmost Candour, and gave me a general Invitation to come and dine with him every Day, during my Stay at *Gibraltar*. I thanked him for his Kindness; had about a Quarter of an Hour's Conversation with him, and took my Leave for that Time.

At One o' Clock, I returned to Dine with him, according to his Appointment; and was well pleased with the regular Behaviour of the Officers at Table. We had what an Epicurean would call *Cæna Dubia*. At Three I took my Leave, and walked about with Capt. W. [[\*]] and other Friends, to take a second View of the Fort; went on board about Five; read Prayers, and began expounding the Creed in the Cabin; wrote some more Letters, and went to Bed, very thankful to GOD for sending me abroad.

*Wednesday, February 22.* This Day I intended to stay on board, to write Letters, but GOD being pleased to shew me it was not his Will, I went again on Shore, and paid both the Ministers of *Gibraltar* a Visit, who received me very affectionately, and offered me the Use of the Pulpit. Oh what a blessed Thing it is for the Clergy to dwell together in Unity!

At Eleven, went to publick Prayers, and was much pleased to see many Officers and Soldiers attend the Ge-



neral to Church. *Methinks Religion looks doubly amiable in a Soldier.*

After Prayers, Dined again with the General, who gave me another particular Invitation, as I went out of the Church. He treated me with uncommon Civility, and desired me to preach the following *Sunday*.

Had

35

Had an Opportunity of sending a Packet of Letters with my Journal to my dear Friends in *England*. *May the good LORD give them his Blessing!*

Went in the Afternoon to visit a Deserter, who had sent me a Letter, desiring me to intercede for him with the Governour; he being apprehensive he should die for Desertion, I intended to answer his Request; but the Governor was so merciful that he ordered him to be whip'd only, which I thought Punishment little enough. *O Sin, what Mischief dost thou make in the World!*

In the Evening returned as usual on board, read Prayers and expounded in the great Cabin, buried a Child, made an Exhortation to the Soldiers proper for the Occasion, wrote to some Friends at *Deal*; and went to Bed with unusual Thoughts and Convictions that God would do some great Things at *Gibraltar*. *Oh that I was a pure Vessel fit for my Master's Use!*

*Thursday, Feb. 23.* Continued all this Day on board, did my usual Duty in the Ship, and put my dear Friend *Br's* Sermon into the Hands of two Officers at *Gibraltar*, who came to dine on board with Lieutenant *D*. They behaved *very much* like Gentlemen, and seemed pleased with serious Conversation. *May the GOD whom I serve, add the Christian to the Gentleman!*

*Friday, Feb. 24.* Blessed be GOD, who this Day hath shown me that he hath heard my Prayer, and not taken his loving Kindness from me! Long before I reached *Gibraltar*, I prayed that GOD would open an effectual Door, at the Place whither we were going, and direct me where I should lodge; and lo this Day he has answered me.—About Ten in the Morning *comes* Capt. *M*. [[Mackay]] on board, telling me that

one Major S. (a Person I never saw) had provided me a convenient Lodging at one Merchant B's and desired that I would come on Shore.—I looking upon this as a Call from Providence, received it with all Thankfulness and went with Friend H. [[\*]] on Shore, **but not without** first praying that GOD would direct us how to behave.

About the middle of the Town Major S. gave us the Meeting, conducted us to our new Lodgings (which were very commodious) and engaged us to dine with him and Capt. M. [[Mackay]]. *When I sent you without Scrip or Shoe, lacked ye any thing? and they said, Nothing, LORD!*

About Eleven was introduced by Doctor C. to General C. [[Columbine]] who was desirous of seeing me. He received me exceeding kindly, and after a little serious Conversation, we went to

F2

the

36

**the** Governour S's [[Sabine's]], from thence to publick Prayers; **and** I was highly pleased to see so many Officers attending on the Generals to Church. Doctor C. told me he had not known Governour S. [[Sabine]] absent himself from Prayers once these several Years, except when he was hindred by **real** Sickness. *Oh that all others would let their Light so shine before Men!*

Retired in the Evening to our Lodgings, had Family Prayer, wrote some few religious Letters, and spent near half an hour in serious Conversation with the People of the House, **gave Thanks for the Blessings of the Day**, and was soon convinced that God had sent me to that particular lodging of a truth. *Be careful for nothing, but in every (even the minutest) thing, make your Wants known unto God. For he careth for you.*

*Saturday, Feb. 25.* About Six this Morning went with Friend H. [[\*]] to the Church to pray with some devout Soldiers, who I heard used to meet there at that Time, and with whom my Soul was knit immediately. **For all my Delight is in the Saints that are in the Earth, and in those that excel in Virtue.**

After we had finished our Devotion, I made an Enquiry into their State, and found that their Society had been subsisting about twelve Years, and that one Serjeant B. (a devout Soldier indeed) now amongst them was the first Be-

ginner of it. At first they told me they used to meet in Dens and Mountains and Caves in the Rocks; but, afterwards, upon their applying for Leave to build a little Place to retire in, Doctor C. and Governour S. [[Sabine]] gave them the free Use of the Church, where they constantly meet three Times in a Day, to pray, read, and sing Psalms, and at any other Season when they please.—They have met with Contempt, and are now in Derision called the *New Lights*. And glorious Lights they are indeed. For I conversed closely with several of them, and they made me quite ashamed of my little Proficiency in the School of CHRIST. Many have joined with them for a time, but a servile Fear of Man, *that Bane of Christianity*, made them draw back. However, some continue stedfast and immoveable, and tho' despised by the World, *are no doubt highly favoured of GOD*. Governour S. [[Sabine]] countenances them much, and has spoke of them often to me with respect. *Blessed be GOD even the Father of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, who hath not left himself without Witness in any Place, but hath some every where, who serve him and work Righteousness.*

The Sunday before we came hither, I was telling my Friend H. [[\*]] that I had Reason to think by what had happened

to

37

to me that GOD had some Work for me to do at *Gibraltar*; he answered that there could not much Good expected from among Soldiers. I replied—No doubt GOD has some secret ones in all Places, who tremble at his Word. And lo he hath this Day brought me to them. *By this I know thou favourest me, O LORD thou King of Saints.*

There is also another Society of the *Scotch Church*, who in Contempt are called *Dark Lanthorns*. It has subsisted about a Year, and is made up of many serious Christians as I was informed. I did not think it agreeable to visit them, but I sent them, as well as the other Society, some proper Books; had religious Talk with several of them, and endeavoured to unite both Societies together. *Oh when will that Time come, when all Differences about Externals shall be*

*taken away, and we all with one Heart, and one Mouth glorify our Lord JESUS CHRIST!*

About Eight returned to my Lodgings, and after having wrote some Letters, went on board the *Amy* to marry a Couple who sent to me yesterday to come and *celebrate their Nuptials*. I took that opportunity of exhorting them all to *take heed to the things that belong to their Peace*. Some I believe were affected, but the Generality of them behaved so careless, that I could not but see a Difference between those that have a Minister and those that have not.

About Twelve went on board my own Ship, dined, did some necessary Business, read Prayers, gave my Flock a warm Exhortation, and returned about Five on Shore, where I spent near two Hours with the devout Soldiers in the Church. Many of them conversed most spiritually, and seemed well acquainted with the Pangs of the New Birth. *May GOD perfect the good Work begun in their Hearts! O how amiable are thy Servants, O LORD of Hosts! How would the World admire them did they see their Beauties!* But Satan does now as formerly dress them in Bears Skins in order to have them baited.

*Sunday, Feb. 26.* Between Five and Six in the Morning went with Mr. H. [[\*]] (which I did all the while I was at *Gibraltar*) and sung Psalms, prayed and expounded the Lessons to the devout Soldiers in the Church, and was much enlarged. *Thanks be unto Thee, O LORD!*

Intended to go and preach to my People; was prevented by the Violence of the Wind; but was pleased to hear from some *Gibraltar* Officers, who dined that Day on board the *Whitaker*, that some of my Flock had the Courage to read Prayers and sing Psalms themselves, and (as I found afterwards)

continued

38

continued so to do, during my Absence from them. *Blessed be GOD! I hope I shall have some that dare be singularly Good, and will not be kept out by the Press.*

Preached in the Morning at *Gibraltar*, before such a Congregation of Officers and Soldiers as I never before saw: The Church, though very large, was quite thronged: and

GOD was pleased to shew me, that He had given extraordinary Success to my Sermon. *O how is the Divine Strength magnified in my Weakness! O grant I may like a pure Crystal transmit all the Light thou pourest upon me; and never claim as my own what is thy sole Propriety!*

Dined with Friend H. [[\*]] at Governour S's[[Sabine's]], who sent most kindly to invite us. The Law at his Table was the same with that of *Ahasuerus*, "No one was compelled:" And all the Officers behaved in such a decent *innocent* Manner every Time I dined there, that they pleased me very much. *Surely some Fear of GOD is in that Place!*

After Evening Prayers (for there is no Sermon in the Afternoon), I went and expounded, prayed and sung Psalms with the Society, and had near thirty Hearers. *May the Good LORD give it his Blessing!*

At Night had some devout Conversation with my Host and Hostess, who seemed to love me as their own Son; prayed for absent Friends, and went to Bed ashamed I had done so little for GOD on a Sabbath-day. *But when we cannot do as we would, we must do as we can.*

*Monday, Feb. 27.* Went to the Church, and did as yesterday: and was visited afterwards by two of the Nonconforming Society, who seemed to be *Israelites indeed*: I exhorted them to Love and Unity, and not to let a little Difference about a few Externals occasion any Narrow-spiritedness to arise in their Hearts. I advised them to come and hear me expound in the Church, which they did; and providentially the Lesson was the 4<sup>th</sup> of the *Ephesians*, from whence I took occasion to urge on them the Necessity of loving one another with a Catholick disinterested Love; to be of one Heart and one Mind, and to join without Respect of Persons in hastening the Kingdom of our Lord JESUS CHRIST. I hope GOD gave a Blessing to what was said: For I observed they came constantly afterwards, and was told there was a perfect Harmony between them. *What infinite Mischief have needless Divisions occasioned in the Christian World! Divide & Impera, is the Devil's Motto.*

Dined and supped at General C's with Mr. H. [[\*]] and was received most courteously: *The Lord reward him in that*

*Day!*

39

*Day!* The Officers seemed studious to oblige me, and to be solicitous for my Stay at *Gibraltar*; But my Face was set to go towards *Georgia*. *The LORD direct my Going in his Way!*

*Tuesday, Feb. 28.* Expounded in the Church as usual; went on board, read Prayers and expounded to my own Flock; dined with Friend *H. [[\*]]* at Governour S's *[[Sabine's]]*, who sent to invite us; and expounded to a large Number of Soldiers in the Evening at Church.

Was asked by Dr. C. in the Name of the Governour Colonel C. to preach every Prayer Day whilst I stay'd at *Gibraltar*, which I promised to do, and perceived the Word of GOD to run very swiftly. Many of the Inhabitants pressed me to stay with them, and were exceeding kind to those who were with me, for my sake. *Blessed be GOD, for thus giving me Favour in his People's Sight! LORD, what am I, or what is in me, that Thou shouldest thus so highly honour me? Grant, O LORD, the more thou exaltest me the more I may abase myself, and always be looking to the Rock from whence I was hewn!*

Conversed with one of the devout Soldiers, who was under strong spiritual Trials; and GOD was pleased to give him Comfort. I find it necessary more and more every Day, that Ministers should be tempted in all Things like unto their Brethren, that they may be able experimentally to succour those that are tempted.

*Wednesday, March 1.* Expounded in the Morning, and was highly pleased at my Entrance into the Church, to see several Soldiers kneeling in several Parts of the House of GOD at their private Devotions. *O happy Gibraltar, that hast such a Set of praying Men!* Some I hear often come in by Two o' Clock in the Morning, to pour out their Hearts before GOD. *The LORD perform all their Petitions!*

Preached, according to my Promise, to a numerous and affected Audience of Officers, Soldiers, &c. Dined (at his Invitation) at Governor *Sabin's*, and expounded at Night to near 200 People, amongst whom were many of the Officers,

and of the Honourable Women not a few. *Oh that they may with Meekness receive the engrafted Word, and that it may be a Means of saving their Souls!*

Thursday, March 2. Spent part of the Day in writing Letters. Dined and sup'd at Mr. Argat's, chief Civil Magistrate in Gibraltar, and was entertained with uncommon Love and Affection.

Expounded

40

Expounded twice in the Church, as usual, and at Night had above 300 Hearers; amongst whom were many Officers, Ladies and Dr. C. the Minister of the Church himself, who would have had me *went* up into the Reading Desk, that I might have the greater Command of the People; but I declined it that Night. *God be praised for sending me abroad, and prospering the Work of his Hands upon me!*

*When all thy Mercies, O my God!†*

*My rising Soul surveys;†*

*Transported with thy Love, I'm lost†*

*In Wonder, Joy, and Praise!*

Friday, March 3. Still GOD lets me see greater Things than before. *Oh that my Thanks may encrease proportionably!*

This Morning, besides a great Number of the Soldiers, near, if not more, than a Dozen of the Town's People came to Church to hear me expound. Afterwards, we Breakfasted with a Gentlewoman, who sent by Major S. to invite us, and most gladly received us into her House. About Ten I preached my Sermon against *Swearing*, and made a Farewell Application to the Soldiers that were going over to *Georgia* out of that Garrison. The Governor had that Morning reviewed them; and as I could not be in the same Ship with them, I desired they might be ordered to come to Church, that I might have an Opportunity of telling them how to behave in that Land which they were going over the Sea to protect. The Colonel and Governor most readily consented; there was a most thronged Audience, and God was pleased to set his Seal to my Sermon. Many Officers and Soldiers wept sorely, and a visible Alteration was ob-

served in the Garrison for some Days after. *Oh that their Convictions may end in their Conversion, and that they may bring forth the Fruits of the Spirit!*

Bought some Wine out of the Money which I had collected for the Use of the sick Poor in Georgia. *The Parsonage House ought to be the Poor's Storehouse.*

Had about 500 to hear me expound this Evening, and went up into the Desk, by the advice of Dr. C. who now constantly makes one of my Hearers. After this, we sup'd at Mr B's, of the Victualing-Office, and returned home with Joy and great Gladness of Heart. *Who can express the loving Kindness of the Lord, or shew forth all his Praise?*

Saturday, March 1 [[4]]. Expounded in the Morning. More Hearers than ever, some of which wept. Dined and sup'd

with

---

41

with General C. who sent last Night to invite me and my Friend, and treated us with particular Respect.

Went in the Afternoon to the Jewish Synagogue, and was surprised to see one of the Head of them come from the farthest End, and put me in one of their chiefest Seats: But afterwards he told me he had heard my Sermon Yesterday against Swearing, and thank'd me for it. *Not unto me, not unto me, O Lord, but unto thy Name be all the Thanks and Glory!* I continued with them their whole Service, and spent most of my Time there in secret Prayer to God, *That the Veil might be taken from their Hearts, and that blessed Time might come when his chosen People should again be engrafted into their own Olive-Tree, and all Israel be saved.*

Visited an unhappy Man in Prison, who last Night, in a drunken Fit, murdered a Fellow Soldier. I providentially met him just as he was apprehended, and laid before him the Terrors of the Lord. At first he seemed unconcerned; but in a short Time he was pricked to the Heart, desired me to come and see him, and to Day trembled, and wept bitterly. *Oh Drunkenness, what Mischief hast thou done! Thy Name is Legion; for behold a Troop of Sins come along with thee.*

In the Evening I had near, if not more, than a Thousand Hearers; and I took Occasion, from the poor Man's Ex-



ample before mentioned, to warn the Soldiery not to be drunk with Wine, wherein is Excess; a Sin that most easily besets the Men of Gibraltar. *May they hear and fear, and sin no more presumptuously.* I had a great Hoarseness upon me; but notwithstanding, GOD enabled me to speak with Power. *When we are weak, then are we strong. What Mercies has GOD shewn me this last Week! Oh that my Friends, when they hear of it, may praise him! for surely GOD has hearkened to their Prayer.*

Sunday, March 5. After Morning Exposition in the Church, went and saw the *Roman Catholicks* at their High Mass; and shall only make this Remark: That there needs no other Argument against *Popery*, than to see the Pageantry, Superstition, and Idolatry of their Worship.

About Ten, went to the Church belonging to the Garrison; preached to a most thronged Audience, and received (what my Soul longed after) the Sacrament of CHRIST's most blessed Body and Blood: Both the Generals were there, and near Fifty more Communicants. The Weekly Collection for the Poor was larger than ever was known. And \*\*\*\* was so affected, that he wished himself a despised Methodist. *We are not fit for GOD to work by, till we are despised by Men,*

G

that

42

*that the Excellency and Power of Preaching may be seen to be of GOD only.*

Dined at Governor S's [[Sabine's]], and, at the Request of the Inhabitants and Gentlemen of the Garrison, preached in the Afternoon. Expounded, in the Evening, to above a Thousand Hearers, of all Denominations; supp'd with General C. [[Columbine]]; went Home betimes, full of unspeakable Comfort: I am never better than when I am on the full Stretch for GOD. *GOD grant I may not, like Jehu, drive furiously at first, and afterwards fall back; but, forgetting those Things which are behind, may I reach out to those Things that are before, and press forwards towards the Mark, for the Prize of my high Calling in CHRIST JESUS. Methinks I hear my dear Friends say silently, Amen. And may the great GOD say so too!*

*Monday, Mar. 6.* Had near, if not more than a Hundred at Morning Exposition; and it being the last Day of my sojourning at *Gibraltar*, many came to me weeping, telling me what GOD had done for their Souls, desiring my Prayers, and promising me theirs in Return. Others both gave and sent me Tokens of their Love, as Cake, Figs, Wine, Eggs, and other Necessaries for my Voyage, and seemed to want Words to express their Affection. *The good LORD note their Kindnesses in his Book, and reward them a Thousand fold!*

About Twelve, went to the Church, according to Appointment, and made a farewell Exhortation, as GOD gave me Utterance, to a great Number of weeping Soldiers, Women, &c. after which we kneeled down, and having recommended each other to the Care of GOD, I left them, went and took my Leave of the two Generals; visited the confined Prisoner; dined at a Gentlewoman's House of the Town; left near fifty Letters to be sent to *England*; and about Four went on board, accompanied to the Sea-side with near two Hundred Soldiers, Women, Officers, &c. who all sorrowed at my Departure, and wished me good Luck in the Name of the LORD. Surely I may now expect greater Success abroad, having such an Addition of Intercessors in my Behalf. O LORD put their Tears into thy Bottle, and let their Cry come unto thee!

*Sampson's Riddle* has been fulfilled at *Gibraltar*: *Out of the Eater came forth Meat; out of the Strong came forth Sweetness.* Who more unlikely to be wrought upon than Soldiers? And yet, amongst any Set of People I have not been, where GOD has made his Power more to be known. Many that were quite stark blind, have received their Sight; many that

have

43

have fallen back, have repented, and turned unto the LORD again; many that were ashamed to own CHRIST openly, have waxen bold; and many that were Saints have had their Hearts filled with Joy unspeakable, and full of Glory. *This is the Lord's Doing, and it is marvellous in our Eyes: May he give a Blessing to the Books dispersed amongst them, and perfect the good Work begun in their Hearts, till the Day of our Lord*

*JESUS! May they be my Joy and Crown of rejoicing at the last Day; and may GOD's Mercies to me in every Place make me more humble, more zealous, more thankful, and more steady to do or suffer whatever my dear Redeemer hath allotted for me. Into his Hands I commend my Spirit, as into the Hands of an all powerful Preserver.*

About Five came on board, and was gladly received by my Flock, whom I hope to love better for being a little absent from them. Interceded and gave Thanks, as usual, at Night on Deck; and was pleased that I was again retired from the World. It rained much, *but that made us the more fervent.* *Water us, O LORD, we beseech thee, with the Dew of thy Heavenly Benediction.*

*Tuesday, Mar. 7.* Went and conversed with, and dispersed some Books amongst the Soldiers that we took from Gibraltar. Three of them belonged to one of the Societies, and desired, with some others, to come with me in our Ship. *GOD sanctify my Ministry unto them.* Most of the rest are of the Scots Church, but seem very willing to conform. *What a Pity it is, CHRIST's seamless Coat should be rent in Pieces on Account of Things in themselves purely indifferent!*

At Dinner we were likely to be struck against by the Man of War; but GOD had Mercy on us, commanded the Wind to shift about, and delivered us out of so great a Danger. *Oh that we may shew forth our Thankfulness, not only with our Lips, but in our Lives! How ought Creatures to live, who are every Moment liable to be hurried away by Death to Judgment!*

This Day we set sail from Gibraltar. At first the Wind was fair, but afterwards blew contrary, which made both me and many others sick. I should have wondered if GOD had not sent me a Thorn in the Flesh, after such abundant Success. *May I learn to suffer, as well as do thy Will, O GOD!*

*Wednesday, Mar. 8.* Had a useful Conference with one who was an Instrument, under GOD, of introducing me at Gibraltar, and who, I trust, will make a devout Centurion. *Grant this, Holy Father, for thy dear Son's sake.*

Finished my Exposition on the Creed in the great Cabin, and did my other Duty in the Ship, as usual. The Wind

44

blew hard, and GOD sent abroad his Lightning great part of the day. *J.D.* Friend *H.* [[Habersham]] and myself also, were sick, but not so as to prevent our Intercession for absent Friends. *Whatever befalls me, O GOD, may I never forget their Works and Labour of Love. As yet, blessed be GOD, they are always on my Mind, and I bear them on my Heart whensoever I go in and out from before the LORD. And nothing does and will support me more under all Crosses, than the Hopes of seeing them grown in Grace when I return to England. O GOD prepare me for so great a Blessing!*

Gave myself, as much as my Indisposition of Body would give me Leave, to the Word of GOD and Prayer; and was much affected with what is said of *Hezekiah*, 2 *Chron.* xxxii. 25. that because he rendered not again, was not thankful enough for the great Things GOD had done for him, he was permitted to fall through the Pride of his Heart. *Alas! what Danger am I in of sharing the same Fate! Oh my Friends, cry mightily unto GOD, that no such Evil come upon me.*

*Thursday, March 9.* Married a Couple on Deck. I endeavoured to give them a suitable Exhortation after the Solemnity was over, and hope this Couple did call CHRIST to their Marriage. *It is through a Neglect of this, that we have so few happy Matches.*

The contrary Wind still continuing, my Sea-sickness increased; so that I was obliged to omit reading Prayers to the Soldiers, and go to Bed sooner than usual. I find this Sickness will purge my Body, and hope, through Grace, it will purify my Soul. *Every Branch that beareth Fruit, says CHRIST, my Father purgeth it, that it may bring forth more Fruit. May that Scripture this Day be fulfilled in my Heart!*

*Friday, March 10.* My Bodily Indisposition still increased; there was a great Storm without, but, blessed be GOD, a Calm within. Sometimes, indeed, my Will would inwardly rebel, which plainly shewed me what a Distance I was from GOD: But I hope, through inward and outward Sufferings, I shall at length, be able to say in all Things, *Father, not my Will, but thine be done.*

Did my usual Duty in the great Cabin, and began expounding the Ten Commandments; interceded for Friends on Deck, and went to Bed full of a Sense of my own Unworthiness. Oh that I could always see myself in my proper Colours! I believe I should have little Reason to fall down and worship myself. *God be merciful to me a Sinner.*

*Saturday,*

45

*Saturday, Mar. 11.* Blessed be GOD, this Morning the Storm began to blow over, and Light broke in upon my Soul. Was enabled to read Prayers and expound both in the Cabin and to the Soldiers, with more Vigour than I have since we left *Gibraltar*. Had Reason to think my late Indisposition had been sanctified to me. *Suffering Times are a Christian's best improving Times;* for they break the Will, wean us from the Creature, prove the Heart; and by them GOD teaches his Children, as *Gideon* by Thorns and Briars taught the Men of Succoth.

All the time of my Indisposition, my dear Friend *H.* mourned over me like a Dove. Blessed be GOD! Familiarity does not breed Contempt between us, but our Love to each other increases daily: *JESUS CHRIST is the only Rock whereon alone true Friendship can be built.*

*Sunday, March 12.* Expounded with more Enlargement than usual, and gave my People Notice that I intended speaking to them one by one, to see what Account they could give of their Faith. *I have not ceased warning every one of You,* says the Apostle. *May I follow his Steps!*

Preached the Sermon GOD enabled me to make in the Storm before we came to *Gibraltar*, in the great Cabin; and GOD was pleased to set his Seal to it. Had some close Conversation with my Companions about their Interior; interceded for absent Friends, and had Reason to hope my weak Efforts to promote his Glory had not been in vain in the LORD. *May GOD give me a thankful Heart!*

*Monday, March 13.* Blessed be GOD! this is the most comfortable Day I have had since I came last aboard; slept better than usual; was enabled to compose freely; [perceived my Appetite to return,] was enlarged much in Intercession,

and found I had Reason to give Thanks for my late Indisposition. *O how gently does my gracious Master deal with me! Though Sorrow may endure for a Night, yet Joy cometh in the Morning. LORD, grant that I may spend that Health thou hast now restored to me to thy Honour and Service! It is good for me that I have been a little chastised; for who knows but I might otherwise have perished by being lifted up above measure with my last Success? LORD, give me Humility, though it be through Sufferings! so shall thy Blessings never prove my Ruin.*

Tuesday, March 14. Began to put in Execution what I promised on Sunday,—enquired into the Faith of those committed to my Charge; and though all of them were not so great Proficients as I could wish, yet I find they know enough to save them, if they put what they know in practice;

so

46

so that they cannot charge GOD, if they miscarry. *Oh! that the LORD may give them his Blessing!*

Had much of the Presence of GOD with me, and felt such a fervent Love for my Christian Friends, that I feared how I should behave, was GOD to call any of them from me. But I trust sufficient for such an Hour will be the Strength thereof.

Wednesday, March 15. Was much pleased with my present Situation, and had Reason to bless GOD for some farther visible good Effects of my Ministry. Was highly delighted in seeing Friend H. [[Habersham]] active in teaching the Lambs of my Flock: He has now gotten a regular School, and the Children began to-day to come at regular set Hours: Several also of the Soldiers learn to write and read; so that my Friend is like to make an useful Man. *GOD make him*

*more and more so every Day!*

Thursday, March 16. Preached this Afternoon my Sermon against Swearing, at which several of the Soldiers wept. Blessed be GOD! that Sin is much abated amongst us; and I think a visible Alteration may be perceived through the whole Ship. *Not unto me, not unto me, O LORD, but unto thy Name be the Glory!*

Was much strengthened in my present Undertaking, by reading the Story of *Ezra*, and joined in Intercession with those who set apart this Day as a Day of Fasting and Prayer for the Sins of the Nation to which we belong. *May they prove as effectual as those which Moses put up for the Children of Israel!*

The sick increased to-day; visited near a Dozen. *May I by thus frequent visiting sick Beds, learn to improve my Time of Health: for, alas, What can be done in Time of Sickness? I find but few that are able with any tolerable Patience to sustain their bodily Infirmities: But to have a wounded Spirit at the same Time, Good GOD, who can bear it?*

Friday, March 17. Last Night GOD sent us a fair Wind, and we began to sail most pleasantly: I was comforted on every Side, and enabled to intercede fervently for all Mankind. *Oh that the Love of GOD and Man was shed abroad in my Heart!*

Saturday, March 18. The Weather being exceeding fair, and the Sea calm, I went with Capt. W. [[Whiting]] on board the *Light-foot*, dined with the Gentlemen belonging to the Ship and Colonel C. who came on board to pay them a Visit: married a Couple; dispersed Bibles, Testaments, Soldiers Monitors amongst the Men; exchanged some Books for some Cards,

which

47

which I threw over board; preached a Sermon against Drunkenness, which GOD enabled me to finish yesterday: and returned in the Evening, highly delighted with seeing the Porpoises roll about the great Deep. *O LORD, the Sea is full of thy Riches! marvellous are thy Works, and that my Soul knoweth right well. O that I may live to praise thee for them! What Mercies have I received this Week! they are more in Number than the Hairs of my Head. Oh that my Friends would give Thanks for me!*

Sunday, March 19. Went with Captain W. [[\*]] on board the *Amy*; read Prayers and preached to above two hundred and twenty Hearers; and married a Couple, who did not behave so well as I could wish: The Bridegroom laughed several Times in the midst of the Solemnity, upon which I shut up

my Prayer-book: *but* he *shewing his Concern by weeping*, I then proceeded, gave him and the Bride a Bible, as the best Present I could make them; and exhorted all to Holiness of Life. *GOD give them a hearing Ear, and an obedient Heart!*

Dined with Colonel C. [[Cochrane]] who treated me with the utmost Civility, and took care to dispose of some Books I brought with me to proper Persons.

About Three we returned to the *Whitaker*, read Prayers and preached my Sermon against Drunkenness; after which Capt. M. [[Mackay]] made a useful Speech to the Men, and exhorted them to give heed to the Things that had been spoken. Religion is likely to go on well, when both the Civil and Ecclesiastical Powers are engaged in keeping up the Purity of it. *But, LORD, unless thou assist us, all our Endeavours are but in vain. Vouchsafe then, we beseech thee, to give us thy Blessing!*

Had above an Hour's close Conversation with my Companions concerning their Interior; and walked with Friend H. [[Habersham]] on Deck 'till Twelve at Night, admiring GOD's Wonders in the Deep. *Blessed be GOD for sending us abroad.*

*Monday, March 20.* To-day Colonel C. [[Cochrane]] came to dine with us, and in the midst of our Meal we were entertained with a most agreeable Sight; it was a Shark about the Length of a Man, which followed our Ship, attended with five little Fishes called the Pilot Fish, much like a Mackarel, but larger. These I am told always keep the Shark company; and what is most surprising, though the Shark is so ravenous a Creature, yet let it be ever so hungry, it never touches one of them. Nor are they less faithful to him: For if at any Time the Shark is hooked, these little Creatures will not

forsake

48

forsake him, but cleave close to his Fins, and are often taken up with him. *Go to the Pilot Fish, thou that forsakest a Friend in Adversity, consider his Ways and be abashed.* This simple Sight one would think sufficient to confute any Atheist (if there be such a Fool as a speculative Atheist) in the World.



After Dinner I read Prayers and expounded to my own People; and then went aboard the *Amy* with Colonel C. [[Cochrane]] *who used me with uncommon Civility*, married a Couple; and came back to the *Whitaker*, rejoicing to see the Works of the LORD, and the Beauty of the great Deep. *Who would but come abroad?*

Had near two Hours close Conversation with a Gentleman, in whom appear many Marks of the New Birth. Surely he will prove a devout Centurion! *How shall I be constrained 'till it be accomplished!*

Tuesday, March 21. Had fresh Reason to be thankful: Captain M. made me a kind Present; the Weather exceedingly pleasant; and what was the greatest Blessing of all, GOD's Holy Spirit seemed to be moving on the Faces of some of the Souls in the Ship.

The Weather growing warmer, Friend H. [[\*]] had some Cloths hung over to cover his School: His Children come very regular both to learn and say their Prayers at Night: Capt. W. [[Whiting]] takes great Delight in them: Capt. M. [[Mackay]] much encourages the Soldiers to learn to read and write: so that we begin to live as regular now as we could wish to do on Shore. *Blessed be GOD for thus making his Power to be known!*

Though GOD gives me so much Comfort, yet my dear England Friends are seldom out of my Mind; though absent in Body, I am present with them in Spirit. *The LORD direct my Way unto them, and grant if ever I return it may be in the Fullness of the Blessing of the Gospel of Peace!*

Wednesday, March 22. Saw a large Grampus rolling and spouting out Water for a long while, at a short Distance from our Ship: It put me in mind of the Behemoth spoken of by *Holy Job*, and of the Leviathan mentioned by the Royal Psalmist. *O GOD, Who is like unto Thee?*

Thursday, March 23. This Morning we began to have Prayers at Six o' Clock, and the Drum beat to call the People. *Methinks* we grow more and more regular every Day. *GOD be praised!*

Was **very** fervent in Intercession for absent Friends and all Mankind. *Oh, Intercession is a most delightful Exercise! How does it sweeten and purify the Heart!*

Visited

49

Visited near twelve or fourteen sick Persons; and yet such is GOD's Mercy to me, that though the Place where they lye is much confined, and they catch the Fever of one another, yet GOD keeps me from Infection. *The Way of Duty is the Way of Safety.* Now GOD has sent his Visitations a-broad amongst us, I hope we shall learn Righteousness.

Friday, March 24. To-day the Sick still increased, and Friend H. [[Habersham]] was very ready to assist and carry Things to them. *Nothing more useful than visiting sick Beds. How are those to be pitied, who purposely shun such improving Sights!*

**Had still fresh Reason to bless GOD for the Success of my Ministry: Not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy Name, O LORD, be all the Glory!**

We begin now to live so happy on Shipboard, that I believe we shall part with each other with Regret. *By this may all Men know we are CHRIST's Disciples, that we love one another.*

Sailed **an** hundred and fifty four Miles the last twenty four Hours: and was much delighted in seeing many Porpoises playing about the Ship, one of which Captain W. [[Whiting]] caught, and Part of its Liver we had dressed for Dinner: It had a Head much like a Pig, and was about six Foot long. *The Works of the LORD are exceeding great, and to be admired of all them **that** have a Delight therein.*

Churched a Woman who lately was delivered of a dead Child, and afterwards gave her an Exhortation applicable to her Circumstances. *GOD grant she may apply it to her Heart!*

Sunday, March 26. This Day GOD I trust magnified his Power in the Conversion of a young Gentleman on board, whom He has been pleased to visit with a Fever. His Convictions were strong, and as far as I could find, a thorough Renovation begun in his Heart: *The **Good** LORD perfect it 'till the Day of his Dissolution.* Now GOD begins to shew

me wherefore he hath sent me: *O that I was humble! that I might be fit for the High and Lofty One, who inhabiteth Eternity, to work by.*

Preached a Sermon in the Afternoon, on *Luke iii. 14.*—*And the Soldiers likewise came unto him, and demanded, saying, And what must we do? And he said unto them, Do Violence to no Man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your Wages.* I made it at the Request of Capt. M. [[Mackay]] who seems in earnest about the great Work of his Salvation: He has read *Arndt's True Christianity*, and is now reading *Law's Christian Perfection*; Books worth their Weight in Gold, and which

H

GOD

50

GOD has blessed to the Conversion of many. *But what are Books without thy Spirit, O LORD? Do thou bless them unto him, and they shall be blessed.*

Exchanged some bad Books that were on board (which I threw immediately into the Sea) for some good ones, **blessed be GOD**; all that I have found them with, as yet, have been ready to surrender them up. And I find **it** by daily Experience more and more that People who are truly awakened to a Sense of the Divine Life, cannot bear to read any thing trifling; but throw away their useless Books, as those did the Books of Divination and curious Arts, whose Conversion we read in the *Acts, Chap. v* [[19]].

*Monday, March 27.* Last Night GOD was pleased to take away a black Boy of Captain W's [[Whiting's]], after he had been ill of a violent Fever for some Days.—He was never baptised, but I had a Commission from his Master, who seemed much affected at his Death, to instruct, and baptise him, if it had pleased the Most High that he should recover; but GOD saw fit to order it otherwise. *His holy Will be done.* About Ten in the Morning he was wrapt up in a Hammock and thrown into the Sea. I could not read the Office over him being unbaptised, but Capt. M. [[Mackay]] ordered the Drum to beat, and I exhorted all the Soldiers, Sailors, &c. as GOD gave me Utterance, to *Remember their Creator in the Days of their Youth*, and to prepare for that Time, *when the Sea should give up its Dead, and all Nations be called together to ap-*

*pear before the Son of GOD. Oh that they may be made wise by it, that they may lay to Heart what has been said, and practically consider their latter End!*

Had our Blessed Lord been here, I believe he would have wept to see what Havock Sin hath made amongst us. *Do thou LORD teach us so to number our Days, that we may apply our Hearts unto Wisdom.*

*Tuesday, March 28.* This Day Capt. M. [[Mackay]] began to come at Six in the Morning and join in Prayers on Deck, instead of having Prayers in the great Cabin. Surely our Soldiers will be without Excuse since their Captain leads so good an Example; **blessed be GOD**, I have no reason to complain of them, for they come very regularly twice a Day to Prayer, and an Oath seems to be a strange Thing amongst most of them. Many Marks of a sound Conversion appear in several abroad, and we live in perfect Harmony, and Peace, loving and beloved by one another. *Surely, my Friends, your Prayers are heard. Continue instant in them, and you shall*

*see*

<sup>51</sup>

*see greater Things than these: For GOD delights in the Prosperity of his Servants.*

*Wednesday, March 29.* Sailed nearly 160 Miles every twenty four Hours, for several Days, most delightful Weather, and **had** much of GOD's Presence amongst us.

*Heaven is, Dear LORD, where'er thou art,†*

*Oh never then from us depart;†*

*For to my Soul 'tis Hell to be,†*

*But for one Moment void of thee.*

*Thursday, March 30.* Had still more Proofs of a thorough Conversion being wrought in some in the Ship. I hope many of us shall have Reason to bless GOD for coming on board the *Whitaker*. *GOD grant, while I preach to others, I myself may not be a Castaway.* But GOD is Love, and he will not, if my Eye be single, let his Blessings destroy me. *O let thy Pow'r be exerted in preserving me, even me always, O my Saviour.*

## I.

*Renew thy Likeness, LORD, in me, &  
 Lowly and gentle may I be, &  
 No Charms but these to Thee are Dear; &  
 No Anger mayst thou ever find, &  
 No Pride in my unruffled Mind, &  
 But Faith and Heaven-born Peace be there.*

## II.

*A patient, a victorious Mind, &  
 A Life that all Things cast behind, &  
 Springs forth obedient to thy Call; &  
 A Heart that no Desire can move; &  
 But still t'adore, and praise, and love, &  
 Give me, my Lord, my Life, my All.*

Friday, March 31. This being the Crucifixion of our blessed Lord, I preached a Sermon on the *Penitent Thief*, and I hope GOD gave it his Blessing. We begun Prayers later than usual, so that before I had done, Darkness came upon us, which put me in Mind of that Darkness which overwhelm'd the World, when the GOD of Nature suffered. *Oh that our Hearts may rend like the Rocks, and our Souls arise from the Death of Sin, as the Bodies of those did from their Graves who appeared to many in the Holy City, after our Lord's Resurrection.*

Had a good Instance of the Benefit of breaking Children's Wills betimes. Last Night going between Decks (as I do

H 2

every

52

every Night) to visit the Sick and to examine my People, I asked one of the Women to bid her little Boy **that** stood by her, say his Prayers, she answered his elder Sister would, but she could not make him. Upon this, I bid the Child kneel down before me, but he would not till I took hold of his two Feet and forced **it** down. I then bid it say the Lord's Prayer, (being informed by his Mother he could say it if he would) but he obstinately refused, till at last after I had given **it** several Blows, it said its Prayer as well as could be expected, and I gave it some Figs for a Reward. And this

same Child, tho' not above four Years of Age came to Night on Deck, when the other Children came to say their Prayers to my Friend *H.* [[\*]] and burst out into a Flood of Tears, and would not go away till he had said his too. I mention this as a Proof of the Necessity of early Correction. Children are sensible of it sooner than Parents imagine. And if they would but have Resolution to break their Wills thoroughly when young, the Work of Conversion would be much easier, and they would not be so troubled with perverse Children when they are old.

*Saturday, April 1.* Wonderful pleasant sailing still, and what was infinitely better, had reason to think several went forward in the great Work of their Salvation. *Oh that we may be buried with CHRIST in Baptism, and rise with him to Newness of Life.*

*Sunday, April 2.* Rose early this Morning, and joined in Spirit with my dear absent Friends, who were receiving the Holy Eucharist, and celebrating our Blessed Lord's Resurrection. I find my not being in Priest's Orders is a great Hindrance to my Ministry, which will oblige me to return to *England* as soon as possible. *The Good LORD prepare me for that second Imposition of Hands.*

Preached a Sermon in the Afternoon on *Phil. ii* [[iii]]. *10. That I may know him and the Power of his Resurrection. Oh that we may all experience it in our Hearts! For without it, CHRIST as to us is dead in vain.*

*Monday, April 3.* Had some further Conversation with the young Gentleman whose Conversion I mentioned before, and who I hope is really quickened from above. He told me he used to wonder to hear me talk that all our Thoughts, Words, and Actions ought to be dedicated unto God, but now he perceived what I said to be true. *How does the new Nature give us new Notions!* It seems a difficult Task to the natural Man to turn his whole Life into one continued Sacrifice, but the spiritual Man does it with Ease. He feels a

divine

divine Attraction in his Soul, which as sensibly draws his Heart towards GOD, as the Load-Stone attracts the Needle.

*Draw us then, O GOD, and our Affections will ascend up after Thee.*

About Eleven, went on board the *Lightfoot*, prayed with a sick Man, preached my Sermon on the *Penitent Thief*. Afterwards went on board the *Amy*, catechised the Children, dined on a Dolphin, had some useful Conversation, preached to the Soldiers, returned home about Six, read Prayers, visited the Sick, interceded for Friends, and went to Bed praising and blessing GOD.

*April 7.* Great Enlargement of Heart has been given me for these four Days last past, particularly to-day, in which God hath vouchsafed me much of his Presence, and assisting Grace, observed still stronger Signs of a thorough Conversion being wrought in some on board, had most delightful sailing, and every thing as pleasant as this vain World can afford. These are Preparatives for future Trials. Welcome in the Name of GOD. He will uphold me. If it were not for the Corruptions of my own Heart, which are continually stirring, what have I to disturb my Peace? But as long as those *Amalekites* remain in my Soul, I shall never be perfectly at Ease. *LORD keep me but striving, and I shall at last be more than Conqueror through JESUS CHRIST that loved me.*

*April 8.* Went on board the *Lightfoot* and *Amy*, and preached to the Soldiers of each Ship, dined with Colonel C. [[Cochrane]] **who continues extreamly civil**, and, at my Return found the Sick encrease upon my Hands. But few in the Ship escape. *The Good LORD make all their Beds in their Sickness.*

Had much of the Presence of GOD with me to-day. The Heat is uncommonly temperate as it has been for some time, and the Ship sailed all Day as tho' she **was** carried on the Wings of the Wind. Preached two Sermons besides my Exposition at Six in the Morning, and I hope GOD set his Seal to them. Was well pleased to hear by my Friend *H.* (who is very active in carrying things to the Sick) that the poor People between Decks prayed heartily for me.

And now indeed we live more comfortably in the great Cabin than can easily be imagined. We talk of little else but GOD and CHRIST. GOD has greatly blessed the Coun-

try Parson's Advice to his Parishioners, that excellent Book, and scarce a Word is to be heard amongst us when together but what has Reference to our Fall in the first, and our New Birth in the second *Adam*, the Lord from Heaven; so that

we

54

we all, I trust, are resolved to put my Afternoon's Text into Practice, and are *determined not to know any thing save JE SUS CHRIST and him crucified. Grant this, O Father, for thy dear Son's Sake. Oh that I knew how to be thankful! Oh that Heaven and Earth would join with me in praising God!* For

*I would not LORD, alone, &*

*Thy Praises celebrate, &*

*I'd call the blessed Angels down, &*

*I'd move the World's united State, &*

*Till they in fervent Songs, thy gracious Acts relate.*

*April 10, 11.* Spent good Part of these two Days in mending my Nets. Had exceeding pleasant Weather. Some more of the Sailors were convicted of Sin, and others send Notes to be prayed for, and give Thanks as regularly as in any Parish. *Blessed be GOD, we live very comfortably.*

*April 12, or 13.* To-day Captain *W.* [[Whiting]] caught a Dolphin which was most beautiful when drawn out of the Water, but its Colour soon changed. *Just so is Man; he flourishes for a little while, but when once Death cometh how quickly is his Beauty gone!* A Christian may learn a Lesson of Instruction from every thing he meets with.

*April 14.* To-day, I could have wished for some young Prodigals aboard the *Whitaker*, to see one of our Soldiers dying. Alas how did his Breast heave, his Heart pant, and great Drops of Sweat trickle down his Face! his Eyes looked ghastly, and the whole Man was in a bitter Agony. Captain *W.* [[Whiting]] went down between Decks with me once or twice to see him. *And* I used the last Prayer several times. About Nine at Night he expired I fear without Hope, for he killed himself by drinking. *Oh that all Drunkards would*



*learn from him to be wise in time, and practically consider their latter End!*

*April 15.* This Morning I buried the dead Soldier in time of public Prayers, chose proper Lessons, and gave the Soldiers a suitable Exhortation; but I was so affected with a Sense of the Misery of fallen Man, that I could not speak with my usual Vigour.

To-day was called in a hurry to pray by one of the devout Soldiers who came from *Gibraltar*, and who was supposed to be expiring. I came, [I saw] and rejoiced in Spirit, for his Soul seemed full of GOD. Instead of being affrighted at the Approach of the King of Terrors he welcomed it, and said he was going to his dear Redeemer: then he fell as it were into

a Trance

55

a Trance, and poured out his Heart in repeating some very applicable Verses out of the *Psalms*. Upon which we thought he would have died: But lo! GOD brought him from the nethermost Hell. From that Instant the Fever left him, and he recovered. Oh, what Difference is there between him that feareth GOD, and him that feareth him not, in their last Hours! *LORD, let me die the Death of the Righteous, and let my future State be like his.*

Exercised a little Discipline this Evening on a Boy, whom Captain M. [[Mackay]] took notice of above a Week ago for behaving ill at Church, and said he would deliver him up to me: I therefore, by the advice of his Master, ordered him to be tied 'till he could say the 51<sup>st</sup> Psalm, which he repeated to-night very solemnly in the midst of the Congregation. May it be a Warning to him for the future!

*Sunday, April 16.* Read Prayers and expounded at Six in the Morning, and preached to my own People: Then went and preached on board the *Lightfoot*; and afterwards dined, read Prayers, and preached on board the *Amy*: Returned about Five in the Evening to the *Whitaker*; read Prayers and preached, visited the Sick, and went to Bed blessing GOD for the Strength of the Day. All the Officers continue extremely kind, and seem studious to oblige me all they can.  
*The Good LORD reward them a thousand Fold!*

This Evening I was sent for by a Sailor, who has been the most remarkable Swearer on board; and whom I in an especial Manner warned about two Days ago, telling him, I believed GOD would remarkably visit him, *as well as the others*: He laughed, and said he hoped not. But to-night he sent for me, trembling, and burning with a Fever, told me what grievous Sins he had been guilty of, and prayed most fervently for Repentance. Two or three of the same Stamp have been taken in the same Manner. *GOD grant they may flee from the Wrath to come! Sinners must either bend or break.*

Tuesday, April 18. Was greatly delighted in seeing two Water-spouts, which ran along for several Miles, and by the especial Providence of GOD escaped us. We saw one of them coming, and were surprised to observe a sudden Calm for about six Minutes round the *Whitaker*, when the other Parts of the Sea boiled like a Pot. *But* surely the Everlasting *I AM* said to the Sea at that Instant, *Let there be a Calm in that Place*: For *by that Means* our Ship was immediately stopped in her Course, and so the Water-spout passed by before we came up to it; otherwise it would have torn our

Sails

56

Sails in Pieces. GOD's Hand was so visible in this, that several said, they never beheld the like before. *Oh how does Providence watch over us, when we think nothing of it! Who would but live well to be under the immediate Protection of such an Over-ruling Power?* After this, several Squalls came upon us, which afforded me glorious Matter for adoring that great good GOD, whom Winds and Storms obey. The Sailors were in great Hurry and Confusion, but to my Comfort not *one single Oath* was heard all the while: A Proof this, that Sailors may pull their Ropes without Swearing, and that the Words spoken to them have not altogether fallen to the Ground: *Blessed be GOD!*

Saturday, April 22. Fled as it were on the Wings of the Wind for three Days past, sailing sometimes an hundred and seventy, sometimes *an* hundred and eighty Miles in twenty four Hours. I find that GOD generally sends us strongest Winds when nearest our Port. *May I learn from hence a*

*Lesson of Instruction; and the nearer I come to my Haven of eternal Rest, the quicker may I move!*

Spent most of these Days in writing to my dear Friends in England, and in particular Supplication for Direction how to act in the Land whither I am going. The Thoughts of my own Weakness, and the Greatness of those Trials which I must necessarily meet with, fill me with a holy Fear. *But wherefore do I fear? The Eternal Almighty I AM hath and will no doubt protect me.*

Sunday, April 23. Preached twice to my People to-day, and spent most of the rest of the Day in earnest Prayer for the Divine Assistance in my present Undertaking, being as we imagined near the Haven where we would be. The Morning Lessons were exceeding applicable, so that we could not help taking notice of it. *By this I know GOD favours me.*

Monday, May 1. This Morning went out upon Deck, after being confined to my Bed a Week by a violent Fever, with which all except three or four in the Ship have been visited. I was blooded thrice, and blistered and vomited once, and, Blessed be GOD! can say, *It is good for me that I have been afflicted:* For as Afflictions abounded, Consolations much more abounded; and GOD enabled me to rejoice with Joy unspeakable *and full of Glory.* Satan desired to have me to sift me as Wheat, but JESUS CHRIST prayed for me, and my Faith failed not. I had all the Conveniences I could have on Shore: Capt. W. [[Whiting]] resigned his own Bed to me: J.D.

and

57

and Friend H. sat up with me every Night, and nothing was wanting to make my Sickness comfortable and easy. *Blessed be GOD for these abundant Mercies in CHRIST JESUS!*

I hope I shall now experimentally sympathise with those *that* are sick, and learn to be more tender-hearted to my Fellow Christians. I am now made whole: *May I sin no more, be more fervent in Spirit, serving the Lord! lest a worse Evil befall me.*

*Friday, May 5.* About Ten o'clock this Morning buried the Cook of the Ship, who expired last Night. I could have wished for a hundred Tongues to have sounded a loud Alarm to the People; but the Sight of the Corpse, and the Weakness of my Body, would but just permit me to read out the Office. *LORD, what is Man?* Oh why are others taken and I left, but that GOD's long Suffering should lead me to Repentance? *Grant it, O LORD, for thy dear Son's sake!*

In the Afternoon I privately baptized a new-born Infant. Thus it is, some coming into the World, others going out of it continually. *Good GOD! Who can desire to live here always?*

This Afternoon, after having lain about a Week on this Coast, we saw *Savannah* River, and sent off for a Pilot. Oh what Joy appeared in every one's Countenance! How infinitely more joyful will the Children of GOD be, when having passed through the Waves of this troublesome World, they arrive at the Haven of everlasting Rest? *Hasten, O LORD, that blessed Time, and let thy Kingdom come!*

*Sunday, May 7.* Last Night, by the Blessing of God, we cast anchor near *Tyby* Island, about fourteen Miles off *Savannah*; and to-day GOD gave me Strength to preach my Farewell Sermon, (which I have sent you,) at which many wept.

After this, I took Boat with my friend *H.* [[Habersham]] and arrived safe at *Savannah*, *having a most Pleasant passage*, about Seven in the Evening. How GOD is pleased to deal with me there, I'll endeavour to inform you hereafter.

*In the mean while, fail not to give Thanks for the Mercies I have received.* Though we have had a long, yet it has been an exceeding pleasant Voyage. GOD, in Compassion to my Weakness, has set me but few Trials; and sanctified those He hath sent me. *I am now going forth as a Sheep amongst Wolves; but He that protected Abraham* when he went out not knowing whither he went, will also guide and

---

protect

58

protect me; and therefore I cannot close this Part of my Journal better than with Mr. *Addison's* Translation of the 23<sup>d</sup> Psalm:

## I.

*The LORD my Pasture shall prepare, &  
And feed me with a Shepherd's Care; &  
His Presence shall my Wants supply, &  
And guard me with a watchful Eye: &  
My Noon-day Walks He shall attend, &  
And all my Midnight Hours defend.*

## II.

*When in the sultry Glebe I faint, &  
Or on the thirsty Mountain pant, &  
To fertile Vales and dewy Meads &  
My weary wand'ring Steps He leads; &  
Where peaceful Rivers soft and slow, &  
Amidst the verdant Landskips flow.*

## III.

*Tho' in the Paths of Death I tread, &  
With gloomy Horrors overspread, &  
My stedfast Heart shall fear no Ill, &  
For Thou, O LORD, art with me still; &  
Thy friendly Crook shall give me Aid, &  
And guide me thro' the dreadful Shade.*

## IV.

*Tho' in a bare and rugged Way, &  
Thro' devious lonely Wilds I stray, &  
Thy Bounty shall my Pains beguile; &  
The barren Wilderness shall smile, &  
With sudden Greens and Herbage crown'd, &  
And Streams shall murmur all around.*

FINIS.

SECOND JOURNAL

173

# [SECOND JOURNAL]

A

CONTINUATION

of the REVEREND

MR. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL,

From his ARRIVAL at

*SAVANNAH*,

To his RETURN to

LONDON.

LONDON,

Printed for JAMES HUTTON; at the *Bible and Sun*,  
without *Temple-Bar*. M.DCC.XXXIX.

## THE PREFACE

**T**<sup>HOUGH</sup> <sup>nals</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>Jour-</sup>  
ed, <sup>already</sup> <sup>publish-</sup>  
out <sup>were</sup> <sup>printed</sup> <sup>with-</sup>  
my <sup>Knowledge,</sup> <sup>yet</sup> <sup>as</sup>  
GOD <sup>has</sup> <sup>been</sup> <sup>pleased</sup> <sup>to</sup> <sup>let</sup>  
me <sup>see,</sup> <sup>by</sup> <sup>Letters</sup> <sup>sent</sup> <sup>to</sup>  
me, <sup>that</sup> <sup>he</sup> <sup>has</sup> <sup>greatly</sup> <sup>blessed</sup>  
them, <sup>I</sup> <sup>now</sup> <sup>upon</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>Im-</sup>  
portunity <sup>of</sup> <sup>Friends,</sup> <sup>consent</sup>  
to <sup>the</sup> <sup>publishing</sup> <sup>a</sup> <sup>Continua-</sup>  
tion <sup>of</sup> <sup>them,</sup> <sup>that</sup> <sup>those</sup> <sup>pious</sup>  
Persons <sup>who</sup> <sup>have</sup> <sup>interceded</sup>  
in <sup>my</sup> <sup>behalf,</sup> <sup>may</sup> <sup>see</sup> <sup>what</sup>  
GOD, <sup>in</sup> <sup>answer</sup> <sup>to</sup> <sup>their</sup>  
Prayers, <sup>has</sup> <sup>done</sup> <sup>for</sup> <sup>my</sup>  
Soul.

I

<sup>I</sup> <sup>am</sup> <sup>sensible</sup> <sup>that</sup> <sup>this,</sup> <sup>as</sup>  
well <sup>as</sup> <sup>every</sup> <sup>Thing</sup> <sup>else</sup> <sup>of</sup>  
such <sup>a</sup> <sup>Nature,</sup> <sup>must</sup> <sup>necessa-</sup>  
rily <sup>meet</sup> <sup>with</sup> <sup>great</sup> <sup>Contempt</sup>  
from <sup>natural</sup> <sup>Men,</sup> <sup>who</sup> <sup>are</sup>  
Strangers <sup>to</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>Influences</sup> <sup>of</sup>  
the <sup>HOLY</sup> <sup>GHOST</sup> <sup>upon</sup>  
the <sup>Heart.</sup> <sup>But</sup> <sup>what</sup> <sup>have</sup>  
<sup>I</sup> <sup>to</sup> <sup>do</sup> <sup>with</sup> <sup>them?</sup> <sup>If</sup> <sup>any</sup>  
of <sup>GOD's</sup> <sup>Children</sup> <sup>receive</sup>  
the <sup>least</sup> <sup>Consolation</sup> <sup>from</sup> <sup>my</sup>  
Experiences, <sup>Let</sup> <sup>almost,</sup>  
formal <sup>Christians</sup> <sup>be</sup> <sup>offend-</sup>  
ed, <sup>and</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>Scoffers</sup> <sup>of</sup> <sup>these</sup>  
last <sup>Days</sup> <sup>mock</sup> <sup>on.—I</sup>  
rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

A

I

## A

CONTINUATION  
OF THERev. Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s**JOURNAL, &c.**

*Sunday, May 7. Arrived at Savannah Town about seven this Evening, and joined in Prayer, and a Psalm of Thanksgiving with Mr. Delamotte, and some pious Souls that were rejoiced at my Arrival. The good LORD sanctify our meeting to his Glory, and his People's Welfare.*

*Spent the remainder of the Evening in taking sweet Counsel with Mr. Delamotte, who seems providentially left behind at Savannah against my coming. How sweetly does Providence order Things for us! Oh may I constantly follow it as the wise Men did the Star in the East.*

*Monday, May 8. Begun to read publick Prayers and expound the second Lesson at Five in the Morning, to seventeen Adults and twenty five Children. May GOD open their Hearts that they may attend to the Things that were spoken.*

B

In

2

*In the Afternoon, Mr. Causton sent Word that he and the Magistrates would wait upon me, but I chose rather to wait upon them. I was received with great Civility, and our chief Conversation ran upon the Place of my Settlement; at last it was resolved that I should have a House and Tabernacle built at Frederica, and serve at Savannah, when, and as long as I pleased. I find there are many Divisions amongst the Inhabitants; but GOD, I hope, will*



make me an Instrument of composing them: *Grant this, O LORD, for thy dear Son's Sake.*

*Sunday, May 14.* After another Week's Confinement, by the Return of my Fever, under which GOD shewed me great Mercies, and which went off with a Fit of the Ague, I attempted to read Prayers, but was so exceeding faint and weak, that I was obliged to leave off before I begun the second Service. *Oh that my Friends had seen me at that Hour, they then might have learnt not to have any Man's Person in Admiration, and not to think more highly of me than they ought to think.*

*Tuesday, May 16.* Having by the Blessing of GOD gotten a little Strength, I went to see *Tomo Chachi*, who, I heard, was near expiring at a Neighbour's House. He lay on a Blanket thin and meagre, and little else but Skin and Bones. *Senauki* sat by fanning him with some *Indian* Feathers. There was no Body that could talk *English*, so I could only shake Hands and leave him.

*Friday, May 19.* GOD still strengthening me more and more, I went this Morning to two little Villages, *Hampstead* and *Highgate*, about Five Miles off *Savannah*: The former consists of three Families, making in all eleven Souls, one Man a *Jew*; two Men, one Woman and seven Children *Swissers*.

I was

---

3

I was much delighted with seeing the Improvements a few pairs of Hands had made in their respective Plantations, and was surprized to see what Industry will do. Surely they speak not Truth, who say that the *Georgia* People have been idle; for I never saw more laborious People than are in these Villages. They live exceeding hard, but with a little Assist-

ance may do very well. I was at a Loss, because I could not **talk** *French*; but **however** I resolved, under GOD, to follow my worthy Predecessor's Example, and to visit them once a Week, and read Prayers to as many as could understand me. I also enquired into the State of their Children, and found there were many who might prove useful Members of the Colony, if there was a proper Place provided for their Maintenance and Education. Nothing can effect this but an Orphan-House, which might easily be erected at *Savannah*, would some of those who are rich in this World's Good, contribute towards it. *May GOD, in his due Time, stir up the Wills of his faithful People to be ready to distribute, and willing to communicate on this commendable Occasion.*

*Saturday, May 20.* Went once more to see *Tomo Chachi*, hearing his Nephew *Tooanoowee* was there, who could talk *English*. I desired **of** him to enquire of his Uncle, Whether he thought he should die; who answer'd, He could not tell: I then asked where he thought he should go after Death? He replied, to Heaven. *But alas, how can a Drunkard enter there!* I then exhorted *Tooanoowee* (who is a tall proper Youth) not to get drunk, telling him, he understood *English*, and therefore would be punished the more if he did not live better. I then asked him, Whether he believed in **a** Heaven? He answer'd, Yes. I then asked, Whether he believed in a Hell? and described it by pointing to the Fire, he replied,

B 2

No.

4

No. From whence we may easily gather how natural it is to all Mankind to believe there is a Place of Happiness, because they wish it may be so, and on the contrary, how averse they are to believe in a Place of Torment, because they wish it may not be so. But GOD is true and just, and as surely as the Good shall

go into everlasting Happiness, so the Wicked shall go into everlasting Punishment.

*Wednesday, May 24.* Went to Day to *Thunderbolt*, a Village about six Miles off *Savannah*, situated very pleasantly near the River, and consisting of three Families, four Men and two Women, and ten Servants; I was kindly received, expounded a Chapter, used a few Collects, called on a Family or two that lay near our Way, and returned home to *Savannah* very comfortably, with my Friend *Delamotte*, about six o' Clock in the Evening. *Blessed be GOD for strengthening my weak Body.*

*Friday, June 2.* This Evening parted with kind Captain *Whiting* and my dear Friend *Delamotte*, who embarked for *England* about seven at Night. The poor People lamented the Loss of him, and went to the Water-side to take a last Farewel. And good Reason had they to do so: For he has been indefatigable in feeding CHRIST's Lambs with the sincere Milk of the Word, and many of them (*Blessed be GOD*) have grown thereby. Surely I must labour most heartily, since I come after such worthy Predecessors. The Good, Mr. *John Wesley* has done in *America*, under GOD, is inexpressible. His Name is very precious among the People; and he has laid such a Foundation, that I hope neither Men nor Devils will ever be able to shake. *Oh that I may follow him as he has Christ.*

*Monday, June 5.* Had a Conference with a cer-

tain

5

tain Person of the Parish, who, I heard last Night, had been broaching many heretical Doctrines to one of my Friends, particularly in denying the Eternity of Hell Torments. I therefore invited him this Morning to Breakfast; and after imploring GOD's

Assistance, in the Spirit of Meekness, I asked him, Whether he believed in the Eternity of Hell Torments? He answer'd frankly, No. I replied, What do you mean, Sir, when you repeat the 12<sup>th</sup> Article of our Creed? He said, he believed wicked Men were to be annihilated. I then read *Pearson's Exposition* of the last Article, but he denied it all, said he thought himself in the right, and believed it his Duty to inform Mankind, that they were to be annihilated. Upon which I repeated to him that Passage out of the *Revelations*. "If any Man shall take away from or add unto the Words that are written in this Book, GOD shall take away his Name out of the Book of Life, and add unto him all the Plagues that are written in this Book." This he said he believed. Afterwards we discoursed afresh, but finding him resolute to propagate his Principles, I then told him with the utmost Calmness, that I was sorry *that* I gave him the Cup yesterday at the Sacrament; but for the future, he must pardon me if I refused ever to give it him again. This stagger'd him a little, but he bore it pretty patiently, yet thought me uncharitable. *But I told him I should meet him at the Judgment-Seat of CHRIST, and then he would see upon what Principles I acted. May GOD give me Grace not to regard the Faces of Men, but with an humble well guided Zeal and Courage to watch the Flock over which the Holy Ghost has made me Overseer.*

Saturday, June 10. Placed one that came with me, at *Highgate*, to teach the Children *English*, that belong to that Village and *Hampstead*. There are about twenty in all, of *French* Extraction, but some

B 3

few

6

few of them are able to speak a little in our vulgar Tongue. I thought placing a Master there, would be of great Consequence. *First*, Because I cannot think Children will ever be naturaliz'd to the Colo-

ny, till they can talk our Language. *Secondly*, Because the present Generation will soon wear off, and these Children being well instructed in ours, will make them forget their own Tongue, and should they marry and have Children, they would naturally teach their Children the same; so that at length we shall all be of one Speech. *Thirdly*, As they are but few in Number, and no likelihood of any *French Minister to come* amongst them; I or my Successors *shall* be unable to Catechise or bring them to hear the Word of GOD at our Church, unless they are acquainted with the *English Tongue*.

*Monday, June 11* [[12]]. Opened a School to Day for the Girls of *Savannah*, a Friend, whose Heart GOD was pleased to touch on Board the Ship, having at my Request undertaken to teach them. The Work is for my Master, and therefore I doubt not of being supplied some Way or another with a sufficient Fund for the Support of it. *May GOD enable him who is set over them to feed them with the sincere Milk of the Word, and give them Grace to grow thereby!*

*Thursday, June 22*. Was taken (as all about me thought for Death) with a violent Purging and Vomiting, which in the Space of five Hours quite exhausted my Spirits, and brought me in appearance almost to the Point of Death. But GOD supported me by his inward Comforts, caused me to rejoice in it; and cast me into a deep Sleep, out of which I awoke perfectly well, to the Surprise of all about me, *O who can express the loving Kindness of the LORD, or shew forth all his Praise!* My Parishioners in general shewed they loved me; for they seem'd most

sollici-

solicitous for my Welfare. For their Sake, as well as for my own, I hope GOD has so suddenly restored me.

*GOD grant I may now begin to be active in my Master's Service, that whensoever he shall call I may be found so doing.*

*Friday, June 24* [[23]]. To the great Surprise of myself and People, was enabled to read Prayers and preach with Power before the Free-Masons, with whom I afterwards dined, and was used with the utmost Civility. *May GOD make them Servants of CHRIST, and then and not till then will they be free indeed.*

*Friday, July 7.* Being the Anniversary for opening the Court, I preached in the Morning at the Magistrate's Request, and endeavoured with all Plainness and Humility to shew both them and the People what they ought to do to promote their Temporal and Eternal Welfare. *O GOD, do thou bless it, and it shall be blessed thro' JESUS CHRIST.*

*Tuesday, July 11.* Returned this Evening from *Ebenezer* (whither I went Yesterday) the Place where the *Saltzburghers* are settled; and was wonderfully pleased with their Order and Industry. Their Lands are improved surprisingly for the Time they have been there, and I believe they have far the best Crop of any in the Colony.—They are bless'd with two such pious Ministers, as I have not often seen: They have no Courts of Judicature, but all little Differences are immediately and implicitly decided by their Ministers, whom they look upon and love as their Fathers. They have likewise an Orphan-House, in which are seventeen Children, and one Widow, and I was much delighted to see the Regularity wherewith it is managed;—*Oh that GOD may stir up the Hearts of his Servants to contribute towards that and another which we hope to have erected at*

Savan-

8

Savannah.—Mr. *Boltzius*, one of the Ministers, being with me on *Saturday*, I gave him some of my Poor's Store for his Orphans, and when I came to *Ebenezer*, he call'd them all before him, catechised and exhorted them to give GOD Thanks for his good Providence towards them; then prayed with them, and made them pray after him; then sung a Psalm, and afterwards the little Lambs came and shook me by the Hand one by one, and so we parted, and I scarce was ever better pleased in my Life—Surely whoever contributes to the Relief of the *Saltzburghers* will perform an acceptable Sacrifice to our Blessed Master. They are very poor; but with a little Assistance might live comfortably and well. They want a Place for Publick Worship, and Money to buy Cattle and other Necessaries for the Orphan-House and People. *May the great GOD raise up Instruments to assist and relieve them; for surely they are worthy.*

*Tuesday, July 18.* About ten o' Clock this Evening returned to *Savannah*, having set out from thence Yesterday to visit four or five Families that live at some of the outward Settlements about twelve Miles off.—Their Beginnings as yet are but small, but I cannot help thinking there are Foundations laying for great temporal and spiritual Blessings in *Georgia*, when the Inhabitants are found worthy.—Blessed be GOD, in *Savannah* they hear the Word gladly, and People every where receive me with the utmost Civility and are not angry when I reprove them.—*May GOD keep them always thus minded, and prepare me for whatever Sufferings he shall permit to fall upon me for doing my Duty.*

*Tuesday, July 25.* I am now waiting for the Scout-Boat which Mr. *Horton* has sent to take me to *Frederica*, to preach the Gospel there also. For

there-

9

therefore am I sent.—I should part with regret from the People of *Savannah*, did I not know GOD call'd me from them. For they seem to have a sincere Affection for me, and flock (especially every Evening) to hear the Word of GOD.—I have endeavoured to let my Gentleness be known amongst them, because they consist of different Nations and Opinions.—And I have strove to draw them by the Cords of Love, because the Obedience resulting from that Principle I take to be most genuine and lasting. My ordinary way of dividing ministerial Labours has been as follows,—

On *Sunday* Morning, at five o' Clock, I publickly expound the second Lesson for the Morning or Evening Service as I see most suited to the People's Edification; at Ten I preach and read Prayers, at Three in the Afternoon I do the same, and at Seven expound Part of the Church Catechism, at which great Numbers are usually present. I visit from House to House, read publick Prayers, and expound twice and catechise (unless something extraordinary happens,) visit the Sick every Day, and read to as many of my Parishioners as will come thrice a Week,—and blessed be GOD my Labours have not been altogether vain in the LORD. For he has been pleased to set his Seal to my Ministry in a Manner, I could not, I dared not in *America* expect. *Not unto me, O LORD, not unto me, but unto thy Name be the Glory.*

#### At *FREDERICA*.

*Tuesday, August 8.* After a pleasant Passage of five or six Days, I arrived at *Frederica*, a Town situated southwardly above a hundred Miles from *Savannah*, and consisting of about a hundred and twenty Inhabitants. The People received me most gladly,



having

10

having had a Famine of the Word for a long Season.  
*May GOD give a Blessing to my coming amongst them.*

In the Evening we had publick Prayers, and expounding of the second Lesson under a large Tree, and many more present than could be expected.  
*Blessed be GOD.*

*Wednesday, August 9.* Began to Day visiting from House to House, and found the People in Appearance desirous of being fed with the sincere Milk of the Word, and solicitous for my Continuance amongst them. Poor Creatures! my Heart ached for them, because I saw them and their Children scatter'd abroad as Sheep having no Shepherd. *LORD in thy due Time send forth some Labourer into this Part of thy Vineyard.*

This Evening had Prayers in a House which Mr. Horton hired for us during my Stay, and most of the Inhabitants, I believe, were present. Blessed be GOD, Timber is sawing for the erecting a more commodious Place for publick Worship, 'till a Church can be built. *GOD grant we may always worship him in Spirit and in Truth, and then we may be assured that at all Times and in all Places He will hear us.*

*Friday, August 11.* Went in the Morning to, and returned in the Evening from the *Darien*, a Settlement about twenty Miles off from *Frederica*, whither I went to see Mr. *Macloud*, a worthy Minister of the *Scotch* Church, and GOD gave me a most pleasant Passage.

*Saturday, August 12.* This Afternoon was alarmed with the News of a Family Disaster. My dear Friend *H's* Brother going to find a Horse that was lost in the Woods, got lost himself, and many Guns shot

after him for several Days, but in vain. I endeavoured to give Thanks to GOD for this and every

Thing

11

Thing that befalls me, because it is his Will, and resolved to set out for *Savannah* immediately, knowing what Concern my dear friend *H.* must be in at so sudden a Loss. *Blessed be GOD for this and all Crosses. Father thy Will be done in, by, and upon me for Time and for Eternity.*

In the Evening, because I was to go about Midnight, I gave Notice I would preach as well as expound, at which almost all the Inhabitants were present; for many were obliged to stand without the Door. The Lesson was very applicable to my Circumstances. It was the first of *St. James* wherein the Apostle bids us *rejoice when we fall into divers Temptations.* GOD enabled me to enlarge on it pretty much. I told the People that GOD called me and I must away, at which some wept. *Oh GOD how dost thou follow me with thy Blessings wherever thou sendest me! I looked for Persecution, but lo! I am received as an Angel of God. Not unto me, O LORD, not unto me, but unto thy Name be the Glory!*

*Sunday, Aug. 13.* Being disappointed of going by the Boat last Night, I read Prayers and preached to my dear little Flock twice, which caused great Joy among them. *Mr. Horton* was extreamly civil and did every Thing he could to oblige me. This Afternoon after Sermon intended to go with him to preach to the Soldiers at the Fort of *St. Simon's*, and then the next Day to go to *St. Andrew's*, but *Lord* thou callest me elsewhere. *Oh grant I may have no Will of my own, but whenever or wherever thou shalt be pleased to call me, may I without the least Reluctance say, lo I come!* Had an Alarm brought to *Frederica* that the *Spaniards* had taken Possession of

*Fort St. George*, and fired at one of our Boats: But this was quickly found to be entirely groundless.

About Two in the Afternoon, having first read Prayers, and preached, most of the Inhabitants ac-

companied

12

companied me to the *Bluff* and took their Leaves of me in an affectionate Manner, and laded me with Things convenient for my Journey. *The good Lord reward them ten thousand fold, and make me thankful for his unmerited Mercies!*

#### At SAVANNAH.

*Wednesday, August 16.* Arrived this Day at *Savannah*, and had the Pleasure of meeting my Friend who had been lost, he was from *Tuesday* 'till *Friday* roving about the Woods, during which Time the great Guns were fired according to Custom, and the People shewed what a great Respect they had for me and my Friends. Many of them going out all Day and Night after him.—As soon as I had refreshed myself, I went and visited my Parishioners from House to House to return them Thanks for their Kindness to my Friends. An unusual Joy appear'd in their Faces at my unexpected Return, and they were ready to say, *How beautiful are the Feet of him that bringeth the glad Tidings of Salvation!* At Evening Prayers (and a very large Congregation was present) I returned my dear Hearers hearty Thanks for the late Instance of their sincere Affection, I publicly exhorted my Friend that was lost to shew forth his Thankfulness not only with his Lips but with his Life, and desired their Prayers to GOD for me that I might now more **and more** devote myself to my Blessed Master's Service, and study daily to purify my corrupt Nature, that I might be made an Instrument under him of winning their Souls to GOD.

*Wednesday, August 23.* A Necessity was laid on me to Day to express my Resentment against Infidelity by refusing to read the Burial Office over the most professed Unbeliever I ever yet met with.—  
GOD was pleased to visit him with a lingering Illness,

in

13

in which Time I went to see him frequently.— Particularly about five Weeks ago, I asked him what Religion he was of, he answered, “Religion was divided into so many Sects he knew not which to chuse.”—Another Time, I offer’d to pray with him, but he would not accept it, upon which I resolv’d to go see him no more;—But being told two Days before he dyed, that he had an Inclination to see me, I went to him again, and after a little Conversation, I put to him the following Questions, “Do you believe JESUS CHRIST to be GOD, the one Mediator between GOD and Man?” He said, “I believe CHRIST was a good Man.”—“Do you believe the Holy Scriptures?” “I believe, replied he, something of the Old Testament, the New I do not believe at all”.—“Do you believe, Sir, a Judgement to come?” he turn’d himself about and replied, I know not what to say to that.”—“Alas said I, Sir, “if all these Things should be true—” which Words I believe gave him Concern, for he seemed after to be very uneasy, grew delirious, and departed in a Day or two.—Unhappy Man, how quickly was he convinced that all I said was true. Now he and I are of one Mind: The Day after his Decease he was carried to the Ground, and I refused to read the Office over him, but went to the Grave and told the People what had passed between him and me, warned them against Infidelity, and asked them whether I could safely say, “as our Hope is this our Brother doth,” upon which I believe they were thoroughly satisfied that I had done right.

—GOD grant this may be a Warning to surviving Unbelievers.

Thursday, Aug. 24. This Day I went to Highgate with a Friend or two **more**, and read Prayers, preach'd and baptized a Child, and catechised in a House lately erected by the Inhabitants. For upon my sending

C

a

14

a Master to teach their Children, one offer'd to give me a part of his Lot, and the rest to give their Labour. Accordingly I accepted it, found Materials, and to Day it was fit to preach in, and be made a School-House of. The Children tho' Foreigners, answer'd admirably well, which gave me great Hopes that the other foreign Children of the Colony may also learn our *English* Tongue when a proper Master is provided.—After Service we refreshed ourselves together, thanked our good GOD, and eat our Bread with Gladness of Heart.

Sunday, August 27. GOD having now shewn both me and my Friends that it was his Will I should return for a while to *England*: This Afternoon I preached my Farewel Sermon, to the great Grief of my dear Parishioners, for their Hearts I found were very full as well as mine, **which they expressed by shedding many Tears**. But a sensible Alteration appear'd in their Countenances, when I promised them solemnly before GOD to return as soon as possible. *May GOD enable me to perform my Promise and prepare my Way before me.*

The Weather was exceedingly hot, and the Greatness of the Congregation made it still hotter, but GOD enabled me to preach with Power. *Thanks be to GOD for the Strength he gives me through JESUS CHRIST.*

*Monday, August 28.* This being the Day of my Departure, it was mostly spent in taking Leave of my Flock, who expressed their Affection now more than ever. They came to me from the Morning to the Time I left them with Tears in their Eyes, wishing me a prosperous Voyage and safe Return, and gave me other Tokens of their Love. For they brought me Wine, Ale, Cake, Coffee, Tea, and other Things proper for my Passage, and their Love seem'd without Dissimulation.

About

15

About Four in the Afternoon, I went into the Boat provided for me by Mr. *Causton*, who with the Recorder came to my House and took their Leave. A great Number of People came to the *Bluff* and wish'd me a good Voyage with all their Souls, and a speedy Return; I thanked them, and having desired their Prayers, blessed them in the Name of GOD and took my Leave.

My Heart was full and I took the first Opportunity of venting it by Prayers and Tears. I think I never parted from a Place with more Regret; for *America* in my Opinion is an excellent School to learn CHRIST in; and I have great Hopes some good will come out of *Savannah*, because the longer I continued there, the larger the Congregations grew. And I scarce know a Night, though we had Divine Service twice a Day, when the Church-House has not been nearly full—A Proof, this, I hope, that GOD has yet Spiritual and Temporal Blessings in store for them. *Hasten, O LORD, that blessed Time!*

#### CHARLES-TOWN.

Arrived last Night here, and preached twice to Day, I hope with some good Effect. The Bishop of *London's* Commissary, the Rev. Mr. *Garden*, a good Soldier of JESUS CHRIST, received me in a most Christian Manner. He and several others offered

me a Lodging, and were more than civil to me.  
*How does GOD raise me up Friends wherever I go!*  
*Who is so good a GOD as our GOD?*

Was much pleased with the Neatness of the Build-  
 ings, and the Largeness of the Place. The Church  
 is very beautiful, and the Inhabitants seem to be ex-  
 cellently well settled. *GOD's Judgements have been*  
*late abroad amongst them by the spreading of the Small-*  
*Pox. I hope they will learn Righteousness!*

C 2

Monday,

16

Monday, Sept. 4. Was much delighted with a  
 Packet of Letters I received from Savannah, *not only*  
*as they were a Proof of the Writer's Affection for*  
*me, but also that the Holy Ghost was effectually*  
*moving on their Souls.*

*Saturday, Sept. 9. Received another comfortable*  
 Packet of Letters from Savannah Friends, and was  
 soon hurried on Board, the Wind being fair for sailing.  
 Great Kindness has been shewn me at Charles-Town,  
 some Presents made me, and there was a general and  
 earnest Expectation of my Preaching on Sunday. *But*  
*GOD seeth not as Man seeth. Father thy Will be done!*

**On Board the Mary, Captain Coc, Com-  
 mander, bound from Charles-Town to  
 England.**

Saturday, Sept. 9. About Noon came on Board with  
 great Composure of Mind, and thought of my absent  
 Friends, settled my Things, wrote my Journal, and  
 finished some other Matters. The Wind being fair  
 weighed Anchor, and set sail about five in the Even-  
 ing. *The LORD send us a prosperous Voyage, and bring*  
*us in his appointed Time to the Haven where we would*  
*be!*

Saturday, Sept. 16. Had contrary Winds all the  
 Week, and got but a few Leagues from Charles-

*Town*, yet GOD shewed me great Mercies: For he enabled me to write several Things, and correct others. I have been but a little Sea-sick; and though I have not had my Cloaths off, and lay upon Deck or on a Chest every Night, yet the Goodness of GOD keeps me healthy and strong, and gives me a feeling Possession of his Holy Spirit. My sphere of Action is now contracted into a very narrow Compass. There are

but

17

but few Souls on Board, and all that I can do is to read publick Prayers, and add a Word of Exhortation twice every Day, and catechise those I brought with me. The Captain and all are very civil, my Christian Friends have been much upon my Heart, and caused me some Dejections, but GOD was my Comforter. Had I my own Will, I could wish myself a speedy Passage, that I may return the sooner to those few Sheep I have left at *Savannah*; but GOD knows best, and this Retirement, I hope, *will* break my Will, purify my Heart, and fit me for the great Work that lyes before me. *Even so LORD JESUS, Amen, and Amen.*

*Saturday, Sept. 23. Still* GOD is pleased to send us contrary Winds, except one Night about the Middle of the Week.—However he enables me to give Thanks—and great Reason have I so to do.—*For the Holy Spirit has been with me of a Truth!*

I have observed, that before GOD calls me to a publick Work, he always sends me into some Retirement, but never to so great a one as now.—A Sign this, I hope, that a greater Work is yet *behind*. *Lord fit and prepare me for it!*

My Mind, *blessed be* GOD, has been composed and easy. Only the Absence of my Friends, now and then struck a Damp upon my Spirits.—But the Friend of all is with and in me, and he by his Spirit I trust, will supply the Want of their dear Company.—*Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen.*



*Sunday 24. Monday, Sept. 25.* Was oppressed much in Spirit these two Days. The Wind was contrary, and the Sea wrought and was tempestuous; but blessed be GOD, he enabled me to be resigned to his Will, this outward and inward Trial being only what was to be expected after my late Assistances. *We must not always be upon the Mount in this Life.*

Ever since *Monday Evening*, GOD has been plea-

C 3

sed

18

sed to send us fair Winds, particularly to Day, when our Ship has sail'd seven Miles an Hour, *Blessed be GOD.*

I have been chiefly busied about writing Letters, to engage more Labourers, and to get Contributions for my poor Flock.

Blessed be GOD! he has made me frequently rejoice in Spirit, and now quite reconciles me to my present Retirement. *When shall I have no Will but GOD's!*

*Sunday, Octob. 1.* Had very little sleep all Night, and was like to fall off the Chest whereon I lay several Times, the Sea being very rough, and the Wind turning in an Instant directly contrary. *Oh that I could learn from Winds and Storms to obey my Master!*

Buried a young Man who came from *Georgia*, and died this Morning. LORD, What is Man? He solaced himself with the Thoughts of seeing his Friends in *England*. But GOD saw fit to prevent it by shortening his Days. LORD, thy Judgements are like the great Deep!

When I buried him, I could not say much, because of the rowling of the Ship; but at Evening-Prayer I took occasion from the Lesson (which *providentially* was the 15<sup>th</sup> Chap. of the first of *Corinthians*) to exhort all my Ship-mates to consider so, as to prepare for their latter End. I believe my Words came with Power. GOD grant they may have a due Effect. Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen!

*Friday, Octob. 6.* Before I left *Savannah*, the Lesson appointed for the Morning, was *St. Paul's Shipwreck*, out of the *Acts*, and before I left *Charles-Town*, the Lesson was the first of *Jonah*, both of which made such a deep Impression upon me, that I wrote to my Friend *Habersham*, to acquaint him I was apprehensive we should have a dangerous Voyage: Since I have been on Board, what *St. Paul*

said

19

said to his Companions, "That he perceived their "Voyage would be to their great Damage," has frequently been press'd upon my Heart; and GOD has now shewn me wherefore he gave these previous Notices.—For on *Tuesday* Night last, after we had sailed 150 Miles, the last twenty four Hours, about Eleven o'Clock arose a sudden violent *East* Wind, which continu'd till about Four in the Morning, and put all the Sailors to their Wits End.—Most of them declared they never had seen the like before. The main Sail was slit in several Pieces, and several of the other Sails, and much of the Tackling all to Tatters; not a dry Place was to be found in all the Ship: The Captain's Hammock, in the great Cabbin, was half filled with Water; and though I lay in the most dry Part of the Ship, yet the Waves broke in upon me twice or thrice. In short, all was Terror and Confusion, Men's Hearts failing them for fear, and the Wind and the Sea raging most horribly. But GOD (*for ever be adored his unmerited Goodness*) was exceeding gracious unto me. For I felt a sweet Complacency in my Will, in Submission to his. Many particular Promises GOD has made me from his Word, that I should return in Peace, flowed in upon my Heart. And he enabled me greatly to rejoice.—This is the first Day we have ventured to pull down any of our dead Lights, which put me in Mind of the long Night the *Egyptians* once saw. But I spent my Time in

reading, and fervent Intercession for absent Friends, and comforted myself much with the Remembrance of them; most of our fresh Provisions are washed over Board, and our Tackling much out of order, so that we have a Prospect but of an different Voyage. But blessed be GOD, the Prospect pleases me. For now I shall learn, I trust, how to want as well as how to abound and how to endure Hardship like a good Soldier of Jesus Christ. *O LORD, let thy Strength*

*be*

20

*be magnified in my Weakness, say unto my Soul, "It is "I, be not afraid, and then let Storms and Tempests "do their worst.*

*Saturday, Octob. 7. This has been a Week, blessed be GOD, though not of much Action, yet full of Opportunities of excercising my passive Graces! To Day, adored be the Divine Goodness, the Weather has cleared up more and more, and our Ship has sailed directly before the Wind, at the Rate of four or five Miles an Hour.*

*A Desire to see my Friends in England, to dispatch my Business, and to return to my poor Flock, prompt me secretly to wish for a Continuance of this prosperous Gale. But, LORD, I know not what to pray for as I ought. Do with me as seemeth good in thy Sight. Only I beseech thee to sanctify my present Retirement; that the longer I am upon the Sea, the more zealous I may be in thy Service, when I come upon dry Land.*

*Saw a Jamaica Ship, Captain Philips, who has been out nine Weeks, What Reason have we to be Thankful!*

*Having had no Opportunity before, since the Storm, of getting many of our People together, gave a Word or two of Exhortation to my Ship-Mates, to bless GOD for our late Deliverance, and to sin no more lest a worse Storm should befall us.*

Saturday, October 14. Sailed this week about 600 Miles; but Yesterday GOD was pleased to send us a contrary Wind, which still continues. *Father, thy Will be done.*

A few Days ago I flatter'd myself we should be soon at our desired Port, but GOD is pleased to defer the Accomplishment of my Hopes: However, *blessed be his Name, He enables me to give Thanks.*

Most of this Week has been spent in searching the

Scrip-

21

Scriptures; and *particular* Retirements for Direction and Assistance in the Work before me.—*GOD has been pleased to send me many inward Trials. And now* my fresh Provisions are gone, and the People are put to the Allowance of a Quart of Water each Man for a Day. *So that* I hope now the spiritual Man will grow, having so little for the natural Man to feed on. *Amen, LORD JESUS.*—Blessed be GOD I can by his Grace say that I rejoice in Necessities, and in every Thing give Thanks. *Keep me thus minded. O Dear Redeemer, till thou perfect thy Work in my Soul.*

Had this Sentence out of *Henry* much pressed upon my Heart to comfort me in my Retirement;—*The Mower loses no Time whilst he is whetting his Scythe. —Thus shall all Christians be taught of GOD.*

Sunday, October 15. The Weather being calm and I being *kindly* invited Yesterday, went on board the *Constant* Captain *Philips* bound from *Jamaica*, which now sails in Company with us, and was kindly received both by the Captain and his Passengers, and not only so, but they spared me what they could of their Provisions. A most providential Supply; for ours was quite out. But our Extremity is GOD's Opportunity. *Blessed be his Name for thus strengthening our Faith. May this be looked upon as a Pledge that He will never leave or forsake us.*

Our chief Discourse was about *Georgia*; and staying a little longer than was thought, my Shipmates were very suspicious I should be detain'd on board. **But** tho' there was Provision for the Flesh, yet I like my own Situation best, because here are greater Opportunities of denying myself, and consequently of making further Improvement in the Spirit. *Oh that I may always walk by this Rule!*

*Saturday, Octob. 21.* Made but slow Advances in

our

22

our Voyage having had but one or two Days of fair Wind. But notwithstanding, I believe we shall now soon reach Shore; for GOD has been pleased to visit me all the Week with Variety of inward Trials, which is a Sign to me that I shall experience yet more and more of his Mercies. *How good is GOD thus to prepare me by Sufferings, that so his Blessings may not be my Ruin; these Things to the natural Man are not joyous, but grievous, but GOD enables me to take Comfort only in him, to thank him sincerely for his loving Correction, and therefore when I am sufficiently exercised thereby, I hope it will bring forth in me the peaceable Fruits of Righteousness. Amen.*

*Sunday, October 22.* At the Desire of the Captain preached my Sermon on rash Anger, having hitherto been used to expound only. In the Lesson were these remarkable Words, *Return to thy own House, and shew how great Things God has done unto thee.* And again, *It came to pass that when Jesus was returned, the People gladly received him, for they were all waiting for him.* These last Words were remarkably pressed upon me at *Savannah*, when I was consulting GOD by Prayer, whether it was his Will that I should go to *England*. Thus GOD's Word is in particular Cases as well as in general, a Light unto our Feet and a Lanthorn unto our Paths.

*Thursday, October 26. Was much comforted this Evening in reading the 33<sup>d</sup> and 34<sup>th</sup> Chapter of Ezekiel, wherein I could not but observe many Circumstances of GOD's dealing with him corresponding with what I have experienced in myself: The following Verses in particular were set home to my Heart, [[Ezekiel 33:30-32AV]] —Also, thou Son of Man, the Children of thy People are still talking against thee by the Wall and in the Doors of the House, and speak one to another, saying, Come I pray you and hear what Word cometh from*

*the*

23

*the LORD.—And they come unto thee as the People cometh, and they hear thy Words, but they will not do them, for with their Mouth they shew much Love, but their Heart goeth after Covetousness. And lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely Song of one that hath a pleasant Voice, and can play well on an Instrument: for they hear thy Words but do them not. —Who that knows how GOD has dealt with me since I have been in the Ministry, sees not that this Passage answers to my Circumstances, as Face answers to Face in the Water? However this I know what I have spoken from GOD will come to pass (lo it will come) and then shall these Scoffers and Despisers know, that a Minister of CHRIST has been amongst them. O that I may never be brought forth as a swift Witness against any; but we must all appear before the Judgment Seat of CHRIST.*

*Saturday, October 28. Sailed about 300 Miles the four first Days of this Week: Had a little Storm on Wednesday Night and a great Calm ever since. We are now within 150 Leagues of Land, and our Provisions and Water very scanty, and our Ship very weak; but the Hour of our Arrival is not yet come. LORD, teach me to be resigned and thankful, and then deal with me as seemeth good in thy Sight.*

Blessed be GOD! he has this Week enlarged my Heart and filled me with great Comfort, after great inward Conflicts. Is not all this to prepare me for further Trials we are yet to endure e'er we get to England? LORD, thy Grace, I know will be sufficient for me, and therefore I rejoice in the Prospect of enduring Tribulation.

Had Reason to believe one on board was offended at my enlarging one Night on the Sin of Drunkenness.—I always endeavour to speak with the Meekness and Gentleness of CHRIST.—But if People will account me their Enemy, because out of love, I tell

them

24

them the Truth, I cannot help that. *Lo I have delivered my Soul.*

Monday, October 30. Still GOD is pleased that the Wind, what there is of it, should be contrary, and our Ship's Company are now brought into great Streights. Their Allowance of Water is a Quart a Day, and our constant Food for some Time has been on Salt Beef and Water Dumplins, which do not agree with the Stomachs of some amongst us. But GOD enables me to rejoice in that and all other our Necessities, yea, He so comforts me that many I believe are surprized at my Chearfulness. But when we are destitute of outward Comforts, then does GOD more comfort our Souls. This Morning when I awoke, the Faith of Abraham was greatly pressed upon me; and the Example of Daniel, and the three Children, who were fat and well favoured, notwithstanding they were fed with Pulse and Pease, is continually before my Eyes. Some say we are within a hundred Leagues of Land. But what does that signify, if GOD says, *Hitherto shall you go and no further. LORD, in thy due Time let that which now letteth be taken away, but not before this Trial has done what it was sent for, tho' it make us smart.*

I warm myself by smiling on, and exhorting them, and this Afternoon we joined in solemn Prayers suitable to our present Circumstances. *LORD, let our Cry come unto Thee.* I know it will, and that we shall be answer'd, if it be best. But great Blessings await me on Shore, and great Trials must precede. *Oh that I may by these small, be prepar'd for greater Sufferings. Amen, LORD JESUS.*

Monday, October 30. Was comforted to Night in my present Circumstances, by these Verses out of this Evening's Lesson.—*I have learnt in whatsoever State I am, therewith to be content. I knew*

*both*

25

*both how to be abased, and I know how to abound; every where, and in all Things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer Need. I can do all thro' CHRIST which strengtheneth me. Even so come, LORD JESUS. Amen and Amen.*

Reading afterwards in the Book of Maccabees, and thinking of my present Situation, this Verse was pressed with unspeakable Comfort upon my Soul—"After this they went Home, and sung a Song of Thanksgiving, and praised the LORD in Heaven; *Because it is good, because his Mercy endureth for ever.*" I hope my Friends will take care to fulfil this when we meet together on Shore.

Wednesday, Nov. 1. This Afternoon, about four o'Clock, as I was in Secret, humbling my Soul before GOD, interceding for my Friends, and had been praying for a fair Wind, and Assistance in the great Work lying before me, News were brought that the Wind was fair; which put me in Mind of the Angel's being sent to *Daniel*, to tell him his Prayer was heard, when he was humbling his Soul with Fasting, and praying for the Peace and Restoration of Jeru-



*salem. Indeed I cannot say I have purposely, for these three Weeks, eaten no pleasant Food, or fasted, as he did; but our Food is so salt, that I dare eat but little, so that I am now literally in Fastings often. Oh that I may improve this blessed Season for Humiliation and extraordinary Acts of Devotion, that I may be duly prepar'd to approve myself a faithful Minister of JESUS CHRIST, whether by Honour or Dishonour, by evil Report or good Report.*

As soon as we found the Wind fair, we join'd in Thanksgiving, and in singing the first Part of the 34<sup>th</sup> Psalm (new Version) which was very applicable to our Circumstances. For they tell me they have not above three Days Water on Board, allowing a Quart

D

to

26

to each Man a Day. But he, that at one Time, at the Request of his Disciples, consider'd the Multitude, and work'd a Miracle for their Relief; and at another Time, at the Intercession of Moses, gave Water to the wandering Israelites, I trust, now, has heard our Prayers, and sent this Wind with a Commission to bring us where he will supply all our Wants, *If not, O Blessed JESU, thy Will be done. Give me Grace, I most humbly beseech thee, to hold out my three Watches, and at the fourth Watch I know thou wilt come. Even so come LORD JESUS.*

Thursday, Nov. 4 [[2]]. For these two Days last past, GOD has been pleased greatly to humble my Soul, and bring me low by Spiritual Desertions. And to Day he has thought proper again to send us a contrary Wind, **blessed be his Name**. Our Allowance of Water now is but a Pint a Day; so that we dare not eat much Beef. Our Sails are exceedingly thin; some more of them were split last Night, and no one knows where we are; but GOD does, and that is sufficient.

Last Night he lifted up the Light of his blessed Countenance upon me, and to Day fills me with Joy unspeakable, and full of Glory; so that though I have little to eat, yet I inwardly possess all Things. I am sometime afraid lest continued Abstinence may occasion a bodily Sickness. But wherefore do I fear? If it does, that and every Thing else I know, will work for my Good.—What I most dread, is lest any on Board should charge GOD foolishly; but I check the first Motions I discern arising in any one's Heart, and endeavour to justify our good GOD, in all the Evil that he hath brought upon us. I put before them the Example of the Widow of *Sarepta*, and caution them against murmuring like the *Israelites* at the Waters of *Meribah*. *And thus I endeavour to comfort and support them with the Comforts wherewith I myself am comforted of GOD.*

This

27

This is now the eighth Week I have been Abroad. If my Friends ask me, why I arrived no sooner, I may truly answer, *Satan* hinder'd us. For I believe it is he who is permitted to do this; but this still gives me greater Hopes, that a more effectual Door than ever, will be open'd in *England*, for preaching the everlasting Gospel. O *Satan*, *Satan*, *I defy thee to do thy worst*; thou mayest toss me up and down, and bring me into Jeopardy on every Side; but *JESUS CHRIST* is praying for me on the Mount. And when the Time appointed by the Father is come, and my Soul hereby prepared, he whom Winds and Storms obey, will speak the Word; and then I shall have a happy meeting with my dear Friends!

Sunday, Nov. 5. This Day we rejoiced with trembling. For though we thereon commemorated our Deliverance from the *Gunpowder-Plot*, yet as our Circumstances call'd for Acts of Humiliation, I used part of the Office of Commination, (besides solemn

Prayer and Psalms three Times) and enlarged on these Words of St. *James*, "My Brethren, count it all "Joy, when ye fall into divers Temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your Faith worketh "Patience: But let Patience have her perfect "Work." I hope this had a good Effect upon my Hearers Hearts, and calm'd their Spirits. For indeed we are brought very low: But I can say with the penitent Thief, "That I suffer justly, and do "not receive the ten thousandth Part of the Reward "due to my Crimes." *LORD, remember me now thou art in thy Kingdom!*

*Monday, Nov. 6.* Last Night, about seven o'Clock, GOD was pleased to suffer a violent Wind to arise, which would not permit me to rise till this Afternoon, about which Time it began in some measure to abate. Blessed be GOD through the Precaution used by our

D 2

Ship-

28

Ship-Mates, we ship'd but little Water, only we were driven some Leagues back. The Weather was pretty cold, and a little Cake or two baked on the Coals, and a very little Salt-Beef was all my Provision for the Day; but thus *Elijah* lived for a long while, and why not I? Nay, he fasted forty Days and forty Nights. And though I dare not presume to do so, yet if GOD still brings me into greater Wants, I doubt not, but I shall find that Man liveth not by Bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of GOD. *LORD, I desire not to be exempted from suffering, but to be supported under them. If thy Glory can be promoted by my Tryals, lo, here I am, scourge me, try me as it seemeth good in thy Sight!*

*Wednesday, Nov. 8.* **Perceived** myself Yesterday and this Morning, inwardly weak and fainting, and unable to read scarce any Thing. *But blessed be GOD! though he kill me, yet will I put my Trust in him.*

When my Spirits are gone, I then find my Faith, as it were, less lively: But I trust that is only owing to the Frame of my Body. **For** at all other Times I have great Confidence in GOD! And was he now to put it to my Choice, whether this Trial should continue, or he should send us a fair Wind, I should humbly refer it to him again. *For I know not what is best for me!*

Most in the great Cabin now begin to be weak and look hollow Ey'd, yet a little while, and we shall come to Extremities; and then God's Arm will bring us Salvation. *May we patiently tarry the LORD's Leisure! Amen, Amen.*

Great Part of this Day I lay down, being weak and much oppressed in my Head; but at Night when some doubted what the End of this Visitation would be, the following Verses were with great Comfort pressed upon my Soul. "For I am in a "strait between two, having a Desire to be dissolved,

"and

29

"and to be with CHRIST, which is far better. Nevertheless to abide in the Flesh is more needful for you. And having this Confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of Faith: That your rejoicing may be more abundant in JESUS CHRIST for me, by my coming to you again." *Thus Christians have Meat to eat, which the World knoweth not.*

In confidence of this, and such like Texts, that have been from time to time applied to my Soul, I still (as often as my Strength will permit) continue to write Letters ready to send when I come on Shore. Which reminds me of *Jeremiah's* being commanded to buy Land, when his whole Country was about to be carried into Captivity. *Blessed are they that walk by Faith, and not by Sight!*

Though one in his haste the other Day cried out, "What *Jonah* have we here on Board?" and I

answer'd, I am he; yet many now, I believe, bless GOD, that I am with them. For, say they, "How should we have been blaming and cursing one another, had not Mr. *W—d* been amongst us?" *Blessed be GOD, if my Ministry or Presence can be instrumental to prevent Sin against thee, O LORD, toss me on the Ocean as long as it pleaseth thee! O my dear LORD, I desire to be resigned!*

Thursday, Nov. 9. Enjoyed great Peace of Mind to Day, and was stronger in Body than usual. *Blessed be the LORD!* We are now making for Ireland, and are advanced some Leagues towards it. Whether we shall arrive there or not, GOD only knows. I find all uneasiness arises from having a Will of my own. And therefore I simply desire to will what GOD willeth. *Oh, when will this once be?*

Friday, Nov. 10. Was much strengthened in our present Distress by the second Lesson for the Day.

---

D 3

It

30

It was our Saviour's turning the Water into Wine at the Marriage at *Canaan*. We have applied to him as the Holy Virgin did, and told him in Prayer, that, "we have but very little Water." At present he seems to turn away his Face, and to say, "What have I to do with you?" But this is only because the Hour of Extremity is not yet come. When it is, I doubt not but he will now as richly supply our Wants, as he did theirs then. *May we in Patience possess our Souls!*

Saturday, Nov. 11. Still we are floating about, not knowing where we are. But our People seem yet to have hopes of seeing *Ireland*. I know not whether I am out in my Conjecture, but I imagine some of those Ships we have seen, are arrived at *England* before us. Upon which, perhaps, my

Friends will expect me, pray for me, and at last give me up for lost. *And then GOD will restore me to them.*

The Weather now begins to be cold, so that I can say, with the Apostle. I am in *Hungerings and Thirstings, Cold and Fastings often.* Hereafter, perhaps, I may add *moreover in Bonds and Imprisonments.* But I trust the Sufferings of this Life will not move me. *For they are not worthy to be compared with the Glory that shall be revealed in us.*

My outward Man sensibly decayeth, but the Spiritual Man I trust, is renewed Day by Day. I have besought the LORD many times to send us a fair Wind: But now I see he does not think fit to answer me. I am wholly resigned, knowing that his Grace will be sufficient for me, and that his Time is best.

Our Ship is much out of repair, and our Food by no means, enough to support Nature in an ordinary Way, *and that* of the most indifferent Kind too: An Ounce or two of Salt-Beef, a Pint of Water, and a Cake made of Flower and Skimmings of the Pot. *But* I think often on him who preserved *Moses* in

the

31

the Ark of the *Bulrushes.* *And* so long as I look upwards my Faith will not fail.

*Blessed be GOD for these Things, I rejoice in them daily. They are no more then what I expected, and I know they are Preparatives for future Mercies. GOD of his infinite Mercy humble and try me, till I am rightly disposed to receive them. Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen.*

It pities me often to see my Brethren, lying in the Dust, as they have done these many Weeks, and exposed to such Streights: for GOD knows both their Souls and Bodies are dear unto me. But thanks be to GOD, they bear up well, and I hope we shall all now learn to endure Hardships, like good Soldiers of JESUS CHRIST.

*Sunday, Nov. 12.* This Morning the Doctor of our Ship took up the *Common-Prayer Book*, and observed that he opened upon these Words, *Blessed be the LORD GOD of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his People.* And so indeed he has, for about 8 o'Clock this Morning News *were* brought, that our Men saw Land, and I went and was a joyful Spectator of it myself. The Air was clear, and the Sun arising in full Strength, so that 'tis the most pleasant Day I have seen these many Weeks. *Now know I that the LORD will not always be chiding, neither keepeth he his Anger for ever.* For these two or three Days last past, I have enjoyed uncommon Serenity of Soul, and given up my Will to GOD. And now he hath brought us Deliverance.—From whence I infer, that a Calmness of Mind, and entire Resignation to the Divine Will, is the best Preparative for receiving Divine Mercies. *LORD evermore make me thus minded!*

As soon as I had taken a View of the Land, we joined together in a Prayer and Psalm of Thanksgiving, and already began to reflect with Pleasure on

our

32

our late Streights. Thus it will be hereafter, the Storms and Tempests of this troublesome World will serve to render our Haven of eternal Rest doubly agreeable.—I fear now nothing so much as the Treachery of my Heart, lest like the ungrateful Lepers, I should not turn to GOD and give Thanks by leading a Holy Life. *But all Things are possible with GOD, on whose rich Mercies and free Grace in JESUS CHRIST, I alone depend for Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification and Redemption!*

Spent a good Part of this Afternoon in walking upon Deck, and blessing GOD for the Prospect I saw all around me. His good Providence has been pleased to bring us into a fine large Bay, surrounded on each Side with high Lands and Hommocks, much like

those near *Gibraltar*, and a large Light-House on the Fore-Land, from which in the Evening was shewn a Light. It lyes on the North-West of *Ireland*, and most suppose we are near *Limerick*, but are not certain, only one of our Men having been here before. There are no Soundings till you come very near the Land. The Wind being against us (that little that was of it) we could not get much forward: *But GOD in his due Time will bring us on Shore. Blessed be his Name*, the Weather is exceeding clear, and this is the most comfortable Day I have seen a long Time. *LORD make me mindful of these thy Mercies all the Days of my Life.*

*Tuesday, Nov. 14.* Let this Day, my Soul, be noted in thy Book, for GOD has visited thee with his Salvation.—On *Monday* midnight, as I was lying on my Bed, my Sleep departed from me, and I had no rest in my Spirit, because although the Weather was so exceeding calm, and we in so great Distress, yet no Boat was sent to fetch us Provisions. Upon this I spoke to the Captain, and he to the Mate, who in the Morning went with a Boat, and about Noon this Day returned loaded with Provisions and Water, and

not

33

not only so, but told us, he was kindly intreated, by the People he met with, especially by a great Country Gentleman, who came from his Seat at Midnight, on purpose to relieve him and his Companions; furnished them with a fresh Boat and other Necessaries, most kindly invited me, though unknown, to his House, to stay as long as I pleased; and has order'd Horses to wait ready to take me thither.

Who is so great, so good a GOD, as our GOD? Our Hour of Extremity was indeed come: For we had but half a Pint of Water left, and my Stomach was exceeding weak, through my long Abstinence; but now his Almighty Arm hath brought us Salvation.



*Thro' all the changing Scenes of Life,¢  
 In Trouble and in Joy,¢  
 The Praises of my GOD shall still¢  
 My Heart and Tongue employ.*

*Of his Deliverance I will boast,¢  
 'Till all that are distrest;¢  
 From my Example Comfort take¢  
 And charm their Grief to rest.*

*Fear him ye Saints, and you will then¢  
 Have nothing else to fear;¢  
 Make you his Service your Delight,¢  
 Your Wants shall be his Care.*

As soon as the Provisions came, we kneeled down and returned hearty Thanks to our good GOD who has heard our Prayers, and sent his Angel before us, to prepare our Way.

*Therefore my Life's remaining Years,¢  
 Which God to me shall lend,¢  
 Will I in Praises to his Name,¢  
 And in his service spend.*

A

34

A little before our Provision came, I had been noting in my Diary, that I believed Deliverance was at Hand; for last Night and this Morning, I had the most violent Conflict within myself that I have had at all. Thus GOD always prepares me for his Mercies. *Oh that this may strengthen my Faith, and make me willing to follow the Lamb wheresoever he shall be pleased to lead me, Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen!*

Still greater Mercies GOD confers on his unworthy Servant. For after our Provisions were brought aboard, the Wind still continued fair, and by six at Night blew us to a little Place on *Karrigaholt* Island, before which we cast Anchor. *Praise the LORD, O my Soul, and all that is within me praise his Holy Name!*

Ever since I have been on Board the *Mary*, these Words, “Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain “Island” (which were Part of the Lesson I read last at *Savannah*) have been continually press’d upon my Heart, so that I have often mention’d it to one of my Companions. Behold they are now fulfilled. *Oh how unsearchable are thy Doings, O LORD, and thy Ways past finding out!*

Why GOD dealeth thus with me, I know not now, but I shall know hereafter. However this I know, that this Voyage has been greatly for my Good.—For I have had a glorious Opportunity of searching the Scriptures, composing Discourses, writing Letters, and communing with my own Heart.—We have been on Board just nine Weeks and three Days.—A long and perillous, but profitable Voyage to my Soul: For I hope it has **learnt** me, in some measure, to endure Hardships as becometh a Minister of CHRIST. My Clothes have not been off (except to change me) all the Passage: Part of the Time I lay on open Deck, Part on a Chest, and the Remainder on a Bed-stead cover’d with my *Buffa*—

*loe’s*

35

*loe’s* Skin. These Things, though little in themselves, are great in their Consequences; and whosoever despiseth small Acts of bodily Discipline, it is to be feared, will insensibly lose his spiritual Life by little and little.—Many inward Tryals also GOD has been pleased to send me, which I believe, he has sanctified to my great Good. I am now going on Shore, to the House of a wealthy Gentleman, whom GOD has commanded to receive me. I may yet be exposed to many Perils by Land ere I see my dear Friends: But his grace who has preserved me from so many Perils by Water, will also be sufficient for me on dry Land. Whilst I continue on this side Eternity, I never expect to be free from Tryals, only to change them. For it is necessary to heal the Pride of my

Heart, that such should come: With a particular fear and trembling, I think of going to *London*. But he who preserved *Daniel*, in the Den of Lions, and the three Children in the fiery Furnace, will, I hope, preserve me from the fiery Tryal of Popularity, and from the misguided Zeal of those, who without Cause, are my Enemies. *Father, into thy Hands I command my Spirit. Magnify still thy free Grace in me. Guide me in thy unerring Wisdom, receive, O receive me for thy infinite Mercies Sake, in CHRIST JESUS, into Glory hereafter!*

As for the Success of my Ministry, whilst on Board, I shall only say, *That I hope* much Sin has been prevented, and one I hope effectually converted, who is to be my Fellow Traveller to *England*. *LORD if I can but be made instrumental to save one Soul, I care not if I am tossed on the Ocean through my whole Life. Glory be to GOD on High!*

*It is observable that* just as we had cast Anchor, a violent Wind rose, which (had it happen'd sooner) must have greatly hurt us. *Marvellous are thy Works, O LORD, and that my Soul knoweth right well!*

About seven at Night I dress'd myself and went on

Shore,

<sup>36</sup>

Shore, and was received in a strong Castle belonging to Mr. *Mac Mahon*, the Gentleman who sent me an Invitation. He himself was not at Home, having gone some Miles to meet me; but his Maid Servant kindly received us, *I asked for Water, and she gave me Milk, and brought forth Butter in a lordly Dish:* and never did I eat a more comfortable Meal: About ten the Gentleman (having missed of me at the Place appointed) came through the Rain, and entertain'd us most hospitably, and about One we went to Bed; I hope with Hearts full of a Sense of the Divine Love. *My Song shall henceforward be always of the loving Kindness of the LORD. I will make mention of his Righteousness and Truth, in the*

*Assemblies of his Saints. Now our Water is turned into Wine!*

#### **KILRUSH in IRELAND.**

This morning about 11 o'Clock, after being most hospitably entertain'd by Mr. Mac Mahon, and furnished with three Horses, I and my Servant, and my new Convert set out for *Dublin*, and reach'd *Kilrush*, a little Town, eight *Irish* Miles from *Karrigaholt*, about two in the Afternoon, where we were sweetly refreshed, and tarried the Remainder of the Day with Captain Coc, who last Night with his whole Crew was like to be Shipwreck'd; but this Morning, by the good Providence of GOD, was brought hither on Shore. Surely my Ship-mates will, of all Men, be most miserable if they continue impenitent, having such loud and repeated Calls from GOD.

As I rode along, and observed the Meanness of the poor People's living in these Parts, I said, if my Parishioners at *Georgia*, complain to me of Hardships, I must tell them how the *Irish* live; for their Habitations are far more despicable, and their Living as

hard,

37

hard, I believe, as to Food; and yet, no doubt, Content dwells in many of these low Huts. *A Man's Life does not consist in the Abundance of the Things which he possesseth.*

At my first coming into our Inn, we kneeled down and prayed; and again at Night sang Psalms, and prayed with the Captain and several of my Ship-mates.—The first time I believe the Room was ever put to such a Use by a Ship's Crew and their Chaplain.

#### **FOURTHFARGUS.**

*Friday, Nov. 17.* Had a very pleasant ride, over a fine fruitful open Country to *Fourthfargus*, a Village that was reckoned only ten, but at a moderate

Computation, thirty *English Miles* from *Kilrush*: But this is not the first Piece of *Irish* I have met with.—*Their innocent Blunders often extort Smiles from one.*

As I stopped to have my Horses shoe'd, I went into one of the poor Peoples Cabbins, as they call them; but it may as well be called a *Stye*, a *Barn*, or a *Poultry Coop*. It was about twenty Feet long, and twelve broad, the Walls built with *Turf* and *Mud*. In it, was a Man threshing *Corn*, two *Swine* feeding; two *Dogs*, several *Geese*; a Man, his Wife, three Children, and a great *Fire*.—*Georgia* Huts are a *Palace* to it.—Indeed, the People live very poorly in this Part, some walk barefoot with their Shoes in their Hands to save them from wearing out, others out of *Necessity*. And I observed many of their Feet to be much swell'd, and ready to gush out with *Blood*, through extremity of *Cold*.—*LORD, Why is my Lot cast into a fairer Ground? Thy free Grace alone has made a Difference!*

Whilst I was in the Cabin, as they call their little *Irish Huts*, I talk'd with the Woman in the House, and found she was a *Roman-Catholick*: And indeed the whole Commonalty almost, are of the *Romish Pro-*

E

fession,

38

fession, and seem to be so very ignorant, that they may well be termed the *Wild Irish*. No Wonder, when the Key of Knowledge is taken from them. Woe unto their blind Guides. I can think of no likelier Means to convert them from their erroneous Principles, than to get the Bible translated into their own native Language, to have it put in their Houses, and Charity-Schools erected for their Children, as Mr. *Jones* has done in *Wales*, which would insensibly weaken the *Romish Interest*: For when once they could be convinced that they were imposed upon, they would no longer suffer themselves to be misled. *Oh that some Man, in whom is the Spirit of the Holy GOD, would undertake this!*

**LIMERICK.**

*Saturday, Nov. 19.* Presuming the People where I lay last Night were *Roman Catholicicks*, I neglected to call them in to join in Prayer, but to my great Grief found afterwards that some were Protestants, and expected Prayers from me. *Oh base Ingratitude! Is this my Zeal for my late signal Deliverance? Oh treacherous Heart! Fye upon thee, fye upon thee. GOD be merciful to me a Sinner!*

About two this Afternoon we reach'd *Limerick*, a large Garrison Town, with a Cathedral in it, about twenty one *English Miles* from *Fourthfargus*. The Roads, as we came along, grew better; but the People much more subtle and designing. Here are also many Beggars, which I impute to the Want of Parish Provisions for them.—At Evening-Prayer we went to the Cathedral, and returned publick Thanks for our safe Arrival. The Remainder of the Night was spent in necessary Business, refreshing our Bodies, religious Conversation, and in writing some Things I stood in need of.

**Good GOD!** Where was I last *Saturday*? In Hunger, Cold and Thirsting; but now I enjoy fullness of Bread, and all Things convenient for me, GOD grant, I may not, *Jeshurun like, wax fat and kick.*

Per-

39

Perhaps it is more difficult to know how to abound, than how to want. **But** I endeavour to receive both with Thanksgiving.

*Sunday. Nov. 20* [[19]]. Having sent last Night to inform Dr. *Burscough*, Bishop of *Limerick*, that I had lately arrived: At his Lordship's Appointment, I waited on him this Morning, and was received with the utmost Candour and Civility. At his Lordship's Request, I preached **in the** Morning at the Cathedral, to a very numerous Audience, who seem'd universally affected, and full of expectation that I would preach in the Afternoon; but Providence did not seem to open a Door. But why should not a strange Minister always

offer his Service? I think it is a wrong Piece of Modesty not to do it. For a Sermon from a Stranger, may do more good than many from those the People are constantly used to.

After Sermon the Mayor sent twice to invite me, but I was pre-engaged to the Bishop, who kindly invited both me and my Friend, thanked me for my Sermon, and offered me the free use of his Palace, and would have insisted of my accepting of it, had I not told his Lordship I was to leave *Limerick* in the Morning: *Oh into what a wealthy Place has my good GOD brought me?* How does he every where command some or other to receive me? As I was eating at Dinner, I was meditating on the Divine Goodness in spreading such a Table for me, when last *Sunday* I was in danger almost of perishing with Hunger. But I thought at the same Time, if this was so great a Blessing, what an infinitely greater one will it be, after the Troubles of this Life, to sit down and eat Bread in the Kingdom of GOD. *O that I may be accounted worthy of that heavenly Banquet!*

### **TULLER-BRIDGE.**

*Monday, Nov. 20.* Went about *Limerick* Town this Morning, to dispatch some necessary Business. And

E 2

found

40

found the good Seed sown yesterday, had received a Blessing from above. All the Inhabitants seem'd alarmed, and look'd most wishfully at me, as I passed along. One substantial Tradesman in particular even compell'd me to come in, and shewed me and my Friend uncommon Civilities, and told me how solicitous the People were for my staying longer.—Another came to my Inn, and begg'd me to come and see him, which I did.—And the good Bishop, when I went to take leave of his Lordship, kissed me, and said **these Words,** “Mr. *Whitefield*, GOD bless you, I

“wish you Success abroad. Had you staid in Town, “this House should have been your home.”

About four in the Afternoon, against much Persuasion to the contrary, we left *Limerick* and reach'd *Tuller-Bridge*, **about** six Miles distant from thence by six o'Clock, where I and my Friend were agreeably refreshed, and spent the Remainder of the Evening in writing to some at *Limerick*, and strengthening one another, and blessing GOD for these fresh Instances of his unmerited Mercies. Who knows what a great Matter this little Fire may kindle? This I am assured of, GOD did not send me to *Ireland* for nothing.

### ***Burrass and Ossery.***

*Tuesday, Nov. 21.* Went on journeying before Day, and came about five in the Evening to *Burrass* and *Ossery*, twenty five Miles from *Tuller-Bridge*.

In my Way I had a short Conference with a *Roman Catholick*, who seem'd more knowing than the Generality of those of that Persuasion, but sadly misguided. My main Drift was to convince him he was imposed upon. “Am I? says he, with great earnestness, did “I know that, I would follow him, *i.e.* the Priest, “no longer.”

As far as I can find by all I converse with, they place Religion in being of the *Protestant* or *Roman Catholick* Communion, and are quite ignorant of the

Nature

41

Nature of inward Purity and Holiness of Heart.—  
*LORD, the Christian World is cast into a deep sleep, send forth, I beseech thee, some faithful and true Pastors to awaken them out of it!*

### ***DUBLIN.***

*Thursday, Nov. 23.* Came forwards last Night, to a Place called *Neas*, thirty three Miles from *Burrass* and *Ossery*, and reach'd *Dublin* about Noon, without the least Fatigue or Weariness. *Blessed be GOD, he causes*



*me to renew my Strength, or otherwise it would not be thus with me.*

Two Things I can remark much for the Credit of Ireland, that the Roads, especially to Dublin, are surprizingly Good, and Provisions exceeding cheap. A Person may travel without much Expense.

Friday, Nov. 24. Went to Day with Mr. Bradford, Brother to Mr. Bradford of Georgia, to visit Doctor Delany, who most kindly received me, and invited me to dine with him on Sunday. Some other Part of the Day I was necessarily obliged to go and see the busy Part of Dublin: But the more I see of the World, the more I grow sick of it every Day. *GOD grant this Sickness may increase!*

Sunday, Nov. 26. Preached twice to Day at the Churches of Warborough and St. Andrew's, I believe with Success; for GOD enabled me to speak with Power. And the People, as it were, not only hung upon me to hear me in the Morning, but also flock'd to the Church where I preach'd in the Afternoon; so that it was like a London Congregation. Great good might be done in Dublin, by preaching Charity Sermons for the establishing of Protestant Schools.

Tuesday, Nov. 28. By the Advice, and through the Introduction of Dr. Delany, I waited on Dr. Rundle Bishop of Londonderry, and on his Grace the Archbishop of Armagh, Lord Primate of all Ireland, the former engaged me to dine with him on the Morrow

if

42

if I staid in Town; the latter to dine with him at three in the Afternoon, at which Time I waited on his Grace, and was courteously received both by him and his Clergy. Having heard of me, as the Bishop of Derry told me, from some Friend at Gibraltar.

Now GOD begins to shew me why he so visited me in the Ship. *Sweetest JESUS give me Humility, and I shall see yet greater Things than these!*

## ENGLAND.

## PARKGATE.

Thursday, Nov. 30. After near twelve Months Absence from London, three Months from Georgia, and a pleasant Passage of twenty four Hours from Dublin, to my inexpressible Comfort, GOD brought me to Park-Gate, and so fulfilled a Promise which was pressed upon my Heart last Innocents-Day, in Hampshire, when I was under a great Concern what my Mother would say to the Resolution I had then made to go to Georgia.—“*Rachel weeping for her Children, refused to be comforted for her Children, because they were not. Thus saith the LORD, Refrain thy Voice from weeping, and thine Eyes from Tears; for thy Work shall be rewarded. And there is Hope in thine End, saith the LORD, that thy Children shall come again to their own Border,*” Jer. xxxi. 15, 16, 17. Many other Promises there are which I have laid up in my Heart. *I pray GOD I may be so blessed as to believe: For there certainly will be a fulfilling of those Things which GOD by his Spirit hath spoken unto my Soul.*

## NANTWICH.

Friday, Dec. 1. Rode from Park-Gate to Nantwich, in hopes of seeing my old Friend Mr. Salmon, but GOD was pleased to disappoint me. However he enlarged my Heart, and enabled me to write several Letters to Friends at Dublin; and I now, as I have often done before, make this Remark, “That GOD never disappoints us one Way, but he opens a Door to do good in another.

MAN-

## MANCHESTER.

Saturday, Decemb. 2. Reached Manchester by four this Afternoon, and was much edified by dear Mr.

Clayton's judicious **Christian** Conversation, for the Benefit of which, I came so far out of my Way.

Sunday, Decemb. 3. Preached twice at Mr Clayton's Chapel to a thronged and very attentive Audience, especially in the Afternoon, assisted with six more Ministers in administering the blessed Sacrament to three Hundred Communicants. Never did I see a Table more richly spread, nor a greater Order and Decency observed.—*Blessed be GOD for my coming to Manchester, I hope it has greatly benefited and strengthened my Soul. —This has been a Sabbath indeed! May it prepare me for that eternal rest which awaits the Children of GOD!*

### STONE.

Monday, Decemb. 4. Set out at Day-break and got to Stone, thirty four Miles from Manchester by five in the Evening, was a little fatigu'd; but quite refreshed by the Morning.—*Blessed be GOD for these Conveniences.* Oh that I may always look upon my self as a Stranger and a Sojourner upon Earth!

Friday, Decemb. 8. After having rode thirty six Miles on Tuesday, and twenty four on Wednesday, on Thursday about three in the Afternoon, reached St. Alban's.—In the Morning I set out for London, and was agreeably surpriz'd with the Sight of some of my Christian Friends, on the Road, who were coming to meet me, which put me in Mind of St. Paul's Friends, meeting him at the three Taverns, and I like him, was not a little comforted. *Oh, that I may like him also be willing to follow my Master wheresoever he shall be pleased to call me, not counting my Life dear unto myself, so that I may finish my Course with Joy!*

I. Shall

I. Shall I, for fear of feeble Man,  
Thy Spirits Course in me restrain?  
Or undismay'd in Deed and Word,  
Be a true Witness to my Lord?

II. *Aw'd by a Mortal's frown, Shall I*  
*Conceal the Word of GOD most High?¶*  
*How then before thee shall I dare*  
*To stand, or how thy Anger share?*

III. *No; let Man rage! since thou wilt spread*  
*Thy shadowing Wings around my Head:¶*  
*Since in all Pain thy tender Love*  
*Will still my sweet Refreshment prove.*

IV. *Saviour of Men! thy searching Eye*  
*Does all my inmost Thoughts descry:¶*  
*Doth ought on Earth my Wishes raise?¶*  
*Or the World's Favour, or its Praise?*

V. *The Love of Christ does me constrain,¶*  
*To seek the wand'ring Souls of Men:¶*  
*With Cries, Intreaties, Tears to save,¶*  
*To snatch them from the gaping Grave.*

VI. *For this let Men revile my Name,¶*  
*No Cross I shun, I fear no Shame:¶*  
*All hail, reproach, and welcome Pain!¶*  
*Only thy Terrors, LORD, restrain.*

VII. *My Life, my Blood I here present,¶*  
*If for thy Truth they may be spent,¶*  
*Fulfil thy Sov'reign Counsel, LORD:¶*  
*Thy Will be done! thy Name ador'd!*

VIII. *Give me thy Strength, O GOD of Power,¶*  
*Then let Winds blow or Thunders roar,¶*  
*Thy faithful Witness will I be—¶*  
*'Tis fix'd! I can do all thro' Thee!*

FINIS.

220

GEORGE WHITEFIELD

# [THIRD JOURNAL]

[First edition]

A

CONTINUATION

OF THE REVEREND

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

## JOURNAL,

FROM

HIS Arrival AT *LONDON*,

TO

HIS Departure FROM THENCE ON HIS  
WAY TO *GEORGIA*.

*LONDON*:

Printed for JAMES HUTTON, at the *Bible and* *☿*  
*Sun*, without *Temple-Bar*. 1739.

iii

**To the Reverend****MR. GEORGE WHITEFIELD****I.**

BROTHER in CHRIST, and well belov'd,  
 Attend, and add thy Pray'r to mine;  
 As AARON call'd, yet inly mov'd,  
 To minister in Things divine.

**II.**

Faithful, and often own'd of GOD,  
 Vessel of Grace, by JESUS us'd;  
 Stir up the Gift on thee bestow'd,  
 The Gift by hallow'd Hands transfus'd.

**III.**

Fully thy heavenly Mission prove,  
 And make thy own Election sure;  
 Rooted in Faith, and Hope, and Love,  
 Active to work, and firm t'endure.

**IV.**

Scorn to contend with Flesh and Blood,  
 And trample on so mean a Foe;  
 By stronger Fiends in vain withstood,  
 Dauntless to nobler Conquests go.

V. Go

iv

**V.**

Go where the darkest Tempest low'rs,  
 Thy Foes triumphant Wrestler foil;  
 Thrones, Principalities, and Powers,  
 Engage, o'ercome, and take the Spoil.

**VI.**

The Weapons of thy Warfare take,  
 With Truth and Meekness arm'd ride on;

Mighty, through God, Hell's Kingdom shake,¢  
Satan's strong Holds, through God, pull down.

**VII.**

Humble each vain aspiring Boast,¢  
Intensely for GOD's Glory burn;¢  
Strongly declare the Sinner lost,¢  
*Self-righteousness* o'erturn, o'erturn.

**VIII.**

Tear the bright Idol from his Shrine,¢  
Nor suffer him on Earth to dwell;¢  
T'usurp the Place of Blood Divine,¢  
But chase him to his native Hell.

**IX.**

Be all into Subjection brought,¢  
The Pride of Man let Faith abase;¢  
And captivate his every Thought,¢  
And force him *to be sav'd by Grace*.

CHARLES WESLEY.

I

A

CONTINUATION  
OF

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

**JOURNAL, &c.**

*LONDON.*

**F***RIDAY, December 8, 1738.* About Noon I reached *London*, was received with much Joy by my Christian Friends, and joined with them in Psalms and Thanksgiving for my safe Arrival. My Heart was greatly enlarged hereby.

In the Evening went to a truly Christian Society in *Fetter-lane*, and perceived God had greatly watered the Seed sown by my Ministry, when last in *London*.  
*The Lord increase it more and more.*

*Saturday, December 9.* Waited this Morning on the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the Bishop of *London*, and met with a favourable Reception.

*Sunday, December 10.* When I was on Board the *Mary*, those particular Parts of the Book of *Jeremiah*, which relate to the Opposition he met with from the False Prophets, were deeply impressed upon my Soul. **And** now I begin to see the Wisdom of God in it. For five Churches have been already denied me; and

B

some

2

some of the Clergy, if possible, would oblige me to depart out of these Coasts. *But I rejoyce in this Opposition, it being a certain Sign, that a more effectual Door will be opened, since there are so many Adversaries.*

However, I had an Opportunity of preaching in the Morning at *St. Hellens*, and at *Islington* in the



Afternoon, to large Congregations indeed, with great Demonstration of the Spirit, and with Power.

Here seems to be a great pouring out of the Spirit; and many, who were awakened by my Preaching a Year ago, are now grown strong Men in *Christ*, by the Ministrations of my dear Friends and Fellow-Labourers, *John* and *Charles Wesley*. *Blessed be God, I rejoyce in the coming of the Kingdom of his dear Son.*

The old Doctrine about Justification by Faith only, I found much revived, and many Letters had been sent concerning it to me, all which, I providentially missed *of*. For now, I come unprejudiced, and can the more easily see who is *in the* right. And who dares assert that we are not justified in the Sight of God, merely by an Act of Faith in *Jesus Christ*, without any Regard to Works past, present, or to come?

In the Evening, I went to *Fetter-lane* Society, where we had (what might not improperly be called) a Love-Feast, eating a little Bread and Water, and spending about two Hours in Singing and Prayers, *and* I found my Heart greatly united with the Brethren. *Surely a primitive Spirit is reviving amongst us. May God knit my Heart to theirs more and more!*

*Sunday, December 24.* Preached twice, and went in the Evening to *Crooked-lane* Society, where God enabled me to withstand several Persons, who cavilled against the Doctrine of the New Birth. But the Passion, wherewith they oppose, is a Demonstration, that they themselves have not experienced it. *Lord make them partakers of it, for thy dear Son's Sake.*

After I left *Crooked-lane*, I went and expounded to a Company at Mr. *B——*'s, in *Little Britain*; then I went

to

3

to another Love-Feast at *Fetter-lane*; and, it being *Christmas-Eve*, continued till near Four in the Morning in Prayer, Psalms, and Thanksgiving, with many truly Christian Brethren; and my Heart was much en-

larged and full of Love.—God gave me a great Spirit of Supplication. *Adored be his free Grace in Christ Jesus. Amen and Amen.*

*Monday, Dec. 25.* About Four went and prayed, and expounded to another Society in *Redcross-street*, consisting of near two or three hundred People, and the Room was exceeding hot. I had been watching unto Prayer all Night, yet God vouchsafed so to fill me with his Blessed Spirit, that I spoke with as great Power as ever I did in my Life. My Body was weak, but I found a supernatural Strength, and the Truth of that Saying, *When I am weak, then I am strong.*

At Six I went to *Crutched Fryar's* Society, and expounded as well as I could, but perceived myself a little oppressed with Drowsiness. *How does the corruptible Body weigh down the Soul! When shall I be delivered from the Burden of this Flesh?*

Preached thrice, and assisted in administering the Sacrament the same Day **without going to sleep. God will make his Power to be known in me.**—This Day 24 Years, was I baptised. Lord! to what little Purpose have I lived? However, I sealed my Baptismal Covenant with my dear Saviour's most blessed Body and Blood, and trust in his Strength I shall keep and perform it. *Amen, Amen.*

*Saturday, December 30.* Preached nine Times this Week, and expounded near 18 Times, with great Power and Enlargement.—**Blessed be God!** I am every Moment employed from Morning 'till Midnight.—There is no End of People's coming and sending to me, and they seem more and more desirous, like New-born Babes, to be fed with the sincere Milk of the Word.—What a great Work has been wrought in the

B 2

Hearts

4

Hearts of many within this Twelvemonth!—Now know I, that though Thousands might come at first

out of Curiosity, yet God has prevented and quickened them by his free Grace.—*Oh that I could be humble and thankful!*

*Glory be to God that he fills me continually, not only with Peace, but also Joy in the Holy Ghost.*—Before my Arrival, I thought I should envy my Brethrens Success in the Ministry; but Blessed be God, I rejoyce in it, and am glad to see *Christ's* Kingdom come, whatsoever Instruments God shall make Use of to bring it about.—Sometimes I perceive myself deserted for a little while, and much oppressed, especially before preaching, but Comfort soon after flows in.—The Kingdom of God is within me. *Oh! free Grace in Christ!*

*Sunday, December 31.* Preached twice to large Congregations, especially in the Afternoon, at *Spittlefields*.—I had a great Hoarseness upon me, and was deserted before I went up into the Pulpit; but God strengthened me to speak, so as to be heard by all.

After I left *Spittlefields*, my Cold being very great, I despaired of speaking much more that Night.—But God enabled me to expound to two Companies in *Southwark*, and I was never more enlarged in Prayer in my **whole** Life.—These Words, “And the Power “of the Lord was present to heal them,” were much pressed upon my Soul, and indeed I believe it was. For many were prick'd to the Heart, and *felt* themselves to be Sinners. *Oh that all the World knew and felt that!*

*Monday, January 1.* Received the Holy Sacrament, preached twice, and expounded twice, and found this to be the happiest *New-Year's-Day* that I ever yet saw. Oh! What Mercies has the Lord shewn me since this Time Twelvemonth! And yet I shall see greater Things than these. *Oh that my Heart may be prepared*

*to*

5

*to see them! Oh that my old Things may pass away, and all Things become new!*

Had a Love-Feast with our Brethren at *Fetter-lane*, And spent the whole Night in close Prayer, Psalms, and Thanksgivings.—God supported me without sleep. *Oh that our Despisers were Partakers of our Joys!*

*Tuesday, January 3[[2]].* Staid at Home on purpose to receive those, who wanted to consult me.—*Blessed be God*, from seven in the Morning till three in the Afternoon. People came, some telling me what God had done for their Souls, and others crying out, *What shall we do to be saved?* Being obliged to go out after this, I referred several 'till *Thursday*.—God enabled me to give them Answers of Peace! How does God work by my unworthy Hands! His Mercies melt me down. *Oh that I was thankful!*

*Thursday, January 4.* Though my Cold continued, and I feared it would prevent my speaking, yet God enabled me to expound with *extraordinary* Power in a private Society; and then to preach at *Wapping Chapel*, so that the Word pierced the Hearers Souls; *and* afterwards I expounded and prayed for an Hour and a half with *great* Power and Demonstration of the Spirit, and my Heart was full of God. *How immediately does Jesus Christ reward me for my poor Services! As soon as my daily Work is done, he says, Enter thou into the Joy of thy Lord; He commands, and it is done.*

*Friday, January 5.* Held a Conference at *Islington*, concerning several Things of very great Importance, with seven true Ministers of *Jesus Christ*, despised *Me-thodists*, whom God has brought together from the *East* and the *West*, the *North* and the *South*.—What we were in doubt about, after Prayer, we determined by Lot, and every Thing else was carried on with great Love, Meekness, and Devotion.—We continued

in

6

in Fasting and Prayer 'till three o'Clock, and then parted with a full Conviction that God was going to do great Things among us. *Oh that we may be any way instrumental to his Glory! That he would make us Vessels pure and holy, meet for our Master's Use!*

Expounded twice afterwards in London with great Power, and then was much enlarged for near an Hour in Prayer, in Fetter-lane Society.—The Spirit of Supplication increases in my Heart daily.—*May it encrease ever more and more!*

Did not find the Pity I ought, upon seeing a Brother full of Self-love. *Lord enlarge my narrow Heart, and give me that Charity which rejoices not in Iniquity, but in the Truth.*—Perceived something a little bordering on Envy towards my Brother H.—I find more and more that true Humility consists in being submissive to those, who are a little above, or a little below us.—*Oh when shall I come to rejoice in others Gifts and Graces as much as in my own! I am resolved to wrestle with Jesus Christ, by Faith and Prayer 'till he thus blesses me.*

Saturday, January 6. Preached six times this Week, and should have preached a seventh time, but one Minister would not permit me; which caused me to pray for him most earnestly. *Blessed be God, I can say, I love mine Enemies.*

Expounded twice or thrice every Night this Week. The Holy Ghost so powerfully worked upon my Hearers, pricking their Hearts, and melting them into such Floods of Tears, that a spiritual Man said, He never saw the like before.—God is with me of a truth. Adored be his unmerited Goodness, I find his Grace quickening me more and more every Day. My Understanding is more enlightened, my Affections more enflamed, and my Heart full of Love towards God and Man.—*Oh! that the Scoffers of these last Days were not*

*only almost, but altogether such as I am, except these indwelling Corruptions!*

*Sunday,*

7

*Sunday, January 7.* Preached twice to day, and expounded *with great Power* to three Societies, one of which I never visited before.—*God grant I may pursue the Method of expounding and praying extempore. I find God blesses it more and more.*

Had another Love-Feast, and spent the whole Night in Prayer and Thanksgiving at *Fetter-lane*.—There was a great pouring out of the Spirit amongst the Brethren; but I cannot say I was so full of Joy as the last Night we spent together.

*Monday, January 8.* Though I sat up all Night, yet God carried me through the Work of the Day with about an Hour's Sleep.—Expounded in the Evening, and confuted a virulent Opposer of the Doctrine of the New Birth, and Justification by Faith only.—But what can be said to those who will not be convinced? *Lord, open thou their Hearts and Eyes.*

Spent the Remainder of the Evening with our Bands, which are little Combinations of six or more Christians meeting together to compare their Experiences.—*Build ye up one another, even as also ye do.—Confess your Faults one to another, and pray for one another, that ye may be healed.*

*Tuesday, January 10* [[9]]. Stayed at home again to day to talk with those who came to consult me, and found that God has awakened several, and excited in them a Hunger and Thirst after Righteousness by my Sermon on the *Power of Christ's Resurrection*, and *Have ye received the Holy Ghost?* Every Day I hear of somebody or another quickened to a Sense of the divine Life.—*Oh what abundant Reason have I to be thankful!*

This Evening I preached a Sermon at *Great St. Helens*, for erecting a Church for the *Saltzburghers*, and collected thirty-three Pounds! *Blessed be God!* The Peo-

ple gave most readily, many wishing they had more to give; *for which we afterwards prayed and gave Thanks..*

OXFORD.

8

### OXFORD.

*Wednesday, January 11* [[10]]. Slept about three Hours, rose at five, set out at ten, and reached Oxford by five in the Evening. As I entered the City, I called to mind the Mercies I had received since I left it. They are more than I am able to express. *Oh that my Heart may be melted down by a Sense of them, Amen, Lord Jesus!*—Spent the Remainder of the Evening very agreeably with several Christian Friends.—*May God sanctify our Meeting.*

*Friday, January 12.* Breakfasted with sixteen or seventeen Christian Brethren; expounded and read Prayers at the Castle to many devout Souls. Afterwards I waited on the Bishop of Gloucester, who received me very kindly.—Waited on the Master of Pembroke; afterwards on the Arch-deacon.—Went to publick Worship at Pembroke.—Sup'd, prayed, and sung Psalms with a Room full of Brethren at Mr. F——'s; then adjourned to Corpus Christi College, where God assisted me to talk clearly of the New Birth, and Justification by Faith alone, with one that opposed it.—*Lord, open thou our Eyes, that we may prove what is that acceptable and perfect Will of God!*—Received the Holy Sacrament at St. Mary's, expounded with great Power at Mr. F——'s, went with the other Candidates for Holy Orders to subscribe to the Articles, and secretly prayed that we all might have our Names written in the Book of Life.—Drank Tea with a well-disposed Gentleman Commoner, and had close Conversation with many others at Corpus Christi College.—I enjoyed great Tranquillity of Soul, and had much Reason to bless God for sending me to the University. *Oh! that I*

*may be prepared for receiving the Holy Ghost to morrow by the Imposition of Hands. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.*

*Sunday,*

9

*Sunday, January 14.* This, blessed be God, has been a Day of fat Things.—Rose in the Morning, and prayed and sung Psalms lustily, and with a good Courage; and afterwards was ordained Priest at *Christ's Church*. Before, I was a little dissipated, but at Imposition of Hands, my Mind was in a humble Frame, and I received Grace in the holy Sacrament.—That I might begin to make proof of my Ministry, I preached, and administered the Sacrament at the Castle; and preached in the Afternoon at *St. Albans* to a crowded Congregation.—The Church was surrounded with Gowns-men of all Degrees, who, contrary to their Custom, stood attentive at the Windows during my Sermon.—God enabled me to preach with the Demonstration of the Spirit, and with Power, and quite took away my Hoarseness, so that I could lift up my Voice like a Trumpet.—After Sermon, I joined in giving Thanks to our good God for all the Mercies he had conferred upon me; then I read Prayers at *Carfax*, expounded to a large and devout Company both of Men and Women at a private House, and spent the Remainder of the Evening with thirteen more, where God gave me great Cheerfulness of Spirit.

### LONDON.

*Monday, January 15.* Took a most affectionate Leave of my dear *Oxon* Brethren, set out at Seven, reached *London* by Five, and spent the Evening in answering some Letters, especially one from *Howell Harris*, an Instrument, under God, of doing much good in *Wales*.—Read a Pamphlet wrote against me by a Clergyman, I bless God, without any Emotion; prayed most heartily for the Author; opened the **Corruptions** of my Heart to my Brethren in Bands, and left great Peace consequent thereupon.



*Tuesday, January 16.* After much Opposition, read Prayers, and preached to a thronged and affected

C

Audience

10

Audience at St. *Helens*.—After this, I expounded twice to two Companies, and prayed by Name for the Author of the Pamphlet; left my Auditors in Tears, and went home full of Love and Joy and Peace which passeth all Understanding.—*Oh that He felt what I do! Happy, unspeakably happy, would he then be!*

*Wednesday, January 17.* Din'd with and convinced several who were prejudiced against extempore Prayer.—Waited on the Trustees, and was most kindly received.—Afterwards much assisted in expounding twice at Mr C——'s.—*The more I am opposed, the more God enlightens my Understanding. So it was formerly, so it is now.*—Spent the Remainder of the Evening at *Fetterlane* Society; and God enabled me to tell of some Experiences, which I hope comforted their Hearts.

*Thursday, January 18.* Perceived myself much disordered, so that I was obliged to lie down to sleep. But afterwards God greatly enlarged my Heart, and enabled me to expound to two Societies. I made a Collection for two poor House-keepers.—*I find Action is the best Way to take all Oppression off the Spirits. God will meet and bless us when doing his Work.*

*Friday, January 19.* Did some necessary Business for *Georgia*, and spent the Afternoon in visiting some dissenting Brethren, who are Christians indeed. *But, as such, I acknowledge all who love our Lord Jesus in Sincerity and Truth.*

*Saturday, January 20.* Preached three Times this Week, and expounded to about sixteen thronged Companies, wherein God gave me great Power and Suc-

cess.—Had many Contributions sent me in for the Orphan-house.

*Sunday, January 21.* Went this Morning and received the Sacrament at the Hands of the Minister

who

11

who wrote against me. Blessed be God I do not feel the least *Resentment* against, but a Love for him. For I believe he has a Zeal for God, though, in my Opinion, not according to Knowledge. *Oh that I could do him any good!*

Preached twice with great Power and Clearness in my Voice to two thronged Congregations, especially in the Afternoon, when I believe near a thousand People were in the Churchyard, and hundreds more returned Home that could not come in. *Thus God magnifies his Power, most when most opposed.*

Expounded twice afterwards, where the People pressed most vehemently to hear the Word.—God enabled me to speak with the Demonstration of the Spirit, and with Power, and the Remainder of the Evening, filled me with a humble Sense of his infinite Mercies. *I think I am never more humble than when exalted.—By the Grace of God I am what I am. Oh that I could be thankful!*

*Monday, January 22.* Spent all the Day in necessary Business for my poor Flock, and in going about doing good. In the Evening I expounded to three several Societies, one of which was the most polite I ever yet saw; but God enabled me to speak upon the Doctrine of the New Birth; and however some might mock, yet others, I believe, were affected, especially three Quakers, who afterwards came and paid me a visit, and glorified God on my Behalf.—*Oh how thankful, how humble ought I to be!—God fills me with Love Peace and Joy in the Holy Ghost.—Such is his Free Grace in Christ Jesus!*

*Tuesday, January 23.* Staid at Home to Day as usual, to receive People, and still had the Comfort of hearing many coming to me, who have been awakened to a Sense of the New-Birth. *What Reason have I to bless God for sending me to England! How does he daily set his*

C 2

Seal

12

*Seal to my Ministry! Praise him all the Host of his, let every Thing that hath Breath praise the Lord.*

Received a Packet of Letters from my dear Friend *H—m*, [[Habersham]] by which I find the infinite Wisdom of God more and more, in sending me to *England*.—The poor People of *Savannah* love me still most affectionately. But the Colony seems to be at a low Ebb.—*Poor Georgia! When thou art universally despised, and quite despairst of human Help, then will God manifest his mighty Arm in thy Salvation.*

Read Prayers and preached at *St. Helens*, with great Power to a crowded and attentive Audience.—Was enabled to expound to two Companies, and collected above Forty Shillings for the Orphan-house of *Georgia*. I could wish to have it built with Mites.—*Oh how does the Holy Ghost cause me to joy in God! How does he bring me acquainted more and more with his faithful Servants! Not unto me, O Lord; not unto me, but to thy Name be the Glory!*

*Wednesday, January 24.* Preached a Charity Sermon, went to *Newington* to see *Dr. Watts*, who received me most cordially [[not in original]], and returned in the Evening and expounded with Power to two Companies.—Wrote several Letters to my Friends at *Savannah*, and was filled with the Holy Ghost; and *Oh that all who deny the Promise of the Father, might thus receive it themselves!*

*Thursday, January 25.* Received the Sacrament at *Bow*, where four of my Opposers administered; one of whom was the Person that wrote the self-answering

Pamphlet against me. At first a Thought darted into my Mind that they were of a persecuting Spirit, but I soon checked it, and was filled with Love towards them. *God grant they may be like minded towards me.*

At two in the Afternoon read Prayers and preached at *Christ-Church, Spittlefields*, for the Orphan-house.—The Congregation was not so large as might be expected, and that of the poorest Sort, so that I began to

doubt.

13

doubt. But wherefore did I fear? For God enabled me to preach with Power, and twenty-five Pounds were collected, to our great Surprise, and to the Glory of our Great and Good God; for which we kneeled down and gave most hearty Thanks.

This done, I went and gave a Word or two of Exhortation, and prayed to a Company that waited for me. Then I expounded *with uncommon Power* to another Society in *Leadenhall-street*, and collected very near five Pounds for the Orphan-house. *Blessed be God through Christ.*

About Eight, I went to another Society, after Nine to a third, at both of which I spoke with the Demonstration of the Spirit, and made Collections for the Orphan-house, *and was filled with the Holy Ghost, which very much strengthened my Body, and made my Feet like Hart's Feet.* *The Strength God gives me would surprise me, did I not know what a Gracious Master I serve.*

Received a Letter from *Edinburgh*, from a truly pious Gentleman, who tells me his Heart was knit to me most strongly, upon the reading of my Journal. *How many are there, whom I know not, praying for me in secret! Surely God intends to bring mighty Things to pass.—Is not his Strength made perfect in Weakness?*

*Friday, January 26.* Waited upon an opposing Clergyman, and had a Conference with him of near two Hours. His grand Objection was against our pri-

vate Societies, and using extempore Prayer, which he grounded on the Authority of the Canons, and the Act of *Charles II*. In Answer, I shewed that that Act was entirely levelled against seditious schismatical Meetings, contrary to the Church of *England*, which confines us to a Form in publick Worship only. He replied, that ours was publick Worship; but this I deny. For ours were Societies never intended to be set up in Opposition to the publick Worship, by Law established;

but

<sup>14</sup>

but only in imitation of the primitive Christians, who continued daily with one Accord in the Temple, and yet in Fellowship building up one another, and exhorting one another from House to House. Went with Mr. *Seward* to *Bexley*, about ten Miles from *London*, where I preached to a large Congregation, to their great Comfort, and afterwards spent the Evening most delightfully in religious Conversation, and in singing Psalms and Hymns and Spiritual Songs with Mr. *Delamot's* Family, who seem almost with one Accord ready to receive *Jesus Christ*. *A happier Houshold have I seldom found, or one that more resembles that of Martha, Mary, and their Brother Lazarus.*

*Saturday, January 27.* Slept but little to Night, as well as the Night before, but was much strengthened without it by the Holy Spirit. Rose about Five, spent above an Hour most agreeably in Prayer, singing and reading the Scriptures with the Church in Mr. *Delamot's* House; some of whom, after the Example of their Lord, passed the whole Night in the same delightful Employment.

Came to *London* about Nine in the Morning, and expounded twice in *Beech-lane*, where I believe near seven hundred People were present; collected five Pounds for the Orphan-house.

Had extraordinary Comforts this Week, heard much of what God has done abroad for me in other

Places, where I am not known in the Flesh, and desired greatly to be humble and thankful.

Received the Sacrament at *Crooked-lane*, but was a little dissipated; however, I found I received *Christ*, and fed on him in my Heart, by Faith with Thanksgiving. **Afterwards** went and preached at *Ironmongers Alms-houses* at *St. Catherine's* in the Afternoon; afterwards expounded to two large Companies in the *Minories*, with such Demonstration of the Spirit as I never spoke with before.—I offered *Jesus Christ* freely to Sinners, and many, I believe, were truly pricked to the Heart.

Now,

15

Now, my Friends, your Prayers are heard, God has given me a double Portion of his Spirit indeed.—*Oh free Grace in Christ Jesus.—With what Love, Peace, and Joy does God fill this Soul of mine!—Lord I am not worthy, but thy Mercies in Christ Jesus are infinite.*

*Monday, Jan. 29.* Expounded twice, and sat up 'till near One in the Morning, with my honoured Brother and Fellow-labourer, *John Wesley*, in Conference with two Clergymen of the Church of *England*, and some other strong Opposers of the Doctrine of the New Birth.—God enabled me with great Simplicity to declare what he had done for my Soul, which made them look upon me as a Madman. *We speak what we do know, and testify that we have seen, and they receive not our Witness. Now therefore I am fully convinced there is a fundamental Difference between us and them. They believe only an outward Christ, we farther believe that he must be inwardly formed in our Hearts also. But the natural Man receiveth not the Things of the Spirit of God, for they are Foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

*Tuesday, Jan. 30.* Preached at *Duke's-Place* and *St. Helens*, to crouded Audiences, and afterwards ex-

pounded twice on *Dowgate-hill*, where the People pressed mightily to come in. The Minister of the Parish threatens the Master of the House with a Prosecution, though it will be hard for him to prove such Societies any ways contrary to the Laws either of God or Man.

### GRAVESEND.

*Wednesday, January 31.* Slept about two Hours, rose at Three in the Morning, and went with some Christian Friends in a Boat to *Gravesend*, where I have been long expected.—God inclined the Ministers Hearts to let me have the Use of both the Pulpits, and

I preached

16

I preached and read Prayers at Three in the Afternoon at the Church without the Town; and did the same at the Church in the Town, and the People, as elsewhere, hung upon me to hear the Word of God.—*God is with me wherever I go.*

*Thursday, February 1.* Read Prayers and expounded on the third of *St. John*; expounded at a private House in the Afternoon, and read Prayers and expounded a third Time on the Conversion of *St. Paul* in the Evening.—I had great Freedom of Speech, was filled with exceeding great Joy, at the Consideration of what great Things God yet continues to do for my Soul; and yet I shall see greater Things than these.

I spent the Remainder of the Evening in singing Hymns, and religious Conversation; took Boat about Eleven, spoke Warmly to the Passengers, and came to *London* rejoicing about Five in the Morning. *The Lord preserve my going out, and my coming in, from this Time forth for evermore.*

### LONDON.

*Friday, February 2.* Slept about two Hours, **rose** and went and preached at *Islington*, and collected **twenty-two Pounds** for my Orphan-house.

Had a great Number of Communicants, and was told my preaching was attended with uncommon Power. This is the first Time I have preached without Notes, (for when I preached at *Deptford* and *Gravesend*, I only repeated a written Sermon) but I find myself now, as it were, constrained to do it.

Expounded in the Evening, and collected three Pounds for the Orphan-house, at Mr. *Abbot's*; preached extempore with great Freedom at *Wapping-Chapel*; then expounded to another Society, and returned Home without Fatigue or Weariness. *How does God deal with me! He gives me a Heaven upon Earth, and makes my*

*Heart*

17

Heart leap'd for Joy almost continually.—*Oh that all who now oppose it, were partakers of this Joy!*

Saturday, February 23 [[3]]. Stayed at Home this Day on purpose to settle my private Affairs; and, blessed be God, did it greatly to my Satisfaction.—Was very much composed in Spirit, began a new Society at the House of Mr. *M—n*; and was much assisted in expounding twice at *Beech-lane* to two Companies, making in all near a thousand People.—Visited a sick Brother, came home full of Peace, and Love, and Joy in the Holy Ghost.

Near nine Times has God enabled me to preach this Week, and to expound 12 or 14 Times; near forty Pounds, I believe, have been collected for the Orphan-house.—*I find I gain greater Light and Knowledge, by preaching extempore.—So that I fear I should quench the Spirit, did I not go on to speak as he gives me Utterance.*

Sunday, February 4. Had a comfortable Night's Rest; was warmed much by talking to an almost Christian, that came to ask me certain Questions.—Preached in the Morning at *St. George's in the East*, collected eighteen Pounds for the Orphan-house, and had, I believe, 600 Communicants, which highly offended the officia-



ting Curate. *Poor Man, I pitied, and prayed for him sincerely.*

Preached again at *Christ-Church, Spittlefields*, gave Thanks, and sung Psalms at a private House: Went thence to *St. Margaret's, Westminster*; but something breaking belonging to the Coach, could not get thither 'till the middle of Prayers.—Went through the People to the Minister's Pew, but finding it locked, I returned to the Vestry till the *Sexton* could be found. Being there informed that another Minister intended to preach, I desired several Times that I might go Home: My Friends would by no means consent,

D

telling

18

telling me I was appointed by the Trustees to preach, and that if I did not, the People would go out of the Church; at my Request, some went to the Trustees, Churchwardens, and Minister; and whilst I was waiting for an Answer, and the last Psalm singing, a Man came with a Wan in his hand, whom I took for the proper Church-Officer, and told me I was to preach; I, not doubting but the Minister was satisfied, followed him to the Pulpit: And God enabled me to preach with greater Power than I had done all the Day before.

After this, prayed with, and gave a Word or two of Exhortation to a Company that waited for me, then took a little bodily Refreshment, and then went to a Love-Feast in *Fetter-lane*, where I spent the whole Night in watching unto Prayer, and discussing several important Points with many truly Christian Friends. About Four in the Morning we went all together and broke Bread at a poor sick Sister's Room, and so we parted, I hope, in a Spirit not unlike that of the primitive Christians.

*This has been a Sabbath indeed! How has God owned me before near Twelve thousand People this Day.—How has he strengthened my Body! How has he filled and satisfied my Soul. Now know I, that I did receive the Holy Ghost at Imposition of Hands.—For, I feel it as much as*

*Elisha did, when Elijah dropped his Mantle. Nay, others see it also; and my Opposers, would they but speak, cannot but confess that God is with me of a Truth. Wherefore then do they fight against God?*

*Monday, February 5. Went about gathering for my poor Flock, had a little Time to write my Journal, was somewhat weak part of the Day, but grew strong by expounding to four Companies at Night. I always get Strength by working. What great Things has God done for my Soul! Oh that I could praise him with my whole Heart!*

*Tuesday,*

19

*Tuesday, February 6. Was refreshed much this Morning, and found that the Sleep of a labouring Man was sweet.—Waited on the Bishop of Gloucester with Brother John Wesley, and received his Lordship's liberal Benefaction for Georgia.*

*Went to St. Helen's, where Satan withstood me greatly. For on a sudden I was deserted, and my Strength went from me.—But I thought it was the Devil's doing, and therefore was resolved to resist him stedfast in the Faith. Accordingly, though I was exceeding sick in reading the Prayers, and almost unable to speak when I entred the Pulpit, yet God gave me Courage to begin, and before I had done I waxed warm and strong in Spirit, and offered Jesus Christ freely to all that would lay hold on him by Faith. Many, I believe, were touched to the Quick: For they seemed to feel what was spoken, and said hearty and loud *Amens* to my Sentences. The Church was greatly thronged, and after I had done, Prayers were put up on all Sides for my safe Journey and return.—Surely these are not curious Hearers! If they are, why do they follow more and more for such a Continuance? No, many Conversions have been wrought in their Hearts. God has set his Seal to my Ministry, and I trust they will be my Joy and Crown of rejoycing in the Day of the Lord Jesus.—Oh*

*the Riches of God's free Grace in Christ to the Chief of Sinners! Oh that I fully felt the Sense of these Words!*

After this the People waited in great Companies to see and follow me; but I got from them by going out at a back Door. *Perhaps hereafter I may be let out in the same Manner to escape the Fury of mine Enemies. As my good God pleases.*

In coming along I perceived myself more and more strengthened, and was much comforted in reading a Letter sent me by an excellent Saint, who loves me in the Bowels of *Jesus Christ*. About Nine at Night I expounded with great Enlargement at *Dowgate-hill* to a most crowded Audience. Tongue cannot express what Power God gave me, or how the Hearts of the

D 2

poor

20

poor People were affected. They sighed and mourned, and wept sorely, when I mentioned my Departure from them, though but for a Season. I exhorted them particularly not to forsake the assembling themselves together, notwithstanding the People of the House had been threatened with a Prosecution.—But so far as our Opposers are permitted to go, shall they go, but no farther. I never was more opposed, never met with so great Success, *never was filled with such a Portion of God's holy Spirit.*—My dear Christian Friends waited, at my coming Home, to salute me.—God filled me with Love and Joy, and I waxed stronger and stronger in Spirit, to their and my own unspeakable Comfort in *Christ Jesus our Lord*. *All Love, all Glory be to the Ever Blessed Trinity, now and for evermore. Amen.*

*Wednesday, February 7.* Spent the Morning in providing Things for my Journey, and taking leave of my dear Christian Friends, *whom I love as my own Soul.*—Had several Presents made me by such as God had worked upon by my Ministry; and after having prayed and sung Psalms in several Christian Houses,

about Two I set out for *Windsor*, desiring to be thankful for those marvellous great Kindnesses God had shewn me in this City. I perceived my Heart so nearly knit to my dear Friends, that was it the Divine Will, I should gladly continue here. But I must go into every Place and City where I have been already, *for therefore am I sent. Lord, send thy Angel before me to prepare my Way. But wherefore should I doubt, since so many thousands are continually praying for me? The good Lord pour down upon them the choicest of his Blessings!*

### **WINDSOR.**

Got hither about Six in the Evening, and was joyfully received by several Christian Friends, who were

waiting

21

waiting for me.—About Seven I was taken very ill indeed, but God strengthened me to go out, and I expounded with Freedom and Power in the Schoolhouse to a great Number of People, who were apprised of my coming, and, I believe, *felt* what I spoke; for some wept, and many expressed their Thankfulness for my Exposition. *Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy Name be all the Glory.*

Being much refreshed by talking for God, I spent the Remainder of the Evening in writing to some dear Christian Friends, and in singing, praying, and conversing with others, as likewise with the People of the Inn where we lodged.

*Thursday, Feb. 8.* Breakfasted, prayed, and sung a Hymn at the House of Mr. D——'s, who kindly invited both me and my Friends.—Some other Persons sent for me to their Houses, and, I believe, much good might be done here. *But I must not stay by the Way. Lord, lo I come: Only I beseech thee open an effectual Door for preaching thy Gospel, whithersoever thou shalt send me. Even so Lord Jesus.* Amen.

I find much Service might be done to Religion on Journeys, if we had but Courage to shew ourselves Christians in all Places: Others sing *Songs* in publick Houses, Why should not we sing *Psalms*? And when we give the Servants Money, why may we not with that give them a little Book, and some good Advice? I know by Experience it is very beneficial.—*God grant this may be always my Practice!*

### **BASINGSTOKE.**

Left *Windsor* about Ten in the Morning, dined at *Bagshot*, and reached *Basingstoke* at Five in the Evening.—Not meeting with our Friends, who were to come from *Dummer*, I wrote to some Christian Brethren I had left behind me, and afterwards was agreeably surprised by several who came uninvited to see me.—After

a little

22

a little Conversation, I perceived they were desirous to hear the Word of God, and being in a large Dining-room in the publick House, I gave Notice I would expound to as many as would come. In a short Time I had above a hundred very attentive Hearers, to whom I expounded for above an Hour, for which they were very thankful. *Blessed be God for this Opportunity. I hope, I shall learn more and more every Day, that no Place is amiss for preaching the Gospel.—God forbid that the Word of God should be bound, because some out of a misguided Zeal deny the Use of their Churches. For* though they bid me no more speak to the People in this way, yet I cannot but speak the Things that I have seen and felt in my own Soul. The more I am bid to hold my Peace, the more earnestly will I lift up my Voice like a Trumpet, and tell the People what must be done in them before they can be finally saved by Jesus Christ.

*Friday, Feb. 9.* After Breakfast and Prayer with the Family where we lodged, I set out for *Dummer* (a Pa-

rish once for a little while under my Care) and met with near a dozen Christian Brethren, with whom we took exceeding sweet Council, prayed, and sung Psalms, and eat our Bread with Gladness and Singleness of Heart. I wish all knew how chearful we, that are beginning to be Christians, live! And if the Beginning be so sweet, What must the End of Believing be? *Oh the Goodness of God in thus bringing me back to the Places where I have been already! Lord melt down my frozen Heart with a Sense of thy unmerited Love. Amen, Amen.*

After having wrote several Letters, I returned with my Friends to *Basingstoke*, where I had appointed to expound. Accordingly, in the Evening I went to a large Room prepared for that Purpose, and expounded for an Hour.—The Place was very much thronged, many were very noisy, and others did us the Honour of throwing up Stones at the Windows. But I spoke

so

23

so much the louder; being convinced some Good must come out from a Place where Opposition is. *I should doubt whether I was a true Minister of Christ, was I not opposed. And I find it does me much Good. For it drives me nearer to my Lord and Master, Jesus Christ, with whom I long to dwell.*

After Exposition, near twenty Friends came to visit me, and two young Men in particular, (once Leaders of the religious Society, but since fallen back). They came, I believe, with a Design to puzzle me about the Doctrine of Regeneration: But alas, they soon shewed what Strangers they were to it.—For one was so full of Zeal that he could not keep his Seat; and both were entirely ignorant of the Indwelling of the Spirit. One Thing they took Care to shew as much as possible, *viz.* That they had read the Fathers (I suppose the *English* Translations) but at the same Time denied Experience in Religion. Poor Men! I pitied and told them, how they rested in Learning, falsely so called, while they

were Strangers to the Power of Godliness in their Hearts. At last finding no Probability of convincing them; and being called away to Supper, I and my Friends took our Leave in Love, with true Concern to see what an unhappy Spirit our Opposers are of. Afterwards we prayed for them, and endeavoured to bless God for making us to triumph, through his dear Son, in every Place.

*Saturday, Feb. 10.* Breakfasted with some Friends; and after Family Prayer, went with my dear Brethren, Mr. *Kinchin* and Mr. *Hutchings*, to *Dummer*, where I spent most of the Day in visiting that poor Flock from House to House, who rejoiced exceedingly at the Sight of me, and had not forgotten their former Love.—Their Simplicity delighted me and my Friend *Seward* much, and God enlarged my Heart greatly to praise him, and to pray for my dear absent Brethren.—*Indeed I love them in the Bowels of Jesus Christ.*

About

24

About Four in the Afternoon we returned to *Basingstoke*, in order to expound. And near three large Rooms were filled.—We expected ill Treatment ere we returned home, and some did begin to interrupt me; but God enabled me to speak with such irresistible Power, that they were quite struck dumb and confounded.—Many said we will never oppose again. Others said, they would follow me whithersoever I should go; and the Hearts of God's Children, as well as my own, were filled with Joy unspeakable.—*This Night I hope Salvation is come to this Place.*

After Exposition, many Christian Friends came to see me **in a most affectionate Manner**, and about Nine at Night we set out for *Dummer*. But no one can tell what Enlargement of Heart God gave me.—My Soul was full of ineffable Comfort and Joy in the Holy Ghost.—I poured out my Heart before the Throne of Grace as I rode by the Way, and felt the

Spirit of God working in me mightily, and enabling me to intercede most earnestly for my dear Friends. *Lord hear my Prayers, and let my Cry come unto thee.*—In a short Time we reached *Dummer*, and after having taken a little Refreshment, I went to Bed full of Love, and rejoycing for the great Things God had done for my Soul.

*Sunday, Feb. 11.* Rose full of Love and Joy, but afterwards on a sudden was deserted, and then taken very ill in Body.—I struggled just like one in his last Agonies, and longed to stretch myself into God.—After having vomited several Times, I was obliged to go to Bed; and it would have melted any one down to see my dear Friends (especially my dearest Mr. H—s) weeping and praying around me.—*Oh how did I long to be dissolved, and be with Jesus Christ! How did I wish for the Wings of an Eagle, that I might fly away to Heaven! But that happy Hour is not yet come. There are many Promises to be fulfilled in me, many Souls to be called,*

*many*

25

*many Sufferings to be endured, before I go hence.—Father, thy Will be done.*

After having fallen a-sleep for a short Time, I arose and went to publick Worship, and preached and administered the Sacrament, but without any Life or Power.

My Sickness still continuing, after Service, I went to Bed again full of Peace, but weak in Body, oppressed much in my Head, and quite shut up till near Five at Night: At which Time, by the Advice of my Brother *Seward*, I took Courage, and though it rained hard, rode with my dear Friends to *Basingstoke*, where above five hundred were waiting to hear me expound; but my Indisposition continuing, Brother *Kinchin* expounded in my Stead.—After this my Spirits revived, my Body was strengthened, and God gave me Utterance, so that I spoke freely to near twenty People that came to converse with me, and to hear the Word



of God.—How thankful ought I to be to my dear Master for sending me hither.—A most beneficial and comfortable Meeting have I had with my dear Christian Friends, and many, I hope, will have Reason to bless God for what they have seen and heard.—A Vestry, I find, was called to stop my Proceedings, and I hear I am to be presented to the Diocesan.—Several Lies have been told in the News about my Preaching at St. Margaret's last Sunday.—*Blessed be God that I can rejoice in these lower marks of my Discipleship.—Wherever I go, God causeth me to triumph, knits the Hearts of his People most closely to me, and makes me more than Conqueror through his Love.—The Comforts I enjoy within are inexpressible, they have a great Effect upon my outward Man, and makes me of a chearful Countenance; which recommends my Master's Service much.—Oh Free Grace in Christ Jesus!*

E

SALIS-

26

### SALISBURY.

Monday, February 12. Perceived myself perfectly recovered, and was much refreshed by the coming of many dear Friends, with whom after I had breakfasted and prayed, I took a most affectionate Leave; called at Dummer, sang a Hymn, prayed, and gave a Word of Exhortation to certain Disciples that were there, and reached Salisbury with my Companion in Travel Mr. Seward about six in the Evening.—Here I wrote several Letters to my London and Basingstoke Friends, and sent for Mr. Chubb, in order to have a Conference with him concerning his late Book, but he happened not to be at home.—Oh that that unhappy Man was turned from his erroneous Principles! For I fear, like Simon Magus, he has bewitched many about Salisbury with his false Doctrines.—Lord, suffer not thy People to believe a Lye, though they have held the Truth in Unrighteousness. Raise up, *I beseech thee*, some true Pastors amongst them, who may acquaint them with the Nature

*and Necessity of the New Birth, and point out to them the blessed Spirit, whereby they may have that Repentance wrought in their Souls, which the self-righteous Mr. Chubb falsely asserts may be wrought in them by a moral Persuasion.*

### **STAPLEASHWIN, WILTS.**

*Tuesday, February 13.* Thought when I rose to abide at Salisbury a few Days, but finding it quite inconsistent with my other Business, I left that Place (after publick Worship, and paying a Visit to an old Disciple, my Brother Wesley's Mother) and reached *Stapleashwin* about Six at Night.—After having refreshed ourselves, we intended to set forward towards *Bath*; but finding the People, at whose House we put up, were worthy, we altered our Resolution. **And** our Hostess having called in many of her Neighbours, I prayed, conversed, and sung Psalms with them for a considerable

Time,

27

Time, wrote some Letters, and went to Bed, not doubting but the Lord would cause me to dwell in Safety.—*Who knows but some good may have been done here this Night? But what have I to do with that? I am to follow my Lord, who, wheresoever he came, talked of the one Thing needful.*

### **BATH and BRISTOL.**

*Wednesday, February 14.* After Family-Prayer, and giving a Word of Exhortation, I set out for *Bath*, and was greatly comforted there with some Christian Brethren.—I then waited on Doctor C——y, desiring I might have the Use of the Abbey Church to preach for the Orphan-house, the Trustees having obtained Leave of the Bishop before I went to *Georgia*. But he was pleased to give me an absolute Refusal to preach either on that, or any other Occasion, without a positive Order from the King or Bishop. I asked him his Reasons. He said, *he was not obliged to give me any.* Upon which, I took my leave, and retired with my

Friends, and prayed for him most fervently.—*The Time will come, says our Lord, when they shall thrust you out of their Synagogues.*

After Dinner, other Circumstances concurring, we thought God called us to *Bristol*. With Cheerfulness of Heart, we reached that Place about Seven in the Evening.—But who can express the Joy with which I was received? To add to my Comfort, many Letters came to my Hands from *London* Friends, which rejoiced me exceedingly. And what was the chiefest Pleasure, somebody or other thought me considerable enough to write a Letter in the *Weekly Miscellany* against me, and with several Untruths, about my preaching at *St. Margarets Westminster*.—*Thou shalt answer for me, my Lord and my God. Yet a little while and we shall appear at the Judgement-seat of Christ. Then shall my Innocence be made clear as the Light, and my just Dealings as the Noon-day.*

E 2

BRI-

28

### BRISTOL.

*Thursday, February 15.* Sat up till past one in the Morning answering my Friends Letters, having no Time otherwise.—Received a Letter from a dear Christian Brother, wherein were these Words, “I was told that Mr. B——n said to Mr. C——h, I believe the Devil in Hell is in you all. Whitefield has set the Town on Fire, and now he is gone to kindle a Flame in the Country. Shocking Language for one who calls himself a Minister of the Gospel! But, my dear Friend, I trust this will not move you, unless it is to pity him, and pray the more earnestly that he may experience the Power of those Truths he is now opposing, and have the same Fire kindled in his Breast, against which he is now so much enraged. For I trust I am persuaded, it is not a Fire of the Devil’s kindling, but an holy Fire that has proceeded from the Holy and Blessed Spirit. Oh

“that such a Fire may not only be kindled, but blow  
“up into a Flame all *England*, and all the World  
“over!”

After having breakfasted and prayed with some religious Friends, I went with Mr. *Seward* to publick Worship; from thence to the Reverend Mr. G——s [[*Gibbs*]], Minister of St. *Mary, Ratcliff*, who, I was informed, had promised to lend me his Church to preach in for the Orphan-house. But he, in effect, gave me a Refusal, telling me, *that he could not lend his Church without a special Order from the Chancellor*.—Upon this, I immediately waited upon the Chancellor, to whom I had sent the Night before—But he told me frankly, that “he would not give any positive Leave, neither would “he prohibit any one who should lend me a Church: “but he would advise me to withdraw to some other “Place till he had heard from the Bishop, and not “preach on that or any other Occasion.” I asked him his Reasons. He answered, “Why will you

“press

29

“press so hard upon me? The Thing has given a “general Dislike.”—I replied, “Not the Design of “the Orphan-house,—Even those that disagree with “me in other Particulars, approve of that.—And as “for the Gospel, when was it preached without Dis- “like?” Soon after this, I took my leave, and waited upon the Reverend the Dean, who received me with great Civility. When I had shewn him my *Georgia* Accounts, and answered him a Question or two about the Colony, I asked him, “Whether there could be “any just Objection against my preaching in Churches “for the Orphan-house?”—After a Pause for a considerable Time, he answered, “He could not tell.” But somebody knocking at the Door, he replied, “Mr. “*Whitefield*, I will give you an Answer some other “Time; now I expect Company.” Will you be “pleased to fix any, Sir? said I. I will send to you, “says the Dean.” O *Christian Simplicity*, whither art

*thou fled! Why do not the Clergy speak the Truth, that it is not against the Orphan-house, but against me and my Doctrine, that their Enmity is levelled. Had another came in his own Name, him they would have received.—But do thou, O Lord, behold their Enmity, and grant unto me, and all thy despised Servants, that with all Boldness we may speak thy Word.*

About three in the Afternoon, God having given me great Favour in the Jaylor's Eyes, I preached a Sermon on the *Penitent Thief* to the poor Prisoners in *Newgate*, and collected fifteen Shillings for them.—Many seemed much affected, and I hope the Power of the Lord was present to awaken them.

At seven I expounded for an Hour with very great Power to a young Society, which God has caused to be established since I was in *Bristol* last: And many, I heard afterwards, were pricked to the Heart, *which was manifest enough by the Tears that were shed by almost all that heard me.*—*Blessed be God the good Seed sown by my Ministry, though but as a Grain of Mustard-Seed, is now, being watered by the Dew of Heaven, be-*

*ginning*

30

*ginning to grow into a great Tree. Lord, this is thy doing, and it is marvellous in our Eyes.*

The Lessons were very remarkable, and the People made an Application for me.—The first was the Opposition made against *Aaron's Priesthood*, and God's determining who was in the right, by causing his Rod to blossom when the other Rods produced nothing. *So let it happen, O Lord, to me thy unworthy Servant.*—The second was the Eleventh Chapter of *St. Paul's 2d Epistle to the Corinthians*, where the Apostle recounted his Sufferings for *Christ*, against the Insinuations of the false Apostles. *Blessed be God, in most of the Things there recorded, I have, in some small Degree, had Fellowship with the Apostle, and before I die, I doubt not but I shall sympathise with him in most other Articles.—While I was reading it, I could not forbear blushing*

much. The People were intent upon me, their Eyes bespoke the Language of their Hearts: Each seemed to say, *Thou art the Man. Suffering is the best Preferment.*

Friday, Feb. 16. Began this Morning to settle a daily Exposition, and reading Prayers to the Prisoners in *Newgate*. I opened it by enlarging on the Conversion of the Jailor, and I trust the same good Work will be experienced in this Prison before I leave it.

Dined with a religious Family, spent a considerable Time in singing Hymns, and Prayer, visited and prayed with two choice Servants of our Blessed Lord, and expounded from Five 'till near Nine, to two thronged Societies, one of which chiefly consisted of young Men whom God seems to have called to shine as Lights in the World, in a crooked and perverse Generation.—*Oh how thankful ought I to be, for seeing these Fruits of my poor Labours!*

Saturday, Feb. 17. Read Prayers and expounded the Parable of the Prodigal Son at *Newgate* to a great Number of People; and afterwards was much refreshed by the coming of a dear *London* Friend, and the Re-

ceipt

31

ceipt of several Letters; for the Writers of which, I with many others immediately kneeled down and gave Thanks. One Thing affected me much in their Letters, viz. Their News of a great Opposer's being given over by the Physicians.—*Alas poor Man! We all prayed most heartily for him, knowing how shortly he must give an Account of what he had most unjustly said and wrote against me and many true Servants of Jesus Christ. Father lay not this Sin to his Charge.*

About One in the Afternoon I went with my Brother *Seward*, and another Friend, to *Kingswood*, and was most delightfully entertained by an old Disciple of the Lord.—My Bowels have long since yearned toward the poor Colliers, who, as far as I can find, are very numerous, and yet are as Sheep, having no Shepherd.—After Dinner therefore, I went upon a Mount

and spake to as many People as came unto me. They were upwards of two hundred.—*Blessed be God that I have now broke the Ice; I believe I never was more acceptable to my Master than when I was standing to teach those Hearers in the open Fields.—Some may censure me.—But if I thus pleased Men, I should not be the Servant of Christ.*

About five, we returned full of Joy; and I wrote to the Bishop of *Bristol* (as I had done before to the Bishop of *Bath and Wells*) for Leave to preach in his Lordship's Churches, for the Benefit of the Orphan-house. *May God incline him to send me an Answer of Peace.*

At seven, I went to expound to a Society of young Men for near two Hours, and then came home with my Friends, blessing and praising God.

*Sunday, February 18.* Arose this Morning about six, being called up by near fifty young Persons, whom I appointed to meet me at my Sister's House, and with whom I spent above an Hour in Prayer, Psalm-singing, and a warm Exhortation.—Soon after this, I read Prayers, and preached at *Newgate to a large and very*

*attentive*

32

*attentive Congregation.* At ten, I preached at St. Werburgh's with great Freedom, and to a large Audience.—*Blessed be God,* I thought yesterday I should not have the Use of any Pulpit; but God, who has the Hearts of all Men in his Hands, disposed the Reverend Mr. *Penrose* to lend me his, who thanked me for my Sermon; and the Reverend Mr. *Gibbs* sent to me, and offered me the Use both of St. *Thomas* and St. *Mary Ratcliff*.—The latter of these I accepted of, and preached to such a Congregation as my Eyes never yet saw, with great Liberty and Demonstration of the Spirit.—Many went away for want of room; and Mr. *Gibbs* and his Lady were exceedingly civil both to

me and Mr. Seward.—*The Lord reward them for this their Love.*

After Sermon, and taking a little Refreshment, I hasted to a Society in *Baldwin-street*, where many hundreds were assembled to hear me, so that the Stairs and Court below, besides the Room itself, were crowded.—Here I continued expounding for near two Hours. And then expounded for as long a Time at another Society in *Nicholas-street*, equally thronged, **but with much greater Power.** Surely, that same Jesus that came to his Disciples, the Doors being shut, when they assembled together, was with us of a truth: For great Numbers were quite melted down, and God so caused me to renew my Strength, that I was better when I returned home, than when I began to exhort my young Fellow-soldiers at six in the Morning. *I could not do this, except Jesus Christ did strengthen me. By his free Grace alone, I am what I am. Not unto me, but unto thy Name, O Lord, alone be all the Glory.*

*Monday, Feb. 19.* Read Prayers and expounded as usual at *Newgate*, and preached in the Afternoon to a great Multitude at the Parish-Church of *St. Philip and Jacob*, and collected Eighteen Pounds for the Orphan-house.—Thousands went away, because there was no room for them within; and God enabled me to read

Prayers

33

Prayers and preach with great Boldness.—*See ye not, ye Opposers, how you prevail nothing? Why do you not believe that it would not be thus, unless God was with me? Lord, open thou their Eyes, that they may see that this is thy doing.*

About Six in the Evening I went to a new Society greatly thronged, and was enabled, notwithstanding I had exerted myself so much at *St. Philip's*, to expound with great Freedom of Spirit for above an Hour.—Thence I went and expounded for near the Space of two Hours to another Society in *Baldwin-Street*, and



much Power from above was amongst us. This done, I returned home full of Joy, which was kept up by conversing, singing, and praying with many Christian Brethren.—We parted, rejoicing that God caused us to go on *from* conquering, and to conquer.

Amongst the Letters I received from religious Correspondents, one writes to me thus.—“Mr. —, who “wrote that Letter in the Miscellany, died Yesterday.” —*He is now gone to give an Account of the many hard Speeches contained therein.—And is convinced that Orthodoxy in Notions is not the whole of Religion.*—In another Part of his Letter he writes thus, “We had such a “remarkable and sensible Presence of God with us at “*Beech-lane* this Evening, as my Eyes and Ears were “never such Witnesses of before. In the midst of “Mr. *John Wesley’s* Exposition, a Woman present “had such Convictions of her lost Estate by Nature, “and such a Sense of Sin, that she could not forbear “crying out aloud; upon which Mr. *Wesley*, breaking “off, went to her, who earnestly desired him to pray “for her, which he did in the Presence of 2 or 300 “People, hardly one of whom, I think, could forbear Tears; upon which she had Comfort.” *Blessed be God, the more we are despised, the more he shews that we are Teachers sent by him. For no one could do these Things, except God was with him.*

F

*Tuesday,*

34

*Tuesday, Feb. 20.* This Day my Master honoured me more than ever he did yet.—About Ten in the Morning, in Compliance with a Summons received from the *Apparator* Yesterday, I waited upon the Reverend Mr. *R*—*l*, the Chancellor of *Bristol*, who now plainly told me, he intended to stop my Proceedings.—“I have sent for the Register here, Sir, says “he, to take down your Answer.” Upon which he asked me by what Authority I preached in the Diocese of *Bristol*, without a Licence. I answered, I thought that Custom was grown obsolete. And why, pray Sir,

replied I, did you not ask the *Irish* Clergyman this Question, who preached for you last *Thursday*? He said that was nothing to me.—He then read over Part of the Ordination-Office, and those Canons that forbid any Minister preaching in a private House, &c.—And then he asked me what I said to them? I answered, that I apprehended those Canons did not belong to professed Ministers of the Church of *England*.—But he said they did.—There is also a Canon, said I, *Sir*, forbidding all Clergymen to frequent Taverns and play at Cards; why is not that put in Execution? Why does not somebody complain of them, says he, and then it would.—When I asked him why I was thus taken particular Notice of, (referring to my printed Discourses for my Principles;) He said, I preached false Doctrine. Upon which I answered him not a Word, but told him, notwithstanding those Canons, I could not but speak the Things that I knew, and was resolved to proceed as usual.—“Observe his Answer *then*, said he, “Mr. *Register*”—And turning to me, added, “I am resolved, *Sir*, if you preach or expound any “where in this Diocese, till you have a Licence, I “will first suspend, and then excommunicate you”—I then took my Leave—He waited upon me very civilly to the Door, and told me, “What he did was in “the Name of the Clergy and Laity of the City “of *Bristol*.”—And so we parted.

Being

35

Being taken ill, just before I went to the Chancellor, on my Return Home, I found I had not so much Joy as Peace. But however, I did not perceive the least Motion of Resentment to arise in my Heart. And to shew how little I regarded such Threatenings, after I had joyned in Prayer for the Chancellor, I immediately went and expounded at *Newgate* as usual; where God gave me great Joy, and wonderfully pricked many to the Heart, as though he would say, *This is the Way, walk in it*.—After this we dined with se-

veral Christian Friends with the kind Keeper of the Prison, and rejoiced exceedingly at the Thoughts, that we should one Day or other sing together in such a Place as *Paul* and *Silas* did.—*God prepare us for that Hour. For I believe it will come. I shall be exalted, I must be humbled.*

At four there was a general Expectation of my preaching at *St. Nicholas*; thousands went to hear me.—But the Lecturer sent Word, that Orders were given by *Mr. B——r*, that I should not preach in his Church; which rejoiced me greatly. *Lord, why dost thou thus honour me?*

At five, I went and expounded on the First of *St. James*, to a Christian Assembly *indeed*, who were much affected—And afterwards I hasted to *Nicholas-street*, where was a great Crowd waiting for me upon the Stairs, Yard, and Entry of the House, as well as in the Room itself.—I expounded the ninth of *St. John*, and exhorted all to imitate the poor Beggar, and not to fear the Face of Men.—God was pleased to fill me with unspeakable Joy and Power.—All were wondrously touched, and when after my Exposition I prayed particularly for the Chancellor, the whole Company was *drowned* in Tears, and said most earnest *Amens* to all the Petitions I put up for him.—It is remarkable, we have not had such a continued Presence of God amongst us, *as we have had* since I was threatened to be excommunicated. *But thus it was for-*

F 2

*merly,*

36

*merly, so it will be now. When we are cast out, Christ will more clearly reveal himself to us.*

*Wednesday, February 21.* Had several come to me this Morning, to enquire about the State of their Souls, amongst whom was a little Girl of thirteen Years of Age, who told me in great Simplicity, “She was pricked through and through with the “Power of the Word.” And indeed a good Work,

I believe, has been wrought in her Heart. *Out of the Mouths of Babes and Sucklings hast thou perfected Praise.*

Preached at *Newgate* with uncommon Freedom and Power, and observed the Audience to be quite melted down. After this I made a Collection for the poor Prisoners, and on my Return Home was much comforted by another gracious Soul, whom God brought unto me, and who was willing to follow me not only to *Georgia*, but also to Prison and to Death.

At three in the Afternoon, according to my Appointment, I went to *Kingswood* amongst the Colliers. God highly favoured us in sending a fine Day, and near two thousand People were assembled on that Occasion. I preached on *John* ch. iii. ver. 3, and enlarged for near an Hour, I hope, to the Comfort and Edification of those *that* heard me. *God grant the Seed sown may not fall on stony or thorny, but on good Ground.*

About six in the Evening, I expounded to a Society without *Lawford's Gate*, and afterwards to another in *Baldwin-street*; both were exceedingly crowded and attentive. At first I could not speak so strongly, because I had exerted myself so much upon the Mount; but afterwards God gave me a fresh Supply of Grace, and I was enabled to go through my Work cheerfully. *Lo! I am with you always, even unto the End of the World.*

*BATH.*

37

### *BATH.*

*Thursday, Feb. 22.* *Observing Providence called me,* this Morning I went, with some Christian Friends to *Bath*; where I was much comforted by meeting with several that love our Lord Jesus in Sincerity.—More especially, I was edified by the pious Conversation of the reverend Mr. *Griffith Jones*, whom I have desired

to see of a long Season. His Words came with Power, and the Account he gave me of the many Obstructions he had met with in his Ministry, convinced me that I was but a young Soldier, just entring the Field. *Good God, prepare me manfully to fight whatsoever Battles thou hast appointed for me. I can do all Things through thee strengthening me.*

### BRISTOL.

*Friday, Feb. 23.* Returned hither about ten this Morning. **About** eleven, went, as usual, and preached a written Sermon at *Newgate*, and collected two Pounds five Shillings for the Prisoners. *Many, I believe, were much affected. To God be all the Glory.*

After Dinner, I was taken very ill, so that I was obliged to lie upon the Bed; but, looking upon it **on-ly** as a Thorn in the Flesh, at three I went, according to Appointment, and preached to near four or five thousand People, from a Mount in *Kingswood*, **with great Power**. The Sun shone very bright, and the People standing in such an awful Manner round the Mount, in the profoundest Silence, filled me with an holy Admiration. *Blessed be God for such a plentiful Harvest.—Lord, do thou send forth more Labourers into thy Harvest.*

This done, God strengthened me to expound to a Society without *Lawford's Gate*, and afterwards to another in the City, and afterwards to a third. **And** I

spoke

38

spoke with more Freedom the last Time than at the first. *When I am weak, then am I strong.*

*Saturday, Feb. 24.* About ten in the Morning I waited on the Chancellor, and shewed a Letter I had received from the Lord Bishop of *Bristol*. My Master gave me great Boldness of Speech, and I asked the Chancellor why he did not write to the Bishop according to his Promise? **And**, I think, he answered, he was to blame. I then insisted on his proving I had

preached false Doctrine, and reminded him of his threatening to excommunicate me in the Name of the Clergy and Laity of the City of *Bristol*. But he would have me think that he had said no such Thing; and confessed, at this Time, that he had neither heard me preach, nor read any of my Writings. I asked him his Reasons for prohibiting my collecting for the Orphan-house. He answered, It would hinder the Peoples Benefactions to the *Bristol* Clergy. I replied, It would by no Means hinder their Contributions, and the Clergy ought first to subscribe themselves for Example's Sake.—After much Conversation on this Subject, I, with all Meekness, told him, I was resolved to go on preaching, and that if Collections were not made here for the poor *Georgians*, I would lay it entirely upon him; adding withal, I would not be one that should hinder such a Design for the Universe.

After I left the Chancellor, I went and preached at *Newgate*; and at three in the Afternoon, went to a Poor-house without *Lawford's Gate*; but the Room and Yard being full, I stood upon the Steps going up to the House, and preached to them from thence. Many that were passing along the Road on Horseback, stood still to hear me; and, I hope, many were bettered by what was spoken.

This Evening I declined going to any Society, that I might have a little Time to write Letters; amongst which, I wrote the following one to the Bishop of *Bristol*.

“My

39

“My Lord,

*Bristol, Feb. 14 [[24]], 1738/9.*

“I humbly thank your Lordship for the Favour of “your Lordship's Letter. It gave abundant Satisfaction to me, and many others, who have not “failed to pray in a particular Manner for your Lordship's Temporal and Eternal Welfare.—To day I “showed your Lordship's Letter to the Chancellor, “who (notwithstanding he promised not to prohibit

“my preaching for the Orphan-house, if your Lordship was only neuter in the Affair) has influenced most of the Clergy to deny me their Pulpits, either on that or any other Occasion. Last Week he was pleased to charge me with false Doctrine. To day he has forgot that he said so.—He also threatened to excommunicate me for preaching in your Lordship’s Diocese. I offered to take a Licence, but was denied.—If your Lordship should ask, What Evil I have done? I answer, None, save that I visit the Religious Societies, preach to the Prisoners in *Newgate*, and to the poor Colliers in *Kingswood*, who, they tell me, are little better than Heathens.—I am charged with being a Dissenter; though many are brought to the Church by my preaching, not one taken from it.—Indeed the Chancellor is pleased to tell me my Conduct is contrary to the Canons; but I told him those Canons which he produced were not intended against such Meetings as mine are, where his Majesty is constantly prayed for, and every one is free to see what is done. I am sorry to give your Lordship this Trouble; but I thought it proper to mention these Particulars, that I might know of your Lordship wherein my Conduct is exceptionable. I heartily thank your Lordship for your intended Benefaction.—I think the Design is truly good, and will meet with Success, because so much opposed. God knows my Heart, I desire only to promote his Glory. If I am spoken evil of for his Sake, I rejoice in it. My Master was long since spoken evil

“of

40

“of before me.—But I intrude on your Lordships Patience.—I am, with all possible Thanks,

*My Lord,*

*Your Lordships dutiful Son and Servant,*

G. W.

*Sunday, Feb. 25.* What Mercies has my good God shown me this Day! When I arose in the Morning, I thought I should be able to do nothing; but the divine Strength was greatly magnified in my Weakness.—About six in the Morning I prayed, sung with, and exhorted my young Morning Visitors, as I did last Lord's Day.—At Eight I read Prayers, and preached to a very thronged Congregation at *Newgate*, and from thence I rode to *Bussleton*, [[Brislington]] a Village about two Miles from *Bristol*, where was such a vast Congregation, that after I had read Prayers in the Church, I thought proper to go and preach in the Churchyard, that none might be sent empty away.—The People were exceedingly attentive, and God gave me **great** Utterance; and what was best of all, by the Leave of the Minister, who invited me thither, we had a Sacrament; and, I hope, it was a Communion of Saints indeed. *All Things, I find, happen to the Furtherance of the Gospel; Why then should I fear what Man can do unto me?*

At four I hasted to *Kingswood*.—At a moderate Computation, there were about ten thousand People to hear me. The Trees and Hedges were full. All was hush when I began; the Sun shone bright, and God enabled me to preach for an Hour with great Power, and so loud, that all (I was told) could hear me. **Blessed be God** Mr. B——n spoke right. *The Fire is kindled in the Country; and, I know, all the Devils in Hell shall not be able to quench it.*

Finding myself strengthened from above, I went and expounded at *Baldwin-street* Society, when above five Pounds was collected for the Orphan-house.—Afterwards I went to another; and about nine at Night came

home,

41

home, rejoycing at the great Things God had done for my Soul. *This Day I have been exalted, I must expect now to be humbled. Any Thing is welcome to me that God sends.*



Monday, Feb. 26. This Morning I wrote the following Letter to the Chancellor.

*“Reverend Sir,*

*“This inclosed is a Letter I sent on Saturday to the Bishop of Bristol; be pleased to peruse it, and see if any Thing contrary to Truth is there related by,*

*Reverend Sir,*

*Your very humble Servant,*

*Bristol, Feb. 28 1738/9*

*G. W.*

Preached at Newgate,—was refreshed by the Conversation of some whom God had wrought upon by my Ministry;—answered my religious Friends Letters, and expounded twice in the Evening to two large Societies. *Blessed be God I find myself much refreshed in Spirit, and a new Supply of Strength given me. Thus shall it be done to the Man whom God delighteth to honour. Oh free Grace in Christ Jesus!*

Tuesday, Feb. 27. Expounded at Newgate with more Power than ever;—had Success in my Collections for the Orphan-house, and expounded twice, as usual, and was greatly strengthened with Might in the Inner Man. *This is to prepare me for some fresh Opposition. I wonder I meet with so little. But God will lay upon me no more than I am able to bear. For ever adored be his unmerited Love, through Christ.*

Wednesday, Feb. 28. Preached at Newgate, and expounded to the Societies, as usual; and intended to go and preach upon the Mount in Kingswood; but was dissuaded from it, by a Report that the Waters were out. However, many, as I was told afterwards, came from

G

far

<sup>42</sup>

far to hear me; so that it repented me that I went not. *When People are willing to hear, it is a Pity that any Minister should be slow to preach.*

*Thursday, March 1.* Amongst my other Letters by this Day's Post, I received the following one from the Rev. Mr. *John Wesley*.

*My Dear Brother, Feb. 20.*

"Our Lord's Hand is not shortned amongst us. Yesterday I preached at St. *Katherines*, and at *Islington*, where the Church was almost as hot as some of the Society Rooms used to be. I think I never was so much strengthened before. The Fields, after Service, were white with People praising God. About three hundred were present at Mr. S——s; thence I went to Mr B——s, then to *Fetterlane*, and at nine to Mr. B——s; where also we only wanted Room.—To Day I expound in the *Minories* at four, at Mrs. W——s at six, and to a large Company of poor Sinners in *Gravel-lane (Bishopgate)* at eight. The Society at Mr. *Crouch's* does not meet till eight, so that I expound before I go to him near St. *James's Square*; where one young Woman has been lately filled with the Holy Ghost, and overflows with Joy and Love. On *Wednesday* at six, we have a noble Company of Women, not adorned with Gold or costly Apparel, but with a meek and quiet Spirit, and good Works.—At the *Savoy*, on *Thursday Evening*, we have usually two or three hundred, most of them, at least, thoroughly awakened. Mr A——'s Parlor is more than filled on *Friday*, as is Mr P——'s Room twice over; where, I think, I have commonly had more Power given me than at any other Place. A Week or two ago a Note was given me there, as near as I can remember in these Words, *Your Prayers are desired for a sick Child that is lunatick, and sore vexed Day and Night, that our Lord would heal him, as he did those in the Days of his*

*"Flesh;*

43

*"Flesh; and that he would give his Parents Faith and Patience till his Time is come."*

“On *Saturday* Se’night, a middle aged, well “dressed Woman at *Beech-lane* (where I expound “usually to five or six hundred before I go to Mr. “*E——’s* Society) was seized, as it appeared to several “about her, with little less than the Agonies of Death. “We prayed that God, who had brought her to the “Birth, would give her Strength to bring forth, and “*That he would work speedily, that all might see it, and “fear, and put their Trust in the Lord.* Five Days she “travailed and groaned, being in Bondage. On “*Thursday* Evening our Lord got himself the Victo- “ry; and, from that Moment, she has been full of “Love and Joy, which she openly declared at the “same on *Saturday* last; so that Thanksgivings also “were given to God by many on her Account. It “is to be observed, Her Friends have accounted her “mad for these three Years; and accordingly bled, “blistered her, and what not. *Come and let us praise “the Lord, and magnify his Name together.*”

The following Paragraph was likewise in a Letter I received from my dear Brother *Kinchin* of *Oxon*.

“God has greatly blessed us at *Oxford* of late. We “have Reason to think, that four, within this Fort- “night, have been born of God. The People crowd “to the Societies on *Sunday* Nights, several Gowns- “men among the rest. God has much assisted me. “Last Night we had a thronged Society, and about “forty Gowns-men.”

*Blessed be God, I hope the Kingdom of Jesus Christ will now come with Power, and that a Remnant of de- spised Methodists will still be left at Oxford, which shall take Root downwards, and bear Fruit upwards.*

G 2

The

44

The Weather being fair, after I had preached, and collected Thirty seven Shillings at *Newgate*, I went on the Mount at *Kingswood*; where, about fifteen hundred

Colliers and Country People were gathered together, and were very attentive to hear me. *Blessed be God I preached with Power, and* have Reason to believe, by what I have heard, that my Words have not altogether fallen to the Ground. Some of the Colliers, I find, have been much affected. *Blessed be God.*

### **BATH.**

*Friday, March 2.* Went to *Bath* this Morning to see the reverend Mr. T——n *[[Thompson]]*, who came from *Cornwall* to see me. In the Afternoon, I read Prayers at the Hospital; the Lessons were exceeding applicable, and gave us Comfort. I spent the Evening in taking sweet Counsel with some pious honourable Women, Mr. *Griffith Jones*, and other good Soldiers of *Jesus Christ*.—*Blessed be God, there are yet some left who are true Followers of the Lamb.*

### **BRISTOL.**

*Saturday, March 3.* Returned before ten to *Bristol*, and was greatly refreshed by a Packet of Letters from *London*. Expounded *with great Power* at *Newgate*, and preached in the Afternoon on the Steps before the Poor-house without *Lawford's Gate*, and perceived my Audience much increased since last *Saturday*. *Blessed be God, many went affected away.*

*Sunday, March 4.* Rose much refreshed in Spirit, and gave my early Attendants a warm Exhortation as usual. Went to *Newgate*, and preached with *great Power* to an exceedingly thronged Congregation. Then hastened to *Hannam Mount*, three Miles from the City, where the Colliers live altogether. God *highly* favoured us in the Weather. Above four thousand were ready to

hear

45

hear me; and God enabled me to preach with the Demonstration of the Spirit. The Ground not being high enough, I stood upon a Table, and the Sight of

the People covered the green Fields, and their deep Attention pleased me much. *I hope that same Lord, who fed so many thousands with bodily Bread, will feed all their Souls with that Bread which cometh down from Heaven: For many came from far.*

At four in the Afternoon, I went to the Mount on Rose-green, and preached to above fourteen thousand Souls; and so good was my God, that all could hear. I think it was worth while to come many Miles to see such a Sight.—I spoke, *blessed be God*, with great Freedom; but thought all the while, as I do continually when I ascend the Mount, That hereafter I shall suffer as well as speak for my Master's Sake. *Lord strengthen me against that Hour. Lord, I believe (O help my Unbelief!) that thy Grace will be more than sufficient for me.*

In the Evening I expounded at Baldwin-street Society, but could not get up to the Room without the utmost Difficulty, the Entry and Court were so much thronged. *Blessed be God, the Number of Hearers much increases; and as my Day is, so is my Strength.* To Night I returned home much more refreshed in my Spirits than in the Morning when I went out. *I was full of Joy, and longed to be dissolved, and to be with Jesus Christ; but I have a Baptism first to be baptized with. Father, thy Will be done.* This has been a Sabbath indeed to my Soul!

Monday, March 5. Had the Pleasure of having many, whom God has touched by my Ministry, come to me, enquiring about the *New Birth*. At eleven, I preached *with uncommon Freedom and Power* at Newgate, and collected Thirty nine Shillings for the poor Prisoners; and, being invited by many Colliers, at three in the Afternoon I went to a Place called the *Fish-ponds*, on another Side of Kingswood, where about two

thousand

46

thousand were gathered together. The Sight pleased me much; and having no better Place to stand upon, the Wall was my Pulpit, and, I think, I never spoke with greater Power. *My preaching in the Fields may displease some timorous, bigotted Men; but I am throughly perswaded it pleases God; and why should I fear any Thing else?*

At my Return home, I was much refreshed with the Sight of two pious Friends. After some Conversation, they went with me to a Society, where I prayed and expounded for above an Hour, and then spent the Remainder of the Evening with them and many other Christian Brethren, in warming one another's Hearts by mutual Exhortation, and singing of Psalms. *Oh that Sensualists knew the Pleasure of a religious Conversation! I am sure they would no longer eat Husks with Swine, but return home to feed on the fatted Calf.*

#### NEW PASSAGE.

Tuesday, March 9 [[6]]. Having left my dear Brother *Hutchins*, whom I sent to for **that** Purpose of supply my Place during my Absence; after many kind Salutations, Psalms, and Prayers on both Sides, Mr. *Seward*, myself, and another Brother, took Leave of our *Bristol* Friends, and got to **the** *New-Passage* in a short Time. Here we staid and refreshed ourselves, and endeavoured to go off in the Boat about Noon; but the Wind not permitting us, we took this Opportunity of writing to many of our Christian Friends, and exhorting them to lay hold of *Jesus Christ* by Faith.

At the Inn where we put up there was an unhappy Clergyman, who **(so far had his Corruptions domi-  
on over him)** would not go over in the Passage-Boat because I went in it. *Alas!* thought I, *this very Temper would make Heaven itself unpleasant to that Man, if he saw me there.* I was likewise told, that in the publick

Kitchen,

47

Kitchen, he charged me with being a Dissenter; **when** a little after, as I passed by, I saw him shaking his Elbows over a Gaming-table. *I heartily wish those who charge me causelessly with Schism, and being righteous over-much, would consider that the Canon of our Church forbids our Clergy to frequent Taverns, to play at Cards or Dice, or any other unlawful Games. Their indulging themselves in these Things is a stumbling Block to thousands.*

After Supper, in the Evening, I called the Family of the Inn together, and was pleased to see near twenty come to hear the Word. God enabled me to speak and pray **with Power**, and having dispersed some Extracts from our Church Homilies amongst them, I and my Friends went early to Bed, being apprized that we were to be called up betimes. *Blessed be God, for any Opportunity of doing good.*

#### CARDIFF.

*Wednesday, March 8 [[7]].* Arose before twelve at Night, sung Psalms, and prayed; and the Wind being fair, we had a speedy Passage over to the *Welch* Shore. Our Business requiring haste, God having, of his good Providence, sent one to guide us, we rode all Night, stopped at *Newport* to refresh **ourselves**, where we met with two Friends, and reached *Cardiff* about eleven in the Morning.

The Town, I soon found, was apprehensive of my coming; and therefore, whilst I was giving a Word of Exhortation to some poor People at the Inn, **who hanged upon me to hear the Word**, Mr. *Seward* went to ask for the Pulpit; **but** being denied, we pitched on the Town-Hall, which Mr. *Seward* got by his Interest; and at four in the Afternoon, I preached from the Judge's Seat to about **four** hundred Hearers. Most were very attentive; but some mocked: However, I offered *Jesus Christ* freely even to them, and should have rejoiced if they would have accepted **of** him; but

---

 their

48

their foolish Hearts were hardned. *Lord, make them Monuments of thy free Grace.*

After I came from the Seat, I was much refreshed with the Sight of my dear Brother *Howell Harris*, whom, though I knew not in Person, I have long since loved in the Bowels of *Jesus Christ*, and have often felt my Soul drawn out in Prayer in his Behalf.

“A burning and shining Light has he been in those Parts;—a Barrier against Profaneness and Immorality, and an indefatigable Promoter of the true Gospel of *Jesus Christ*. About three or four Years God has inclined him to go about doing good. He is now about Twenty five Years of Age. Twice he has applied (being every Way qualified) for holy Orders; but was refused, under a false Pretence, that he was not of Age, though he was then Twenty two Years and six Months. About a Month ago he offered himself again, but was put off. Upon this, he was, and is still resolved to go on in his Work; and indefatigable Zeal has he shewn in his Master’s Service. For these three Years (as he told me from his own Mouth) he has discoursed almost twice every Day for three or four Hours together; not authoritatively, as a Minister; but as a private Person, exhorting his Christian Brethren. He has been, I think, in seven Counties, and has made it his Business to go to Wakes, &c. to turn People from such lying Vanities. Many Alehouse People, Fidlers, Harpers, &c. (*Demetrius* like) sadly cry out against him for spoiling their Business. He has been made the Subject of Numbers of Sermons, has been threatened with publick Prosecutions, and had Constables sent to apprehend him. But God has blessed him with inflexible Courage;—Instantaneous Strength has been communicated to him from above; and he still continues to go on from conquering to conquer. He is of a most Ca-



“tholick Spirit, loves all that loves our Lord *Jesus Christ*, and therefore, he is stiled by Bigots, a Dis-

*senter.*

49

“*senter.* He is contemned by all that are Lovers of “Pleasure more than Lovers of God; but God has “greatly blessed his pious Endeavours. Many call, “and own him as their spiritual Father, and, I be- “lieve, would lay down their Lives for his Sake. He “discourses generally in a Field; but at other Times “in a House, from a Wall, a Table, or any Thing “else. He has established nearly thirty Societies in “*South-Wales*, and still his Sphere of Action is enlarg- “ed daily. *He is full of Faith, and the Holy Ghost.*

When I first saw him, my Heart was knit closely to him. I wanted to catch some of his Fire, and gave him the right Hand of Fellowship with my whole Heart. After I had saluted him, and given a warm Exhortation to a great Number of People, who followed me to the Inn, we spent the Remainder of the Evening in taking sweet Council together, and telling one another what God had done for our Souls. My Heart was still drawn out towards him more and more. A divine and strong Sympathy seemed to be between us, and I was resolved to promote his Interest with all my Might. Accordingly we took an Account of the several Societies, and agreed on such Measures as seemed most conducive to promote the common Interest of our Lord. *Blessed be God, there seems to be a noble Spirit gone out into Wales; and I believe, e’er long, there will be more visible Fruits of it. What inclines me strongly to think so is, that the Partition-wall of Bigotry and Party Zeal is broken down, and Ministers and Teachers of different Communions, joyn with one Heart and one Mind to carry on the Kingdom of Jesus Christ—The Lord make all the Christian World thus minded! For till this is done, I fear, we must despair of any great Reformation in the Church of God.—*After much comfortable and encouraging Discourse with each other, we kneeled

down and prayed, and great Enlargement of Heart  
God was pleased to give me in that Duty.

This done, we eat a little Supper, and then, after  
singing a Hymn, we went to Bed, praising and blessing

H

God,

so

God, for bringing us Face to Face. I doubt not but  
*Satan* envied our Happiness. But, I hope, by the  
help of God we shall make his Kingdom shake. *God*  
*loves to do great Things by weak Instruments, that the*  
*Power may be of God, and not of Man.*

Thursday, March 9 [[8]]. Was much refreshed by last  
Night's Rest, and spent the Beginning of the Morning  
in Prayer and private Discourse with the Members of  
the Religious Society.—About ten, according to Ap-  
pointment, I went to the Town-hall, and preached  
for about an Hour and a Half to a large Assembly of  
People. My dear Brother *Howel Harris* sat close by  
me. I did not observe any Scoffers within; but with-  
out, some were pleased to honour me so far, as to trail  
a dead Fox, and hunt it about the Hall.—But, blessed  
be God, my Voice prevailed. God gave me great  
Strength, and I could have heartily wished all such Scof-  
fers had been present, that I might have offered them  
Salvation through *Jesus Christ*. This being done, I went,  
with many of my Hearers, amongst whom were two  
worthy dissenting Ministers, and my Brother *Howel*  
*Harris*, to publick Worship; and in the second Lesson  
were these remarkable Words: “*And the High Priests,*  
“*and the Scribes, and the Chief of the People sought*  
“*to destroy him; and could not find what they might*  
“*do to him: For all the People were attentive to hear*  
“*him.*”

In the Afternoon, about four of the Clock, I  
preached again to the People without any Scoffing or  
Disturbance. And at six in the Evening, I talked for  
above an Hour and a Half, and prayed with the religi-  
ous Society, whose Room was quite thronged. *Indeed*  
God was with us of a Truth. I think I never spoke

with greater Freedom and Power, and never saw a Congregation more melted down. The Love of *Jesus Christ* touched them to the quick; most of them were dissolved into Tears, and seemed to have their Hearts perfectly knit towards me. Afterwards, they came to me

weeping,

51

weeping, bidding me farewell, and wishing I was to continue with them longer.—*Indeed their Love and undissembled Simplicity affected me much. My Bowels yearned towards them; I wrestled with God in Prayer for them, and blessed his holy Name for sending me into Wales. I hope these are the first Fruits of a greater Harvest, if ever it should please God to bring me back from Georgia. Father, thy Will be done.*

#### NEWPORT in WALES.

Friday, March 9. Left Cardiff about six in the Morning, and reached Newport about ten, where many came from *Pontypool*, and other Parts, on purpose to hear me. The Minister being asked, and readily granting us the Pulpit, I preached with great Power to about a thousand People; and then, with my Brother *Howel Harris*, Seward, &c. we went rejoicing, and blessing God for opening an effectual Door by the Way. I think *Wales* is excellently well prepared for the Gospel of *Christ*. They have many burning and shining Lights both among the dissenting and Church Ministers, amongst whom Mr. *Griffith Jones* shines in particular. No less than fifty Charity Schools have been erected by his Means, without any settled visible Fund, and fresh ones are setting up every Day. People make nothing of coming twenty Miles to hear a Sermon, and great Numbers there are who have not only been Hearers, but Doers also of the Word; so that there is a most comfortable Prospect of the spreading of the Gospel in *Wales*. *I really believe there are some now living, which shall not taste of Death till they see the Kingdom of God come with Power.*

**BRISTOL.**

*Saturday, March 10.* Got safe to *Bristol* with my dear Fellow Travellers about eleven at Night. Preached in the Morning at *Newgate*, and in the Afternoon

H 2

on

52

on the Poor-house Steps. *The Hearers were much affected, and melted into Tears.*

*Sunday, March 11.* Had a whole Room full of People come to hear me at six in the Morning, with whom I prayed and sung Psalms for near an Hour. Then I read Prayers, and preached at *Newgate*. Afterwards went to *Hannam Mount*, where was near a third Part as many *again* as last *Sunday*; and at four in the Afternoon, preached, as usual, on the Mount at *Rose-Green*. The Congregation was not quite so large as before, on account of the Coldness of the Weather; but God was pleased to withhold the Rain and Hail whilst I was speaking, and we collected ten Pounds for the Orphan-house. *Blessed be God my Strength increases.* Satan has been very quiet this Week past, and God has poured much Comfort into my Soul; so that I must prepare for fresh Trials. O my dear Redeemer, grant that I may put on the whole Armour of God, that I may withstand all the fiery Darts of the Devil.

**BATH.**

*Monday, March 12.* Went, in Company with seven more dear Friends to *Bath*, and had the Comfort of meeting with some true Followers of *Jesus Christ*, whom I knew not before. Received News of the wonderful Progress of the Gospel in *Yorkshire*, under the Ministry of my dear Brother *Ingham*.—Had the Pleasure of hearing that the Mayor and the Sheriffs of *Bristol* had absolutely forbid the Keeper of *Newgate* letting me preach there any longer, because I insisted upon the Necessity of *our* New-Birth.—The Keeper was much concerned, and told them, I preached agreeable to Scripture; but they were offended at him.

*"They answered and said unto him, Thou art altogether born in Sin, and dost thou teach us?"* John ix. 34.

Finding many in *Bath* were desirous to hear me, having given a short Notice, about five in the Evening I

preached

53

preached out on the Town-Common, to a much larger Audience than could reasonably be expected.—It snowed good Part of the Time; but the People staid very contentedly. Indeed some said (as I heard afterwards) that I spoke Blasphemy; but the People of God were much rejoiced; and some, I hope, effectually wrought upon. *Praised be God for opening such an effectual Door here. Many Adversaries must be expected in so polite a Place as Bath. But God is with me, and I fear neither Men nor Devils.*

After sermon I returned to our Inn, and spent the Remainder of the Evening in sweet Conversation with a great Number of experienced Christians. My Heart was much enlarged in Prayer; and I can say, the Love of God was shed abroad abundantly therein. *For ever adored be the Riches of his free Mercy!*

*Tuesday, March 13.* Preached again at the *Fish-ponds* with great Power, and observed all to behave exceedingly orderly.

Had extraordinary Power given me at the Society in *Nicholas-street*, and exhorted them with all possible Earnestness, not to let Bigotry, or Party Zeal, be so much as mentioned among them. *For I despair of seeing Christ's Kingdom come, till we are all thus minded.*

*Wednesday, March 14.* Being forbid preaching in the Prison, and, withal, being resolved not to give place to my Adversaries, no not for an Hour, I preached at *Baptists Mills*, a Place very near the City, to three or four thousand People, from these Words, *"What think you of Christ?"* *Blessed be God, all Things happen for the Furtherance of the Gospel. I now preach*

*to ten Times more People than I should, if I had been confined to the Churches. Surely the Devil is blind, and so are his Emissaries, or otherwise they would not thus confound themselves. Every Day I am invited to fresh Places. I will, by the Divine Assistance, go to as many as I can:*

*the*

54

*the rest I must leave unvisited, till it shall please God to bring me back from Georgia.*

*Thursday, March 15.* It snowing all Day, I could not go to *Sison* to preach, as I proposed, but spent the Day in religious Discourse, writing Letters, and expounding; in which God was pleased to give me unspeakable Comfort. Received a strong Invitation to come to *Cardiff* once more, and to preach at *Llandaff*; but Business will not permit. *Blessed be God, that People are ready to hear his Word! Surely the Lord will fulfil the Desires of them that fear him.*

*Friday, March 16.* Being much entreated by the People, and Horses being sent for me, I went and preached at *Elberton*, a Village about nine Miles off *Bristol*. The Clergyman denied me the Pulpit; so I preached on a little Ascent on which the May-pole was fixed. The Weather being cold, and the adjacent Villages having but little Notice, I had not above two hundred Hearers. But after Dinner, I hasted to *Thornbury*, where I was invited also, and preached **with uncommon Power** to a great Part of my Morning Congregation, and many hundreds besides. Mr. *Willis*, the Incumbent, lent me the Church, and used me with great Civility, as did two other Clergymen who were there present. The People were very desirous to have me stay; but I had promised to lie at *Winterburn*, at a Quaker's House, where three more **of their** Friends met us, and with whom we had agreeable Conversation. But I cannot say their Arguments for omitting the outward **Signs of Baptism, and the Lord's Supper, and**

for having no outward Call to the Ministry, were at all convincing: However, they wished me good Luck in the Name of the Lord, and we parted from each other very lovingly. God grant I may be always of a Catholic Spirit.

BRI-

55

### BRISTOL.

Saturday, March 17. Returned to Bristol about eight in the Morning, and had the Pleasure of hearing that Mr. Mayor, &c. had engaged a Clergyman to preach to the poor Prisoners at Newgate, rather than to agree to a Petition they had presented to have me. "Some preach Christ out of Contention, supposing to add Affliction to my Bonds, and others of good Will: However, Christ is preached, and I therein rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce."

Had the Honour of seeing another Letter, intended against me, put in Print; and God rewarded me for it, by giving me such extraordinary Power at the Poor-house this Afternoon, that great Numbers were quite melted, and dissolved into Tears. *The Enemies of God's Church undesignedly do God's Work. I never am so much assisted, as when Persons endeavour to blacken me; and I find the Number of my Hearers so encrease by Opposition, as well as my own inward Peace, and Love, and Joy, that I only fear a Calm. But the Enmity that is in the Heart of every natural Man against God, will not suffer them to be quiet long. I only say, I would send my Adversaries to School to Gamaliel. "If this Work be not of God, says he, it will come to nought; but if it be, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found to fight against God."*

Sunday, March 18. Had the Pleasure of seeing my Morning Audience so much increased, that above an hundred were obliged to stand without in the Street.—Was taken ill for about two Hours; but, notwithstanding, was enabled to go and preach at Hannum to ma-

ny more than were there last *Sunday*. And in the Afternoon, I really believe no less than twenty thousand were present at *Rose-Green*. *Blessed are the Eyes which see the Things which we see. Surely God is with us of a Truth.* To behold such Crowds stand about us in such an awful Silence, and to hear the Eccho of their sing-

ing

56

ing run from one End of them to the other, is very solemn and surprizing.—My Discourse continued for near an Hour and a Half; and at both Places, above fourteen Pounds were collected for the Orphan-house; and it pleased me to see with what Cheerfulness the Colliers and poor People threw in their Mites.—Contrary to my Expectation, having a Cold upon me, God enabled me afterwards to expound for above an Hour to a crowded Society, with great Freedom and Plainness of Speech. *And* I came home full of Peace and Joy in the Holy Ghost. *What a Mystery is the divine Life! Oh that all were Partakers of it!*

#### **BATH.**

*Monday, March 19.* After having refreshed myself and Friends by reading a Packet of Letters from *London*, and dispatched some other Business, according to Appointment, I set out for *Bath*, and got thither about three in the Afternoon. Dinner being ended, through great Weakness of Body, and Sickness in my Stomach, I was obliged to ly down upon the Bed; but the Hour being come for my preaching, I went, weak and languid as I was, depending on the Divine Strength, and, I think, scarce ever preached with greater Power. There were about 4 or 5000 of High and Low, Rich and Poor, to hear. As I went along, I observed many scoffers; and when I got upon the Table to preach, many laughed; but before I had finished my Prayer, all was husht and silent; and e'er I had concluded my Discourse, God, by his Word, seemed to impress a great Awe upon their Minds; for all



were deeply attentive, and seemed much affected with what had been spoken. *Men may scoff for a little while; but there is something in this Foolishness of preaching which will make the most stubborn Heart to bend or break. "Is not my Word like Fire, saith the Lord, and like a Hammer that breaketh the Rock in pieces?"*

*Tuesday,*

57

*Tuesday, March 20.* Had the Pleasure of hearing of the Success of my Discourse yesterday upon many Souls, especially upon two little Children, who were observed to come home crying, and to retire to Prayers.—Spent the Morning in writing Letters, and visiting some few righteous Souls who live in this *Sodom*.—*God has a Remnant every where.*—At Eleven o' Clock I read Prayers at the Hospital, and was greatly comforted by the second Lesson, which was the 7th of *St. John*. After Dinner I was taken ill again; but, notwithstanding, God strengthened me to preach to about as great a Congregation as yesterday, and, I believe, with great Success; for some wept, and all seemed much affected, and were very silent.—The Remainder of the Evening I spent with many gracious Souls, who came to my Lodgings, with whom I took sweet Council, and went to bed full of Comfort and unspeakable Joy. *Blessed be God, I can say, The Life which I now live in the Flesh, I live by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

*Wednesday, March 21.* Breakfasted this Morning with one Mr. M——r, who kindly invited me and my Friends.—*Perceived a great Freedom in my Spirit, and* afterwards, went to a private House, where many were assembled to hear the Word.—But God only can tell how their Hearts were melted down.—Oh! how did the poor Souls weep over me! How did they pray that I would come amongst them again! Surely, I might have said with *St. Paul* on another Occasion,

*What mean you to weep, and to break my Heart?—But I could do no more than pray that God would send them some faithful Labourer. Having dispersed among them some of my Sermons on the Marks of the New Birth, I at length took my leave, and retired to my Lodgings.—Every Time I look upon the Bath, I think on the Pool of Bethesda. O blessed Jesu, look down with Compassion upon it; and as thou hast cured many impotent Persons by these healing Waters, heal, I beseech thee, the*

I

*Diseases*

58

*Diseases of their sin-sick Souls by the Power of thy all-quickenning, strengthening Grace.—Even so, Lord Jesus! Amen.*

**KEINSHAM.**

Dined with one Mr. M—— an eminent Quaker in Bath, who entertained me and my Friends in a most Christian Manner.—About three we left Bath, and though it was a wet Day, were agreeably surprized by meeting great Numbers of Horsemen, &c. from Bristol, besides several thousands from the neighbouring Villages, who came to hear me, according to Appointment.—The Church being refused, I preached on a Mount.—Our Master being with us, I preached with Power.—We came on our Way rejoicing, and reached Bristol about Seven at Night, and went immediately and expounded the 7th of St. John to Baldwin-street Society, where we also gave Thanks for the great Things we had seen and heard since we met together last.

*Thursday, March 22.* Received unspeakable Pleasure from a Letter of this Day's Post, which brought me word of the flourishing of the Gospel at Oxford.—Had many gracious Souls came to me to consult me in spiritual Cases, and could not but rejoyce to see how secretly and irresistibly the Kingdom of Jesus Christ is carried on, in spite of all Opposition.—In the Afternoon, I preached again at Baptist Mills, where some-

body was so kind as to put some Turf together for me to stand upon. I *perceived* a great Freedom of Speech, and insisted much on original Sin, because there are many in this City who, I fear, have imbibed the Principles of that polite Preacher, Mr. F——. *But Woe be to them that deny that they are born in Sin. Surely, they must be past feeling.* Woe be to them that deny the Lord that bought them: For it saps the very Foundation of the Christian Religion. And as for my own Part, did I not firmly believe that Jesus Christ was truly and pro-

*perly*

59

*perly* God, I never would preach the Gospel again. *Who-soever preaches any otherwise, let him be accursed.*—Had great Power amongst us at the Society in the Evening.—The People throng more and more.—A good Sign that all do not come out of Curiosity, but with a Desire to know and do their Duty.

Friday, March 23. Dined with many Quakers at French-hay, who entertained me and my Friends with much Christian Love; but we could by no means agree about the Disuse of the two outward Signs in the Sacrament, nor of their absolute refusing to pay Tithes.—But I think their Notions about walking and being led by the Spirit are right and good. *I should rejoyce to find all Quakers thus minded. Much Sincerity and Simplicity seems to be amongst them.—But I think, at the same Time, they insist so much upon the inward Life, they place too much Religion in their not using Externals.*

After Dinner, I went and preached at Fish-pond, as usual, where were many Coaches, and about as great a Number of People as before. *God gave me great Freedom and Power. I was longer than common both in my Prayers and Sermon.*—Many, I believe, were affected.—After I came home, I visited two Societies, where God was pleased to give us great Tokens of his Presence; and the way up to the last Room was so exceedingly thronged that I was obliged to go up by a Ladder through the Window.

*Saturday, March 24.* Received glad Tidings of great Joy from my religious Correspondents.—Spent the Morning in answering their kind Letters,—and preached in the Afternoon at the Poor-house, where both the Number of the People, and my Strength were greatly encreased.—After Sermon, I collected for the Orphan-house, and the poor People so loaded my Hat with their Mites, that I wanted somebody to hold up my Hands.—The Cheerfulness with which they gave is inexpressible; and the many Prayers they joined with

I 2

their

60

their Alms, I hope, will lay a good Foundation for the House intended to be built.—After this, God brought me to some more of his own dear Children, and I spent the Remainder of the Evening in expounding to a Society, where almost all were drowned in Tears, when I mentioned my Departure to them.—*The good Lord, send somebody amongst them to water what his own Right Hand hath planted. Even so, come Lord Jesus, come quickly.*

*Sunday, March 25.* God will work, and who shall hinder? I am shut out of the Prison, and my Sister's Room was not large enough to contain a fourth part of the People who come to me on a Sunday Morning. But God put it into the Hearts of some Gentlemen to lend me a large Bowling-Green, where I preached to about five thousand People, and made a Collection for my poor Orphans, till my Hands were quite weary.—*Blessed be God, that the Bowling-Green is turned into a Preaching-place. This, I hope, is a Token that Assembly-rooms and Play-houses will soon be put the same Use. O may the Word of God be mighty to the pulling down of these strong Holds of the Devil! All that love our Lord Jesus, I am sure, will say, Amen.*

Preached at Hannam to a larger Congregation than ever, and preached again in the Afternoon to upwards (as was computed) of 23000 People. I was afterwards

told, that those who stood farthest off could hear me very plainly. *Oh may God speak to them by his Spirit, at the same Time that he enables me to lift up my Voice like a Trumpet!*

About eight I went to the Society in *Nicholas-street*, and with great Difficulty, at last got up in to the Room, which was extremely hot. *God enabled me to speak with much Freedom and Power;* and at the Close of my Exhortation, I recommended a Charity-school, which was opened by this Society to-day. I collected at the Door myself, and few passed by without throwing in their Mites.—*Yet a little while, and I hope Bristol*

*will*

61

*will be as famous for Charity-schools as London. We must not despise the Day of small Things. Blessed be God for the Strength of this Day. The Lord make me humbly thankful.*

*Monday. March 26.* Still God has pleased to give me fresh Tokens of his Love. Letters are sent me, and People come to me continually, telling me what God hath done for their Souls by my unworthy Ministry.

At four in the Afternoon, I preached again at the *Bowling-Green*, to, I believe, seven or eight thousand People. The Sun shone bright, and the Windows and Balconies of the adjoining Houses were filled with Hearers. I was uncommonly enlarged in Prayer, and *so* carried out beyond myself in preaching, especially when I came to talk of the Love and free Grace of *Jesus Christ*, *that I heartily wished it was in my Power that Moment to place all my Enemies at the Right Hand of God.* The Concern the People were in is inexpressible.—*An hearty Groan goes through them all when any Thing affecting is spoken;* and I am sure, that thousands come not out of Curiosity, but a sincere Desire of being fed with the Milk of the Word.—Afterwards, I again collected for the Orphan-house,

and it was near an Hour and a Half before the People could go out. Many were very faint because of the Throng, which was so **exceeding** great, that they trode one upon another.

At eight I hastened to *Weavers Hall*, in *Temple-street*, which was procured me; because the Society Rooms were too little. I was almost faint before I could get in through the Crowd; but God enabled me to speak with **uncommon** Freedom, and was with us of a Truth.—I believe there might be a thousand Hearers.—*Well may the Devil and his Servants rage horribly. Their Kingdom is in Danger.*

After I had done, I went to a Christian House, where many waited for me; **and**, at my Return home,

my

---

62

my Master paid me my Wages: For my Soul was filled with an Intenseness of Love, and I knew what it is not only to have Righteousness and Peace, but Joy in the Holy Ghost. *This is my continual Food.*

*Tuesday, March 27.* At four this Afternoon, being invited several Times, I preached in a Yard belonging to the Glass Houses, where many dwell; who (**as** I was informed) neither feared God, nor regarded Man. The Congregation consisted of **many** thousands, and God enabled me to lay before them his Threatenings and Promises; so that none might either despair or presume. *Oh that I may be taught of God rightly to divide the Word of Truth!*

Whilst I was preaching, I heard many People behind me, hollowing, and making a Noise, and supposed they were set on by some Body on purpose to disturb me.—**I bless God** I was not in the least moved, but rather increased the more in Strength; but when I had done, and enquired the Cause of that Noise, I was informed, that a Gentleman (being drunk) had taken the Liberty to call me *Dog*, and say, “That “I ought to be whipped at the Cart’s Tail, and offer-

“ed Money to any that would pelt me.” Instead of that, the Boys and People near began to cast Stones and Dirt at him.—I knew nothing of it till afterwards, when I expressed my Dislike of their Behaviour, but could not help observing, *what sorry Wages the Devil gives his Servants.*

In the Evening I expounded again in *Weavers Hall*, to a most crowded and attentive Assembly.—People follow more and more.—There is a divine Attraction in the Word of God.—*Still draw us, O Lord, and we shall still come after thee.*

*Wednesday, March 28.* Had the Pleasure of hearing, that above a hundred People set apart a Day for Prayer in Behalf of me and my dear Brother *Howel Harris*, &c. *While our Friends thus continue to hold up*

*their*

63

*their Hands, our spiritual Amalek will never prevail against us.*

Preached in the afternoon at *Publow*, a Village about five Miles from *Bristol*, to several thousands of People.—The Church was offered; but not being sufficient to contain a third Part of the Audience, by the Advice of Friends I preached in the Fields, which put me in mind of our Lord’s saying, *Go out into the Highways and Hedges, and compel them to come in.*

Was blessed with two excellent Letters. Found out some more of God’s secret ones,—Received some temporal Mercies, expounded to the Society in *Baldwin-street*, and went to a Friend’s House, where we eat our Bread with Gladness and Singleness of Heart. *Oh the Comforts of a spiritual Life!*

*Thursday, March 29.* Blessed be God, I hope a good Work is begun to Day.—Having had several Notices that the Colliers of *Kingswood* were willing to subscribe, I went to Dinner with them near a Place called *Two Mile Hill*, and collected above twenty Pounds in Mo-

ney, and got above forty Pounds in Subscriptions towards building them a Charity-School.—It was surprising to see with what Cheerfulness they parted with their Money on this Occasion.—Was I to continue here, I would endeavour to settle Schools all over the Wood, as also in other Places, as Mr. Griffith Jones has done in Wales.—But I have **but** just Time to set it on Foot.—*I hope God will bless the Ministry of my honoured Friend Mr. John Wesley, and enable him to bring it to good Effect.—It is a Pity so many little ones as there are in Kingswood, should perish for Lack of Knowledge.—Stir up thy Power, O Lord, and come amongst them, for the sake of Jesus Christ.*

After Dinner I preached a farewell Sermon, and recommended the Charity-School to their Consideration; and they all seemed willing to assist either by their Money or their Labour, and to offer such Things as

they

64

they had. *I doubt not but the Lord will prosper this Work of my Hands upon me.*

As soon as I came to Town, I took my Leave of a Society in Castle-street;—but Tongue cannot express the Sorrow they were in at the Mention of my Departure.—After this, I did the same at a Society in Nicholas-street; and, I believe, for near an Hour, they wept aloud and sorely all over the Room, **as though they were mourning for the Death of their First-born.**—*Oh, how close are their Hearts knit to me! Blessed be God, there is one coming after me, who, I hope, will cherish the Spark of divine Love now kindled in their Hearts, till it grows into a Flame. Amen, Lord Jesus.*

Friday, March 30. Preached this Afternoon near Colepit Heath, seven Miles from Bristol, a Place to which I was earnestly invited, and where great Numbers of Colliers live.—I believe there were above two thousand People assembled on this Occasion.—The Weather was exceeding fair, the Hearers behaved ve-



ry well, and the Place where I preached being near the *Maypole*, I took Occasion to warn them of mispending their Time in revelling and dancing. *Oh that all such Entertainments were put a stop to! I see no other Way to effect it, but by going boldly, and calling People from such lying Vanities in the Name of Jesus Christ.—That Reformation which is brought about by a coercive Power, will be only outward and superficial; but that which is done by the Force of God's Word, will be inward and lasting. Lord make me meet by thy Grace for such a Work, and then send me. Lo! I come to do thy Will.*

About seven, I returned to *Bristol*, and took Leave of the Society without *Lawford's Gate*; but there were so many People, that I was obliged to stand and expound at the Window, that those in the Yard (which was full) might hear also.—*Their Hearts were ready to burst with Grief; but I hope my dear Master will come and comfort them.*

*Saturday,*

65

*Saturday, March 31.* Went this Morning, and visited the poor Man who was misused at the Glass Houses. He seemed much concerned for what he had done, and confessed he knew not what he did: Upon which, I took Occasion to dissuade him from the Sin of Drunkenness, and parted from him very friendly.

At eleven, I went and gave the Prisoners a farewell Exhortation, and left Orders concerning the Distribution of the Money that had been collected for them.—At four I preached, as usual, at the Poor-house, where was a greater Congregation than ever, and very near nine Pounds was gathered for the Orphan-house.—*Blessed be God, the longer I stay, the more my Hearers increase.*

At my return home, I was much refreshed with the Sight of my honoured Friend, Mr. *John Wesley*, whom God's Providence has sent to *Bristol*.—*Lord now lettest thou thy Servant depart in Peace.*

*Sunday, April 1.* Preached at the *Bowling-Green, Han-nam, and Rose-Green*; at all which Places, the Congregations were much enlarged, especially at the latter. There were Twenty four Coaches, and an exceeding great Number of other People, both on Foot and Horseback. The Wind was not so well set to carry the Voice as usual; but however, I was strengthened to cry aloud, and take my last Farewel.—As I was returning home, it comforted me exceedingly, to hear almost every one blessing me, and wishing me a good Voyage in the Name of the Lord.—And indeed my Heart is so knit to *Bristol* People, that I could not with so much Submission leave them, did I not know dear Mr. *Wesley* was left behind to teach them the Way of God more perfectly. *Prosper, O Lord, the Works of his Hands upon him.*

It [[At]] seven, I went and took my Leave of *Baldwin-street* Society; but the Yard, and Entry leading to it, was so exceedingly crowded, that I was obliged to climb up by a Ladder, and go over the Tiling of

K

another

66

another House *near* adjoining, before I could get to the Door.

*Monday, April 2.* Spent a good Part of the Morning in talking with those who came to take their Leave; and Tongue cannot express what a sorrowful parting we had.—Floods of Tears flowed plentifully; and my Heart was so melted *down*, that I prayed for them with strong Cryings, and many Tears.—*The Scene was very affecting, and, I think, must have made am Impression upon the most hardned Heart.*

About one, I was obliged to force myself away.—Crowds were waiting at the Door to give me a last Farewel, and near twenty Friends accompanied me on Horseback. *Blessed be God for the marvellous great Kindness he hath shewn me in this City.* Many Sinners, I believe, have been effectually converted. *It is unknown*

**what** Numbers have come to me under Convictions, and all the Children of God have been exceedingly comforted.—Various Presents were sent me as Tokens of their Love.—Several thousands of little Books have been dispersed among the People; about two hundred Pounds collected for the Orphan-house, and many poor Families relieved by the Bounty of my Friend Mr. Seward.—**And** what gives me the greater Comfort, is the Consideration, that my dear and honoured Friend Mr. Wesley is left behind to confirm those **that** are awakened; so that when I return from *Georgia*, I hope to see many bold Soldiers of *Jesus Christ*. *Grant this, O Lord, for the same thy dear Son's Sake.*

#### KINGSWOOD.

Having taken my Leave, and passed through the People of *Bristol*, who poured out many Blessings upon me, I came about two to *Kingswood*, where the Colliers, unknown to me, had prepared a hospitable Entertainment, and were very forward for me to lay the first Stone of their School. At length, I complied,

and

67

and a Man giving me a Piece of Ground, in case Mr. C—— should refuse to grant them any; I laid a Stone, and then kneeled down **on it**, and prayed God that the Gates of Hell might not prevail against our Design. The Colliers said a hearty *Amen*; and after I had given them a Word of Exhortation **suitable to the Occasion**, I took my Leave, promising that I would come amongst them again, if ever God should bring me back to *England*. **They seemed much pleased at this; and indeed they seem to have such an uncommon Affection for me, that** I hope a Reformation will be carried on amongst them. **And as** for my own Part, I had rather preach the Gospel to the unprejudiced, ignorant Colliers, than to the bigotted, self-righteous, formal Christians. *The Colliers will enter into the Kingdom of God before them.*

**THORNBURY.**

About five, I and my Friends got safe to *Thornbury*; where I had appointed to preach on this Day, when I was there last.—The Minister, I find, was offended at my Doctrine, and therefore would not lend me the Pulpit again.—However, there being above a thousand People waiting to hear the Word, I stood upon a Table, and taught in the Street. All was solemn and awful around us; every one behaved with Gravity; and God gave me Freedom of Speech.—The Remainder of the Evening was spent delightfully in singing Psalms and Hymns with my dear Companions; and had not the parting with my *Bristol* Friends cast a little Damp upon my Heart, no one could have laid down his Head to sleep with greater Pleasure than I did. I find I never undertake a new Thing for my Master, but he gives me new Manifestations of Joy and Comfort. *Who would but work for Jesus Christ?*

K 2

OLD

68

**OLD-PASSAGE. CHEAPSTOW.**

*Tuesday, April 3.* Came to the *Old-Passage* by nine in the Morning, and, according to Appointment, preached from some Steps to many People who came to hear me.—Then I exhorted, and sung with as many as the Room would contain above in the Inn; and having providentially lost our Passage, about three in the Afternoon I preached a second Time from the Steps, at which many were much affected. The Remainder of the Day I spent in writing and praying with my Friends, and having taken a last Farewel, we passed over to *Beechly* about seven, and got so far as *Cheapstow*, where the People, I find, expected to hear me; but it being late, I could only sing, and pray, and preach to about forty that came to the Inn, and gave a Promise, if possible, that I would come and preach in their Church before I left *Wales*.—*Every Day do*

*I see the Benefit more and more of this publick Way of acting.*

### **HUSK and PONTYPOOL.**

*Wednesday, April 4.* Came hither before ten, and was much refreshed with the Sight of my dear Brother *Howel Harris*, and several Christian Friends, who came from *Cardiff* and other Places, to give me the Meeting.—The Pulpit being denied, I preached upon a Table under a large Tree to some hundreds, and God was with us of a Truth. After Dinner, with near forty on Horseback, I set out for *Pontypool*, five *Welch* Miles from *Husk*, and in the Way was informed, by a Man that heard it, that Mr. C——H——ry did me the Honour, at the last *Monmouth* Assizes, to make a publick Motion to Judge P——d, to stop me and Brother *Howel Harris*, from going about teaching the People. *Poor man! he put me in mind of Tertullus in the Acts,—But the hour is not yet come; I have scarce*

*begun*

69

*begun my Testimony: For my finishing it, my Enemies may have Power over me from above. Lord, prepare me for that Hour.*—About five we got to *Pontypool*, and several thousands were ready to hear me.—The Curate being very solicitous for it, I preached first, (he having read Prayers) in the Church; but there being great Numbers that could not come in, I went afterward and preached to all the People in the Field.—My own Heart was much enlarged, and the Divine Presence was much amongst us; and indeed, I always find I have most Power when I speak in the open Air. A Proof this to me, that God is pleased with this Way of preaching.—After Sermon, we went, and joyned in Prayer at the Gentlewoman's House that owned the Field, and then we returned to the House of Mr. G——s of *Pontypool*; where, after taking a little Supper, and expounding the third Chapter of *Genesis* to two Rooms full of People, I prayed, and betook

myself to Rest, and was full of such unutterable Love, as no one can conceive but those who feel it.—God be praised for my coming hither.—Here are many gracious Souls, and their Hearts are knit to me in Christian love. Lord, what am I!

#### **ABERGAVENNY and COMIHOY.**

Thursday, April 5. Spent some Time very comfortably with my dear Friends at Pontypool, in singing, praying, and religious Conferences; and then, in Company with about thirty on Horseback, I came to Abergavenny, ten Miles from Pontypool, by eleven in the Morning.—All the Way as we journeyed, God strengthened me mightily in the inner Man, and I could think of nothing so much as Joshua going from City to City, and subduing the devoted Nations.—Here I expected much Opposition, having been informed, that many intended to disturb me.

But God impressed a divine Awe upon all; so that though there were many Opposers present when I

preached,

70

preached, yet not any dared to utter a Word.—God caused me to speak with extraordinary Authority, and I did not spare the polite Scoffers in the least. *Oh that they may come to the Knowledge of the Truth, and be saved!* The Place I preached from, was the Backside of a Garden, belonging to one Mr. W——s, who invited me to Abergavenny, and erected a Place very commodious for my standing upon; so that the People, (in Number about two thousand) could all hear very well. Afterwards we retired, and sung a Hymn; and some Ladies having the Curiosity to come and hear us, I took that Opportunity of dissuading them against Balls and Assemblies, and all other polite Entertainments. I hope God intended them good: For afterwards, I heard they were the chief Mistresses of the Assembly in Abergavenny. *Oh the polite World! How are they led away by lying Vanities!*

After Dinner, I went, according to Appointment, with about forty on Horseback, to *Comihoy*, five Miles from *Abergavenny*, and found the Minister of the Church to be a hearty Friend, and two or three others like minded with him. This rejoiced me exceedingly; and to see how loving the poor People were to me, much increased my Joy.—The Church not being quite large enough to hold half the Congregation, I preached from the Cross in the Churchyard.—The Word came with Power.—Did not God call me elsewhere, I could spend some Months in *Wales* very profitably: The longer I am in it, the more I like it. To me they seem a People sweetly disposed to receive the Gospel.—They are simple and artless. They have left Bigotry more than the generality of our *Englishmen*; and, through the Exhortations of *Howel Harris*, and the Ministry of others, they are hungry and thirsting after the Righteousness of *Jesus Christ*.—When I had done, I hasted back with my Friends to *Abergavenny*, where we were kindly entertained; and, after having written a Letter or two, and expounded to three

Rooms

71

Rooms full of People, I went to Bed, rejoicing that my Eyes every Day saw the Salvation of God.

### **CARLEON and TRELECK.**

*Friday, April 6.* Set out about eight in the Morning from *Abergavenny*, with near a dozen Friends on Horseback; and soon after, near fifty or sixty more joined us; most of whom, I hope, had been effectually called by the Grace of God. About Noon we reached *Carleon*, fifteen Miles from *Abergavenny*, a Town famous for having thirty *British Kings* buried in it, and producing three noble Christian Martyrs. I chose particularly to go hither, because when my Brother *Howel Harris* was there last, some of the baser Sort beat a Drum, and huzza'd around him, on purpose to disturb him.—But God suffered them not to

move a Tongue now, though I preached from the very same Place, and prayed for him by Name, as I have in every Place where I have preached in *Wales*. *God forbid I should be ashamed either of my Master or his Servants.*—Many thousands were there from all Parts to hear me, and God gave me such extraordinary Assistance, that I was carried out beyond myself; and I believe the Scoffers *felt* me to some Purpose. *Oh that the Love of Christ may melt them down!*

After Dinner, we parted with some of our Friends, who were obliged to return home, because they came from far. *And* it gave me great Pleasure to see how affectionately the poor People came, with Tears in their Eyes, blessing God for my *Ministry, shaking me by the Hand, and praying for my* speedy Return amongst them.—*Surely Godliness has the Promise of the Life that now is, as well as that which is to come.* The Numbers of my Enemies are inconsiderable; but my Friends cannot be numbred. And what gives me more Satisfaction, is, that they are Friends of God's making, not of the World's, who follow only for Interest, but such as

love

72

love me for the Sake of *Jesus Christ*; and who, I believe, would go with me to Prison, or to Death.

At three in the Afternoon we set out for *Trelek*, ten *Welsh* Miles from *Carleon*; but the Miles being very long, we could not reach thither till it was almost dark; so that most of the People who had been waiting for me, *were* returned home: However, the Church being denied, I stood upon the Horse-block before the Inn, and preached from thence for about three Quarters of an Hour to those that were left behind; but I could not speak with such Power as usual: For, though the Spirit was willing, the Flesh was weak through the Fatigue of the past Day. *Lord, when shall I be delivered from the Burden of this Flesh?*



**CHEAPSTOW.**

*Saturday, April 7.* Found myself but weak in Body when I rose in the Morning, and it being a very rainy Day, I resolved to stay at *Cheapstow* (which we reached by eleven of the Clock.) Great Numbers that came from the Countries round about, were ready to hear; but the Minister being unwilling to lend the Pulpit on a Week Day, I only exhorted the People in the Dining-room where I lodged. *I believe God was with us.* Oh how swiftly has this Week passed off! To me it has been but as one Day. How do I pity those polite ones, who complain that Time hangs heavy upon their Hands! Let them but love *Christ*, and spend their whole Time in his Service, and they will find no dull melancholy Hours. Want of the Love of God I take to be the chief Cause of Indolence and Vapours. Oh that our Gentry would be up and doing for *Jesus Christ*! They would not complain then for the Want of Spirits.

*Sunday, April 8.* Arose much refreshed, and highly pleased with the last Afternoon's Retirement; read Prayers, and preached twice at *Cheapstow Church* to

very

73

very attentive Congregations, many of whom came from far. After Sermon I gave a Word of Exhortation, and prayed with several who came to the Inn, and God was pleased to give it his Blessing.—About five, I set out, with my Friends, to *Colford*, eight Miles from *Cheapstow*, and went and visited the religious Society, which has met with much Opposition. *Good God! wherever I go, People are ready to perish for Lack of Knowledge, and are as ignorant of Jesus Christ, as the Papists. My Heart within me is broken because of the Prophets. Jer. 23.*

At Night, I was pleased with the Company of several Friends, who came from *Pontypool* to see me once more.—We spent the Evening very agreeably in

singing Psalms, Prayer, and Conversation, and, I hope, edified one another in Love.

### COLFORD and GLOUCESTER.

*Monday, April 9.* Preached this Morning in the *Market-house* to about one hundred People, and afterwards talked with Effect to some Scoffers at the Inn. After this, I set out for, and reached *Gloucester* about Noon; where I was refreshed by a great Packet of Letters, giving me an Account of the Success of the Gospel in different Parts. *God grant I may see it come as powerfully amongst my own Countrymen.*

### GLOUCESTER.

*Tuesday, April 10.* Visited the religious Society last Night, preached at four in the Afternoon to a great Congregation at *St. Michael's Church*, visited a Society near the *West-gate-Street* at seven, and another at eight; the last of which was very much crowded. *Oh what unspeakable Pleasure does it give me, to see my own Townsmen receive the Word with Joy!*

L

*Wednesday,*

74

*Wednesday, April 11.* Was treated this Day as I expected, and as I told my Friends I should be used, when I first entred the City.—The Minister of *St. Michaels* was pleased to lend me his Church Yesterday and to Day; but some wealthy *Demetrius's* being offended at the Greatness of the Congregations, and alleging that it kept People from their Business, he was influenced by some of them to deny the Use of his Pulpit any more on a Week Day. *Alas! what an Enmity there is in the natural Man against the Success of the Gospel! How fond are they of Pharaoh's Objection, "Ye are idle, ye are idle; therefore ye say, Let us go "worship the Lord."*

About four I set out for *Painswick*, a Town four Miles distant from *Gloucester*, where the Pulpit being denied, I preached to a very large Congregation from the Stairs

belonging to the School-house, in one of the Streets. Many were solicitous for me to come and preach at other neighbouring Places also.—At my Return to *Gloucester*, my Heart was much refreshed by the Reception of near thirty Letters from *Bristol*; all, I hope, from Persons whose Hearts God hath been pleased to touch, and powerfully convince of Self-righteousness.—*Lord, not unto me, but unto thy Name be all the Glory.*

*Thursday, April 12.* Spent the Morning in answering some of my dear Correspondents, and preached in the Evening to near three thousand Hearers in a Field belonging to my Brother. Cry out who will against this my Forwardness, I cannot see my dear Countrymen and Fellow Christians every where ready to perish through Ignorance and Unbelief, and not endeavour to convince them of both.

Those who forbid me to speak to these poor baptized *Heathens* that they may be saved, upon them I call to give a Reason for their so doing; a Reason which may satisfy not Man only, but God. *And accordingly*, I here cite them to answer it to our common Master. What their real Reason is, whether Envy, or

“Master,

75

“Master, in so doing thou reproachest us;” or ought else, shall, one Day, be manifested to Men and Angels.

I am, and profess myself a Member of the Church of *England*. I have received no Prohibition from any of the Bishops; and having had no Fault found by them with my Life or Doctrine, have the same general Licence to preach, which the Rectors are willing to think sufficient for their Curates; nor can any of them produce one Instance of their having refused the Assistance of a Stranger Clergyman, because he had not a written Licence.—And have their Lordships, the Bishops, insisted that no Person shall ever preach occasionally without such special Licence? Is not our produc-

ing our Letters or Orders *always judged sufficient?* Have not some of us been *allowed* to preach in *Georgia*, and other Places, by no other than our general Commission? *Take thou Authority to, &c.* nay, and therefore ordained that we might preach in *Georgia*?—His Lordship of *London* allowed of my preaching there, even when I had only received Deacon's Orders; and I have never been charged by his Lordship with teaching, or living otherwise than as a true Minister, and true Son of the Church of *England*. I keep close to her Articles and Homilies; which, if my Opposers did, we should not have so many Dissenters from her. But it is most notorious, that for the *moralizing* Iniquity of the Priests the Land mourns. We have *preached and lived* many sincere Persons out of our Communion.—I have now conversed with several of the best of all Denominations; many of them solemnly protest that they went from the Church, because they could not find Food for their Souls; they stayed among us till they were starved out.

I know this Declaration will expose me to the Illwill, not of *all* my Brethren, but of all my indolent, earthly-minded, Pleasure-taking Brethren. But was I not to speak, the very Stones would cry out against them. Speak, therefore I must, and will, and will not spare;

L 2

God

76

God look to the Event! *Whatever becomes of the Pastors who feed themselves, and not the Flock, I have born my Testimony, I have delivered my own Soul.*

After Sermon, I visited two crowded Societies; many received the Word with Gladness; and to day I felt such an intense Love, that I could have almost wished myself accursed for my Brethren according to the Flesh. *Oh that they experimentally knew the Things that belong to their Peace before they are everlastingly hid from their Eyes!*

*Friday, April 19*[[13]]. Was much delighted with some more Letters I received from some young Soldiers of *Jesus Christ*.—Redeemed what Time I could to answer some of them; preached at Noon to a much larger Congregation than yesterday in the Field; took a little Refreshment, and went, upon Invitation, to *Chafford*, eight Miles from *Gloucester*, where I preached with great Power to above 3000 Souls, all which behaved with great Decency, and like new-born Babes, seemed desirous to be fed with the sincere Milk of the Word. It rejoyses me much to find that my Countrymen also receive the Gospel. Oh that it may take deep root in their Hearts!

*Saturday, April 14*. Lay at *Stroud*, about three Miles from *Chafford*; preached in the Fields belonging to the Inn, at Nine in the Morning, to above 600 People; went to *Stone-house* to pay my dear Flock a Visit there; and being intreated most earnestly, as I passed through the Town yesterday, at three I preached again at *Painswick*, to double the Number I preached to before. And God was with us of a Truth. As soon as I had done, I hasted to *Gloucester*, according to Appointment, and preached in the *Boothall* to, I believe, near 5000 People. Extraordinary Power God was pleased to give me. I was uncommonly enlarged in Prayer; and though I had preached twice, and rode some Miles, yet I think I never spoke with greater

Demon-

77

*Demonstration of the Spirit. God will work, and who shall hinder?*

After this, I received another Packet of Letters from *Bristol* People, and was comforted by the coming of some more Friends, with whom I took sweet Counsel, and praised God lustily, and with a good Courage. *How are his Mercies showered down upon me! What Enlargements of Heart have I experienced this Night! Oh that I had a thousand Tongues wherewith to*

*praise my God! About three Days ago I was much humbled, now am I exalted. Yet a little while and I shall be humbled again. Thus God acts according as he seeth best for our Souls.*

*Sunday, April 15.* Preached by eight in the Morning to a larger Congregation than ever in my Brother's Field; went to the Cathedral Service at Ten; and after Dinner went to *Stonehouse*, being invited thither by the Minister, as well as People.—It rained all the Way going thither; but notwithstanding that, I believe 3000 *Souls* were ready to hear me, and behaved with great Decency and Devotion whilst I was speaking to them. The Church not being large enough to contain a third part of the Auditory, I preached from a very commodious Place on the Outside; and though it rained the whole Time, yet I did not observe one Person leave the Place before I had done.—Afterwards many of the Children of God came to me, rejoicing that *Free Grace in Christ* had been preached unto them, telling me, it was Food to their Souls, and what they had experienced for some Years.—The other People also behaved most affectionately, and would have constrained me to abide with them all Night; but being engaged to return back to *Gloucester*, I hasted thither through the Rain, and expounded in the *Boothall* to about 5000 People. They behaved excellently well, and hung upon me to hear the Word.—All was husht and solemn.—And my delivering the Word from a Place just before where the Judges sit rendered it *very* awful.

---

78

*awful.—Oh that I could plead the Cause of my Lord and King, even Jesus Christ, with greater Power!*

*Monday, April 16.* Preached with an extraordinary Presence of God amongst us at my Brother's Field about ten in the Morning.—Received a most comfortable Packet of Letters, giving me an Account of the

Success of the Gospel;—visited the Prison, took a little Refreshment, preached to near a thousand at *Oxnall*, seven Miles from *Gloucester*, being invited thither by the Reverend Mr. *Pauncefoot*, a worthy Minister of *Jesus Christ*; then returned, and preached my Farewell Discourse to more People than ever in the *Boothall*, and afterwards found my Strength renewed, and my Soul filled with divine Love and Joy in the Holy Ghost. *Oh what a Mystery is the hidden Life of a Christian!*

Had many merciful Deliverances in going to, and returning from *Newent*. *Praise the Lord, O my Soul, and all that is within me praise his holy Name.*

Received Letters from *Abergavenny*, acquainting me how many had been convinced since I was there.—Heard of one that had received the Holy Ghost immediately upon my preaching *Christ*. Received a Letter from one under strong Convictions; and, indeed, there is scarce a Day passes over my Head, but God shows me that he works effectually upon the Hearts of many by my Ministry. *A Proof this, I am sure, that the Word preached is not my own, but God's. May he always own it in this Manner. Even so Lord Jesus.*

*Tuesday, April 17.* Spent this Morning in visiting a private Society, and conversing with many religious Friends, who came from far to take their Leave.—About eleven, by the Bishop's Permission, I baptized, at the Church of *St. Mary de Crypt*, Mr. *Thomas W—d*, a professed Quaker, about sixty Years of Age, who was convinced of the Necessity of being born *again* of *Water*, as well as the *Spirit*. Many of

*Christ's*

79

*Christ's* faithful Servants attended on the Prayers around him; and, I believe, the Holy Ghost was with us of a Truth.—After the Solemnity was over, I gave a Word of Exhortation from the Font; and it being the Place where I myself not long since had been bap-

tized, it gave me an Opportunity of reflecting on my own frequent Breaches of my baptismal Vow, and proving the Necessity of the *New Birth* from the Office of our Church. *God, I believe, gave it his Blessing.*

After this, we returned, and gave private Thanks; and having dined, prayed with, and taken Leave of my weeping Friends, and dispersed a great many of my Sermons amongst the Poor, I took Horse. *But Oh what Love did the People express for me! How many came to me weeping, and telling me what God had done for their Souls by my Ministry! Oh how did they pray for my return amongst them! Lord, I dared not expect such Success among my own Countrymen.* When I came to the City, I found the Devil had painted me in most horrible Colours: For it was currently reported, that I was really mad; that I had said, I was the *Holy Ghost*, and that I had walked bareheaded through *Bristol Streets* singing Psalms.—But God was pleased to shew them that the Devil was a Liar, and that the Words that I spoke were not those of a Madman, but the Words of Soberness and Truth.—It often pleases me to think how God makes Way for me into the Hearts of his People; nay, even of his Enemies, wherever I go.—My first asking Leave for the Pulpit, and preaching in the Fields, notwithstanding they are denied, puts me in mind of the Children of Israel first intreating Leave of Og, Sihon, &c., *To go quietly through their Land; but fighting their Way through, when Leave was denied. Like them, by the Strength of my Divine Leader, I shall, at last, be more than Conqueror over all the Canaanites, and carnal Teachers among the Israel of God.*

*CHELTEN-*

80

### **CHELTENHAM, 7 Miles from Gloucester.**

Being earnestly invited by several of the Inhabitants, I came hither, attended with about a dozen Friends, by five of the Clock; and the Use of the Pulpit being



refused me, I preached on the *Bowling-green* belonging to the *Plough-Inn*.—When I came in, the Town, I perceived, was alarmed, by the People standing at their Doors. At the first, I found myself quite shut up.—My Heart and Head were dead as a Stone; but when I came to the Inn, my Soul began to be enlarged. I felt a Freedom in my Spirit, and was enabled to preach with **extraordinary** Power to near two thousand People. Many were convicted. One was drowned in Tears, because she had said I was crazy; and some were so filled with the Holy Ghost, that they were almost unable to support themselves under it. *This, I know, is Foolishness to the natural and Letter-learned Men; but I write this for the Comfort of God's Children. They know what these Things mean.*

*Wednesday, April 18.* Preached this Morning with Power to a much larger Congregation than we had last Night. Several Servants of God said, they never saw the like before.—**Whilst I was preaching, I saw the People melted into Tears, and, by their Looks, shewed that the Divine Presence was amongst them.**—We shall see greater Things than these: For almost every Day Persons of all Denominations come unto me, telling how they interceed in my Behalf. And it shall now be my particular Business, wherever I go, to bring all the Children of God, notwithstanding their Differences, to rejoyce together. *How dare we not converse with those who have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?*

*EVE-*

### ***EVESHAM in Worcestershire, twelve Miles***

#### ***from Cheltenham.***

Continued at *Cheltenham*, for the Sake of a little Retirement, and some private Business, till after Dinner, and got safe to *Evesham* (where Mr. Seward's Re-

lations live) about seven at Night.—I found there had been much Talk about my coming, God wisely ordering it to engage and excite the Peoples Attention.—Several Persons came to see me, amongst whom was Mr. *Benjamin Seward*, whom God has been pleased to call by his free Grace very lately.—Both his Circumstances before, and in Conversion, much resemble those of *St. Paul*. For he was bred up at the Feet of *Gamaliel*, being at *Cambridge* for some Years. As touching the Law, so far as outward Morality went, he was blameless; concerning Zeal, opposing the Church. My Proceedings he could not like, and he had once a Mind, he said, to write against Mr. *Law's* Enthusiastick Notions in his *Christian Perfection*.—But lately it has pleased God to reveal his dear Son in him, and to cast him down to the Earth, as he did *Saul*, by eight Days Sickness; in which Time, he scarce ever eat, or drank, or slept, and underwent great inward Agonies and Tortures.—After this, the Scales fell more and more from the Eyes of his Mind.—God sent a poor travelling Woman, that came to sell Straw Toys, to instruct him in the Nature of the second Birth, and now he is resolved to prepare for Holy Orders, and to preach *Christ* and those Truths straightway in every Synagogue, which once he endeavoured to destroy.—He is a Gentleman of a very large Fortune, which he has now devoted to God. And I write this, to shew how far a Man may go, and yet know nothing of *Jesus Christ*.—Behold, here was one who constantly attended on the Means of Grace, exact in his Morals, humane and courteous in his Conversation, who gave much in Alms, was frequent in private Duties; and yet, till about six Weeks

M

ago,

82

ago, as destitute of any saving experimental Knowledge of *Jesus Christ*, as those on whom his Name was never called, and who still sit in Darkness, and the Shadow of Death. *Blessed be God, that although not many rich, not many mighty, not many noble are cal-*

led, yet some are.—Who would but be accounted a Fool for Christ's Sake? How often has my Companion and honoured Friend, Mr. William Seward, been deemed a Madman even by this very Brother, for going to Georgia? But *lo! God* now has made him an Instrument of converting his Brother. This more and more convinces me, that we must be despised, *e'er* we can be Vessels fit for God's Use. As for my own Part, I find, by happy Experience, the more I am contemned, the more God delights to honour me, in bringing home Souls to Christ.—And I write this for the Encouragement of my fellow Labourers, who have all Manner of Evil spoken against them falsely for Christ's Sake. Let them not be afraid, but rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: For the Spirit of God, and of Glory, shall rest upon their Souls.

Thursday, April 19. Went to Badsey, about two Miles from Evesham, where Mr. Seward's eldest Brother lives.—We were most kindly received, and, I hope, a true Christian Church will be in their House.—About four in the Evening, the Churches, *both* at Evesham, Bengeworth, and Badsey, being denied, I preached from the Cross, in the Middle of Evesham-street, to a great Congregation, and then went to Badsey, and preached in Mr. Seward's Brother's Yard to a great Number of People, many of which came from Evesham to hear me again.—God grant it may strike home to their Hearts.

Friday, April 20. Preached about nine in the Morning at the Cross, went to publick Worship, and received the Sacrament.—Preached at Badsey at five in the Evening, and returned and expounded in the

Town-

83

Town-Hall; which, though very large, was quite thronged.—The Recorder himself procured the Keys for us, and great Numbers of People were truly af-

fected. The standing in the Judge's Place, and speaking from thence, gave me awful Thoughts of God; and the Consideration that I was speaking in the Name of our great High Priest and Judge, animated me very much. *Oh that I had a thousand Tongues, they should all be employed in his Service!*

### OXON.

*Saturday, April 21.* Preached in the Morning at *Badsey* to a weeping Audience, joyned in Prayer, and set out for *Oxon*, which I reached about ten at Night. I had been much pressed in Spirit to hasten hither, and now I found the Reason for it. For alas! the Enemy had got great Advantage over three of our Christian Brethren, and driven them to deny *Christ's* visible Church upon Earth. They had so far influenced and deluded Mr. *Kinchin*, a sincere and humble Minister of *Jesus Christ*, that I found, through their Perswasion, he had actually quitted his Fellowship, and intended to resign his Living.—This, I must needs confess, gave me a great Shock:—For I knew what dreadful Consequences would attend a needless Separation from the established Church.—As for my own Part, I can see no Reason for my leaving the Church, however I am treated by the corrupt Members and Ministers of it:—For I judge of the State of a Church, not from the Practice of its Members, but its primitive and publick Constitutions.—And so long as I think the Articles of the Church of *England* are agreeable to Scripture, I am resolved to preach them up without either Bigotry or Party Zeal.—*For I love all that love the Lord Jesus.*

M 2

*Sunday,*

84

*Sunday, April 22.* Being much concerned about Mr. *K*—'s [[*Kinchin's*]] Conduct, this Morning I wrote him the following Letter.

*Dearest Mr. K*— [[*Kinchin*]]

*Oxon, April 22, 1739.*

“Just now have I received the blessed Sacrament,  
 “and have been praying for you. Let me exhort you,  
 “by the Mercies of God in *Christ Jesus*, not to resign  
 “your Parsonage till you have consulted your Friends  
 “at *London*.—It is undoubtedly true, that all is not  
 “right when we are afraid to be open to our dear  
 “Brethren. *Satan* has desired to sift you as Wheat:  
 “He is dealing with you as he did with me some  
 “Years ago, when he kept me in my Closet near six  
 “Weeks, because I could not do any Thing with a  
 “single Intention; so he would have you not preach  
 “till you have received the Holy Ghost in the full  
 “Assurance of it, and that is the Way never to have  
 “it at all: **For** God will be found in the Use of  
 “Means, and our Lord sent out his Disciples to preach  
 “before they had received the Holy Ghost in that most  
 “plentiful Manner at the Day of *Pentecost*. Besides, con-  
 “sider, my dear Brother, what Confusion your **sepa-**  
 “**rating** from the Church will occasion. The Prison  
 “Doors [[at Oxford]] are already shut [[against us]], **one** Society stopped, and  
 “most afraid almost to converse with us.—I can assure  
 “you, that my being a Minister of the Church of  
 “*England*, and preaching its Articles, is a Means, un-  
 “der God, of drawing so many after me.—As for  
 “objecting about the Habits, &c. good God! I thought  
 “we long since knew, that the Kingdom of God did not  
 “consist in any Externals, but in Righteousness, and  
 “Peace, and Joy in the Holy Ghost. Oh! my dear  
 “Brother, I travel in Pain for you.—Never was I more  
 “shocked at any Thing than at your Proceedings.  
 “I doubt not that you will pray to God **that you may**  
 “be kept from Delusion at the reading of this: **For** I  
 “am not ignorant of *Satan’s* Devices, and I know he  
 “never more successfully tempts us, than when he  
 “turns himself into an Angel of Light. Oh! my

“dearest

85

“dearest Mr. K—— [[Kinchin]] do nothing rashly.—Consult your  
 “Friends, and do not break the Heart of

*Your most affectionate,  
though unworthy Brother in Christ,*

G. W.

Visited two Societies, at the first of which many Gownsmen did me the Honour of coming to hear.—Before I began, I desired them to behave like Gentlemen and Christians.—I also prayed particularly for them, and applied myself in Meekness and Love to them at the End of my Discourse. I bless God, an Awe was impressed upon their Minds, and they behaved quietly;—but afterwards *they* followed me to my Inn, and came uninvited up into my Room.—*However*, I took that Opportunity of giving them a second Exhortation.—*I found great Freedom and Sweetness in my Spirit*; and though some, no doubt mocked, yet I believe some will remember what was said.—*Oh how is the faithful City become an Harlot! Oh that my Head was Water, and my Eyes Fountains of Tears, that I might weep Day and Night for the Members of this University! Lord send forth thy Light, and thy Truth, and make them Scribes ready instructed to thy heavenly Kingdom.*

Blessed be God for sending me hither.—*I find now it was his divine Will:—For* our dear brother *K*—[[Kinchin]] falling into such an Error, has given such a Shock, that unless I had come, in all Probability the Brethren would have been scattered abroad like Sheep having no Shepherd.—*But God, I hope, will always have a Remnant here left, which may take Root downward, and bear Fruit upward.—Let all that love the Lord Jesus say, Amen.*

*Tuesday, April 24.* Perceived myself much strengthened Yesterday and this Morning, and told my Friends how these Words were impressed upon me, *And more than meet the gathering Storm.*—About nine of the Clock, after I had exhorted the Brethren, *and pretty*

*well*

well established them in the Faith, the Vice-Chancellor came in Person to the House where we were assembled, having threatened to do so some Time ago, if they continued to build up one another in that Manner.—He sent for me down Stairs, being informed that I was in the House.—When I first saw him, I perceived he was in a Passion, which he soon expressed in such Language as this: “Have you, Sir, says he, a Name in any “Book here? Yes, Sir, said I; but I intend to take “it out soon.—Yes, and you had best take yourself “out too, replied he, or otherwise I will lay you by “the Heels. What do you mean, continued he, by “going about, alienating the Peoples Affections “from their proper Pastors? Your Works are full of “Vanity and Nonsense, you pretend to Inspiration. “If you ever come again in this Manner among these “People, I will lay you first by the Heels, and these “shall follow.” Upon this, he turned his Back, and went away.—I desired the Brethren to joyn in Prayer for him.—Took my Leave, being just going to set out as the Vice-Chancellor came in. I soon found by the Comforts God gave me, how glorious it was to suffer any Thing for the Sake of *Jesus Christ*.—However, I must not forget mentioning, that I exhorted all the Brethren not to forsake the assembling themselves together, though no Pastor should be permitted to come amongst them; For so long as they continued stedfast in the Communion of the established Church, I told them no Power on Earth could justify hindring them from continuing in Fellowship, as the primitive Christians did, in order to build up each other in the Knowledge and Fear of God.—*Oh what Advantage has Satan gained over us, by our Brother K——’s [[Kinchin]] putting off his Gown! However, though he is permitted to bruise our Heel, yet we shall, in the End, bruise his Head.—The Gates of Hell shall never prevail against the Church of Jesus Christ, either visible or invisible.*

About eight at Night, I, and my Friends, reached *Uxbridge*, where we were greatly refreshed by the com-

ing

87

ing of several Brethren, and the Receipt of some Letters from *Savannah*. Blessed be God all is well; and I shall now think the Time long till I embark for *Georgia*. Lord, let that People be precious in thy Sight.

### LONDON.

*Wednesday, April 25.* Reached *London* with my dear Friends about ten in the Morning; was received most tenderly by my dear Brethren. Received a Letter from *Gibraltar*, giving an Account of the Success of my Labours in that *Garison*.—Expounded to a Society of holy Women, and afterwards spent about two Hours in close Conference at *Fetter-lane* Society. Thanks be to God, we talked with great Sweetness and Christian Love, and unanimously declared against the Principles of our three Brethren, who lately made such Confusion in *Oxford*. *There must be Heresies amongst you, that they which are approved may be made manifest.*

*Thursday, April 26.* Assisted in administering the Blessed Sacrament at *Islington*; where the Vicar, in Conformity to the Rubrick, takes Care to observe the Octaves of *Easter*.—After this, I expounded to a large Room full of People, and with such Power and Demonstration of the Spirit, as I never saw before. Surely the Hearers Hearts were quite melted down by the preaching of the free Grace of God in *Christ Jesus* to poor Sinners. Floods of loving Tears flowed from their Eyes.—In the Evening I expounded to a Society at *St. Mary Hill*, and then retired to Bed, wishing that all felt the Comforts God was then pleased to communicate to my Soul. *Indeed I can say, that the Lord is gracious.*



*Friday, April 27.* Went this Morning to *Islington* to preach, according to the Appointment of my dear Brother in *Christ*, the Reverend Mr. *Stonehouse*;—but

in

88

in the midst of the Prayers, the Church-Warden came, demanding me to produce my Licence, or otherwise he forbad my preaching in that Pulpit. I believe I might have insisted upon my Right to preach, being in Priest's Orders, and having the Presentation of the Living at *Savannah*, which is in the Bishop of *London's* Diocese, a stronger Licence than that implicate one, by which hundreds of the inferior Clergy are by his Lordship permitted to preach: However, for Peace Sake, I declined preaching in the Church; but after the Communion Service was over, I preached in the Churchyard; being assured my Master now called me out here, as well as in *Bristol*.—The second Lesson was *Acts* the xxiv. which contained the plausible Speech *Tertullus* made against *Paul*, a Ringleader of the Sect of the *Nazarenes*, which God applied closely to my Heart. And he was pleased so to assist me in preaching, and so wonderfully to affect the Hearers, that I believe we could have went singing of Hymns to Prison. *Let not the Adversaries say, I have thrust myself out of their Synagogues: No; they have thrust me out. And since the Self-righteous Men of this Generation count themselves unworthy, I go out into the Highways and Hedges, and compel Harlots, Publicans, and Sinners to come in, that my Master's House may be filled. They who are sincere, will follow after me to hear the Word of God.*

Expounded at Night to a very large Society in *Wapping* with great Power, and perceived that the *London* People were much improved since I left them; indeed their Hearts seem to be quite broken, and I believe they would pluck out their Eyes if it were possible to serve me. *Lord, sanctify my coming to them, and grant that they may receive a second Benefit.*

*Saturday, April 28.* Preached this Morning again in *Islington Churchyard*, and, blessed be God, the Congregation was near as large again as Yesterday, and the Word was attended with extraordinary Power. The second Lesson was very applicable, being *Acts xxv.*

I can

89

I can say with *St. Paul*, *Neither against the Temple, nor against Cæsar have I done any Thing, and yet I am put out of their Synagogues, and reviled as an evil Doer; but the Scriptures must be fulfilled, "If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you."*

About six I expounded to a thronged Society of Women at *Fetter-lane*, and at eight on *St. Mary Hill*. The Portion of Scripture that Providence directed me to, was the nineteenth of *Genesis*, which was very applicable to what happened: For some wicked Men, *Men of Belial*, came, and pressed, and broke down the Door; but God was pleased to give me such Power at the last, that they were forced into an awful Silence, and, I believe, they really felt the Weight of God's Word. *The Fierceness of Men shall turn to thy Praise, and the Fierceness of them shalt thou restrain.*

*Sunday, April 29.* Preached in the Morning at *Moorfields* to an exceeding great Multitude.—At ten, went to *Christ-Church*, and heard Doctor *Trapp* preach most virulently against me and my Friends, upon these Words, *Be not righteous overmuch, why shouldest thou destroy thyself?* God gave me great Serenity of Mind; but alas! the Preacher was not so calm as I wished him. His Sermon was founded upon wrong Suppositions, (the necessary Consequence of his hearing with other Mens Ears) not to say there were many direct Untruths in it.—And he argued so strenuously against all *inward Feelings*, that he plainly proved, that with all his Learning, he knew nothing yet as he ought to know. *I pray God rebuke his Spirit, and grant that that Sermon may never rise up in Judgment against him.*

Being weakened by my Morning's preaching, in the Afternoon I refreshed myself with a little Sleep, and at five went and preached at *Kennington Common*, about two Miles from *London*, where no less than thirty thousand People were supposed to be present; the Wind being for me, it carried the Voice to the extremest Part of the Audience.

N

All

90

All stood attentive, and joined in the Psalm and Lord's Prayer most regularly,—and I scarce ever preached more quietly in any Church.—The Word came with Power.—The People were much affected, and expressed their Love to me many Ways.—All agreed it was never seen on this wise before.—*Oh what need have all God's People to rejoyce and give Thanks! I hope a good Inroad has been made into the Devil's Kingdom this Day. Lord, not unto me, but to thy Name be all the Glory.*

*Monday, April 30.* Declined preaching to Day, that I might have Leisure to write to some of my Correspondents, and make Preparations for my poor Orphans in *Georgia*.—Received Letters this Evening from thence, telling me of the Affairs of that Colony.—At present they have but a melancholy Aspect; but our Extremity is God's Opportunity.—*Lord, thou calledst me; lo! I come to do thy Will.*—Heard also that Mr. K——n [[*Kinchin*]] had got over his Scruples, and of the wonderful Success of my honoured Friend Mr. *John Wesley's* Ministry in *Bristol*, and of much Opposition at *Oxon*. *Certainly God is about to bring mighty Things to pass.*

*Tuesday, May 1.* Preached after publick Service in *Islington Churchyard* to a greater Congregation than ever. And in the Evening went to expound on *Dowgate Hill*, at the House of Mr. C——h; but when I came to the Door, no less than two or three thousand People were gathered round it; so that to avoid a Noise, I was

obliged to stand up in the Fore-street Window, and preach to them in the Street.—*And* I think they behaved well; and they would have behaved much better, had they not been disturbed. Now know I more and more, that the Lord calls me into the Fields: For no House or Street is able to contain half the People that come to hear the Word.—*This is a Time for doing; yet a little while, and a suffering Time will come.*

*I cannot*

91

*I cannot follow him now; but I shall follow him afterwards.*

*Wednesday, May 2.* Preached this Evening again to above ten thousand, at *Kennington Common*, and spent the Remainder of the Evening in Conference with our Brethren in *Fetter-lane Society*.—I hope we *do* build up one another in our most holy Faith.—Our Brethren who have fallen into Errors, have left us voluntarily.—*And now the old Leaven is purged out, we walk in the Comforts of the Holy Ghost, and are edified.*

*Thursday, May 3.* Was fully employed all Day in making Preparations for my Voyage, and preached at six in the Evening (a Time I choose that People may not be drawn away from their Business) at *Kennington*, and great Power was amongst us.—The Audience was more numerous and silent than Yesterday, the Evening calm, and many went affected away.—*Glory be to God, I begin to find an Alteration in the Peoples Behaviour already. God grant it may increase more and more.*

*Saturday, May 5.* Preached Yesterday and to Day, as usual, at *Kennington Common*, to about twenty thousand Hearers, who were very much affected.—The Remainder of my Time I spent in preparing Things for *Georgia*.—I am not usually so much engaged in Seculars; but I as readily do this as preach, when it is the Will of God.—It is a great Mistake that some run

into, to suppose Religion consists only in saying our Prayers; **but** I think a Man is no further holy, than he is relatively holy. And he only will adorn the Gospel of our Lord *Jesus Christ* in all Things, who is careful to perform all the civil Offices of Life, whether Servant, Master, or Mistress, with a single Eye to God's Glory, and from a Principle of a lively Faith in *Jesus Christ* our Saviour.—*This is the Morality which I preach, and which shall stand as long as the Rock on*

N 2

*which*

92

*which it is founded; while all Morality set up in Opposition to this, shall sink, with its Professors, into Hell.*

Sunday, May 6. Preached this Morning in *Moorfields* to about twenty thousand People, who were very quiet and attentive, and much affected.—Went to publick Worship Morning and Evening;—and at six preached at *Kennington*.—**But** such a Sight never **were my Eyes blessed with before**.—I believe there were no less than fifty thousand People, near fourscore Coaches, besides great Numbers of Horses; **and what is most remarkable**, there was an awful Silence amongst them, **and the Word of God came with such Power, that all, I believe, were pleasingly surprized**. God gave me great Enlargement of Heart. I continued my Discourse for an Hour and a Half; and when I returned home, I was filled with such Love, Peace, and Joy, that I cannot express it.—I believe this was partly owing to some Opposition I met with Yesterday. *It is hard for Men to kick against the Pricks.—The more they oppose, the more shall Jesus Christ be exalted.*—Our Adversaries seem to be come to an Extremity, while for want of Arguments to convince, they are obliged to call out to the civil Magistrate to compel me to be silent; but I believe it will be difficult to prove our Assemblies in the Fields **to be** either disorderly or illegal. *But they that are born after the Flesh, must persecute those that are born after the Spirit.—Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.*

*Monday, May 7.* Had full Employment again to Day in preparing for my Voyage; did not preach, only expounded in a private House, where ten Pounds was collected for the Orphans. Though I kept it as secret as possible, yet Numbers of People crowded round the Door; so that I find myself more and more under a Necessity of going out into the Fields.

Received several Letters of the Fruits of my Mi-

nistry

93

nistry in several Places, and had divers come to me, awakened, under God, by my preaching in the Fields.

*Tuesday, May 8.* Preached in the Evening, as usual, on *Kennington Common*.—Some considerable Time before I set out from Town, it rained very hard, so that once I thought of not going;—but several pious Friends joined in hearty Prayer that God would be pleased to withhold the Rain, which was done immediately.—To my great Surprise, when I came to the *Common*, I saw above Twenty thousand People.—All the while, except for a few Moments, the Sun shone out upon us; and, I trust, the Sun of Righteousness arose on some with healing in his Wings.—For the People were melted down very much at the preaching of the Word, and put up hearty Prayers for my temporal and eternal Welfare. *Oh that they may enter into the Ears of the Lord of Sabaoth!*

*Wednesday, May 9.* Waited at Noon upon the honourable Trustees for *Georgia*.—They received me with the utmost Civility, agreed to every Thing I asked, and gave me a Grant of Five hundred Acres of Land, to me and my Successors for ever, for the Use of the Orphan-house.—My Friend *H*—[[Habersham]] also writes me Word to Day from *Georgia*, that the General and Officers are very kind to him upon my Account; so that, blessed be God, there is a comfortable Prospect of all Things going on as I could wish.

About four in the Afternoon I was taken ill and deserted, which I always look upon as a certain Preparative for some approaching Mercy.—And so this was; for after God had enabled me to preach to about Twenty thousand for above an Hour at *Kennington*, he inclined the Hearers Hearts to contribute most cheerfully and liberally towards the Orphan-house.—I was one of the Collectors,—and it would have delighted any one to have seen with what Eagerness and Cheerfulness the People came up both Sides the Eminence

on

94

on which I stood, and afterwards to the Coach Doors to throw in their Mites.—Surely God must have touched their Hearts:—For when we came home, we found we had collected above Forty *seven* Pounds, amongst which were sixteen Pounds in Halfpence; for which we endeavoured to give *hearty* Thanks.—God was pleased to pour into my Soul a great Spirit of Supplication, and a Sense of his free distinguishing Mercies so filled me with Love, Humility, and Joy, and holy Confusion, that I could at last only pour out my Heart before him in an awful Silence.—It was so full, that I could not well speak.—*Oh the Happiness of a Communion with God!*

*Thursday, May 10.* Preached at *Kennington*; but it rained most Part of the Day. There were not above Ten thousand People, and thirty Coaches.—However, God was pleased so visibly to interpose in causing the Weather to clear up, and the Sun to shine out just as I began, that I could not avoid taking Notice of it to the People in my Discourse. Our minute Philosophers, nay, and our Christians, falsely so called, laugh at the Notion of a particular Providence. But to suppose a general, without holding a particular Providence, is as absurd, as to imagine there can be a Chain without being composed of Links.—Search the Scriptures, and we shall find, *That not a Sparrow can fall to the*

*Ground without our heavenly Father, and that the very Hairs of our Head are numbed.*

*Friday, May 11.* Preached at *Kennington* to a larger Audience than last Night, and collected Twenty six Pounds fifteen Shillings and Sixpence for the Orphan-house.—*The Readiness wherewith the People gave is inexpressible.—Indeed I can say they offered willingly.—They could not have taken more Pains, or expressed more Earnestness, had they all been to have received an Alms from me. A Sign this, that the Word of God has taken hold of their*

*Hearts*

95

*Hearts. I found great Sweetness of Soul in myself; and being upon the Publican and Pharisee, I was very earnest in endeavouring to convince the Self-righteous Pharisees of this Generation, and offering Jesus Christ freely to all, who, with the humble Publican, feelingly and experimentally could cry out, God be merciful to me a Sinner.*

*Saturday, May 12.* Agreed to Day for myself, and eleven more, to go on Board the *Elizabeth*, Captain Allen, to *Pennsylvania*; where I design, God willing, to preach the Gospel in my Way to *Georgia*, and buy Provisions for the Orphan-house. *Lord, send thy Angel before me to prepare my Way.*

*Had* many come to me this Morning, acquainting me what God had done for their Souls by my preaching in the Fields.—*And in the Evening preached to about Twenty thousand People at Kennington as usual, the Weather continuing remarkably fair whilst I was delivering my Master's Message.—Though I was full of Matter, yet I found a Restraint upon my Spirits, which prevented my speaking with my wonted Freedom: However, I offered Jesus Christ to all that could apply him to their Hearts by Faith. Oh that all would embrace him! The Lord make them willing in the Day of his Power.*



*Sunday, May 13.* Preached this Morning to a prodigious Number of People in *Moorfields*, and collected for the Orphans Fifty two Pounds Nineteen Shillings and Sixpence, above twenty Pounds of which was in Halfpence.—Indeed they almost wearied me in receiving their Mites;—and they were more than one Man could carry home.—*Thus will God make his Power to be known.*—Went to publick Worship twice, and preached in the Evening to near Sixty thousand People.—Many went away because they could not hear; but God enabled me to speak, so that the best Part of them could understand me well; and it is very re-

markable

96

markable what a deep Silence is preserved whilst I am speaking.—After Sermon, I made another Collection of Twenty nine Pounds seventeen Shillings and Eightpence, and came home deeply humbled with a Sense of what God has done for my Soul.—I doubt not but that many self-righteous Bigots, when they see me spreading out my Hands to offer *Jesus Christ* freely to all, are ready to cry out, “How glorious did the Reverend Mr. *Whitefield* look to Day, when, neglecting “the Dignity of a Clergyman, he stood venting his “Enthusiastick Ravings in a Gown and Cassock upon “a Common, and collecting Mites from the poor “People?” But if this is to be vile, Lord grant that I may be more vile.—I know this Foolishness of preaching is made instrumental to the Conversion and Edification of Numbers. *Ye Pharisees mock on, I rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.*

*Monday, May 14.* Spent most of this Day in visiting some Friends, and settling my *Georgia* Affairs. Spent the Evening very agreeably with several Quakers at the House of Mr. *Hy*—*m.*—*How much Comfort do those lose who converse with none but such as are of their own Communion!*

*Tuesday, May 15.* Preached this Evening at *Kennington*, and God was pleased to send us a little Rain.—*But it rejoiced me greatly:—For the People*, notwithstanding, stood very attentive; *and as soon as the Rain came, I received uncommon Strength from above.* *The good Lord water us all with the Dew of his heavenly Blessing.*

*Wednesday, May 16.* Sent a Quaker whom God was pleased to convince, to be baptized by my dear Brother, Mr. *Stonehouse*. Waited upon the honourable Trustees, who still treated me with the utmost Civility.—Dined with some serious Quakers, and preached at *Kennington*, and have Reason to bless God

more

97

more and more for the Order and Devotion of those that come to hear the Word.—*Indeed they behave as though they believed God was standing at their Right-hand.*

*Thursday, May 17.* Preached, after several Invitations thither, at *Hampstead-heath*, about five Miles from *London*.—The Audience was of the politer Sort, and I preached very near the Horse-course, which gave me Occasion to speak home to their Souls concerning our spiritual Race.—Most were attentive, but some mocked.—Thus the Word of God is either a Saviour of Life unto Life, or of Death unto Death. *God's Spirit bloweth when, and where it listeth.*

*Friday, May 18.* Dined with several of the *Moravian* Church, and could not avoid admiring their great Simplicity, and deep Experience in the inward Life.—At six, I preached in a very large open Place in *Shadwell*, being much pressed by many to go thither.—I believe there were upwards of Twenty thousand People.—At first, through the Greatness of the Throng, there was a little Hurry; but afterwards, all was hush'd and silent.—*I perceived a divine Power come upon me*

from above.—The Word, I believe, made its Way into their Hearts, and very near twenty Pounds were collected for the Orphan-house.—Blessed be God, we now begin to surround this great City.—As the Walls of Jericho once fell down at the Sound of a few Rams Horns; so I hope even this Foolishness of preaching, under God, will be a Means of pulling down the Devil's strong Holds, which are in and about the City of London.

Received several excellent Letters, amongst which, was one from Mr. *Ralph Erskine*, a Field-preacher of the Scots Church, a noble Soldier of the Lord *Jesus Christ*. Oh that all that were truly zealous knew one another! It must greatly strengthen each other's Hands.

Saturday, May 19. Had the Pleasure of being an Instrument, under God, with Mr. *Seward*, of bring-

O

ing

98

ing a young Man out of *Bethlehem*, who was lately put into that Place for being, as they term it, *Methodically Mad*.—The Way I came to be acquainted with him, was by his sending me the following Letter.

To the Reverend Mr. Whitefield these,

“Dear Sir,

“I have read your Sermon upon the *New-Birth*, “and hope I shall always have a due Sense of my dear “Redeemer’s Goodness to me, that has so infinitely “extended his Mercy to me, which Sense be pleased “to confirm in me by your Prayers; and may Al- “mighty God bless and preserve you, and prosper “your ministerial Function. I wish, Sir, I could “have some explanatory Notes upon the New Testa- “ment, to enlighten the Darkness of my Understand- “ing, to make me capable of becoming a good Sol- “dier of *Jesus Christ*; but above all, should be glad “to see you. I am,

Dear Sir,

*Yours affectionately with my whole Heart,*

*Bethlehem Hospital, No. 50.*

Joseph Periam.

According to his Request I paid him a Visit, and found him in perfect Health both in Body and Mind. A Day or two after, I and Mr. *Seward* went and talked with his Sister, who gave me the three following Symptoms of his being mad. *First*, That he fasted for near a Fortnight. *Secondly*, That he prayed so as to be heard four Storey high. *Thirdly*, That he had sold his Cloathes, and given them to the Poor.—This the young Man himself explained to me before; and ingenuously confessed, that under his first Awakenings, he was one Day reading the Story of the young Man whom our Lord commanded to sell all, and to give to the Poor, and thinking it must be taken in the literal Sense, out of Love to *Jesus Christ* he sold his Cloaths, and gave the Money to the Poor.—“This is nothing but what “is common to Persons at their first setting out in the

“spiritual

99

“spiritual Life. *Satan* will, if possible, drive them “to Extremes.”—*And* if such Converts were left to God, or had some experienced Person to consult with, they would soon come into the Liberties of the Gospel.—*But how should those who have not been tempted like unto their Brethren, be able to succour those that are tempted?*

*May the 5th I received a second Letter from him.*

“*Query* 1. If Repentance does not include a Cessa-  
“tion from Sin, and turning to Virtue, and though  
“notwithstanding I want that deep Contrition men-  
“tioned by some Divines, yet as I live not wilfully  
“in any known Sin, and firmly believe the Gospel  
“of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, may I not thereby be  
“intitled to the Benefits of *Christ’s* Death and Resur-  
“rection, in the Perseverance of Knowledge, and  
“Practice of my Duty?

“Query 2. If I am in Prison, whether I may not, “without Offence to God, make use of Endeavours “to be discharged, by which I may be enabled to get “into a pious **Christian** Family, and consequently be “grounded and firmly settled in the Love of God, **it** “**being** my Desire; for I am surrounded with no- “thing but Profaneness and Wickedness?

“Query 3. If my Objections to being imprisoned “are inconsistent or wicked, which are, that I am “obliged to submit to the Rules of the House, in go- “ing to my Cell at seven or eight of the Clock at “Night, and not let out till six or seven in the Morn- “ing, by which I am debarred the Use of Candle, “and consequently Books; so that all that Time, ex- “cept what is spent in Prayer and Meditation, is lost. “Which Exercises, though good, are, by so constant “Repetition, and for want of Change, deaden’d?

“Query 4. If I should, by the Goodness of God, “be discharged, whether I may, without Offence to “the Gospel of *Jesus Christ*, follow the Business of an

O 2

“Attorney

100

“Attorney at Law, to which I was put as a Clerk; “and by a conscientious Discharge of that Duty; be “thereby intitled to a heavenly Inheritance, my Fear “is this Point arising from our Lord’s Advice about “going to Law. *Matthew* v. 40.

“Query 5. If I cannot be discharged by proper “Application, (which Application pray be pleased to “let me have) how can I best spend my Time to the “Glory of God, myself and Brethren’s Welfare? And “please to give me Rules for the same.

“**Worthy Sir,**

“These Questions, whether momentary or not, I “leave to your Judgment. If you think they deserve “an Answer, should be glad to have them solved; “for as I am sensible of the Power of my Adversary “the Devil, surely I cannot but act with the utmost

“Circumspection, which gives me Occasion to trouble  
 “you herewith; **and** I hope, Sir, the Circumstance  
 “of the Place I am in, may excuse the Manner in  
 “which I have **wrote** to you, and count it not an Af-  
 “front; for God is Witness how I love and esteem  
 “the Ministers of *Jesus Christ*; for whose dear Sake,  
 “may the God of infinite Love and Goodness sta-  
 “blish and confirm you in the daily Success of your  
 “ministerial Labours, which are the daily Prayers of

*Your most unworthy,*

*but faithful humble Servant.*

Bethlehem. No. 50. May 5. 1739.

Joseph Periam.

PS. “I am afraid, Sir, I misbehaved myself  
 “when you so kindly came to see me; but if I did in  
 “any Measure, your Christian Love and Charity will  
 “excuse it; for not being warned of your coming,  
 “the Surprize, though pleasant, so fluttered my Spi-  
 “rits, that I was overburdened with Joy.

“O how pleased should I be to see you!”

*To*

101

*To this I sent the following Answer.*

“Dear Sir,

May 7. 1739.

“The Way to Salvation is by *Jesus Christ*, who is  
 “the Way, the Truth, and the Life.—The Way to  
 “*Christ* is by Faith. *Whosoever liveth and believeth*  
 “*in me*, says our Lord, *though he were dead, yet*  
 “*shall he live.* **But** this Faith, if it is a saving Faith,  
 “will work by Love.—Come then to *Jesus Christ* as a  
 “poor Sinner, and he will make you a rich Saint.  
 “This, I think, serves as an Answer to your first  
 “Query.

“It is, no doubt, your Duty, whilst you are in  
 “the House, to submit to the Rules of it; but then  
 “you may use all lawful Means to get yourself out.  
 “I have just now been with your Sister, and will see  
 “what can be done further.—*Watch and pray.*

“As for the Business of an Attorney, I think it  
 “unlawful for a Christian, at least exceeding dange-  
 “rous. Avoid it therefore, and glorify God in some  
 “other Station. I am,

*Dear Sir,*

*Your affectionate Friend and Servant,*

G. W.

*A Day or two after I received a third Letter, which is  
 as follows.*

*“Worthy Sir,*

“I received your Letter, which was a full Answer  
 “to my Queries, and give you my hearty Thanks for  
 “the Trouble you have taken upon you (the only  
 “Gratitude I can at present repay;) but he, whom I have  
 “perfectly at Heart, will supply the Deficiency to  
 “you, and will not suffer a meritorious Act to go un-  
 “rewarded. O how do I daily experience the Love  
 “of *Christ* towards me, who am so vile, base, and  
 “unworthy! I pray God I may always be thankful,  
 “and both ready to do and suffer his most gracious

*“Will,*

102

“Will, which I trust, through your Prayers and God’s  
 “Grace, I shall at all Times submit to.

“My Father was with me last Night, when I  
 “showed him your Letter. I told him, I utterly  
 “renounced the Business of an Attorney. He then  
 “asked what Profession I chose, which I submitted to  
 “him, on Condition it might prove agreeable to the  
 “Will of God. He was pleased to say, he thought  
 “me not mad, but very well in my Senses, and would  
 “take me out, on Condition Doctor *Monro* and the  
 “Committee were of his Opinion. Then he varied  
 “again, and thought it convenient for me to stay the  
 “Summer, and so to take Physick twice a Week,  
 “fearing a Relapse. I told him, as a Father, he  
 “should be wholly obeyed; but when at parting he

“mentioned my leaving Religion (or Words to that Purpose, at which I was somewhat stirred in my Spirit) I told him, nothing should prevail upon me to leave *Jesus Christ*; upon which he left me. This is the Substance of what passed between us, which, I hope, is not amiss to let you know of, as you have been so kind as to plead for my Liberty.

“Upon the whole of the Matter, Sir, God gives me perfect Resignation, and I trust when he shall see fit, will discharge me; and as I find his Love daily more and more shed abroad in my Heart, all Things will work together for my good. Pray, Sir, be thankful for me, and if Opportunity will let you, I should be sincerely glad to see you before you set out for *America*. And may Almighty God, in his infinite Goodness, prosper, guide, and protect you through this transitory Life, and hereafter receive you triumphantly into the heavenly *Jerusalem*, there to converse with, and see the ever blessed *Jesus*, that dear Lamb of God; to which that you may attain, are the hearty and fervent Wishes of

*Your loving and sincere Friend,*

*Wednesday, May 9. 1739.*

Joseph Periam.

“I am ashamed you trouble you thus, but my Heart is full of you.”

Upon

103

Upon reading this, I was sensibly touched with a Fellow-feeling of his Misery; and, at my request, Mr. *Seward*, and two more Friends, waited upon the Committee. But alas! they esteemed my Friends as much mad as the young Man, and frankly told them, both I and my Followers, in their Opinion, were really beside ourselves. My Friend *Seward* urged the Example of the young Persons, who called the Prophet that was sent to anoint *Jehu* King, a mad Fellow;—of our Lord, whom his own Relations, and the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, took to be mad, and besides himself—and *Festus's* Opinion of St. *Paul*.—He further urged,



that when young People were under their first Awakenings, they were usually tempted by the Devil to run into some Extremes.—But all such Language confirmed the Gentlemen more and more, that Mr. *Seward* was mad also. And to prove that the young Man was certainly mad, they called one of the Attendants, who said, when Mr. *Periam* first came into the Place, he stripped himself to his Shirt, and prayed.—The Reason of this, as Mr. *Periam* said afterwards, was, that he might innure himself to Hardship at once: For being brought from *Bethnall Green*, where he was taken great Care of, into a cold Place, without Windows, and a damp Cellar under him, he thought it best to season himself at first, that he might learn to endure Hardness as a good Soldier of *Jesus Christ*. In the midst of the Conference, some Way or other, they mentioned his going to *Georgia*, and said, if I would take him with me, they would engage that his Father should give Leave to have him released.—A Day or two after, Mr. *Seward* waited upon his Father, who gave his Son an excellent Character, and consented to his going abroad.—After this, he waited upon the Doctor, who pronounced him well.—And to Day he waited again upon the Committee, who behaved very civilly, and gave the young Man a Discharge.

He is now with me, and I hope will be an Instrument of doing good.—The Hardships he has endured at *Bethlehem*, will, I hope, prepare him for what he

must

104

must undergo abroad.—And being now not ignorant of *Satan's* Devices, he will be better qualified to prevent his getting an Advantage over others.—Before I leave my Account of him, I cannot help telling what Usage he met with at first coming into *Bethlehem*.—Being sensible within himself, that he wanted no bodily Physick, he was unwilling at first to take it; upon which, four or five took hold of him, cursed him most heartily, put a Key into his Mouth, threw him upon the

Bed, and said (though I had then never seen or heard of him) you are one of *Whitefield's* Gang, and so drenched him.—I hear also, that there was an Order given, that neither I, or any of my Friends, should be permitted to come unto him.—*Good God! how shortly will that Day come when these unhappy Men shall be heard to cry out, "We Fools counted their Lives Madness, and their Ends "to be without Honour! How are they numbred among "the Children of God! How is their Lot among the "Saints!*

Dined at *Clapham* with Mr. B——n, a Quaker. Preached in the Evening at *Kennington Common* to about 15000 People, who were very attentive and affected.—Afterwards I spent two Hours at *Fetter-lane* Society, where we had a most useful Conference concerning the Necessity Christian lay under to have some particular Calling, whereby he may be a useful Member of the Society to which he belongs.—We all agreed to this unanimously; and as for my own Part, I think, if a Man will not labour, neither ought he to eat.—*To be so intent on pursuing the one Thing needful, as to neglect providing for those of our own Households, in my Opinion, is to be righteous overmuch.*

*Sunday, May 20.* Went with our Brethren of *Fetter-lane* Society to *St. Pauls*, and received the holy Sacrament, as a Testimony that we adhered to the Church of *England*.

Preached at *Moorfields* and *Kennington Common*, and at both places collected very near fifty Pounds for the

Orphan-

105

Orphan-house. A visible Alteration is made in the *Peoples* Behaviour:—For though there were near Fifteen thousand in the Morning, and double the Number in the Afternoon, yet they were as quiet during my Sermon, as though there had not been above fifty Persons present.—I did not meet with a Moment's Inter-

ruption. I could say of the Assembly, as *Jacob* did on another Occasion, *Surely God is in this Place.*

### **HERTFORD.**

*Monday, May 21.* Was fully engaged all the Morning in settling my *Georgia* Affairs.—Left *London* about three,—called and prayed at a House or two in the Way, and reached *Hertford* between eight and nine at Night.—I never saw a Town so much alarmed.—The Streets were every Way crowded; and, by the Behaviour of some, I thought we should have had many Scoffers.—But, blessed be God, I never preached to a more quiet Congregation.—The Hearers were in Number about Four or Five thousand, and the Place I preached in was a Common near the Town.—Afterwards, a certain Gentlewoman, *Lydia* like, constrained both me and my Friends, if we judged her worthy, to come and abide in her House that Night, which we did to our great Comfort. *The Lord reward her a Thousand-fold.*

### **HERTFORD, and OULNEY in Buckinghamshire.**

*Tuesday, May 22.* Preached about seven in the Morning from the same Place, and to near as large a Congregation as I did last Night.—God gave me uncommon Power, and all, I hope, went away convinced that my Doctrine was of God.—Breakfasted with Mr. S——d's, a dissenting Minister, who kindly invited and received me and my Friends. Dined at *Hitchin*.—Promised, at the Request of many, to preach

P

to

106

to them, God willing, on *Friday* Morning, and reached *Oulney* about ten at Night, where I long since promised to come.—Here also God had prepared a Table for us; and here I was not a little comforted with meeting with the Reverend Mr. *Rogers* of *Bedford*, who, like me, has lately been thrust out of the Synagogues for speaking of *Justification by Faith* and

the *New Birth*, and has commenced a Field-preacher. Once he was shut in Prison for a short Time, but thousands flock to hear him, and God blesses him more and more. *I believe we are the first professed Ministers of the Church of England that were so soon, and without Cause, excluded every Pulpit. Whether our Reverend Brethren can justify such Conduct, the last Day will determine.*

*Wednesday, May 23.* Being denied the Pulpit, I preached this Morning in a Field near the Town, to about Two thousand People, with much Freedom and Power. They were very attentive, and I could have continued my Discourse much longer; but the Bells ringing for Prayers, I adjourned my Hearers to publick Worship, where many of them went, and God was pleased to speak to us much in the second Lesson.—*How powerfully does the Word of God come to our Hearts, when we experience it? Otherwise, it is a dead Letter.*

#### NORTHAMPTON.

Reached *Northampton* about five in the Evening, and was most courteously received by Doctor *Dodridge*, Master of the Academy there.

At seven, according to Appointment, I preached to about Three thousand Hearers on a Common near the Town, from the Starting-post.—*Great Power, I believe, was amongst us, and* I preached with wonderful Pleasure; because I thought I had then actual

Posses-

107

Possession of one of the Devil's strong Holds. *Oh that we may all run so as to obtain the Crown of Life, which God, the righteous Judge will give, at the last Day, to all that love our Lord Jesus in Sincerity.*

*Thursday, May 24.* Preached again in the same Place at about eight in the Morning, but to a much

larger Audience. Breakfasted with some pious Friends. Was greatly comforted by several choice Children of God, who came to me from different Parts, and left *Northampton* about eleven, rejoycing with my Friends at the mighty Things God had already done, and was yet about to do for us. *Many righteous Souls live in and about Northampton, and nothing confirms me more in my Opinion, that God intends to Work a great Work upon the Earth, than to find how his Children of all Denominations every where wrestle in Prayer for me.*

### OULNEY.

Being much solicited thereto, after Sermon yesterday, I hastened, in Company with near a dozen Friends, to *Oulney*, eight long Miles from *Northampton*, and got thither about ten of the Clock.—Great Numbers were assembled together; but on account of its being a rainy Day, it was judged inconvenient to preach in the Fields.—I therefore stood upon an Eminence in the Street, and preached from thence with such Power as I have not for some Time experienced. Though it rained all the Time, yet the People stood very attentive and patient. All, I really believe, *felt*, as well as *heard* the Word, and one was so pricked to the Heart, and convinced of Sin, that I scarce ever saw the like Instance.—*The Word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than a two-edged Sword.*

P 2

BED-

108

### BEDFORD.

Hasted away as fast as possible from *Oulney* to *Bedford*, where I had promised, God willing, to preach to Night. About *seven we got thither, and found the Town fully alarmed.*—About eight, I preached from the Stairs of a Windmill (the Pulpit of my dear Brother and Fellow Labourer Mr. Rogers) to about Three thousand People; and God was pleased to give me such extraordinary Assistance, that I believe few,

if any, were able to resist the Power wherewith God enabled me to speak. My Heart was full of God, and I spake as one having Authority.—God caused me to renew my Strength, and gave me such inward Support, that my Journey did not affect me.—*As my Day is, so shall my Strength be.*

*Friday, May 25.* Preached at seven in the Morning with great Power, and rather a larger Congregation than before.—Took an affectionate Leave of many gracious Souls, and reached *Hitchin*, ten Miles from *Bedford*, about one of the Clock at Noon.—The Town, I perceived, was much alarmed, and many devout Souls came from far to hear me.—About two, I got upon a Table in the Market-place, near the Church; but some were pleased to ring the Bells in order to disturb us. Upon this, not having begun, we removed into a most commodious Place in the Fields; but being a little fatigued with my Ride, and the Sun beating most intensely upon my Head, I was obliged, in a short Time, to break off, being exceeding sick and weak.—A kind Gentlewoman offered me her House, where I went, and lay down for about two Hours, and then came and preached near the same Place, and God was with us.—It was surprising to see how the Hearts of the People were knit to me.—I could have continued longer with them;

but

109

but being under an Engagement to go to *St. Albans*, I hastned thither, but could not preach on account of my coming in so late. Great Numbers had been there expecting me; and it grieved me to think how little I could do for *Christ*. *For he is a gracious Master, and had I a thousand Lives, they should be spent in his Service.*

#### **St. ALBANS and LONDON.**

*Saturday, May 26.* Had a comfortable Night's Rest, which much refreshed me.—Preached at seven in the

Morning to about Fifteen hundred People in a Field near the Town *with great Power*, and got safe to London by two in the Afternoon.—Blessed be God, this has been a Week of fat Things.—Many further Inroads have been made into Satan's Kingdom.—Many Sinners convicted, and many Saints much comforted and established in their most holy Faith. I find there are some thousand secret ones yet living amongst us, *that* have not bowed the Knee to Baal, and this publick Way of acting brings them out.—It much comforts me, wherever I go, to see so many of God's Children, of all Communions, come and wish me good Luck in the Name of the Lord.—I perceive the People would be every where willing to hear, if the Ministers were ready to teach the Truth as it is in Jesus.—Lord, do thou *spirit* up more of my dear Friends and Fellow Labourers to go out into the Highways and Hedges, to compel poor Sinners to come in. Amen.

Received an excellent Letter from the Reverend Mr. Ebenezer Erskine of Scotland, Brother to Mr. Ralph Erskine, acquainting me of his preaching last Week to Fourteen thousand People.—*Blessed be God, there are more Field-preachers in the World besides myself. The Lord furnish us all with spiritual Food wherewith to feed so great Multitudes.*

Preached in the Evening at Kennington Common to about Fifteen thousand People, and we had an extraor-

dinary

110

dinary Presence of God amongst us. *Oh! that all who object against this Way of preaching, would come and see,—all sincere Persons must go convicted away.*

Sunday, May 27. Preached this morning at Moorfields to about Twenty thousand, and God manifested himself still more and more.—My Discourse was near two Hours long. My Heart was full of Love; and People were so melted down on every Side, that the greatest Scoffer must have owned that this was the

Finger of God.—Went twice to publick Worship, received the blessed Sacrament, and preached, as usual, in the Evening at *Kennington Common*, to about the same Number of People as I did last Lord's Day. *Perceived* I was a little hoarse; but God strengthened me to speak so as not only to be heard, but felt by most that stood near me. *Glory be to God on high.*

*Monday, May 28.* Preached, after earnest and frequent Invitation, at *Hackney*, in a Field belonging to one Mr. *Rudge*, to about Ten thousand People.—I insisted much upon the Reasonableness of the Doctrine of the *New Birth*, and the Necessity of our receiving the Holy Ghost in his sanctifying Gifts and Graces, as well now as formerly. God was pleased to impress it most deeply upon the Hearers. Great Numbers were *drowned* in Tears; and I could not help exposing the Impiety of those Letter-learned Teachers, who say, We are not now to receive the Holy Ghost, and count the Doctrine of the *New Birth*, *Enthusiasm*. *Out of your own Mouths will I condemn you, you wicked and blind Guides.* Did you not, at the Time of Ordination, tell the Bishop, that you were inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost to take upon you the Administration of the Church? Surely, at that Time, you acted the Crime of Ananias and Sapphira over again. You lyed, not unto Man, but unto God.

*Tuesday,*

111

*Tuesday, May 29.* Went to publick Service at *Westminster Abbey*. Afterwards despatched Business for my Orphans, and preached at *Kennington* to a most devout Auditory with much Sweetness and Power. The Subject I treated of, was our Lord's Miracle of the Loaves and Fishes; and I hope he who fed so many thousands with bodily Bread, *did* feed my Hearers Souls with the Bread of Life which cometh down from Heaven.



*Wednesday, May 30.* Waited upon the Bishop of *Bristol* (who treated me with the utmost Civility) and received his Lordship's Benefaction for *Georgia*. At the Request of many, I preached in the Evening at *Newington Common* to about Fifteen thousand People. A most commodious Place was erected for me to preach from. The Word came with Power; and seeing a great Multitude, I thought proper to collect for the Orphan-house. Sixteen Pounds nine Shillings and four Pence were gathered on that Occasion. *Blessed be the Lord for thus prospering the Work of my Hands upon me.*

*Thursday, May 31.* Was taken very ill this Afternoon; but God was pleased to strengthen me to go to *Kennington*, where I preached to my usual Congregation; and three of my Brethren in the Ministry were pleased to accompany me, which filled the People with exceeding great Joy. *Thou Lord of the Harvest, send forth, we beseech thee, more Labourers into thy Harvest.*

*Friday, June 1.* Dined at *Oldford*,—gave a short Exhortation to a few People in a Field, and preached in the Evening at a Place called *Mayfair*, near *Hyde-Park-Corner*.—The Congregation, I believe, consisted of near Eighty thousand People.—It was, by far, the largest I ever preached to yet.—In the Time of my

Prayers

112

Prayer there was a little Noise; but they kept a deep Silence during my whole Discourse.—An high and very commodious Scaffold was erected for me to stand upon; and though I was weak in myself, yet God strengthened me to speak so loud that most could hear; and so powerfully, that most, I believe, could feel, *All Love, all Glory be to God through Christ.*

*So weak, so frail an Instrument,†  
If thou, my God, vouchsafe to use;†*

*'Tis Praise enough to be employed,†  
Reward enough, if thou excuse.*

*If thou excuse, then work thy Will†  
By so unfit an Instrument;†  
It will at once thy Goodness shew,†  
And prove thy Pow'r Omnipotent.*

*Saturday, June 2.* Sent another Quaker to be baptized by Mr. Stonehouse. Collected by private Contributions, nearly fifty Pounds for the Orphans, and preached in the Evening to about Ten thousand at *Hackney*, where twenty Pounds twelve Shillings and four Pence were gathered on the same Occasion. Before I went out to preach, I was very sick and weak; but *such* Power was given me from above, that I continued preaching for an Hour and a Half, *and was so assisted, that the People were dissolved into Tears, and wept most bitterly.* It rained some considerable Time, but almost all were unmoved; and I was so enlarged, by talking of the Love and Free Grace of *Jesus Christ*, that I could have continued my Discourse till Midnight. *This Promise, They that wait on the Lord shall renew, their Strength is fulfilled in me daily. Oh free Grace in Christ Jesus our Lord!*

*Sunday,*

113

*Sunday, June 3.* Preached at *Moorfields* to a larger Congregation than ever, and collected Twenty nine Pounds seventeen Shillings and nine Pence for the Orphan-house; went twice to publick Worship, received the Sacrament, *and* preached in the Evening at *Kennington Common*, to the most numerous Audience I ever yet saw in that Place, and collected Thirty four Pounds five Shillings. When I mentioned my Departure from them, they were melted into Tears.—Thousands of Ejaculations and fervent Prayers were poured out to God on my Behalf, which gave me abundant Reason to be thankful to my dear Master.—*Oh what*

*marvellous great Kindness has God shewn me in this great City! Indeed I have seen the Kingdom of God come with Power, and cannot but say, Blessed are the Eyes which see the Things that we see, and hear the Things which we hear; for many righteous Souls have desired to see the Things which we see, and to hear the Things which we hear, and have not heard them. I now go, I trust, under the Conduct of God's holy Spirit, to Pensylvania and Virginia, and from thence to Georgia, knowing not what will befall me, save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every Place, that Labours, Afflictions, and Trials of all Kinds abide me. O my dear Friends pray that none of these Things may move me, and that I may not count even my Life dear unto myself, so that I may finish my Course with Joy, and the Ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus. Into his Hands I commend my whole Spirit, Soul and Body; his Will be done in me, by me, and upon me, for Time, and for Eternity. Let me do or suffer just as seemeth good in his Sight. Only do thou, O Lord, give me that Wisdom which dwelleth with Prudence, that I may never suffer for my own Misconduct, but only for Righteousness Sake.—Reward, O Lord, my dear Friends for all their Works of Faith, and Labours of Love.—Forgive my Enemies; and grant we may all effectually be called by thy free Grace, and after Death be translated to sit on thy Right-hand.—*

Q

*Prepare*

114

*Prepare me for the fiery Trial wherewith I must be tried, and make me faithful to the Trust committed to my Charge. May I carefully watch the Flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made me overseer, and may I, in all Things, behave as a good Steward of the manifold Gifts of God.—May the past Mercies make me humble and truly thankful, and may I be prepared for these greater Things which I am yet to see.—May the Souls of all to whom I have preached be precious in thy Sight, and may we all meet to be one another's Joy, and Crown of rejoicing in the Day of the Lord Jesus; though absent in Body, may we be pre-*

*sent in Spirit, and always have Reason to triumph because of the Truth. May we go from conquering to conquer, and see Satan, like Lightning, fall from Heaven. May God pour into our Hearts a Spirit of Prayer and Supplication, and may our Prayers ascend up as an acceptable Sacrifice through Jesus Christ. To whom, with thee, O Father, and thee, O Holy Ghost, three Persons, and one God, be all Glory, Might, Majesty, and Dominion, now, and for evermore. Amen.*

*Captain of my Salvation, hear!ε  
Stir up thy Strength, and bow the Skies;ε  
Be Thou the God of Battles near;ε  
In all thy Majesty arise!*

*The Day, the dreadful Day's at hand!ε  
In Battle cover thou my Head:ε  
Past is thy Word: I here demand,ε  
And confident expect thine Aid.*

*Now arm me for the threatening Fight,ε  
Now let thy Power descend from high,ε  
Triumphant in thy Spirit's Might,ε  
So shall I every Foe defy.*

*I ask thy Help; by Thee sent forthε  
Thy glorious Gospel to proclaim,ε  
Be thou my Mouth, and shake the Earth,ε  
And spread by Me thy awful Name.*

115

*Steel me to Shame, Reproach, Disgrace,ε  
Arm me with all thy Armour now,ε  
Set like a Flint my steady Face,ε  
Harden to Adamant my Brow.*

*Bold may I wax, exceeding boldε  
My high Commission to perform,ε  
Nor shrink thy harshest Truths t'unfold,ε  
But more than meet the gathering Storm.*

*Adverse to Earth's rebellious Throng, ‡  
Still may I turn my fearless Face, ‡  
Stand as an Iron Pillar strong, ‡  
And stedfast as a Wall of Brass.*

*Give me thy Might, Thou GOD of Power; ‡  
Then let or Men or Fiends assail! ‡  
Strong in thy Strength, I'll stand a Tower, ‡  
Impregnable to Earth or Hell.*

**FINIS.**

THIRD JOURNAL

341

[FOURTH JOURNAL]

A

CONTINUATION

Of the REVEREND

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL,

During the Time he was detained in

ENGLAND by the Embargo

LONDON:

Printed by W. STRAHAN, and sold by JAMES  
HUTTON, at the *Bible and Sun*, without *Temple-*  
*Bar*. 1739.

To the Reverend  
**Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.**

I.

**S**ERVANT of GOD, the Summons hear, &  
     Thy Master calls, arise, obey! &  
 The Tokens of his Will appear, &  
     His Providence points out thy Way.

II.

Lo! we commend thee to his Grace! &  
     In Confidence go forth! be strong! &  
 Thy Meat his Will, thy Boast his Praise, &  
     His Righteousness be all thy Song.

III.

Strong in the Lord's Almighty Power, &  
     And arm'd in Panoply Divine, &  
 Firm may'st thou stand in Danger's Hour, &  
     And prove the Strength of JESUS Thine.

IV.

Thy Breast-plate be his Righteousness, &  
     His sacred Truth thy Loins surround; &  
 Shod be thy beauteous Feet with Peace, &  
     Spring forth, and spread the Gospel Sound.

*Fight*

V.

Fight the good Fight, and stand secure &  
     In Faith's impenetrable Shield; &  
 Hell's Prince shall tremble at its Power, &  
     With all his fiery Darts repel.

VI.

Prevent thy Foes, nor wait their Charge, &  
     But call their ling'ring Battle on. &

## THIRD JOURNAL

343

*But strongly grasp thy Sevenfold Targe, ‡  
And bear the World, and Satan down.*

## VII.

*The Helmet of Salvation take, ‡  
The Lord's, the Spirit's conqu'ring Sword, ‡  
Speak from the Word—In Lightning speak, ‡  
Cry out, and thunder—from the Word.*

## VIII.

*Champion of GOD, thy LORD proclaim, ‡  
JESUS alone, resolve to know; ‡  
Tread down thy Foes in JESU's Name: ‡  
Go—Conqu'ring, and to conquer go.*

## IX.

*Thro' Racks and Fires pursue thy Way, ‡  
Be mindful of a dying GOD; ‡  
Finish thy Course, and win the Day: ‡  
Look up—And seal the Truth with Blood.*

CHARLES WESLEY.



I

## [[FOURTH JOURNAL]]

A

## CONTINUATION

OF

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL, &amp;c.

BLACKHEATH, in KENT.

*Monday, June 4.*

WENT a second Time to pay my Respects to the *the* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, but his Grace was gone out, as before.—Waited upon the Bishop of *London*, who used me very civilly.—Finished all my Affairs according to my Mind.—Took Leave of my weeping Friends, and went in Company with many of them to *Blackheath*, where was near as large a Congregation as *there was* at *Kennington* the last *Lord's-Day*.—I think I never was so much enlarged since I have preached in the Fields.—My Discourse *was* near two Hours *long*, and the People were so melted down, and wept so loud, that they almost drowned my Voice.—I could not but cry out, *Come, ye Pharisees, come and see the Lord Jesus getting himself the Victory*.—Afterwards went to an Inn upon the *Heath*, where many came drowned in Tears to take a last Farewel.—The Remainder of the Evening I spent *most comfortably* with se-

B

veral

veral of my *Brethren*, and went to Bed about 12 o'Clock.—I hope, in some Measure, thankful for the great Things we had seen and heard.

#### ***Blendon.***

*Tuesday, June 5.* Went in the morning to *Blendon*, five Miles from *Blackheath*, and enjoy'd a sweet Retreat at the House of Mr. *Delamot*.—Preached with unusual Power at *Bexley Common*, at 11 in the Morning, to about 300 People, and in the Evening, near *Woolwich*, to several Thousands.—*My Word, I believe, came with the Demonstration of the Spirit*,—I return'd to *Blendon* rejoicing, and spent the Evening most delightfully with many dear Christian Friends, who came from *London* to see me.—*Oh! how does their sweet Company cause me to long for Communion amongst the Spirits of just Men made perfect! Accomplish, O Lord, I beseech thee, the Number of thine Elect, and hasten thy Kingdom.*

#### ***Bexley, and Gravesend.***

*Wednesday, June 6.* Breakfasted with many Friends, and gave a Word of Exhortation to many more *that* came from *London* to bid me Adieu.—Their Hearts were ready to break with Sorrow.—But GOD, I hope, will supply my Absence, by raising up more Ministers to go in and out before them.—About 10 in the Morning, read Prayers, and preached at *Bexley Church*, Mr. *Peers*, the Vicar, my Brother and Fellow-Labourer in *Christ*, having given me a pressing Invitation.—The Congregation was large, and my Soul was so filled with GOD, that the Word came with very great Power to all who heard me.—*Blessed be God*.—After Sermon we dined with Mr. *Peers*, and having taken a Farewel, we left our Friends in Tears, and hasted to *Gravesend*, where I read Prayers, and preached in a Church near the Town to about 600 People.—*I have no Objection against, but highly approve of the excellent Liturgy of our Church, would Ministers lend me their Churches to use it in*.—*If not, let them blame themselves, that I pray and preach in the Fields.*

***Gravesend, Bexley, and Blendon.***

*Thursday, June 7.* Received two Letters from Persons, confessing, that they came to hear me out of a bad Motive, but were apprehended by the free Grace of *Jesus Christ*.—Answered them, and some others.—Read Prayers, and preached in the same Church as I did last Night.—Took some Refreshment, and returned in the Evening, and preached in *Bexley Church*, being much excited so to do by the kind Sollicitations of Mr. *Peers*.—The Congregation was much larger than we could expect, and most, I believe, were much affected.—Here some of Mr. *Delamot's* Family gave us the Meeting.—After Sermon I return'd to their House at *Blendon*, praising and blessing GOD, that we had once more an Opportunity of building up each other in our most holy Faith.—*Oh! how sweet is this Retirement to my Soul!* GOD is pleased to meet me in it, and vouchsafe me great Measures of his divine Presence.—I must expect some fresh Trials. *Dearest Lord, sweeten all thy Dispensations with a Sense of thy Love, and then deal with me as it seemeth good in thy Sight!*

*Friday, June 8.* Preached at *Bexley* in the Morning, and at *Charlton* in the Afternoon, whither I was invited by the Earl and Countess of *Egmont*. Both before and after Sermon they entertained me with the utmost Civility.—My Heart was much comforted by GOD, and at Night I returned with my Friends to my sweet Retreat at *Blendon*. *Oh! the Comforts of having all of one Mind in a House! It begins our Heaven upon Earth.—Was I left to my own Choice, here would be my Rest.—For I have a Delight herein.—But a Necessity is laid upon me, and wo unto me if I preach not the Gospel.*

*Saturday, June 9.* Was much pleased and edified in reading Bishop *Hall's Christ Mystical*, and *Erskines's Sermons*, both whose works, with *Boehm's Sermons*, I would earnestly recommend to everyone.—Preached in the Evening at *Dulwich*, to not a very large Congregation, and went after-

wards to *Blackheath*, and spent a most agreeable Evening with many Christian Friends, who came thither on Purpose to give me the Meeting.—*Blessed be God, all behaved, as tho' their Conversation was in Heaven.*

B 2

*Blendon,*

4

***Blendon, Bexley and Blackheath.***

*Sunday, June 10.* Hasten'd back to *Blendon*, where more of our Brethren came last Night to see me.—Preached with more Power than ever, and assisted in administring the Sacrament to about 200 Communicants in *Bexley Church*.—Din'd, gave Thanks, and sung Hymns at Mr. *Delamot's*.—Preached with great Power in the Evening on *Blackheath*, to above 20000 People, and collected sixteen Pounds seven Shillings for the Orphans.—After Sermon I went to the *Green Man*, near the Place where I preached, and continued till Midnight instant in Prayer, Praise, and Thanksgiving, and Christian Conversation.—I believe there were near 50 or 60 of us in all.—*Great Decency, and much Devotion was to be seen.*—Numbers stood by as Spectators.—God enlarged my Heart much in Prayer and Exhortation.—*And in short every Thing was so well regulated, that all unprejudic'd Persons that came in must say, Surely God is in this Place.*

Many of them watched unto Prayer and Praise all Night—I think it every Christian's Duty to be particularly careful to honour and glorify God *in Places* where he is most dishonour'd. Some can sing the Songs of the Drunkards in Publick Houses, Others can spend whole Nights in Chambering and Wantonness, why should Christians be ashamed to sing the Songs of the Lamb, and spend Nights, as their Lord did before them, in Exercises of Devotion?

*Silent have we been too long,†  
Aw'd by Earth's rebellious Throng,†  
Thee if we should still deny,†  
Lord, the very Stones would cry,†  
Hallelujah.*

***Blackheath, Bexley, Dulwich and Blendon.***

*Monday, June 11.* Pray'd, sung with, and gave a warm Exhortation to those that continued at *Blackheath* all Night—Read Prayers at *Bexley Church*, Din'd with Mrs. S—— at *Lewisham*, a Gentlewoman, who gladly received both me and my Friends into her House.—Preached in the Evening to a

much

5

much larger Audience than before at *Dulwich*, and then hastened back to *Blendon*, in Company with some who Love our Lord *Jesus* in Sincerity. *Oh how swiftly and delightfully do those Hours pass away which are spent in Christian Conversation!*

***Blendon, Bexley and Blackheath.***

*Tuesday, June 12.* Read Prayers at *Bexley Church*—Begun (being pressed thereto both in Spirit and by my Friends) to put some of my Extempore Discourses into Writing—Preached at *Blackheath* in the Evening to about 20000 People and spent the remaining Part of the Night, with rather more Friends, and as much Chearfulness, Decency, and Devotion as on Sunday Night last.—Several People of different Ranks stood by, as before, Some, I hope, went away edified, for God gave me great Enlargement of Soul, and the Exhortation, which was long and powerful, I believe, reached their Hearts. *God grant we may thus always continue to let our Light shine before Men.—It cannot but bring Glory to our Father which is in Heaven.*

*Wednesday, June 13.* Retired in the Morning to *Blendon*—preached, as usual, at *Blackheath*, and went with my Fellow Travellers to *Lewisham*, about a Mile off, to the House of Mrs. S——, who has frequently pressed me to abide there—*How does God raise me up Friends unsought for in every Place! Who would but naked follow a naked Christ?* After Supper I expounded to, and prayed with several Gentlemen and Ladies whom Mrs. S—— had invited to hear the Word. *Oh that it may take deep Root in their Hearts!*

*Thursday, June 14.* Spent the whole Day in my pleasant and profitable Retreat at *Blendon*—And in the Evening had

the Pleasure of introducing my Honoured and Reverend Friend Mr. *John Wesley* to preach at *Blackheath*—*The Lord give him ten thousand times more Success than He has given me!* After Sermon, we spent the Evening most agreeably together with many Christian Friends at the *Green Man*—About ten we admitted all to come in *that* would—The Room was soon filled—God gave me Utterance.—I exhorted and prayed for near an Hour, and then went to Bed, rejoicing that another fresh Inrode was made into *Satan's Territories*, by Mr. *Wesley's* following me in Field-preaching *as well* in *London* as in *Bristol*.—*Lord, give the Word, and great shall be the Company of such Preachers. Amen, Amen.*

*Friday,*

6

*Friday, June 15.* Continued at *Blendon* all Day.—Preached with great Power in the Evening at *Blackheath* to about as many as usual, and after retired to *Lewisham*, where I and my Friends were again most kindly receiv'd by Mrs. S——. *May the Lord bless her House as he did the house of Obed-edom, and make each of our Souls an Ark of the Holy Spirit.*

*Saturday, June 16.* Returned in the Morning to *Blendon*—Finished some Writings I had in Hand, and preached in the Evening at *Blackheath* on *Abraham's Offering up his Son Isaac*.—*God make us Partakers of such a working Obedient Faith!*

*Sunday, June 17.* Preached *with much Power* in *Bexley Church*, and helped to administer to near 300 Communicants, most of *which* came from *London*.—Baptiz'd a Person 28 Years of Age, whom God had work'd upon by my Ministry. Din'd at *Blendon*, and took sweet Counsel with many Christian Friends—Preached to above 20000 People at *Blackheath*, and afterwards sup'd again at the *Green Man*. There were near 300 in the Room—*God was pleased to give me extraordinary Assistance* in exhorting and Prayer, *which I continued* till Eleven o' Clock, and then retired to Bed much pleas'd to think Religion, which had long been skulking in Corners, and was almost laugh'd out of the World, should now begin to appear abroad, and openly shew herself at Noon-day. *Let them count us Vain-glorious for thus confessing Christ before*

*Men—It is a small Thing with us to be judged of Mens Judgment—To our own Master we stand or fall. What we are the last Day will shew.*

### ***Hertford.***

*Monday, June 18.* An Embargo being laid upon the Shipping for some Weeks, I had time to go to *Hertford*, whither I was invited by several pressing Letters, declaring how God had work'd by my Ministry, when I was there last—We din'd and pray'd with *Madame Cook* of *Newington* and her Family, and reached the Place intended by seven at Night—A most kind Reception I met with from many Christians—At eight I preached, according to Appointment, **with Freedom of Spirit**, to about 4000 People, who were quite silent and attentive—**Blessed be God**, I found myself much stronger than when I was here last—*God grant I may so live that my Progress may be made known unto all Men!*

*Tuesday,*

7

*Tuesday, June 19.* Preached this Morning about seven of the Clock to near 3000 People **with uncommon Enlargement of Heart, and apparent Success**—Many came to me under strong Convictions of their fall'n Estate, and their Want of a Godman to be their Mediator—Many I heard of besides who had been much worked upon by my Preaching—Several Christian Families, I find, had been Comforted—And such immediate Effects produced, that I could not help rejoicing **in Spirit** exceedingly—Breakfasted, din'd, pray'd, and sung Hymns with Mr. S—, a Dissenting Minister, was visited by some Quakers, and in the Afternoon waited upon Mr. Th—ood, a Baptist Teacher, who, unknown to me, had sent a Horse to fetch me from *London*.—Preached at seven in the Evening to about five thousand Souls upon the Faith of *Abraham*, in which GOD was pleased to give me great Freedom, and the People great Attention.—I believe GOD has much People in and near *Hertford*.—**His especial Providence which details me in England sent me hither.**—I trust they have received a second Benefit.—*Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy*

*Name, unto thy free Grace in Christ Jesus our Lord, be all the Glory.*

***Broad-oaks, in Essex.***

*Wednesday, June 20.* Set out about five in the Morning, and hasted to *Broad-oaks*, about 20 Miles from *Hertford*.—About Midway at *Bishop-Stortford*, as we were passing thro', a Person **entirely** unknown, constrained both me and my Friends to come and refresh ourselves a little at his House.—We accepted his Offer, and found he was Son of a Gentleman, who had sent to engage me to preach at this Place on *Friday* Night next.—Having spent an Hour very agreeably with some Christian Friends, he went with us, **and brought us on our Way** to *Broad-oaks*, the Way being intricate.—About 12 we got thither, and perceived that Providence had sent us most opportunely to a Family, some of whom being born after the Spirit, are, for that Reason, most violently opposed and persecuted by those Foes of their own Household, who are only born after the Flesh. A Clergyman has been employed to divert them from their present Madness, as they call it; and has done them the Honour of Preaching against them.—For this Week past, they have been continually be—

set

8

set with Numbers of such, who are Lovers of Pleasure more than Lovers of GOD, and who would tell them, that a decent, genteel and fashionable Religion, is sufficient to carry them to Heaven.—They knew nothing of my paying them this Visit, which made them more thankful.—No one can tell what a comfortable Meeting GOD gave us.—Surely it was Heaven begun upon earth.—We found the Sweets of Opposition, and rejoiced greatly in the Prospect of suffering for *Christ's* Sake.—To encrease our Satisfaction, Mr. *Delamot*, a Convert of Mr. *Ingham's*, came from *Cambridge* to meet us.—He is scandalously opposed at that University.—The Students make him a Proverb of Reproach, and abuse him in the rudest Manner.—He has been forbid coming in to one College, and two or three that associate with him have been threatened much by their Tutors for keeping him



Company.—And here I cannot but remark what wonderful Mercies GOD has shewn this Mr. *Delamot's* Family.—About three or four Years ago, GOD was pleased to touch the Heart of his Brother *Charles*, who hearing that Mr. *Wesley* was going to *Georgia*, (tho' his Father would have settled him in a very handsome Way) offered to go Abroad with him as a Servant.—His Parents Consent was asked, but they, and almost all their Relations, opposed it strenuously.—However, the young Man being resolute, and convinced that GOD called him, they at length somewhat consented. He went abroad, lived with Mr. *Wesley*, served under him as a Son in the Gospel, did much good, and endured great Hardships for the Sake of *Jesus Christ*.—Behold, how GOD rewarded him for leaving all.—Whilst he was absent, GOD was pleased to make Use of the ministry of Mr. *Ingham*, and Mr. *Charles Wesley*, in converting his Mother, two Sisters, and this young Gentleman **before-mentioned** at *Cambridge*, who, I pray GOD, may stand as a Barrier against the Profaneness, Debauchery, Lukewarmness, and Deism of that Seat of Learning, and prove both a *Barnabas*, and *Boanerges* in the Church of *England*!—But to return—After having spent some comfortable Hours together, we went to *Wimbish Green*, where Mr. *Charles Wesley* had preached some Time ago. I rode thither in a Chaise, and preached from it to about 400 People, with great Freedom and Power.—About 9 we returned to *Broad-oaks*, and spent the most heavenly Night I have known for a long while. Oh! how doubly sweet are Opportunities when we have been debarred of them

for

9

for some Time! I believe the Saints of old had never so much Comfort, as when they were obliged to shut the Doors for Fear of the *Jews*, and to hide themselves in Dens and Caves of the Earth. *The Lord prepare us all for such an Hour.*

### ***Saffron Walden.***

*Thursday, June 21.* **Was much refreshed by last Night's Rest.**—Preached at *Saffron-walden*, eight Miles from *Broad-*

*oaks*, to about 2000 People: Din'd with my Friends at Mr. F——r's.—Preached at five in the Evening to a *like* Congregation as before, and returned to *Broad-oaks*, singing and praising GOD.—*Wherever I go, People fly to the Doctrine of Jesus Christ, as the Doves to the Windows.—My Sheep, says our Lord, hear my Voice.—A Stranger will they not hear.*

***Thaxted, and Bishop-stortford.***

Friday, June 22. Read Part of *Jenks's Submission to the Righteousness of Christ*, a most excellent Book.—Preached at nine in the Morning at *Thaxted*, about two Miles from *Broad-oaks*, to upwards of 1000 People, and with such Sweetness and Power, as I have not felt since I came into *Essex*.—All around me were melted into Tears.—*My own Heart was so filled with Love, that I think I could then have laid down my Life for their Sakes.*—After Sermon, Mr. S——g, kindly entertained me, and my Fellow-travellers, and many others that came to hear me.—We spent our Time most Christianly together, and afterwards went to *Bishop-stortford*, about 12 Miles from *Thaxted*.—Where I promised, GOD willing, to preach as to-Night. About five we got thither, and at six, GOD enabled me to preach with Power to near 4000 People.—Many devout Souls were present, and several Invitations were given me in the Name of *Christ* to other Parts of *Essex*, which I promised to *do*, supposing the Embargo on the Shipping continued.—*Blessed be God, this itinerant Preaching brings me acquainted with Numbers of his Children, which otherwise I might never have seen or heard of in this Life. The united fervent Prayers of so many righteous Souls, undoubtedly will avail much in my Behalf! Lord, was ever Love like thine!*

C

*Blackheath.*

10

***Blackheath.***

Saturday, June 23. Set out betimes from *Bishop-stortford*, and reached *Blackheath* about three in the Afternoon.—Preached at seven in the Evening to about 1000 People.—

The Smallness of the Congregation was occasioned by a Report that I was dead.—Wherever I **came** I found the People much surprized and rejoiced to see me alive.—*God knows I long to be dissolved and to be with Christ, but as I have scarce begun my Testimony, I believe I shall not yet die, but live, and declare the Works of the Lord.—Hereafter I hope he will enable me to say, I have fought a good Fight, I have finished my Course, I have kept the Faith. Henceforth there is laid up for me a Crown of Righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that Day, and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his Appearing.*

**Bexley.**

Sunday, June 24. Read Prayers, assisted in administering the Sacrament at Bexley Church.—Many came from far, and expected to hear me, but the Diocesan had been pleased to insist on the Vicar's denying me the Pulpit. Whether for just Cause GOD shall judge at the last Day.—If we have done any Thing worthy the Censures of the Church, why do not the Right Reverend the Bishops call us to a publick Account? If not, why do they not confess and own us? It is well we can appeal to the great Bishop of Souls. They say, it is not regular our going out into the Highways and Hedges, and compelling poor Sinners to come in. We ought not *so* to beseech them to be reconciled to GOD. They desire to know by what Authority we preach, and ask, what Sign shewest thou that thou dost these Things? But, alas! what further Sign would they require? We went not into the Fields till we were excluded the Churches: and has not GOD set his Seal to our Ministry in an extraordinary Manner? Have not Many that were spiritually Blind received their Sight? Many that have been Lame strengthened to run the Way of GOD's Commandments? Have not the Deaf heard? The Lepers been cleansed? The Dead raised? And the Poor had

the

II

the Gospel preached unto them? That these notable Miracles have been wrought, not in our own Names, or by our own Power, but in the Name and by the Power of *Jesus* of

Nazareth, cannot be denied. And yet they require a Sign?  
*But verily there shall no other Sign be given to this evil and  
 adulterous Generation!*

Preached in the Afternoon to about 300 People in Justice  
 Delamot's Yard, and in the Evening on Blackheath, to up-  
 wards of 20000, on these Words, *And they cast him out.*  
 I recommended to the People the Example of the blind Beg-  
 gar, reminded them of preparing for the gathering Storm,  
 and exhorted them in the Name of *Christ Jesus* to follow the  
 Example of the meek Lamb of GOD, supposing my Ene-  
 mies should think that they did GOD good Service to kill  
 me. I dread nothing more than the false Zeal of my friends  
 in a suffering Hour.—*God grant that we may learn when we are  
 reviled, not to revile again, when we suffer may we threaten  
 not, but commit our Souls into the Hands of him that judgeth  
 righteously.—Lord, endue us with the Spirit of thy first Mar-  
 tyr, St. Stephen, that we may pray most earnestly even for our  
 very Murderers!*

#### **London.**

Monday and Tuesday, June 25. Came hither privately  
 last night.—Went to a Love-Feast in Fetter-Lane, and in-  
 tended setting out the next Morning, being greatly impor-  
 tuned thereto, for Gloucester in the Stage-Coach, but there  
 were no vacant Places.—Spent the Day in writing Letters,  
 and settling some Affairs.—Preached in the Evening to about  
 as many as usual on *Kennington Common*, with great and visi-  
 ble Success.—Spent a delightful Hour with many Christian  
 Friends. Took Coach about 11 at Night, and reached Ci-  
 rencester by 10 the next Evening. *Justly may I say, I am a  
 Stranger and Pilgrim upon Earth: For I have here no conti-  
 nuing City.—May I always be preparing myself for that which  
 is to come, a City not made with Hands, eternal in the Hea-  
 vens, whose Builder and Maker is God!*

**Cirencester, and Gloucester.**

*Wednesday, June 26* [[27]]. Waited on the Minister of the Parish, and asked him for the Use of his Pulpit, but he refused it, because I had not my Letters of Orders.—Went to publick Worship at 11. and preached to about 3000 People in a Field near the Town, about 12.—Was afterwards visited by several **gracious Souls** of the *Baptist's* Congregation, who brought me five Guineas for the Orphan-house, set out about 4 in the Afternoon, and reached *Gloucester* about 7 in the Evening, to the inexpressible Joy of many.—The late Report of my being dead has only serv'd to make my present Visits more welcome.—*Thus all Things work together for good to those that love God*—Soon after I came into Town, I visited the Society, and expounded for the Space of an Hour to more People than the Room (tho' it was large) would contain. Blessed be GOD all heard the Word most gladly.—I now see the Seed sown when I was here last, was not all sown on stony thorny Ground: No, some has been received into honest and good Hearts.—*This is the Lord's doing—to him be all the Glory through Jesus Christ.*

**Gloucester.**

*Thursday, June 27* [[28]]. Preached in the Morning to about 1000 People in my Brother's Field.—Went to publick Prayers at the Cathedral.—Waited upon the Bishop, who received me very civilly.—Visited some sick Persons in the Afternoon who sent for me.—Preached at Night to upwards of 3000.—**GOD was pleased to give me uncommon Freedom and Liberty in speaking.—Much Power from above was amongst is.**—Great Numbers were melted into Tears, and most, I believe, went convicted away. *Thanks be to God, who thus giveth us the Victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

**Gloucester, and Painswick.**

*Friday, June 29.* Preached in my Brother's Field in the Morning to a large and very affected Congregation, went to the Cathedral Service, visited some religious Friends, and

preached

13

preached (at the earnest Invitation of many who had heard me before) to above 3000 Souls in *Painswick-Street*. All was hush'd and silent. The Divine Presence was amongst us. *Many Children of God were fed with the sincere Milk of the Word*. All rejoiced to see me alive again, and thanked GOD abundantly in my Behalf. *It well becometh the Righteous to be thankful*.

#### **Stroud, and Gloucester.**

*Saturday, June 30.* Spent the Evening with some Christian Friends, lay at *Painswick*, and preached about 10 in the Morning to nearly 2000 People, in the *Bowling-Green* belonging to the *George Inn in Stroud*, 3 Miles from thence.—GOD was with us.—After Sermon, I went in Company with many Friends to *Gloucester*, where I preached at 7 in the Evening to a larger and more affected Congregation than ever. *Blessed be God, the Word has free Course.—Oh! that it may run and be glorified through all the Earth.*

#### **Gloucester, Randwick, and Hampton Common.**

*Sunday, July 1.* Preached at 7 in the Morning to a much increased audience in my Brother's Field.—Breakfasted at *Gloucester*, preached at 11 in the Morning, read Prayers in the Afternoon, and preached again in the Afternoon at *Randwick Church*, about 7 Miles from *Gloucester*. The Church was quite full, about 2000 were in the Church-yard, who, by taking down the Window that lay behind the Pulpit, had the Conveniency of hearing, Many wept sorely.

After *Evening Service* I hasted to *Hampton Common*, and to my great Surprise, found no less than 20000 on Horseback and Foot ready to hear me. *New Strength was imparted to me from above*. I spoke with greater Freedom than I had done all the Day before. About 12 at Night I reached *Gloucester* much fresher than when I left it in the Morning. *Surely Jesus Christ is a gracious Master. They that wait upon him shall renew their Strength.*

*Monday, July 2.* Preached this Morning in my Brother's Field to a larger Audience than ever.—Found my Spirits

much

14

much exhausted by Yesterday's Labours, but notwithstanding, a sweet Power was amongst us.—After Dinner I went to *Tewkesbury*, where I found much Opposition had been made by the Bailiff against my coming.—Upon my Entrance into the Town, I found the People **much** alarmed, and as soon as I was got into the Inn, four Constables came to attend me. But a Lawyer being there who was my Friend, **he** demanded the Constable's Warrant, who being not able to produce one, he sent them about their Business. At eight o'Clock I went into a Field lent me by one Mr. *H—ds*, which lay without the Liberties of the Town.—My Audience consisted of 2 or 3000 People.—I spoke with Freedom, and most, **as I afterwards heard, went satisfied and** affected away.—The Remainder of the Evening I spent most agreeably with many Christian Friends who accompanied me on my Journey.—I **perceived a fresh Supply of Spirits to be given me from above, and rejoiced that God lead me on from conquering to conquer.**

#### ***Tewkesbury, and Evesham.***

*Tuesday, July 3.* Waited this Morning upon Mr. *J—s*, one of the Town-Bailiffs, and asked him in Meekness, “for what Reason he sent the Constables after me?” He said, “It was the Determination not of himself, but of all “the Council.”—He then said, “The People were noisy, “and reflected upon the Bailiffs.” I answered, “that was “owing to their sending the Constables with their Staves to “apprehend me, when I should come into the Town.”—Upon this he began to be a little angry, and told me, “A certain “Judge said, he would take me up as a Vagrant, **was** I to preach near him.” I answered, “he was very welcome “to do as he pleased. But I apprehended no Magistrate had “Power to stop my Preaching even in the Streets if I thought “proper.” “No, Sir, says he, if you preach here To-morrow, you shall have the Constables to attend you.”—

After this, I took my Leave, telling him, “I thought it my “Duty as a Minister to inform him, that Magistrates were “intended to be a Terror to evil Doers, and not to those “who do well. And I desired, he would be as careful to “appoint Constables to attend at the next Horse Race, Balls, “and Assemblies, *&c.*”

About

15

About nine in the Morning we left *Tewkesbury*, and reached *Evesham* about Noon.—The poor People were much alarmed, hearing I had been abused at *Tewkesbury*.—And the Magistrates of *Evesham* had threatened to apprehend me if I preached within their Liberties.—Upon this, Mr. *Benjamin Seward* thought it adviseable to preach near his House, which I did from a Wall to near 1000 Hearers, and, I believe, to good Effect.—At my Return to the Inn, I could not but observe to my Friends how gradually the Opposition increased.—At present, it seems to be like the Cloud which *Elijah’s* Servant saw.—No bigger than a Man’s Hand; but, by and by, it will gather apace, and break upon the Church of GOD. *But the God whom we serve is able to deliver us.*

About 8 at Night I preached again from the same Place, but had the Satisfaction of seeing my Morning Congregation trebly increased—After this I went to a Friend’s House to eat Bread, and came to my Inn, wishing that all felt the Love of God shed abroad in their Hearts, as I did then.

#### ***Evesham, Pershore, Tewkesbury, and Gloucester.***

*Wednesday, July 4.* Preached by 7 in the Morning at *Evesham* and perceived the Peoples Hearts most nearly knit to me—Breakfasted at an Hospitable *Quaker’s* House, and went in Company of about 30 to *Pershore*, where I was kindly invited by Mr. *Parks*, the present Incumbent.—He gave me the Meeting as I was going to the Church—I read Prayers, and preached with Power—Several Clergymen were present, and after Sermon Mr. *Parks* sent me his Thanks, and gave me another Invitation to *Pershore*. The Inhabitants were much affected, and I was receiv’d gladly into some of their Houses, and requested to come to Others.—About five in the Evening



I took an affectionate Leave of *Evesham* Friends, and in Company with about 120 on Horseback went to *Tewkesbury*, and never saw a Town so much alarmed.—The Streets were crowded with People from all Parts—I rode immediately thro' the Town, preached to about 6000 Hearers in a Field lent us by Mr. P——, but saw no Constables *that came* either to molest or attend on me—*My hour is not yet come—By and by it will be given me not only to believe on, but to suffer for Christ's Name sake—Lord grant I may not deny him in any wise.*

Immediately

16

Immediately after Sermon I took Horse, and reached *Gloucester* near Midnight. *The Weather was very pleasant.—GOD was pleased to refresh me with fresh Communications from himself, and* we went on our Way rejoicing in the Lord, who still causes us to triumph in every Place. *Oh! for ever be adored his free Grace in Christ!*

#### ***Gloucester, and Chefford.***

*Thursday, July 5.* Preached about 10 in the Morning, as usual, to a numerous and exceedingly affected Audience.—My own Heart was full of Love to my dear Countrymen, and they sincerely sympathised with me.—Many Friends after this came to take Leave of me, and told me what GOD had done for their Souls.—Having wrote my *Journal*, and dispatched my private Business, after joining in Prayer, and singing with many, I left *Gloucester*. About 5 in the Evening I reached *Chafford Common*, at 7 preached till it was near dark to upwards of 10000 People.—A glorious Encrease since I was there last.—*Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, who delighteth in the Prosperity of his Servant.*

#### ***Bristol.***

*Friday, July 6.* Lay at the House of Mr. *Wa——n*, a Clothier, 2 Miles from *Chefford*.—Rose at 6, after Family Duty, and taking a little Breakfast, we set *forwards* towards *Bristol*.—At *Petty France* some Friends met us, *afterwards more joined us*, and before we came within 2 Miles of *Bristol*, our Company encreased very considerably.—The People

were much rejoiced at the News of my coming.—Their Hearts seemed to leap for Joy, and many Thanksgivings were rendered to GOD in my Behalf. The Bells rang unknown to me.—I was received as an Angel of GOD.—At 7 in the Evening I preached at *Baptist Mills*, to about 6 or 7000 People, who were much melted by the Power of GOD's Word.—*I hope they will receive a second Benefit.*

*Saturday, July 7.* Breakfasted with Mr. L——y. Settled some Affairs concerning our Brethren, and had a useful Conference about many Things with my Honoured Friend, Mr.

*John*

17

*John Wesley.*—Din'd at my Sister's, gave the Sacrament to a sick Sister, and paid another Visit upon a Matter of Importance—Preached at *Baptist Mills* to near the same Number of People as last Night, and found that *Bristol* had great Reason to bless God for the Ministry of Mr. *John Wesley*—The Congregation I observed to be much more serious and affected than when I left them—And their loud and repeated *Amens*, which they put up to every Petition, as well as the Exemplariness of their Conversation in common Life, plainly shew that they have not received the Grace of God in vain. *Ye Hypocrites, ye can discern the Face of the Sky—But how is it that you cannot discern the Signs of these Times? That Good, great Good is done is evident—Either this is done by an Evil or good Spirit—If you say by an evil Spirit, I answer in our Lord's own Words, If Satan be divided against Satan how can his Kingdom stand? If by a good Spirit, why do not the Clergy, and the rest of the Pharisees believe our Report? What is it but little less than Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost to impute the great Work that has been in so short a Time in this Kingdom to Delusion and the Power of the Devil?*

*Sunday, July 8.* Preached at the *Bowling-Green* to about 10000 People, greatly affected indeed.—About 11, I preached again at *Hannam-Mount*, to near as many Hearers, and at 7 in the Evening to about 20000 at *Rose-Green.*—*My Power I find much encreased since I was here last.*—And such a visible Alteration in the Congregation for the better, *therein* convinces

me more and more that GOD is with us of a Truth.—As our Opposition encreases, I doubt not but the Manifestations of God's Presence amongst us will encrease also.

Monday, July 9. On Thursday I received a Letter from the Bishop of Gloucester, in which his Lordship affectionately admonished me, to exercise my Authority I received in the Manner it was given me. His Lordship being of Opinion that I ought to preach the Gospel only in the Congregation wherein I was lawfully appointed thereunto.

To-day I sent his Lordship the following Answer.

D

The

18

### **The ANSWER.**

*My Lord,*

'I thank your Lordship for your Lordship's kind Letter.—My frequent Removes from Place to Place prevented my answering it sooner.—I am greatly obliged to your Lordship, 'in that you are pleased to watch over my Soul, and to caution me against acting contrary to the Commission given me 'at Ordination.—But if the Commission we then receive, 'obliges us to preach no where but in that Parish which is committed to our Care, then all Persons act contrary to their 'Commission when they preach occasionally in any strange 'Place.—And consequently your Lordship equally offends 'when you Preach out of your own Diocese.—As for inveighing against the Clergy (without a Cause) I deny the Charge. 'What I say I am ready to make good when ever your 'Lordship pleases. Let those **that** bring Reports to your 'Lordship about my Preaching be brought Face to Face, 'and I am ready to give them an Answer.—St. Paul exhorts 'Timothy, not to receive an Accusation against an Elder under 'two or three Witnesses. And even Nicodemus could say, 'the Law suffered no Man to be condemned unheard.—I shall 'only add, that I hope your Lordship will inspect **into** the 'Lives of your other Clergy, and censure them for being 'Over-remiss, as much as you censure me for being Over-righteous.—It is their falling from their Articles, and not

‘preaching the Truth as it is in *Jesus*, that has excited the  
‘present Zeal of (whom they in Derision call) *the Methodist*  
‘*Preachers*. Dr. *Stebbing’s* Sermon (for which I thank  
‘your Lordship) confirms me more and more in my Opinion,  
‘that I ought to be instant in Season and out of Season. For to  
‘me, he seems to know no more of the true Nature of Regenera-  
‘tion, than *Nicodemus* did when he came to *Jesus* by Night.—  
‘Your Lordship may observe, that he does not speak a Word  
‘of Original Sin, or the dreadful Consequences of our Fall in  
‘*Adam*, upon which the Doctrine of the New-birth is entire-  
‘ly founded. No; like other polite Preachers, he seems to  
‘think, in the very Beginning of his Discourse, that St. *Paul’s*  
‘Description of the Wickedness of the Heathen is only to be  
‘referred to them of past Ages.—Whereas I affirm we are all  
‘included as much under the Guilt and Consequences of Sin

‘as

19

‘as they were, and if any Man preach any other Doctrine,  
‘he shall bear his Punishment whosoever he be.—Again, My  
‘Lord, the Doctor entirely mistakes us when we talk of the  
‘*sensible* Operations of the *Holy Ghost*.—He understands us  
‘just as those carnal *Jews* understood *Jesus Christ*, who, when  
‘our Lord talked of giving them that Bread which came down  
‘from Heaven, said, *How can this Man give us his Flesh to*  
‘*eat?*—Indeed I know not that we use the Word *Sensible*,  
‘when we are talking of the Operations of the Spirit of  
‘GOD.—But if we do, we do not mean, that GOD’s Spi-  
‘rit does manifest itself to our Senses, but that it may be per-  
‘ceived by the Soul, as really, as is any sensible Impression  
‘made upon the Body. But to disprove this the Doctor  
‘brings our Lord’s Allusion to the Wind in the third of St.  
‘*John*, which is one of the best Texts he could urge to prove  
‘it. For if the Analogy of our Lord’s Discourse be carried  
‘on, we shall find it amounts to thus much.—That altho’  
‘the Operations of the Spirit of GOD can no more be ac-  
‘counted for, than how the Wind cometh and whither it go-  
‘eth; yet may they be as easily felt by the Soul as the Wind  
‘may be felt by the Body.—My Lord, indeed we speak what  
‘we know.—But, says the Doctor, “These Men have no

‘Proof to offer for their *inward* Manifestations.” What ‘Proof, my Lord, does the Doctor require, would he ‘have us raise dead Bodies? Have we not done ‘greater Things than these? I speak with all Humi- ‘lity, has not GOD by our Ministry raised many dead Souls ‘to a spiritual Life.—Verily, if Men will not believe the Evi- ‘dence GOD has given that he sent us, neither would ‘they believe tho’ one rose from the Dead.—Besides, my ‘Lord, the Doctor charges us with Things we are entire ‘Strangers to, such as denying Men the Use of GOD’s ‘Creatures.—Encouraging Abstinence, Prayer, &c. to the Ne- ‘glect of the Duties of our Stations. Lord lay not this ‘Sin to his Charge. Again, he says, “I suppose Mr. Ben- ‘jamin Seward to be a Person believing in Christ, and blame- ‘less in his Conversation, before what I call his Conversion. ‘But this is a direct Untruth.—For it was thro’ the Want of ‘a living Faith in Jesus Christ, which he now has, that he ‘was not a Christian before, but a meer Moralist.—Your ‘Lordship knows that our Article says, “Works done with- ‘out the Spirit of GOD, and true Faith in Jesus Christ ‘have the Nature of Sin.” And such were all the Works

D 2

‘done

20

‘done by Mr. Benjamin Seward before the Time mentioned ‘in my Journal.—Again, my Lord, the Doctor represents ‘that as my Opinion concerning Quakers in general, which ‘I only meant of those I conversed with in particular.—But ‘the Doctor, and the rest of my Reverend Brethren, are wel- ‘come to judge me as they please.—Yet a little while, and we ‘shall all appear before the great Shepherd of our Souls.—There, ‘there my Lord, shall it be determined who are his true Mini- ‘sters, and who are only Wolves in Sheeps Cloathing.—Our ‘Lord, I believe, will not be ashamed to confess us publicly in ‘that Day.—I pray God we all may approve ourselves such ‘faithful Ministers of the New Testament, that we may be able ‘to lift up our Heads with Boldness.—As for declining the ‘Work in which I am engaged, my Blood runs chill at ‘the very Thoughts of it.—I am as much convinced, it is ‘my Duty to act as I do, as that the Sun shines at Noon-

‘Day.—I can foresee the Consequences very well.—They  
 ‘have already in one Sense thrust us out of the Synagogues.  
 ‘By and by they will think it is doing GOD Service to kill  
 ‘us.—But, my Lord, if you and the rest of the Bishops cast  
 ‘us out, our great and common Master will take us up.—  
 ‘Tho’ all Men should deny us, yet will not he.—*And*  
 ‘however you may censure us as evil Doers, and Disturbers  
 ‘of the Peace, yet if we *do* suffer for our present Way of act-  
 ‘ing, your Lordship at the Great Day will find, that we suf-  
 ‘fer only for *Righteousness Sake*, In Patience therefore do I  
 ‘possess my Soul.—I will willingly tarry the Lord’s Leisure.—  
 ‘In the mean while I shall continually bear your Lordship’s ‘Favours upon  
 my Heart, and endeavour to behave, so as to  
 ‘subscribe myself,

‘My Lord,

‘Your Lordships obedient Son,

‘And obliged Servant,

GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

*Tuesday,*

21

*Tuesday, July 10.* Preached Yesterday Evening at the  
*Brick-Yard* to about 8000 People.—Dined to-day with my  
 honoured Fellow-Labourer, Mr. *Wesley*, and many other  
 Friends at *Two Mile Hill* in *Kingswood*, and preached after-  
 wards to several Thousand People, and Colliers, in the  
 School-House, which has been carried on so successfully, that  
 the Roof is ready to be put up.—The Design I think is good.  
 Old as well as young are to be instructed. A great and a  
 visible Alteration is *made* in the Behaviour of the Colliers. In-  
 stead of Cursing and Swearing, they are heard to sing Hymns  
 about the Woods; and the rising Generation, I hope, will  
 be a Generation of Christians.—They seem much affected by  
 the Word.—*They melt into Tears, and are observed to* at-  
 tend the Churches and Societies when Mr. *Wesley* is absent  
 from them.—The Prospect of their future Welfare filled me  
 with Joy *unspeakable*.—They took a most affectionate Leave  
 of me.—*Lord put thou their Tears into thy Bottle!*

Went immediately after Sermon was ended with Mr.  
*Wesley*, and several other Friends, to *Bath*, and preached

there to about 3000 People at 7 in the Evening—It rained a little all the while, but the People were patient and attentive, and I never had such Power given me to speak to the polite Scoffers before—*Oh, that the Scales were removed from the Eyes of their Minds!*

Heard to Day that the Town-Clerk of *Bristol* did my Brother *Wesley* and me the Honour, to desire the Grand-Jury, at their Quarter-Sessions, to present our Meetings, and to have the Riot-Act read, but they did not regard him—Nay one, that was called to serve on the Petty Jury, offered to submit to any Fine, rather than do any thing against us; who, he said, were true Servants of *Jesus Christ*—*May he meet with that Reward which our Lord has promised to all those that shall confess him before Men! The Hour of Persecution is not yet come—These are some distant Proofs of it. I really wonder it comes on no faster. Satan why sleepest thou?*

#### ***Bath and Bristol.***

*Wednesday, July 11.* Preached at 11 in the Morning, to a larger Audience than last Night, and almost with equal Power—Hastened to *Bristol*, and preached in the Evening

at

22

at *Baptist-Mills* to a large Congregation. It rained much—*But, blessed be GOD, the People's Hearts are so far influenced by the Gospel of Christ, that they care but little whether it rains or shines.*

After this, my Brother *Wesley* and I went to the Women and Men's Societies, settled some Affairs, and united the two leading Societies together—*A great Harmony and Sweetness of Soul was amongst us all—My Heart was full of Love for them, and they wept most sorely at my Farewel-Exhortation and Prayer—How can I be thankful enough to GOD, for sending me hither to see, that the Seed has been sown in good Ground, and that by the Ministry of Mr. Wesley it has received great Increase. May it still increase with all the Increase of God.*

*Thursday, July 12.* Was busied most of the Day in **fitting** a Sermon for the Press *On the Indwelling of the Spirit*, which I would recommend to all.—Preached in the Evening, to 8 or 9000 People in the *Bowling-Green*, **with great Freedom and Power**, and afterwards spent an Hour most delightfully with some Christian Friends.—*Blessed be God for the Communion of Saints! Oh! when shall I be translated to the Communion of the Spirits of just Men made perfect! As the Hart panteth after the Water Brooks, so doth my Soul long after that perfect Fellowship with the Sons of God!*

*Friday, July 13.* Preached my Farewell Sermon, at 7 in the Morning to a weeping and deeply affected Audience.—My Heart was full, and I continued near two Hours in Prayer and Preaching.—The poor People shed many Tears, and sent up Thousands of Prayers on my Behalf, and would scarce let me go away.—Their Mites they most chearfully contributed for the School-House at *Kingswood*, **and proved, I think, to a Demonstration, that they had not received the Word of God in vain.** *Blessed be God for seeing this Increase of his Mercy. Blessed be God for my coming hither to behold some Fruits of my Labours.* Many Souls have been strengthened and comforted, many convinced of Sin, and myself also more established and strong in the Lord.—*As Oppositions abound, so do my Consolations much more abound! Who is so good a Master as Jesus Christ?*

**Retired after Sermon to vent my Heart, which was ready to burst with a Sense of GOD's especial, distinguishing, re-**

**peated**

23

**peated Mercies.**—Dined with and took a most affectionate Leave of a whole Roomful of weeping Friends. Set out **about** 4 o'Clock, and reached *Thornbury* about 8 in the Evening.—It raining exceeding hard most Part of the Day, there were but few Country People.—However, I preached to about 600 from a Table in the Street. *I hope God gave it his Blessing.*



**Thornbury, and Gloucester.**

*Saturday, July 14.* Preached at 8 this Morning to an attentive Congregation.—Breakfasted at a Quaker's, and reached *Gloucester* with my honoured Friend, Mr. *John Wesley*, and some others, **by 3** in the Afternoon.—Went to the Cathedral Prayers, **dined**, and afterwards preached to a Congregation a third Part larger than I have had in this Place before. *Blessed be God wherever I go, I find my Audiences are always more numerous by far at the last than at the first.—Lord make me truly humble and thankful!*

*Sunday, July 15.* Left my honoured Friend, Mr. *Wesley*, to preach to about 7000 Souls in *Gloucester*. **And had the Pleasure afterwards of hearing that the People heard him gladly.**—Preached twice in *Randwick Church*, and assisted in administering the Sacrament to 270 Communicants.—**The Congregations were larger than when I preached last.**—My Body being weak, **and GOD being pleased to withdraw himself**, I spoke with very little Power in the Morning; but in the Afternoon, GOD caused my Strength to return **again**, and I preached with much Freedom **and Power** in the Evening; **and** at *Hampton Common*, I was enabled to lift up my Voice like a Trumpet, and **to** preach to about 20000 **Souls**.—All which behaved with great Reverence and Devotion.—After I had done I received fresh Invitations to different Places, which I proposed to comply with, if the Lord should permit—Never did I see People more eager after the *Milk of the Word*.—Their Souls were much rejoiced when I told them Mr. *John Wesley* intended to come after to feed them.—*Lord grant he may be preferred before me wherever he goes!*

*Monday, July 16.* Lay last Night at the House of Mr. *E—s of Ebly*, **and had a comfortable Time of it.**—

Went

24

Went to *Tedbury*, about six Miles from thence, having been earnestly invited several Times, and preached at Noon to about 4000 People.—**Many gracious Souls** of divers Denominations came to meet me, with whom I took sweet Counsel.

—The Scoffers, before I came, had threatened to do something.  
 —But the Power of GOD's Word overcame them.—Visited in the Afternoon, Mr. O——, a Baptist-Teacher, and went afterwards, in Company with several Friends, to *Malmsbury* in *Wiltshire*, about 3 Miles from *Tedbury*, whither I had been invited by a Letter, signed by 52 Persons.—At 7 I preached to about 3000 People, *who, I believe, felt the Power of GOD's Word.*—Much Opposition had been made by the *Pharisees* against my coming.—And the Minister in particular had wrote to the Church-warden to stop me,—But he was more noble.—Numbers, as I heard afterwards, who were *vastly* prejudiced against me by lying Reports, went away convinced that I spoke the Words of Truth and Soberness.—*Thou shalt answer for me, O Lord my God.*

*Tuesday, July 17.* Lay with my Fellow-Travellers at the House of Mr. *Line*, who *most* gladly received us for our Master's Sake.—I had a Thorn in the Flesh sent to buffet me, was weak in Body, deserted in Mind, *and felt myself to be what I often say we all are by Nature, half a Devil, and half a Beast.*—With great *inward* Reluctance I rose and preached to about 2000 *Souls* at 8 in the Morning, then I retired to my Bed again, with an unspeakable Pressure upon my Heart till Noon.—Was something better after Dinner, and much reviv'd to see what an effectual Door was likely to be opened in *Wiltshire* for Preaching the Gospel—Went *and paid* my Respects to the chief Magistrate, who was my Friend, and reached *Cirencester* about six in the Evening.

Here also Men breathed out Threatenings against me, but were not impowered to put them in Execution.—Numbers came from Neighbouring Towns.—My Congregation was as large again as when I preached here last.—God enabled me, weak as I was, to speak boldly, *as I ought to speak—Every Thing was carried on with Decency and Order, and my inward Comforts began to return again—God will not always be chiding, neither keepeth He his Anger for ever—How heavenly do I drive when God takes off my Chariot Wheels. O that I may learn to be meek and lowly in my own Eyes—Lord give me Humility, or I perish.*

*Cirencester,*

**Cirencester, and Abingdon.**

*Wednesday, July 18.* Found more than ever the Truth of the wise Man's Saying, *Wo be to him that is alone, for when he falleth he hath not another to lift him up.*—Breakfasted with one Mr. H——r, and preached at 7 in the Morning to about as numerous a Congregation, *but with much greater Spirits then* last Night—The Place where I preached was exceeding convenient—I stood in the Valley, and the People on an Ascent that formed a most beautiful Amphitheatre—After I had done, God gave me some most extraordinary Instances of the Power of his Word.—*Lord, not unto me, but unto thy Name be all the Glory.*

Left *Cirencester* about 11 dined at *Leatchlade*, where the Inhabitants were very importunate to hear me, would Time have permitted—I reached *Abingdon*, 22 Miles from *Cirencester*, about 7, and preached to several thousands soon after I came in.—Much Opposition had been made against my Coming—The Landlord, whose House we offered to put up at, genteelly told us, he had not Room for us; and numberless Prejudices had been industriously spread to prevent my Success—But God strengthened me after my Journey, and enabled me to speak, I trust, to the Hearts of many—*God's Word will make its own Way, let Men say what they please. Our Weapons are not carnal, but mighty thro' the Divine Power, to the pulling down of Satan's Strong-holds.*

**Abingdon, and Basingstoke.**

*Thursday, July 19.* At the Request of several well-disposed People, preached again this Morning, tho' not to so great a Number as before—A sweet Power was felt amongst us.—The Hearers melted into Tears under the Word.—*My Heart was full of Love, and their's also were much affected—Oh! what a sudden Alteration does this Foolishness of Preaching make in the most obstinate Hearts! 'Tis but for God to speak the Word, and the Lion is turned into a Lamb.—Oh! that we were like that dear Lamb of God, who died to take away the Sins of the World!*

## Breakfasted

26

Breakfasted with Mr. *F*—*r*, who was with many other Friends expressed great Tokens of Friendship for me and my Fellow Travellers—Set out at 11, dined at *Ilslly*, and reached *Basingstoke* about 7 at Night—Perceiving myself languid and weary, I lay down upon the Bed soon after our coming into the Inn, but was soon refreshed with the News, that the Landlord, one of whose Children was wrought upon when I was there last, would not let us stay under his Roof; upon which I immediately rose and went to another Inn; but the People made a Mock of both me and my Friends as we past along, and shot out their Arrows, even bitter Words against us, and Fire-Rockets were thrown around the Door—It was now near 8 o’Clock, and too late to preach; I therefore retired from my Friends, gave GOD Thanks for accounting me worthy to suffer Reproach for his Name’s Sake, and about an Hour after, received the following Letter by the Hands of the Constable from Mr. Mayor.

SIR,

‘Being a Civil Magistrate in this Town, I thought it my ‘Duty, for the Preservation of the Peace, to forbid you, or ‘at least diswade you, from preaching here. If you persist in ‘it, in all Probability, it may occasion a Disturbance, which ‘I think is your Duty, as a Clergyman, as well as mine, to ‘prevent. If any Mischief should ensue (whatever Pretence ‘you may afterwards make in your own Behalf) I am satisfied will fall on your own Head, being timely cautioned it by ‘me, who am,

Sir,

*Basingstoke,*  
*July 19, 1739.*

*Your most humble servant,*

John Abbot.

P.S. The Legislature has wisely made Laws for the Preservation of the Peace, therefore, I hope, no Clergyman lives in Defiance of them.

To

27

To this I immediately sent the following Answer:

*Honoured Sir,*

‘I thank you for your kind Letter, and I humbly hope a ‘Sense of your Duty, and not a Fear of Man, caused you to ‘write it. If so, give me Leave to remind you, Honoured Sir, ‘as a Clergyman, you ought to be a Terror to evil Doers, but ‘a Praise to them that do well—I know of no Law against ‘such Meetings as mine—If any such Law **be existing**, I believe you will think it your Duty, Honoured Sir, to apprise me of it, that I may not offend against it—If no Law ‘can be produced, as a Clergyman, I think it my Duty ‘to inform you, that you ought to protect, and not any ‘ways to discourage, or permit others to disturb an Assembly of People meeting together, purely to worship GOD. ‘To-morrow, Honoured Sir, I hear, there is to be an Assembly of another Nature, be pleased to be as careful to ‘have the publick Peace preserved at that, and to prevent ‘**prophane** Cursing and Swearing, and Persons breaking the ‘sixth Commandment, by bruising each other Bodies by ‘Cudgelling and Wrestling; **and** if you do not this, I shall, ‘rise up, against you at the great Day, and be a swift Witness against your Partiality. I am,

*Honoured sir,*

*Your very humble Servant,*

GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

*Friday, July 23* [[20]]. After Breakfast waited in Person **upon Mr.** Mayor, to see what Law could be produced against my Meetings—As soon as I began to talk with him, I perceived he was a little angry—**And** said, Sir, you sneered at me in

the Letter you sent last Night—Though I am a Butcher, yet Sir, says he, I— I replied, I honoured him as a Magistrate, and only desired to know what Law could be produced against my Preaching: In my Opinion there could be none, because there was never any such thing as Field-Preaching before. I then instanced the Trial of *P*— the Quaker, where the Jury, notwithstanding they were so hardly used, brought a Verdict in Favour of him—Sir, says he, you ought to

E 2

preach

28

preach in a Church—And so I would, replied I, if your Minister would give me Leave—Sir, said he, I believe you have some sinister Ends in View—why do you go about making a Disturbance? I answered, I make no Disturbance—And it was hard I could not come into Town without being insulted—It was your Business, Sir, said I, to wait, and if there was any Riot in my Meetings, then, and not till then, it is your Duty to interpose—Then said he, Sir, you wrote to me about the Revel to Day—I have declared against it—But, said I, Sir, you ought to go and read the Riot-Act, and put an entire Stop to it—I then pressed him, to shew me a Law against Meetings; urging, if there had been any Law, they would have been stopped long since—He answered, It was an odd Way of preaching—But, Sir, says he, I must go away to a Fair—Before you came I had wrote you another Letter, which I will send you yet, if you please—Upon this I thanked him, paid him the Respect due to a Magistrate, and took my Leave—Soon after I was returned to my Company, he sent me the following Letter:

*Rev. Sir,*

Basingstoke, *July 20, 1730*[[9]].

‘I received your extraordinary Letter, and could expect ‘no other from so uncommon a Genius.

‘I apprehend your Meetings to be unlawful, having ‘no Toleration to protect you in it. My Apprehensions ‘of Religion always was, and I hope always will be, that ‘GOD is to be worshipped in Places consecrated and set ‘a-part for his Service, and not in Brothels, and Places

‘where all Manner of Debauchery may have been committed; but how far this is consistent with your Actions, I leave you to judge.

‘As for the other Assembly you are pleased to mention, ’tis contrary to my Will, having never given my Consent to it, nor approved of it, but discouraged it before your Reverendship came to this Town; and if these Cudgellers persist in it, I shall set them upon the same Level with you, and think you all Breakers of the publick Peace—You very well know there are Penal-Laws against Cursing and Swearing, and I could wish there were the same against Deceit and Hypocrisy—Your appearing against me as a swift Witness, at the Day of Judgement, I must own, is a most terrible Thing, and may serve as a Bug-

‘bear

29

‘bear for Children, or People of weak Minds; but believe me, Reverend Sir, those Disguises will have but little Weight amongst Men of common Understanding.

I told you I had a Letter wrote,  
I make bold to send it.

*Yours,*

JOHN ABBOT.

To this I sent the following Answer:

*Honoured Sir,*

‘Does Mr. Mayor do well to be angry? Alas! what Evil have I done! I honour you as a Magistrate; but as a Minister I am obliged to have no Respect of Persons—Your *apprehending* my Meetings to be unlawful, does not make them **to be** so—There’s no need of a Toleration to protect me, when I do not act unconformable to any Law, Civil or Ecclesiastical—Be pleased to prove that my Meetings are Schismatical, Seditious, or Riotous, and then I will submit—But you say they are upon unconsecrated Ground—Honoured Sir, give me Leave to inform you, that GOD is not now confined to Places, but seeketh such to worship

'him, who worship in Spirit and in Truth; **and** where  
'two or three are gathered together in *Christ's* Name, there  
'will *Christ* be in the Midst of them—The Church, by  
'our Ministers in their Prayer before their Sermons is de-  
'fined **not** to be the Church-Walls, but a Congregation  
'of Christian People, such is mine. As for judging me—  
'To my own Master I stand or fall; at his dreadful Tribu-  
'nal I will meet you, and then you shall see what is in the  
'Heart of,

*Honoured sir,*

*Basingstoke,*

*July 20, 1739.*

*Your very humble Servant,*

GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

About 8 o'Clock I went into a Field, lent me by Mr.  
*H—n*; and tho' one said, I should not go **alive** out of *Basing-*  
*stoke* if I preached there, and another said, the Drum should  
beat just by me, yet I had little or no Interruption,

and

30

and GOD gave me **such great** Power in speaking against  
Revelling, and those few Scoffers that were there, **that they**  
were not able to gainsay or resist it. As I came from the  
Field, passing through the Church-Yard, the Boys, headed  
by some of the baser Sort, saluted me as before, calling me  
strange Names, which, I trust, was received in the Spi-  
rit of our dear Master.

After this I pray'd and sung Psalms at the Inn with  
some few Disciples, and then took my Leave—As I passed  
by on Horseback, I saw a Stage built for the Cudgellers  
and Wrestlers; and as I rode farther, I met divers coming  
to the Revel, which affected me so much, that I had no  
Rest in my Spirit. And therefore having asked Council of  
GOD, **and perceiving an unusual Power and Warmth**  
**enter into my Soul**, though I **was** gone above a Mile  
from the Town, I could not bear to see so many Dear  
Souls for whom *Christ* died, ready to perish, and no Mi-



nister or Magistrate interpose. Upon this I told my dear Fellow Travellers that I was resolved to follow the Example of *Howel Harris* in *Wales*, and to bear my Testimony against such lying Vanities, let the Consequences, as to my own private Person, be what they would—They immediately consenting, I rode back to the Town, got upon the Stage, erected for the Wrestlers, and began to shew them the Error of their Ways—Many seemed ready to hear what I had to say, but one more zealous for his Master than the rest, and fearing Conviction every Time I so much as attempted to speak, set the Boys upon repeating their Uzza's.—My Soul, I perceived, was in a sweet frame, willing to be offered up, so that I might save some of those, to whom I was about to speak; but all in vain. While I was on the Stage, one struck me with his Cudgel, which I received with the utmost Love; till at last finding the Devil would not permit them to give me Audience, I got off, and after much thronging and pushing me, I mounted my Horse with unspeakable Satisfaction within myself, that I had now begun to attack the Devil in his strongest Holds, and had born my Testimony against the detestable Diversions of this Generation—Ye Masters of *Israel*, what are you doing? Ye Magistrates, that are called Gods in Scripture, why sleep you? Why do you bear the Sword in vain? Why count you me a Troubler of *Israel*, and why say you I teach People to be idle, when you can connive at, if not

subscribe

31

subscribe to such hellish Meetings as these, which not only draw People from their Bodily Work, but directly tend to destroy their precious and immortal Souls; surely I shall appear against you at the Judgement Seat of *Christ*; for these Diversions keep People from true Christianity as much as Paganism itself. And I doubt not, but it will require as much Courage and Power, to divert People from these Things, as the Apostles were obliged to exert in converting the Heathen from their dumb Idols. However, in the Strength of my Master, I will now enter the Lists, and begin an offensive War with Satan, and all his Host. If I

*perish, I perish. I shall have the Testimony of a good Conscience, I shall be free from the Blood of all Men.*

From *Basingstoke* I intended to go to *Windsor*, but having not sent to any in that Place, and longing for a little Retirement, I lay at *Stains*, and spent some Hours in sweet Fellowship with my dear Fellow Travellers. *O what a blessed Thing it is for Brethren to dwell together in Unity!*

### ***London.***

*Saturday, July 21.* Set out a little after 4 in the Morning, and reached *London* by Breakfast Time—Settled my Affairs, rejoiced with my dear Friends, and preached in the Evening to upwards of ten thousand at *Kennington-Common*—The poor Souls were ready to leap for Joy at my Return amongst them—The Word sunk deep into their Hearts—Great Numbers melted into Tears, and my own Heart overflowed with Love towards them—Blessed be GOD for what has been done here, since I left *London*, by my honoured Friend and Fellow Labourer, Mr. *Charles Wesley*. Surely, we can see the Fruits of our Labours.—All Love, all Glory be to GOD, for giving so great an Increase!

*Sunday, July 22.* Ever since I was abused at *Basingstoke*, I have had sweet Communications from GOD. When Men cast us out, then does Jesus Christ chiefly take us up. Who would not be a Christian? There is nothing I desire on Earth in Comparison of that—Received a Letter from Mr. *Ralph Erskine*, of *Scotland*. Some may be offended at my corresponding with him, but I dare not but confess my Lord's Disciples.—Had a pressing Invitation to come into *Lincolnshire*.—

of

32

*Blessed be GOD, the Word runs very swiftly. In vain do our Adversaries stand against the Most High*—Preached at 7 in the Morning to about 20000 at *Moorfields*—A greater Power than ever was amongst us—Scoffers and curious Persons daily drop off—Most who come now, I hope, do not come out of Curiosity—Never were Souls more melted down by the Power of GOD's Words—Never did People offer their

Mites more willingly—I collected 24 l. 17 s. for the School-House *that is* erecting at *Kingswood*, and all seemed solicitous *how* to express their Affection—*Ye Scoffers, ye blind Pharisees, come and see, and then call these tumultuous, seditious Assemblies if you can. Would to GOD, they behaved so decently in any Church in London—*Went to St. Paul's, and received the blessed Sacrament, *and* preached in the Evening at *Kennington-Common* to about 30000 Hearers, and collected 15 l. 15 s. 6 d. for the Colliers—GOD gave me great Power, and I never opened my Mouth so freely against the Letter-learned Clergymen of the Church of *England*. Every Day do I see the Necessity of speaking out more and more—*The most learned of our modern Rabbies, I find now by their Writings, and by their Conferences with me and my Friends, either make our Sanctification a Cause of, whereas it is the Effect of our Justification before GOD, or they entirely interpret away the Meaning of all the Doctrines of the Spirit, so as to make Regeneration consist only in a Desire and good Disposition to do the Will of GOD; or, in other Words, in an outward Decency of Life, and a Morality falsely so called. This is the Sum and Substance of the Generality of our modern Doctrine. And therefore, was I to die immediately for speaking, yet I should not die in Peace, unless I bore my Testimony against them. GOD knows my Heart, I do not speak out of Resentment—I heartily wish all the LORD's Servants were Prophets—I wish the Church of England was the Joy of the whole Earth—But I cannot see her sinking into Papistical Ignorance, and Deism refined, and not open my Mouth against those, who by their sensual lukewarm Lives, and unscriptural superficial Doctrines, thus cause her err.—O LORD, send out, we beseech thee, send out thy Light, and thy Truth. Even so come, LORD JESUS, come quickly!*

*Monday,*

33

*Monday, July 23.* This Day I received the following Letter from the Quaker at *Basingstoke*, at whose House I lodged.

Basingstoke, July 21, 1739.

*My Dear Friend,*

'When I Yesterday went up to thy Inn, and found thee 'just gone, I was sorry that I miss'd an Opportunity, both of 'taking my Leave of thee, and expressing the Sense I had of 'the Power and Presence of GOD *that was* with thee, *more* 'especially in the latter Part of thy Sermon, and in thy Prayer 'after it; However I am truly glad, that thou wert preserved 'out of the Hands of cruel and unreasonable Men. Thou 'heardst of the Threatenings of many; but the Malice *and* 'blind Zeal of some went further. For hadst thou went to 'my Friend *H*—— to Bed, or elsewhere towards that Part of 'the Town, which I believe was expected, there were 10 or '12 Men lying in wait to do thee a private Mischief, *which* 'I know by the Testimony of one of those very Men who 'boasted to me, *We would have given him a secret Blow, 'and prevented his making Disturbances.* This Confession 'came out to me in the Warmth of his Zeal, *as* thinking, 'perhaps, that I could hate, at least, if not destroy (like him) 'all that were not of my own Party.

'O thy noble Testimony against the Profaneness and Va- 'nity of the Age. It rejoiced me not a little. But when thou 'camest to the Necessity, the Nature and the Rewards of the 'New Birth, *the true Seed*, thou wert carried beyond thy- 'self, *the Fountain of Life was opened, and flowed around* 'amongst the Living—I am for one a Monument of free Grace and Mercy.—O God *how boundless is thy Love! He hath not* 'hid his Mercies from me. I have often drank of the spiri- 'tual Rock, and been a Witness of the Joys of God's Sal- 'vation. *Ay, those Joys*, that sweet Presence of *Christ*, 'that carries Men above the Fear of the World, and enables 'them to overcome the World; that baptizeth into the Spi- 'rit and Nature of the Son of God, and maketh Disciples 'indeed.—It is a Sense of God ever-near the Influences of his 'quickenings Spirit, that is only able to deter from Evil, crucify 'the old Nature, create again to God, and perform his good 'and acceptable Will.—This will make a thorough *Refor-* 'mation, beginning at the Heart, sanctifying *that*, guarding

‘of it, and making it a holy Temple for the holy Spirit to  
 ‘dwell in, then producing holy Thoughts, Longings after

F

‘divine

34

‘divine Enjoyments, Love, Joy, Solidity, Watchfulness,  
 ‘&c.

‘But, why this to thee? Thou hast drunk deep of divine  
 ‘Love; but I know that the good Experiences of God’s  
 ‘Children are often Causes of mutual Comfort. I have often  
 ‘been sensible of it myself, and therefore not only thus pri-  
 ‘vately, but publicly have I been strengthened by tell to  
 ‘others, that God is good, and that he has done great Things  
 ‘for my Soul. Ministers not thus qualified, and thus sent,  
 ‘may indeed be Ministers of those who sent them, but Mini-  
 ‘sters of *Christ* they cannot be.

‘May we, my dear Friend, tho’ absent in Body be present  
 ‘in Spirit in him who is omnipresent. May we unitedly go on  
 ‘in the Cause of our common Lord and Master, to promote his  
 ‘in Honour in winning Souls to him! May we bear a faithful  
 ‘and undaunted Testimony to him before all Men in the  
 ‘midst of a perverse Generation. May we not flinch, but  
 ‘declare the Truth as it is in *Jesus*, not daubing nor daring  
 ‘to make the Way to the Kingdom of God wider than it is.  
 ‘And may we finally be received up into the Mansions of  
 ‘Glory, there to live with all the righteous Generations,  
 ‘with those **that** have washed their Garments white in the  
 ‘Blood of the Lamb, and with those that have laid down  
 ‘their Lives for the Testimony of *Jesus*, and to sing with  
 ‘them, Hallelujahs, Glory and Praise, for ever and ever.—  
 ‘May the Ancient of Days, the Alpha and Omega, keep thee  
 ‘in his Arms, direct thee by his Spirit, support, comfort,  
 ‘and watch over thee, is the fervent Prayer, of **my dear**  
 ‘**Friend**, thine in great sincerity,

J PORTSMOUTH.

My friend, Mr. *William Seward*, received also a Letter  
 from his Brother, in which were the following Paragraphs.—

'I had a Letter *per* last Post from Mr. — wherein he 'speaks of one Mr. — of *Corpus Christi College*, whom 'his Uncle, a Clergyman, had intirely discarded, and wrote 'to the College to expel for his methodistical Notions.

'The old Clerk at *Breferton*, whom I before spoke of, 'having heard Mr. *Whitefield* at *Badsey*, was so affected, 'that he told me, he could have no rest in his Spirit; but

'after

35

'after searching the *Church-Homilies Articles*, &c. and find-  
'ing the Doctrine every way agreeable to them, he met  
'with the Landlord of *Contercup*, who discoursing about  
'Mr. *Whitefield*, told him, he had some old Books, that  
'set forth the very same Doctrine. Soon after this he  
'went to Work, being a Taylor by Trade, and asking  
'for one of these Books, the others being lent out, he  
'said, he had not read above a Page or two, before the  
'Truth broke in upon his Soul like Lightning. He said,  
'he could not go on with his Work with any Satisfac-  
'tion, but his Fingers itched to be at his Book again,  
'which the Man lent him home with him; a few Days  
'after, he got the other, which so strengthen'd and con-  
'firmed him, that he could lay his Life down in  
'Defence of the Truth as it is in *Jesus*. He says, the  
'Gospel appears to him, as though he had never read a  
'Line in it before; and it is a greater Miracle to him,  
'that he, an old Sinner, with one Foot in the Grave,  
'should be called at these Years, than if he had seen the  
'Dead raised—He always, by what I can learn, bore a  
'fair Character, and was esteemed by his Neighbours, but  
'now threatened with the Loss of his Bread, for coming  
'to *Badsey* Society, and declaring his Testimony to the  
'Truth of Mr. *Whitefield's* Doctrine, or rather, I should  
'say, the Doctrine of the Gospel. The Books he met  
'with are very old, and, he says, were thrown by as  
'waste Paper out of a Clergyman's Library, that was sold  
'after his Death, whereby the *Contercup* Man met with  
'them, and they seemed providentially reserved for  
'his Use.'

Persons wonder at me, because I talk of Persecution, now the World has become Christian; but alas! *was Jesus Christ* to come down from Heaven at this Time, he would be treated as formerly. And whoever goes forth to preach the Gospel in his Spirit, must expect the same Treatment as his first Apostles met with. *Lord, prepare us for all Events!*

Preached this Evening at *Hackney-Marsh*, to about two thousand People—I prayed and discoursed for above two Hours, and with greater Demonstration of the Spirit than ever—*Floods of Tears were shed by the Hearers, and the Doctrine seemed to make its own Way into their Hearts*—Every Day have I more and more Reason to

F 2

rejoice

36

rejoice in what GOD has done for my own and other's Souls. Thousands at the great Day will have Reason to bless GOD for Field-Preaching. Then our Pharisees will believe. *But LORD, grant the Veil may be taken from their Hearts, and the Scales from their Eyes, before that dreadful Day! For then Convictions will come too late.*

*Tuesday, July 24.* Despatched my private Affairs, and preached in the Evening at *Kennington-Common* to about 15000. *The Doctrine, I believe, distilled like the Dew. May the Lord JESUS water their thirsty Souls!*

*Wednesday, July 25.* Preached this Evening at *Edmonton*, *at the Desire of many.* The Congregation was large and attentive, and I rejoiced in having an Opportunity of offering Salvation freely to the Rich. *Oh, that all in high Stations were rich towards GOD!*

*Thursday, July 26.* Preached to upwards of ten thousand at *Hackney-Marsh*, where I appointed purposely to *preach*, because there was to be *an Horse-Race* in the same Field. *Blessed be GOD*, I had the Pleasure of bearing my Testimony against such unchristian Entertainments. Very few left the Sermon to see the Race, and some of those returned

back again quickly, to whom I took the Occasion of speaking with something of the Love and Simplicity of *Christ—To him be all the Glory*. I think this is a manifest Proof of the Success of our Doctrine. By the help of GOD I will still go on to attack the Devil in his strongest Holds. The common People go to these Diversions for Want of knowing better. If we can once draw them from these, their Minds will be better prepared to receive the Gospel. *Prosper, O LORD, this Work of my Hands upon me!*

Friday, July 27. Preached at *Kennington-Common* to my usual Number of Hearers, went to *Lewisham*, was kindly entertained by Mrs. — and lay at the House of Mr. — both which received me and my Friends with Joy—*Blessed be GOD for all his Mercies.*

Saturday, July 28. Spent a comfortable Hour with my Friends in the Morning, went to pay a Visit to the Family of Justice *De la Motte* at *Blendon*, where we exhorted and built up each other in the Knowledge and Fear of GOD—

Preached

37

Preached at *Blackheath* in the Evening, and came home rejoicing that I saw great Fruits of my Ministry—The Bills which are sent to me, plainly prove, that GOD has worked on Numbers of Souls—*At the Judgement Day you shall see, O Pharisees, what Good has been done by this Foolishness of preaching—Many, I believe, come to the Fields to worship the Father in Spirit and in Truth—GOD seeketh such to worship him.*

Sunday, July 29. Preached this Morning in *Moorfields* to a much larger Congregation than we had last Sunday, and collected 24 l. 9 s. for the school at *Kingswood*. Received the Sacrament at *St. Paul's*, and preached at *Kennington-Common* in the Evening, where 20 l. was collected. GOD sent us a little Rain; but that only washed away the curious Hearers—Near thirty thousand stood their Ground, and GOD, I believe, watered them with the Dew of his Heavenly Blessing—A more visible Alteration for the bet-



ter is made in the People daily, a good Work is wrought in the Heart of Numbers. It would be endless to recount how many come to me under strong Convictions of their lost Estate. GOD has begun, GOD will carry on the good Work in their Souls;—Even so, Lord JESUS!

Monday, July 30. Was busied all the Morning in directing those to believe in Jesus Christ, who came asking me, What they should do to be saved? Preached at Plaistow, about 6 miles from London, and an uncommon Power was in the Congregation—My own Heart was much enlarged, and I returned home much rejoiced within myself that the Lord Jesus was pleased still to manifest himself more and more amongst us.

Tuesday, July 31. Preached at Newington near Hackney, to about twenty thousand People, many of whose Hearts, as well as my own, were warmed under the Word—I preached upon Genesis iii. 15. and I hope the Seed of the Woman is now bruising the Serpent's Head to some Purpose—Amen, Lord JESUS, Amen!

Wednesday, August 1. Preached this Evening at Mary Le Bone Fields, at the other End of the Town, to near thirty thousand, and went afterwards to take my Leave of Fetter-lane Society.—We parted in Love, and I hope the next Time we meet, we shall be in or at least nearer Heaven.

Oh,

38

Oh, that we may comfort one another with the Prospect of this Thing.

Thursday, August 2. Preached at Newington to upwards of twenty thousand People, and came home rejoicing to see what a great Work GOD has done in this City—Thousands, and I believe ten thousands, come constantly to hear—Scoffers seem afraid to shew their Heads, being frequently overpowered by GOD's Word—I hope the Time is coming which the Prophet speaks of, Behold ye Despisers,

*and wonder, and perish; for I will work a Work in your Days, which you shall in no wise believe, though a Man declare it unto you.*

*Friday, August 3.* Spent the Day in completing my Affairs, taking my Leave of my dear Friends, and preached in the Evening to near twenty thousand at *Kennington-Common*. I chose to discourse on St. *Paul's* Parting-Speech to the Elders at *Ephesus*, Acts xx. at which the People were exceedingly affected, and almost prevented my making any Application. Many Tears were shed, when I talked of leaving them. I concluded all with a suitable Hymn, but could scarce get to the Coach, for the People's thronging me, to take me by the Hand, and give me a parting Blessing.—And here I cannot but shut up this Part of my Journal with a Word or two of Exhortation to my dear Brethren, whosoever they are, whom GOD shall stir up to go forth into the Highways and Hedges, into the Lanes and Streets, to compel poor Sinners to come in—You see, my dear Brethren, what great Things GOD has already done—It is unknown how many have come to me under strong Convictions of their fallen Estate, and what Numbers of Bills I have received from Persons seeking *Christ*,—desiring to be awakened to a Sense of Sin, and giving Thanks for the Benefits GOD has imparted to them by my Ministry. Letters of Invitation have been sent me from different Parts of the Kingdom.—O my dear Brethren, have Compassion on our dear LORD's Church, which he has purchased with his own Blood—Suffer none of them to be as Sheep, having no Shepherd, or worse than none, those blind Leaders of the Blind, who let them perish for Lack of Knowledge, and are no better than Wolves in Sheeps Cloathing—If you are found faithful, you must undergo strong Persecution. A Person in Power told me, nothing

but

39

but the Fear of strengthening my Interest, kept off the Storm. But the Enmity of the natural Man is so great against GOD, that if the Good Work, which is begun is car-

ried on, it will soon break through all Restraints, though thereby our Enemies will confound themselves; **but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.** Oh arm People against a Suffering Time;—exhort them always to be obedient to the higher Powers;—remind them again and again, that our Kingdom is not of this World, and that it does not become Christians to resist the Powers that are ordained of GOD, but patiently to suffer for the Truth's Sake—At present GOD calls me to Trials of a different Nature; but I am persuaded, ere long, it will be given me not only to believe, but also to suffer for our LORD's Sake.—Oh let us strive together in our Prayers, that we may fight the Good Fight of Faith, that we may have that Wisdom which cometh from above, that we never suffer for our own Faults, but only for Righteousness Sake—Then will the Spirit of *Christ* and of Glory rest upon our Souls, and being made perfect by suffering here, we shall be qualified to reign eternally with *Jesus Christ* hereafter. *Amen, Amen!*

*Eternal, Universal LORD, ‡  
 Maker of Heav'n and Earth art Thou, ‡  
 All Things sprang forth t'obey thy Word, ‡  
 Thy pow'ful Word upholds them now.*

*Why then with unavailing Rage, ‡  
 Did Heathen with thy People join, ‡  
 And Impotently fierce engage, ‡  
 To execute their vain Design?*

*Indignant Kings stood up t'oppose ‡  
 The LORD and his Messiah's Reign, ‡  
 And Earth's confederate Rulers rose, ‡  
 Against their GOD in Council vain.*

*Surely*

40

*Surely against thy Holy Son, ‡  
 (Son of thy Love and sent by Thee, ‡  
 One with th'anointing Spirit, One, ‡  
 With thy co-equal Majesty).*

## FOURTH JOURNAL

387

Herod and Pilate both combin'd, &  
Thy Sov'reign Purpose to fulfil, &  
Gentiles and Jews unconscious join'd, &  
T'accomplish thy Eternal Will.

And now their idle Fury view, &  
And now behold their Threatenings, LORD, &  
Behold Thy faithful Servants too, &  
And strengthen us to speak thy Word.

Embolden'd by *thine* outstretch'd Arm, &  
Fill us with Confidence Divine, &  
With Heav'nly Zeal our Bosom warm, &  
That all may own the Work is Thine.

May see the Tokens of thy Hand, &  
Its Sov'reign Grace, its healing Pow'r, &  
No more their Happiness withstand, &  
And fight against their GOD no more.

Now let their Opposition cease, &  
Now let them catch the quick'ning Flame, &  
And forc'd to yield, the Signs increase, &  
The Wonders wrought by JESU's Name.

**FINIS.**

388

GEORGE WHITEFIELD

[FIFTH JOURNAL]

A

CONTINUATION

Of the REVEREND

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL,

From his EMBARKING after the

EMBARGO,

To his ARRIVAL at

SAVANNAH IN GEORGIA.

LONDON:

Printed by W. STRAHAN, for JAMES HUTTON,  
at the *Bible and Sun*, without *Temple-Bar*. 1740.

A  
CONTINUATION  
OF  
**Mr. WHITEFIELD's**  
**JOURNAL, &c.**

*Lewisham, Deptford and Blendon.*

SATURDAY, August 4. Lay last Night at the House of Mrs. S——. Went in the Morning to Deptford; Pray'd, sung Psalms, and gave a Word of Exhortation at two or three Houses. Returned to dine with Mrs. S——. Expounded to a Room full of People. Preached at *Black-heath* to about 10000; and went to *Blendon*, to the great Comfort and rejoicing of my Soul, and lay there. Oh, that my Mouth was ever filled with the divine Praise!

*Blendon, Bexly and Blackheath.*

Sunday, August 5. Rose much enlighten'd and refreshed in the inner Man.—Expounded prayed, and sung Psalms at Mr. D——'s [[Delamotte's]] Door, with many that came last Night from *London*.—Read Prayers, and assisted in administring the Sacrament to several hundred Communicants at *Bexley* Church.—Preached in the Afternoon to about 1500 in

A 2

Justice

Justice D——'s [[Delamotte's]] Yard.—And again in the Evening to about 30000 at *Blackheath*.—It rained, but few were driven away by it.—Great Power came upon me from above.—I opened my Mouth with all Boldness.—God watered us with the Dew of his heavenly Blessing.—Oh

*that we may all grow in Grace, and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour JESUS CHRIST!*

***Blendon and Chatham.***

*Monday, August 6.* Spent the former Part of the Day **most agreeably** at *Blendon*; and preached in the Evening at *Chatham*, about 18 Miles from thence, to near 12000 People.—I never observed more Decency and Order in any Place at my first preaching, than at that.—Had a Conference after Sermon with one, who I fear with some others, maintained *Antinomian* Principles.—From such may all that know them turn away! For though, (to use the Words of our Church Article) *Good Works, which are the Fruits of Faith, cannot put away our Sins, or endure the Severity of God's Judgement, (that is, cannot justify us,) yet they follow after Justification, and do spring out necessarily of a true and lively Faith, insomuch that by them a lively Faith may be as evidently known as a Tree discerned by the Fruit.*

***Chatham, Blendon, Blackheath and Lewisham.***

*Tuesday, August 7.* Left *Chatham* early this Morning. Dined at *Blendon*, and preached in the Evening at *Blackheath*.—It rained very much the whole Day.—**We expected but little Company: However,** there were about 2000, to some of whom I trust God gave an abundant **Reward by the Hearing of Faith.** I discoursed on the Conversion of *Zaccheus* the Publican.—**And** I hope there was Joy in Heaven over some of my Hearers repenting.—**Out of the Abundance of my Heart my Mouth spake.**—They received the Word as the thirsty Ground receives the former and the latter Rain.—I know not when I have been **more delighted.**—*Lord, in doing thy Commandments there is great Reward.*

*Lewisham,*

***Lewisham, Deptford and Blackheath.***

*Wednesday, August 8.* Lay at *Lewisham*.—Went on board the Ship *fallen down to Deptford*, which we now hallowed by the Word of God and Prayer.—*Dined at Mr. W——'s of Lewisham, and* preached at *Blackheath* to near 20000 People, on the *Pharisee* and the *Publican*.—I felt *much freedom in my self, and could* not but take notice of a fundamental Mistake his Lordship of *London* was guilty of, in a Pastoral Letter published this Day.—For in it he exhorts his Clergy, SO to explain the Doctrine of Justification by Faith *alone*, as to make our Good Works a *necessary Condition* of it.—St. *Paul* in his Epistle to the *Galatians*, pronounces a dreadful *Anathema* against the Maintainers of such Doctrines.—*I pray God his Lordship may see his Error, and thereby be freed from so tremendous a Sentence! And let ALL the People say, Amen!*

***On board Ship, Lewisham and Blackheath.***

*Thursday, August 9.* Went this Morning and continued on board till Afternoon, settling my little Family.—*Dined at Lewisham.* Preached at *Blackheath* to a very large Congregation.—*Took a little Refreshment,* and went and lay on board, in order to be ready to finish my Affairs in the Morning.—Several Companies of Friends came to see me, and some continued with me all Night.—In answer to their Prayers, I doubt not but we shall be as safe as *Noah was* in the Ark. Every Place is alike to those who have the Presence of God with them.

*Heav'n is, dear Lord, where'er thou art, &  
O never then from me depart; &  
For to my Soul 'tis Hell to be, &  
But for one Moment void of thee.*



***Lewisham, Blackheath and Blendon.***

*Friday, August 10.* Finished my Ship Business.—  
 Breakfasted at *Lewisham*.—Spent the rest of the Day most  
 comfortably at *Blendon*.—And preached in the Evening

to

6

to a yet greater Congregation at *Blackheath*.—The  
 People expecting it would be the last Time, were much af-  
 fected with Sorrow; but a great Shout of Rejoicing was  
 heard amongst them, when I told them of my continu-  
 ing to preach till *Monday*.—God has made himself a wil-  
 ling People in the Day of his Power.—O all ye Servants  
 of the Lord, bless ye the Lord, praise him and magnify him  
 for ever.

***Blendon and Blackheath.***

*Saturday, August 11.* Began in the Spirit of Love and  
 Meekness to answer the Bishop of *London's* Pastoral Let-  
 ter.—I pray God give it his Blessing.—Continued all Day  
 at *Blendon*.—Preached in the Evening at *Blackheath*, and  
 returned to *Blendon* with an earnest Longing in my Soul  
 for the approaching Sabbath.—O how do I long for that  
 Rest which awaits the Children of God! Lord give me  
 Patience to wait till my Change come!

***Blendon, Bexley, Blackheath and Lewisham.***

*Sunday, August 12.* Preached early in the Morning to  
 some hundreds in Justice *Delamotte's* Yard, most of whom  
 came thither last Night, singing and praising God.—  
 Read Prayers, heard a truly Christian Sermon from Mr.  
*Peers*, and assisted him in administering the blessed Sacra-  
 ment, in his own Church, to near 600 Communicants.—  
 Preached at three in the Afternoon, to near 3000 in Mr.  
*Delamotte's* Yard, and to about 30000 at *Blackheath*.—  
 At each Place the People were exceedingly affected.—  
 Much Devotion and Reverence was to be seen during the  
 Time of the Administration of the Holy Eucharist.—In  
 the Afternoon at *Blackheath*, when I said, Finally, Bre-  
 thren, Farewell!—Thousands immediately burst out in-

to strong Cryings and Tears!—The Sight, I think, must have melted down the most hardened Heart.—My own was so full that I did not know when to leave off.—I continued my Discourse till it was near dark.—And collected near 15 l. for *Kingswood School*.—And with great Difficulty got away in a Coach to *Lewisham*, where an hospitable Entertainment was prepared for me and my

Friends.

7

Friends.—Their Company was sweet to my Soul, but my Body being weak, and GOD being pleased to visit me with some inward Trials, I retired to *Bed* with a deeper Sense of my own Vileness, than I have felt for some Time.—*Lord encrease it for thy Mercy's Sake!*

*Monday, August 13.* Rose early, and hasted to *Blendon*.—Finished, and sent to the Press, my Answer to His Lordship's Pastoral Letter.—Dined, and took Leave of my dear weeping Friends.—Rode with many of them to *Erith*; took my final and sorrowful Farewel, and went from thence in a Boat with my dear Fellow Travellers to *Gravesend*, where our Ship was fallen down.—In the Way I was much edified by reading an Extract out of Bishop *Hopkins's* and Dr. *Hammond's* Sermons on the Doctrine of the New Birth, and thought it my Duty to recommend them publickly to all my Friends. *Blessed be God for detaining me in England by the Embargo.—Many others, as well as myself, I hope, have Reason to rejoice thereat.—Lord, teach me in all Things simply to comply with thy Will, without presuming to say, even in my Heart, What doest Thou?*

*My Bondage of Corruption break, &  
For this my Spirit groans; &  
Thy only Will I fain would seek, &  
O save me from my own!*

***On Board the Elizabeth, Capt. Stevenson, Com-  
mander, bound from England to Philadelphia.***

*Tuesday 14.* Got on board about Eight last Night, and received the following Letter from *Thomas Webb*, Clerk of the Parish of *Bretforton, Worcestershire*, whom *Mr. Benjamin Seward* mentioned in a Letter published in my last Journal.

*Reverend and worthy Sir,*

‘Altho’ I am unknown to you in Person, yet as I ‘trust I am, by the Grace of God, awaken’d to a New ‘and Spiritual Life, thro’ the powerful Influence of your

‘Ministry,

8

‘Ministry, I think myself under an Obligation to give ‘my Testimony to the Truth as it is in JESUS; and ‘to pay my grateful Acknowledgements to the Freedom ‘of that divine Grace, which has made you so wonder- ‘fully instrumental in calling me, a most unworthy Sin- ‘ner, at this last Hour of the Day, from a State of Dark- ‘ness and Insensibility, to the marvellous Light of his ‘glorious Gospel.—The Circumstances of my Conversion ‘were as follows.—I heard you was to preach on *Thurs- ‘day* the 19th of *April* last, at *Mr. Seward’s* of *Badsey*, ‘and living at *Bretforton*, a Village about a Mile from ‘thence (where I have been Clerk of the Parish for about ‘Thirty Years, being now in the 63d Year of my Age) ‘my Curiosity, as I then should have term’d it, but as ‘it is since evident by the Consequence, *the wonderful ‘Goodness and Providence of Almighty GOD*, led me to ‘hear you, which I did with great Attention, and was ‘much affected. The next Day, being *Good-Friday*, I ‘attended your Ministry again with great Warmth, when ‘you spoke with such Demonstration of the Spirit, and ‘with Power, from these Words, *What I say unto you ‘I say unto all, Watch*, that I soon was convinced I was ‘in the State of the Foolish Virgins, who were unpre- ‘pared to meet the Bridegroom, having all my Life ‘long taken up a Lamp of an outward Profession;

‘thinking it sufficient that I duly and constantly attended  
 ‘publick Worship, Sacraments, and the like;—but  
 ‘I soon found, to my great Confusion, that I had all my  
 ‘Life long been offering to GOD the Sacrifice of Fools,  
 ‘being destitute of the pure Oil of Grace in the Heart,  
 ‘which alone could make me meet to attend the Mar-  
 ‘riage Supper of the Lamb.—The New Birth,—Justifi-  
 ‘cation by Faith only,—The Want of Free-Will in Man  
 ‘to do good Works, without the special Grace of GOD,  
 ‘and the like, was as it were new Language to me; for  
 ‘tho’ I remember’d the Letter of these Doctrines, yet  
 ‘the Spiritual Sense thereof I was an utter Stranger to.—  
 ‘But being very much oppress’d in Thought concerning  
 ‘those important Truths which you deliver’d, as soon as  
 ‘I returned Home, I searched an old Exposition of the  
 ‘Catechism, the Church Articles, and Book of Homi-  
 ‘lies, which I found exactly to correspond with what I

‘had

9

‘had heard deliver’d by you.—Some Days after this, being  
 ‘a Taylor by Trade, I was sent for to Work at a little  
 ‘Alehouse call’d *Contercup*, where (tho’ one of the last  
 ‘Places in which I should have expected Food for the Soul)  
 ‘the Man of the House told me he had some Books  
 ‘which he had of one Mr. F——, a Glazier and Plumber  
 ‘in *Tewkesbury*, who had thrown them by in order to  
 ‘have sent them to the Paper-Mill, as fit for no other  
 ‘Purpose, but that he begg’d they might be given to  
 ‘him; that he had heard Mr. *Whitefield*; got his Ser-  
 ‘mon on the New Birth; and that these old Books spoke  
 ‘to the very same Purpose as Mr. *Whitefield* did. Upon  
 ‘which I desired to see one of them, (the other being  
 ‘then lent out) the Title whereof was, *General Directi-  
 ‘ons for a comfortable Walking with GOD*, by *Robert  
 ‘Boulton*, an old Divine of our Church. I had not read  
 ‘long, before the Light broke in upon my Soul with such  
 ‘powerful Evidence, that I was from that Instant clearly  
 ‘convinced, and I hope, by the Grace of God, deter-  
 ‘mined not to know any Thing, save JESUS CHRIST,

‘and him crucified. Upon this I avoided all carnal Acquaintance and Reasoning as much as possible, and constantly attended the Religious Society at *Badsey*, where, by hearing your Sermons, and other Religious Exercises, I daily was strengthen’d and comforted. Soon after this, I got the other old Book, which was so providentially preserved from the Paper-Mill, the Title whereof is as follows, *Six Evangelical Histories.—Water turned into Wine,—The Temple’s Purgation,—Christ and Nicodemus,—John’s last Testimony,—Christ and the Woman of Samaria,—The Ruler’s Son healed;—contained in the Second, Third, and Fourth Chapters of St. John’s Gospel, open’d and handled by the late faithful Servant of God Daniel Dykes, Bachellor in Divinity. Printed Anno Dom. 1617.* This old Book has been a very grateful Cordial to my Soul; and tho’ I have lived under the Sound of the Gospel for so many Years, and thought I did not want to be taught the first Principles of Christianity at this Age, being, as I apprehended, well thought of and esteem’d by all my Neighbours, yet I am fully convinced, that I knew nothing as I ought to know, and that the Gospel was to me a sealed Book;

B

‘but

10

‘but by the wonderful Free Grace of GOD, tho’ I before had Eyes and saw not, Ears and heard not, I now read it as the Savour of Life unto Life, and can say experimentally that the Word of God is a *Light to my Feet, and a Lanthorn to my Paths.*—For this Declaration of the Truth I have suffer’d the Reproach and Derision of them that were round about me. But I trust, that the Grace of GOD, which hath called me, when so old and dead in Trespasses and Sins, will also touch the Hearts of my Opposers, and *work in them both to will and to do of his good Pleasure.*—I have been even threaten’d with the Loss of my Bread for the Profession of the Truth, but hope God will turn the Hearts of my Enemies. If not, and it were his blessed Will, I hope I should be enabled to lay down my Life in Defence of

'that Gospel, which I can truly say is glad Tidings of  
'great Salvation to my Soul; and could, I think, be con-  
'tent with old *Simeon* to cry out in Transport, *Lord,*  
'*now lettest thou thy Servant depart in Peace.*—The in-  
'ward Light and Comfort I have felt *being* to me more  
'miraculous than if I had seen one *rose* from the Dead.—  
'May the Lord prosper your Labours, and make them  
'successful to the turning many Souls to Righteousness;  
'and as you know in whom you have believed, so I am  
'confident you will join with me in giving all Glory to  
'that God, who I trust hath created us a-new in CHRIST  
'JESUS; in whom I most humbly and thankfully beg  
'Leave to subscribe myself,

*Your most unworthy Servant,*

*August 11, 1739.*

THOMAS WEBB

Rose early, and settled my Family Affairs.—Wrote  
some Letters, *and*, after much Entreaty, went to *Graves-*  
*end*; read Prayers, and preached at *Mitton* Church near  
the Town.—The Congregation was large, I spoke with  
Freedom, and returned *back* to the Ship by Eight in the  
Evening. *Blessed be God*, I was much rejoiced at re-  
tiring from the World. *Oh that GOD may now fully*  
*shew me myself.*

*Search,*

11

*Search, try, O Lord, my Reins and Heart, &*  
*If Evil lurks in any Part; &*  
*Correct me where I go astray, &*  
*And guide me in thy perfect Way!*

*Wednesday, August 15.* Began to put those of my Fa-  
mily, who I thought were prepared for it into Bands.—  
In all we are Eight Men, Four Women, one Boy, and  
two Children, besides Mr. *Seward* and myself.—The  
Conversion of one of the Men was particularly remark-  
able.—Not long since he was Master of a Ship, which was

lost near the Gulph of *Florida*.—Providence was pleased to throw him and his Crew upon a Sand-Bank, where they continually expected the Waters to overwhelm them. At the End of Ten Days they saw a Ship, and made a Signal of Distress.—The Ship made towards them; the Captain (now with me) went out with his Boat, and begg'd for a Passage for himself and Men.—It was granted him, on Condition he would leave some of his Crew behind upon the Sand-Bank, but he would not consent.—At length the other Commander agreed to take all.—But as soon as my Friend put off his Boat to fetch them, the Commander of the Ship made Sail and left them.—All this seem'd quite *against*, but in the End God shewed it was intended *for* the Good of my Friend.—After Thirty Days Continuance upon the Sand-Bank, having fitted up the Boat with some Planks they had **took** out of a Ship which had been lost Five Months before, Nine of them committed themselves to the Providence of God.—the others cared not to venture themselves in so small a Boat.—**Ha-**  
**ving** sailed about 140 Leagues, **they** at length came to *Tyby* Island, Ten Miles off *Savannah*.—An Inhabitant being near that Place, **espied** them, and brought them Home with him.—Being then in *Georgia*, and inform'd of what had happen'd, I invited the Captain to Breakfast with me, and reminded him of the Goodness of God.—He then seem'd serious, and coming very providentially in the same Ship with me, when I return'd to *England*, God was pleased to work more effectually in his Soul, and he is now returning with me to *Georgia* again.—Many Offers have been made him to go back into the

B 2

World,

12

World, but he chuses rather to suffer Affliction with the People of God.—Most of my other Assistants have left good Places, and are willing freely to spend and be spent for the Good of the Orphan-House;—Several of them have *already found*, all I hope are *seeking* CHRIST.—We seem perfectly settled already, and whatever Storms God may permit to attack us without, I hope we shall have a con-

stant Calm within and among ourselves.—Blessed be God, I find myself composed, and perfectly resign'd, nay, much rejoiced at my present Situation.—*Oh that I could always have no other Will but GOD's!*

*Thursday, August 16.* Had still greater Reason to rejoice at the Regulation of my Family.—Wrote several Letters, and begun to have publick Prayers Morning and Evening, and spent above an Hour in examining and exhorting my Fellow Travellers, and went to Bed almost forgetful that I had ever been out in the World.—*For ever blessed be GOD's holy Name thro' CHRIST.*

*Friday, August 17.* Had a brisk Gale, which carried us directly thro' the Downs.—Sent some Farewel Letters on Shore, and rejoiced much in my happy Settlement on Ship board.—In the Morning most of my Family were sick;—I did not entirely escape.—God enabled us to give Thanks, and as we came to sail more directly before the Wind, our Disorder gradually went off.—I bless God we are in good Order, and if the Voyage ends as happily as it begins, we shall have abundant Reason to bless God for it.—*Grant this, O Lord, for thy dear Son's Sake.*

*Saturday, August 18.* Made but small Advances in our Way, there being little Wind, and that not very fair, 'till about Six this Evening, at which Time it favour'd us very much.—Was enlighten'd in reading God's Word.—Had my Heart warmed with a Sense of his Love and distinguishing Mercies.—*Was enlarged in* praying several Times with and for my Friends, and was very earnest with God to give me Grace to improve my present Retirement to his Glory, the Good of his Church, and the Edification of my own Soul.—*Perceived also* my Bodily Strength to increase, and enjoyed such unspeak-

able

13

able Peace and Tranquillity within, that I was often filled with a holy Confusion, and obliged to retire to give



*my Soul Vent.*—Our Lord, I am sure, is with us in the Ship.—*O infinitely condescending GOD!*

*Sunday, August 19.* Administer'd the Holy Sacrament early in the Morning, sung an Hymn, and continued in Prayer for near an Hour afterwards, on Behalf of ourselves and absent friends.—*My Heart was much melted down and enlarged.*—The Power which was given me was soon communicated to my Companions;—they sympathized and wept with me.—A Spirit of Love was sent forth amongst us.—*May it increase ever more and more!*

Both at Morning and Evening Prayers, the Captain and Ship's Company attended *very orderly*.—The Remainder of the Day was spent in Reading, Prayer, Singing and Praising GOD.—The Ship continued sailing directly before the Wind, at the Rate of about Five or Six Miles an Hour.—Most seem'd sensible of, and thankful for the Divine Mercies.

*Monday, August 20.* Fair Wind all Night, by which our Ship was carried to the *Bay of Biscay*,—and went before the Wind at the Rate of Six Miles an Hour, almost the whole Day.—The Wind being brisk, and a great Swell coming from the Bay, most of us grew sick, and could do little else but lie down *upon our Beds*.—This rejoiced me much, for I had a glorious Opportunity of spending many Hours in close Communion with GOD, to ask Pardon for the Defects of my publick Ministry, and to pray for Strength to prepare me for future Work and Trials. *My Soul was frequently dissolved into Tears.*—A Sense of my actual Sins and natural Deformity, humbled me exceedingly;—and then the Freeness and Riches of God's everlasting Love broke in with such Light and Power upon my Soul, that I was often awed into *Silence*, and could not speak *any more!*—A dear Companion was with me, and helped me to lament, pray, and give Praise.—*Oh the Comforts of Religious Friendship!*—Sanctify it, O Lord, to me, for thy dear Son's Sake.

*Tuesday,*

14

*Tuesday, August 21.* Contrary Winds all Day, and the Swell continued, **which** kept all my Family, as well as myself, a little sickish.—I conversed with God by Prayer, and his Word, most of the Time; **and felt Enlargement of Heart in the Evening.** *Oh that by conversing with GOD I may be changed from Glory to Glory, and fitted for whatever he has appointed for me to do or suffer, during my Pilgrimage here on Earth!*

*Saturday, August 25.* Had but little regular Sleep since *Tuesday*, the Wind continuing contrary.—Last Night it blew a **hard** Gale.—Most of my Family still continued sick.—I waited on them as well as I could, and prayed to GOD to make me willing to become the Servant of all.—**Frequently interceded for absent Friends; and remember'd those in particular, who, by their kind Presents, administer'd much to our Comfort on board.**—Had two or three **providential** Conferences with the Captain of the Ship, and some of his Men.—Read Dr. *Guise* **his** Paraphrase on the Evangelist St. *Matthew*, and think it the best I ever met with.—Endeavour'd to keep close to GOD by watching unto Prayer, for Direction and Help in Time of Need.—Frequently **was** enlighten'd to see the Pride and Selfishness of my Heart,—and as frequently long'd for that perfect Liberty wherewith JESUS CHRIST sets his Servants free.—The Sea was calmer to Day than before.—My Family grew better, and we spent near two Hours this Evening in talking of the inward State of our Souls, and preparing for the Reception of the blessed Sacrament.—*Lord grant that we all may have on the Wedding Garment.*

*Sunday, August 26.* Administered the Holy Sacrament early in the Morning.—Spent the Remainder of the Day in Reading, Intercession, &c.—**God was pleased to enlighten me in Reading his Holy Word.—And gave me Satisfaction in the Behaviour of those about me.** The Wind was still contrary, and the Sea rough; but I had a great Calm and Joy in my own Soul. How can I be

thankful enough for the glorious Opportunities I now enjoy for Improvement.—*Let all that is within me praise God's Holy Name.*

*Monday,*

15

*Monday, August 27.* Had the Pleasure of seeing three Jamaica Ships come all together.—Two of which spoke to us, and by them we sent News of our Situation to England.—Was much assisted in writing an Account of God's Dealings with me from my Infant Days, which I have prayed for Strength to do these three Years, but never had Power given me till this Day.—Blessed be God, the Weather was more calm, the Wind more fair, and my Family better; so that I trust we shall receive Strength to bear future Crosses.—As yet this is the most comfortable Voyage I have made.—*Oh that I may grow in Grace, and then my Happiness will encrease daily!*

*Tuesday, August 28.* Calm Weather and smooth Sea.—Was assisted in Reading the Holy Scriptures.—Rejoiced much in the good Behaviour of those about me.—One Part of the Day felt some irregular Passion arise in my Heart, but in the Evening was so visited from above, that my Soul was quite confounded in the Sense of the Divine Goodness.—This Day Twelvemonth I left Savannah.—Lord how hast thou multiplied thy Mercies upon me since that Time.—And yet thou dost still delight to honour me, and makest this Retirement so sweet and profitable to my Soul, that my only Fear is lest it should be over too soon.—But my Time is in Thy Hands.—Lord let me have no Will of my own for thy dear Son's Sake!

*Friday, August 31.* Very light Winds for last two Days last past, and an entire Calm to Day.—But I had many Inward Strugglings.—I could do nothing but lay my self down and offer my Soul up to God.—At Night I prayed with strong Cryings and many Tears, before all my Family, for them and all those dear People who have recommended themselves to my Prayers.—Afterwards my

*Soul* received Comfort.—*Oh that these inward Conflicts may purge, humble and purify my polluted, proud and treacherous Heart! Let all that Love me say, Amen.*

I observe these inward Trials always follow inward Communications.—For these two Days *last* past I have been much assisted.—Lest I should be puffed up, and that my Mind may be prepared to receive greater Degrees of

*Light,*

16

Light, God out of Love has sent me a Thorn in the Flesh.—*Lord grant this Loving Correction of thine may make me truly GREAT! Amen LORD JESUS, Amen.*

*Sunday, September 2.* Still very light Winds and fair Weather.—Weak and sick in Body these two Days.—Administred the Holy Sacrament in the Morning.—Had publick Prayers as usual.—All attended very orderly; *and something of a Face of Religion (as I was told) was to be seen through the whole Ship.*—Examined *particularly* in the Evening into the inward State of my Companions.—*Blessed be God,* I hope we grow in Grace, and learn more and more to bear one another's Burdens.—*Grant we may for ever thus fulfil thy Law, O CHRIST.*

*Saturday, September 8.* Advanced about a Hundred Leagues this Week on our Way to *Philadelphia.*—Boisterous Weather most part of the Time, which caused many of us to be *sick* again.—Finished the Account of my Life beforementioned, *and was pressed in Spirit to print it.*—*Father, bless it for thy dear Son's Sake.*—*Had as deep a Sense of Sin, and my in-bred Corruptions, as ever I had in my Life.*—I groan daily to be set at Liberty.—*Dearest Redeemer, I come unto thee weary and heavy laden, O do thou bring me into the full Freedom of the Sons of GOD!*

*Sunday, September 9.* Had a comfortable Sacrament, and a Love-Feast afterwards, at which we were not un-

mindful to pray for our dear Friends on Shore.—Read publick Prayers, and expounded as usual, to the Ship's Company in the Morning; but gave a Quaker Preacher *on board* (at his Desire) the Use of my Cabbin in the Afternoon.—*All attended very gravely.*—He spoke chiefly concerning the false Pretences and Education of those who run before they are called of God into the Ministry of the Church of *England.*—*Wo be unto those who give the Adversaries Leave thus to speak reproachfully of us; it had been better for them if they had never been born.*

*Saturday,*

<sup>17</sup>

*Saturday, September 15.* Had a pleasant Prospect to Day of some of the Western Islands.—Gave myself to Reading the Word of God, and to Prayer, the greatest Part of this Week.—*Was visited with frequent inward Trials.*—*Had many Things on my Heart to write, but am as yet with-held.*—*Ended the Week comfortably with my Family, and was exceedingly strengthen'd in Reading Professor Frank's Account of the Orphan-House at Hall, near Glaucha.*—It seems, in many Circumstances, to be so exactly parallel to my present Undertaking for the Poor of *Georgia*, that I trust the Orphan-House about to be erected there, will be carried on and ended with the like Faith and Success. *Amen, Amen.*

*Sunday, Sept. 16.* Administer'd the Sacrament, and had a Love-Feast afterwards.—Expounded, as usual, at Morning and Evening Prayer, and the Power of God was amongst us.—The Day was calm and clear,—*and tho' we do not go forward much in our Course, yet I trust we shall every Day be fitted more and more for those various Turns of Providence which I expect we shall meet with when we come to Shore.*—*Thy Grace, O Lord, will be more than sufficient for us. Amen, Lord JESUS, Amen.*

*Saturday, Sept. 22.* Underwent inexpressible Agonies of Soul for two or three Days, at the Remembrance of

my Sins, and the bitter Consequences of them.—Surely my Sorrows were so great, that had not God, in the midst of them, comforted my Soul, the Load would have been unstopable! All the while I was assured GOD had forgiven me, but I could not forgive myself, for sinning against so much Light and Love. I felt something of that which Adam felt when turned out of Paradise; David, when he was convicted of Adultery; and Peter, when with Oaths and Curses he had Thrice denied his Master. I then, if ever, did truly smite upon my ungrateful Breast, and cry, GOD be merciful to me a Sinner!—I eat but very little, and went mourning all the Day long. At length, my Lord looked upon me, and with that Look broke my Rocky Heart, and Floods

C

of

18

of contrite Tears gushed out before my whole Family, and indeed I wept most bitterly!—When in this Condition, I wonder'd not at Peter's running so slowly to the Sepulchre, when loaded with the Sense of his Sin.—Alas! a Consideration of aggravated Crimes quite took off my Chariot-Wheels, and I drove so exceeding heavily, that was I always to see myself such a Sinner as I am, and as I did then, without seeing the Saviour of Sinners, I should not so much as be able to look up.

This latter Part of the Week, blessed be the Lord, he has restored me to the Light of his Countenance, and enlarged my Heart to write freely, and praise him with joyful Lips.—Our Ship being got Southwardly into the Trade-Winds, and the Weather warm, I, and some of my Companions, lay upon Deck.—We had the Holy Sacrament on the Festival of St. Matthew; and tho' we are like to have a long, yet I trust it will be a profitable Voyage to our Souls.—Blessed be GOD that he does still chasten and correct me, and not give me over unto Eternal Death.—It is good for me to be thus afflicted, for thereby I get an experimental Knowledge of GOD's Law.—Praise the Lord, O my Soul!

*Sunday, September 23.* Had a sweet Sacrament, and Love-Feast afterwards;—Was much strengthen'd, both in my Morning and Evening Exercises, and felt such unspeakable Comfort and Warmth of Heart towards my absent Friends, as made me for a while forget the Anguish I lately felt; but at Night, a Sense of my Sins weighed me down again, and I mourned in my Prayer, and was vexed.—Alas! how are they mistaken, that go out of the World to avoid Temptations.—I never am so much tempted, as when confined on Ship-board. A Mercy this from GOD, to keep me in Action, and prepare me for future Blessings.—*Luther* says, he never undertook any fresh Work, but he was either visited with a Fit of Sickness, or some strong Temptation.—Prayer, Meditation, and Temptation are necessary Accomplishments, in his Account, for every Minister.—*May I follow him as he did CHRIST!*

*Saturday,*

<sup>19</sup>

*Saturday, September 29.* Administer'd the Holy Sacrament this Morning.—Had fair Winds, and lay upon Deck with my Companions the greatest Part of the Week.—Have been much strengthen'd and assisted in writing every Day, am ample Recompence for the Trials of the last Week.—Thus does GOD sometimes humble, and sometimes exalt, and by all his Dispensations perfect the regenerate Soul.—Had little Time for Reading, but this Afternoon, I was greatly strengthen'd by perusing some Paragraphs out of a Book call'd *The Preacher*, written by Dr. *Edwards* of *Cambridge*, and extracted by Mr. *Jonathan Warn*, in his Books entitled, *The Church of England-Man turn'd Dissenter*, and *Arminianism the Back-Door to Popery*.—There are such noble Testimonies given before that University, of Justification by Faith only, the imputed Righteousness of CHRIST, our having no Free-will, &c. that they deserve to be written in Letters of Gold.—I see more and more the Benefit of leaving written Testimonies behind us, concerning these important Points.—They not only profit the present, but will

also much edify the future Age.—*Lord, open thou my Mouth, that I may henceforward speak more boldly and explicitly, as I ought to speak!*

*Sunday, Sept. 30.* Administer'd the Holy Sacrament, and had a Love-Feast.—Expounded with Power in the Morning to the Sailors, and lent my Cabbin to the Quaker Preacher in the Afternoon.—He spoke with much Earnestness, but in my Opinion his Foundation was wrong.—He seem'd to make the Light of natural Conscience, and the Holy Spirit, one and the same Thing, and represented CHRIST *within*, and not CHRIST *without*, as the Foundation of our Faith;—whereas, the outward Righteousness of JESUS CHRIST imputed to us, I believe, is the sole Fountain and Cause of all the inward Communications which we receive from the Spirit of GOD.—*Oh that all of that Persuasion were convinced of this; 'till they are, they cannot preach the Truth as it is in JESUS.*

*Saturday, October 6.* Contrary Winds most Part of this Week, and made a very slow Progress towards Phila-

C 2

*delphia.—*

20

*delphia.—Had great Assistance in Writing, and strong Convictions of my past Sins.—Held a close Band for some Hours this Evening with my whole Family, wherein we open'd our Hearts, confess'd our Faults to, and pray'd for one another.—Do thou, O great and mighty Physician of Souls, hear and heal us. Amen and Amen.*

*Sunday, October 7.* Administered the Holy Sacrament, —Had a Love-Feast, and expounded, as usual.—The Wind blowing very fresh, the Ship-Men were obliged to attend the Sails, and so could not come to Publick Worship.—Sailed sometimes near Nine Miles an Hour, for which we endeavoured to praise the Lord.—*Had comfortable Communion with GOD, in interceeding for our dear Friends on Shore, and at Night felt such Freedom in my Spirit from a Load I labour'd under, as caused me to*



break out into many Thanskgivings to GOD.—Every Day more and more convinces me that the Lord will fulfil the Desires of them that fear him.—He is the Father of Mercies;—He is the GOD of all Consolations;—He can create Comfort out of nothing, and bring Light and Order out of the greatest Confusion.—This my Soul knoweth right well.—*O my Soul, be not slack to praise Him and love Him for ever and ever!*

Tuesday, October 9. This Morning our whole Ship's Company was brought to an Allowance of Bread, Two Biskets a Day for each Person;—but, blessed be GOD, thro' the Bounty of Friends at England, as yet my Family have got Provisions enough.—*The Lord, in Return, feed our Benefactors with that Bread which cometh down from Heaven!*

Friday, October 12. Kept a Family Fast this Day, that we might afflict ourselves before our GOD, to seek a right Way for us and our little ones, and for all our Substance.—*I trust it was such a Fast as the Lord would chuse.*—His Divine Presence was amongst us, and we had good Reason to hope and believe that the Lord was entreated for us.—*Oh that we may find more and more Reason to say so when we come on Shore. I dread going into the World: But wherefore do I fear?—Lord, I believe (Oh*

*help*

21

*help my Unbelief) that thou wilt keep me unspotted from it.*

Saturday, October 13. Still GOD is pleased to send us contrary Winds, but very warm and pleasant Weather.—The Power of Writing has been in a great Measure taken from me, but GOD has been with me in Reading, Expounding, and my other Exercises of Devotion.—I have experienced some blessed Teachings of his Holy Spirit, in convicting me of the Pride, Sensuality, and Blindness of my own Heart, and of the Advantages Satan has

gain'd over me by working on them.—I have also been more enlighten'd to see into the Mystery of Godliness, God manifest in the Flesh, and behold more and more of God's Goodness in letting me have this Time of Retirement to search my Spirit.—I would not **but** have **come** this Voyage for a Thousand Worlds; it has been sweet and profitable to my Soul.—**The Length and Continuance of it highly delights me.**—Lord, *I want to know myself and Thee. Oh let not the Hurry of Business, which awaits me on Shore, prevent my hearing the small still Voice of thy Holy Spirit.—Enable me, as thou didst thy Servant Enoch, whether in publick or private Life, to walk with thee, my God!*

*Sunday, October 14.* Felt GOD's Power with us, both at Sacrament and publick Worship Morning and Evening.—Was enlarged in Intercession, and had Reason to believe there was sweet Communion kept up between us and our Friends on Shore.—The Assurance of their Prayers often lifts up my Hands when they hang down, and strengthens my feeble Knees.—The Prospect of the many Changes and Trials which I must necessarily be exposed to and undergo, sometimes fills me with Fear and Trembling; but when I reflect that GOD has stirr'd up the Hearts of his **choicest** Servants to pray for me, my Fears vanish. Methinks, I could then leap into a burning fiery Furnace, or bear to be thrown into a Den of devouring Lions.—*Lord make me thus minded in the Hour of Trial!—My dear Friends, continue to pray for me, that my Faith fail not.*

*Saturday,*

22

*Saturday, October 19* [[20]]. On *Tuesday* and *Wednesday* had the roughest Weather we have yet met with, but the latter Part of the Week has been warm and calm.—All our fresh live Stock of every Kind is now gone, but thro' the Divine Bounty in raising us Friends, we have not only Food enough for ourselves, but some to spare **to** the Ship's Company.—**My being on board is every Day more**

and more comfortable.—I experience fresh Teachings and Communications from God's Holy Spirit, and have received some remarkable Answers to Prayer, both in respect to myself and Family.—We are most of us lusty as Eagles, and eat our Bread with Gladness and Singleness of Heart.—The Lord is pleased to fill me out of his Divine Fulness, and to shew me more of the Glories of the upper World.—I can never be thankful enough for this sweet Retreat.—How wonderfully does the great and infinitely wise GOD cause every Thing to work together for our Good!—I want a Thousand Tongues to praise him.—*Let every Thing that hath Breath praise the Lord.*

Saturday, October 27. Came into Soundings on Sunday last; saw Land on Monday, and were within a few Leagues of Capen Lopen, which opens into the Bay whither we are bound; but Providence was pleased to keep us back by contrary Winds. Met with a Jamaica Brigg on Thursday, and had an Opportunity of sending a Packet by her to my dear Friend Mr. Noble of New York.—Came within Sight of the Land again to Day, but still are kept back.—Blessed be GOD I am quite resign'd; I love my Retirement too well to be fond of leaving it till the Lord Wills.—Our Provisions grow scanty, the People are put to an Allowance of about half a Pound of Beef for each in a Day, and we have diminished our Family Stock in helping them.—In this we rejoice.—However, blessed be GOD, we have got Plenty of Water, and very fair Weather, and my Family I think was never in better Order in respect to their Bodies and Souls.—The Lord has been especially gracious unto me, as he always is in the Time of any Necessity. He has been pleased to give me great Freedom in writing, and has vouchsafed me such plentiful Communications from himself, that I have

abundant

23

abundant Reason to cry out, Surely GOD is in this Place!

*Lo! GOD is here! My Soul adore,  
 And own how dreadful is this Place!  
 Let all within thee feel his Power,  
 In Silence bow before his Face;  
 To Him let all thy Thoughts arise,  
 Ceaseless accepted Sacrifice.*

*Sunday, October 28. Felt more of the Divine Assistance to Day, than I have since I have been on board.—I have been engaged in writing my extempore Sermon on the Marriage at Cana.—The Holy Ghost brought many Things to my Remembrance; and tho' I have well drunk of Divine Comforts since my Retirement already, yet I may say with the Governor of the Feast, Lord, thou has kept the good Wine until Now. Hasten that Time, O Lord, when I shall drink it new in thy Heavenly Kingdom!*

*Monday, October 29. Had a sweet Opportunity offered me to Day of giving a few Sermons, and something out of my little Stock of Provisions to a Captain of a Sloop and his Company, who had been driven to great Extremity. Oh how gently does GOD deal with me and mine! How has he consider'd our Weakness, and not permitted us to fall into great Dangers or Wants.—Blessed be his Name for evermore. Amen! Amen!*

***Pensilvania. Lewis Town.***

*Tuesday, October 30. Had sweet Communion with GOD last Night.—Pray'd with, exhorted, and solemnly recommended my Family to the Grace of our Lord JESUS, expecting to go on Shore this Morning.—Being near Capen Lopen, a Pilot came on Board, in whose Boat, Brother Seward, myself, and another dear Friend, went to Lewis Town, in order that we might go to Philadelphia by Land, and get a House in Readiness before the Ship arrived at the Place.—Whilst in the Boat, I hope each of our Hearts was filled with a Sense of God's Love;*

and

24

and when we reached *Lewis Town* about Evening, I took the first Opportunity of retiring, to vent my Heart in Praises and Thanksgiving for his abundant Mercies conferred on me and mine.—Oh how can I be thankful enough for this blessed Voyage! I have been on board just Eleven Weeks, but they have seemed to me only as so many Days.—My inner Man has been much better'd by it.—My Knowledge, I trust, in Spiritual Things encreased, my Understanding enlighten'd to see my Corruptions, and my Heart much enlarged in writing Letters, and other Things.—The Remembrance of my Humiliations is sweet unto my Soul, and the Freedom which GOD has given me over some darling Failings fills me with Joy unspeakable, and full of Glory. My Family also have great Reason to be thankful.—GOD has been pleased to work on many of their Hearts, and I believe none of them repent leaving their native Country. A remarkable Alteration is to be seen in two Friend's Children, a Boy and a Girl, which I brought with me.—They are little more than three Years old, and can read in the Primmer, and sing Part of *Kenn's* Hymns very prettily.—They have born the Voyage better than any in the Ship, and are under careful Discipline. They are both generally employ'd either in Working or Reading, and are taught to make Work their Diversion.—The little Boy picks Pease, and the little Girl sews with her Needle.—The Proficiency they have made gives me great Satisfaction, and I hope is an Earnest of the Improvement that will be seen in the poor Children that are shortly to be committed to my Care.—I cannot say any remarkable Conversions have been wrought on board, but many have had strong Convictions; *Lord, cause them to end in sound Conversions! Amen.* But to return. About Five in the Evening, we landed at *Lewis Town*, situated in the Southern Part of the Province of *Pensilvania*, and about 150 measured *English* Miles from *Philadelphia*. The Houses are most of them built of Wood; it is not above half so big, but more plentiful, in respect of Provision, than *Savan-*

nah in Georgia. We had not been long in the Inn, but GOD soon shewed us he had prepared our Way; for News had been brought a Fortnight ago of my coming hither, and two or three of the chief Inhabitants being apprized

of

25

of my Arrival, came and spent the Evening with us, and desired me to give them a Sermon on the Morrow, which I promised to do.—We supped very comfortably together, and after Prayers, and singing with the Family, I and my Dear Companions went to Rest, admiring more and more the Goodness and Providence of the All-wise GOD. He is the great Householder of the whole World, and I look upon all Places and Persons as so many little Parts of his great Family.—I pray to him before I go, and I find in Answer to my Prayer, he always commands some or other of his Household to take Care of, and provide for me.—As here's the same Sun, so here's the same GOD in America as in England.—I bless GOD all Places are equal to me, so I am where GOD would have me to be, I hope I shall never account myself at Home, till I arrive at my Heavenly Father's House above.—My Heart is there already. I long to shake off this Earthly Tabernacle.—It sadly confines my Soul.—However, I desire patiently to tarry till my blessed Change comes.—I would not desire to reign till I have suffer'd with my Master. Heaven will be doubly sweet when I am worn out with Distresses and Persecutions for the Sake of JESUS CHRIST.—*Lord grant I may continually be looking up to the Glory which is to be revealed hereafter, and then deal with me as it seemeth good in thy Sight, during my Pilgrimage here.*

*If Rough and Thorny be my Way,†  
My Strength proportion to my Day;†  
'Till Toil and Grief, and Pain shall cease,†  
Where all is calm, and Joy, and Peace!*

Wednesday, October 31. Spent the Morning in Writing, and sent some Provisions on board for my Fellow-Travellers.—Wrote some Letters, and preached at two

in the Afternoon to a serious and attentive Congregation.—Persons of different Denominations were present; and, *as I heard afterwards, were much affected. Some I observed to weep,* and the Congregation was larger than might be expected in so small a Place, and at so short Notice. After Sermon, the High Sheriff, Collector, and chief Men of the Place, came and took *an affectionate* Leave of me;

D

and

26

and by their means *being* provided with Horses and a Guide for our Journey at a reasonable Expence, about five in the Evening we left *Lewis* Town, and rode very pleasantly near 27 Miles through the Woods. At 10 we called at what they call a Tavern, which was not very commodious; but the Host and Hostess were plain, well-meaning People.—They made us a Cake of unleavened Bread, let us have a little Cyder, and a few Eggs, and we went to Bed rejoicing in all the Mercies of God. I know not when I have felt more intenseness of Love, Peace and Joy in my Soul since I left *England*! How does God delight to visit us when we are out of the World! *Oh that my Heart may be made meet for such a divine Guest to reside in! Amazing that the high and lofty one that inhabiteth Eternity should condescend to dwell in earthly Tabernacles! What shall I say unto thee, O thou Preserver of Men? I am lost in Wonder! A Sense of thy Mercies strikes me dumb!*

*A guilty, weak and helpless Worm,†  
 Into thy Arms I fall;†  
 Be thou my Strength and righteousness,†  
 My Jesus and my All.*

*Thursday, November 1.* Set out from our little Inn about eight; dined at *Dover*, a small Town (19 Miles distant from our Lodging), from whence (having left a few Books) we rode as pleasantly and with as much Ease as tho' we were riding through *Hide Park*.—About eight in the Evening, we came to a more convenient Inn, near 50 Miles distant from the Place where we *lay* last Night.

Our Lord was with us as we came on our Way.—Our Hearts burnt within us whilst we talked to one another in Psalms and Hymns and Spiritual Songs.—Oh how gloriously must the Children of *Israel* pass through the Wilderness, when they saw God's Presence go along with them.—*Lord let it always accompany us thy unworthy Servants (in as sure, though not in the same visible Manner) for without it we can do nothing!*

*Friday, November 2.* Rode nearly 60 Miles without Fatigue, and reached *Philadelphia* before 11 at Night.—As

I

27

I travelled, I observed the Country was more and more open, and many fruitful Plantations lay on each Side the Road; so that I frequently thought I was, as it were, in *England*.—Going abroad, if duly improved, cannot but enlarge our Ideas, and give us exalted Thoughts of the Greatness and Goodness of God.—*Lord enable me to learn this, and every other good Lesson for thy dear Son's Sake.*

### **PHILADELPHIA.**

*Saturday, November 3.* Delivered the Letters committed to my charge. Went on board the *Elizabeth* to see my Family, who arrived last night.—Visited the Proprietor, Commissary, and some others.—*Was* received very civilly, *and perceived the Town was in great Expectation of seeing me.*—Met with some gracious Souls, who discoursed with me *sweetly* concerning the Things which belong to the Kingdom of God. Hired a House at a very cheap Rate, and was entirely settled in it before Night,—Methinks going thus from Place to Place with my Friends, somewhat resembles the Patriarch *Abraham's* frequent Removes, when called to leave his Kindred and his native Country. *Oh that, like him, we may erect an Altar for God whithersoever we go!* Blessed be his Holy Name, he hath sent his Angel before us to prepare our Way. All things have been ordered for us far above Expectation, and



every Thing is so convenient, that I fear we shall be tempted to say 'tis good for us to be here: But **blessed be God**, we must move soon, and learn **to endure** Hardness like good Soldiers of Jesus Christ. *Lord for thy infinite Mercies sake keep us striving till we die!*

*Saturday, November 4.* Read Prayers and assisted at the Communion in the Morning. Dined with one of the Church-Wardens, and preached in the Afternoon to a large Congregation. Went in the Evening to the Quaker's Meeting, and felt somewhat **of a** Sympathy with the Man that spoke. But I heartily wish that they would talk of an Outward as well as an Inward Christ. For otherwise we make our own Holiness, and not the Righteousness of Je-

D 2

sus

28

sus Christ the Cause of our being accepted by God. *From such Doctrine may I always turn away!*

*Monday, November 5.* Read Prayers and preached to a large Auditory. Dined with the other Church-Warden, and had some close and edifying Conversation about our Justification by Faith in Christ. Was visited in the Afternoon by the Presbyterian Minister. Went afterwards to see the Baptist Teacher, who seems to be a spiritual Man, and spent Part of the Evening most agreeably with two **loving** Quakers. Had remarkable Instances of God's answering our Prayers which we put up on board Ship, and that in the minutest Particulars. *Oh that I may watch God's particular Providence more and more!* It comforts and builds up my Soul. How unhappy must they be who would exclude it **out of** the World! Surely such must wander about in worse than *Egyptian* Darkness. To live without a Sense of God's particular Providence, is in effect to live without God in the World. *From such a State good Lord deliver me.*

*Tuesday, November 6.* Read Prayers and preached in the Morning, having the Use of the Pulpit granted me

for the whole Week. Went at the Invitation of its Father, to the Funeral of a Quaker's Child, and thought it my Duty, as there was a great Concourse of People at the Burying-Place, and no one of the Quakers spoke, to give a Word of Exhortation, I hope this will be a means of making them more free in coming to hear the Word, tho' preach'd within a Church Wall. Oh that Bigotry and Prejudice were banished **out of** the Christian World. *Lord let it not be once named among us, as becometh Saints, Amen* **Lord Jesus, Amen.**

Was visited again in the Evening by the Presbyterian and Baptist Preachers, who were much rejoiced to hear Jesus Christ preached in the Church. Whilst I was conversing with them, some Women came desiring **they might** be admitted to Prayers with my Family. Looking on this as **a Hint** from Providence, I called them up, and felt much Enlargement of Heart in exhorting them, and pouring out my Heart before God in their Behalf. Many came up afterwards, whom I desired **to take the**

**Liberty**

29

**Liberty**, if they thought proper, to come again every Night. Who knows but the Lord may be about to open a yet more effectual Door? *O prepare me to do thy Will, O God!*

*Wednesday, November 7.* Read Prayers and preached in the Church. Dined with Mr. Penn the Proprietor, and prayed with, and gave a Word of Exhortation to more than a Room full of People who came, as last Night, to hear the Gospel of Christ. **Blessed be God** I found much Liberty of Spirit, but having taken Cold was obliged to leave off sooner than otherwise I should have done. However, in the midst of the Weakness and Disorder of my Body, **the** seeing People come so gladly to hear the Word refreshed and comforted my Soul. *Lord make it my only Joy to see thy Kingdom advanced and carried on. Amen and Amen.*

*Thursday, November 8.* Read Prayers and preached to a more numerous Congregation than I have seen yet. Dined with an honest open-hearted, true *Israelitish* Quaker. Had a sweet Opportunity with him and his Family, of talking about Jesus Christ *and him crucified*, and preached at six in the Evening from the Court-house Stairs to about 6000 People. **Blessed be God**, I find the Number that came on *Tuesday* to my House greatly increased and multiplied. The Inhabitants were very solicitous for my preaching in another Place besides the Church. For it is quite **contrary** here **to** what it is in *England*. There the generality of People think a Sermon cannot be preached well without; here they do not like it so well if delivered within the Church Walls. *Lord grant I may become all Things to all Men, that I may gain some, and preach the Gospel in every Place and in every Manner, as well as to every Creature!*

*Friday, November 9.* Read Prayers and preached as usual in the Morning, and perceived the Congregation still encreased. Visited a sick Person, to whom I was sent for, and **perceived** the Power of the Lord was present, both with him and those that attended him: Most wept **sorely** at the Preaching of Faith. Was visited in a kind manner by the Minister of the Parish, and preached again at six in

the

<sup>30</sup>

the Evening, from the Court-House Steps. I believe there were near 2000 more present to-night than last Night. Even in *London* I never observed so profound a Silence. Before I came all was hush'd **and** exceeding quiet. The Night was clear, but not cold. Lights were in most of the Windows all around us for a considerable Distance. The People did not seem weary of standing, nor was I weary of speaking. The Lord endued me with Power from on high. My Heart was enlarged and warm'd with divine Love. My Soul was carried out in Prayer, that I thought I could have continued my Discourse all Night. After I came home, some desired to join in Family Prayer, and in that Exercise the Divine Presence was manifest amongst

us. Surely God *has a* Favour unto this People. At present they seem most gladly to receive *and sweetly to melt under* the Word. *Lord, I beseech thee, shew forth thy Glory more and more, and grant that much People in this Place may be enabled to believe on thee, even so Lord Jesus!*

*Saturday, November 10.* Before it was Light, came a young Person whom I had observed much affected last Night, desiring to join in Prayer; and after our Devotions were ended, she put into my Hands the following Letter.

‘Oh what shall I say to express my Thanks I owe to ‘my good God, in and from you through *Jesus Christ*, ‘which you have been the happy Instrument of beginning in my Soul; and if you have any Regard for a poor ‘miserable, blind and naked Wretch, that’s not only ‘Dust, but Sin, as I am confident you have, you will in ‘nowise reject my humble Request, which is that I, even ‘I, may lay hold of this blessed Opportunity of forsaking ‘all, in order to persevere in a virtuous Course of Life.

‘Despise not thou thine Hand-maiden: But oh let me ‘say, as *Ruth the Moabitess* said to her Mother-in-law, *In-treat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee, for whither thou goest I will go, and whither thou art, there will I be also, thy People shall be my People, and thy God my God.*—Thus am I fully determined. ‘I pray and beg that you will not despise thy poor forlorn and destitute Fellow-creature, and the Lord recompence thy Work, and a full Reward be given unto thee

of

31

‘of the Lord Jesus Christ, under whose Wings I am ‘come to trust.’

Soon after came a little Maid about seven Years of Age, telling me she heard I took little Children to *Georgia*, and desired me to take her. In the remaining Part of the Morning several gracious Souls of different Communions paid me a *most loving* Visit, and my Heart was much re-

freshed with their **pious** Conversation. About 11 I read Prayers, and preached in the Church to a larger Audience than before. Dined with the Minister of the Parish, and at my Return home was much comforted by the coming of **one** Mr. *Tennent*, an old grey-headed Disciple and Soldier of Jesus Christ. He keeps an Academy **about** 20 Miles **off Philadelphia**, **has been blessed with four gracious Sons**, three of which have been and still continue to be eminently useful in the Church of Christ. He brought three pious Souls along with him, and rejoiced me by letting me know how they had been evil spoken of for their **Master's Sake**. He is a great Friend of Mr. *Erskine* of *Scotland*, and, as far as I can find, both he and his Sons are secretly despised by the generality of the Synod, as Mr. *Erskine* and his Brethren are hated by the Judicatories of *Edinburgh*, and as the *Methodist* Preachers are by their Brethren in *England*. Though we are but few, and stand as it were alone like *Elijah*, **and though they, like the Priests of Baal, are many in Number**, yet I doubt not but the Lord will appear for us, as he did for that Prophet, and make us more than Conquerors.

About three went to the Prison, and preached on the *Trembling Jaylor*. The Place was crowded, and many wept. Returned home with the *Swedish* Minister and old Mr. *Tennent*. Conversed of the Things of God **for a considerable Time**, **then** preached in the Evening to as large a Congregation as there was the **last** Night from the Court-house Stairs. *Satan* endeavoured to interrupt us about the middle of the Discourse, for the People were frightened with they knew not what, but they were soon at Peace again. I preached above an Hour, and when I had finished, the People seemed unwilling to go away, so I began to pray afresh, and I hope the Lord sent them home with his Blessing. Many, to my Knowledge,

have

32

have been **already** quickened and awakened to see that Religion does not consist in outward Things, but in Righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Ghost. *Oh that*

*they may not only receive the Word with Joy for a Season, but bring forth Fruit unto Perfection!*

After Preaching, my House was filled with People who came in to join in Psalms and Family Prayer. My Body was somewhat weak, but the Lord strengthened and enlarged my Heart. Many wept most bitterly whilst I was praying. Their Hearts, I believe, were loaded with a Sense of Sin, the only Preparative for the Soul-refreshing Visitations of Jesus Christ. Blessed be the Lord for sending me hither. This has been a Day of fat Things. Lord give me Humility and make me truly thankful. Amen, Lord Jesus.

Sunday, November 11. Read Prayers in the Morning. Dined with the Collector. Preached in the Afternoon to a very thronged Congregation. Visited one sick Person, and administred the Holy Sacrament to another, who has received no such inward Peace and Comfort for these twelve Years, as God was pleased to communicate to her Soul at this Time. *Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy Name be all the Glory. For ever adored be the Divine Goodness, the Gospel has taken Root in many Hearts.* As soon as I come home, my House is generally filled with People desirous to join in Psalms and Prayers. They are so eager after the Bread of Life, that they scarce can give me time to take bodily Refreshment and proper Retirement in my Closet. God, I am persuaded, has a Favour unto them. My Power and Freedom of Speech increases daily, and this Afternoon I was carried out much in bearing my Testimony against the unchristian Principles and Practices of the generality of our Clergy. Three of my Reverend Brethren were present, I know not whether they were offended. I endeavoured to speak with Meekness as well as Zeal; and I find the Necessity more and more discovering those that are only Wolves in Sheep's Cloathing. Was I to convert Papists, my Business would be to show they were misguided by their Priests; and if I want to convince Church of England Protestants, I must prove that the generality of their

33

Teachers do not preach or live up to the Truth as it is in Jesus. **For** in vain do we hope to set People right till we demonstrate that the way which they have been taught is wrong. **Perhaps this may cost me my Life: But what have I to do with that?**

*My Life, my Blood, I here present, &  
 If for thy Cause they may be spent, &  
 Fulfil thy Sovereign Counsel, Lord, &  
 Thy Will be done, thy Name ador'd, &  
 Give me thy Strength, O God of Pow'r; &  
 Then let Winds blow, or Thunders roar, &  
 Thy faithful Witness will I be; &  
 'Tis fix'd: I can do all for thee!*

***Philadelphia, Burlington, and Trent Town  
 in the Jerseys.***

*Monday, November 12.* Left a large Packet of Letters, and some Things for the Press, to be sent by the *Constantine*, Captain *Wright* to *London*. A Man came to me this Morning telling me what God had done for his Soul by my preaching of Faith. He seem'd deeply convinced of Sin, and said he was drawn by God's Spirit to pray last Night **so that he lifted up his Voice like a Trumpet**, for which he was immediately looked upon by his Master and the Family as a Madman. I never yet knew one truly awakened who did not commence a Fool for Christ's Sake. **Was pleased to see several tender Souls come to Family Prayer.** Indeed I have great Reason to believe a good Work is begun in many Hearts. *Lord carry it on for thy Dear Son's Sake!* At my first Arrival at *Philadelphia*, I received a Letter which had been left for me three Months, and in which **there** was a pressing invitation sent me by Mr. *Noble*, (a Spiritual Man), **in the** Behalf of many others, to come to *New York*. On *Friday* I received another from the same Person; which looking like the Call given St. *Paul* when the Man ap-

peared to him saying, *Come over to Macedonia and help us,*  
 I this Morning, *in the Name and Strength of God,* set  
 out for that Place. Four *choice* Horses were lent to me

E

and

34

and my Friends, and more we might have had, had there  
 been Occasion. About one we got safe to *Burlington* in  
 the *Jerseys*, (20 Miles from *Philadelphia*) where I was  
 importuned to preach as I went along.—*The Gentle-*  
*man who gave me the Invitation, received me and my*  
*Friends in as sweet a Manner as can well be imagined.*  
 Immediately after Dinner I read Prayers and preached in  
 the Church, to a mixed but thronged and attentive Con-  
 gregation. I scarce know the Time when I have spoken  
 with greater Simplicity and Freedom. The Holy Spirit  
 sweetly gave me Utterance, and I perceived several much  
 affected.—The poor People were very importunate for  
 my staying with them all Night, and giving them ano-  
 ther Discourse; but it being *inconsistent* with my Business,  
 (with great Regret) about five in the Evening we took our  
 Leaves, and by eight o'clock reached *Trent*, another  
 Town in the *Jerseys*. It being dark, we went out of  
 our Way a little in the Woods. But God sent a Guide  
 to direct us aright. Whilst I was riding, I felt the Spirit  
 of God infusing fresh Supplies of Grace into my Heart.  
 We had a comfortable Refreshment when we reached our  
 Inn, and went to rest in Peace and Joy. *Lord teach me*  
*to be thankful. Amen and Amen.*

*Tuesday, November 13.* Left *Trent Town* about six in  
 the Morning. Had a sweet and pleasant Journey, and  
 reached *Brunswick* 30 Miles distant about one. Here we  
 were much refreshed with the Company of Mr. *Gilbert*  
*Tennent*, an eminent Dissenting Minister about 40 Years  
 of Age, Son to that good old Man who came to see me on  
*Saturday* at *Philadelphia*. God I find has been pleased  
 greatly to own his Labours. He and his Associates are  
 now the burning and shining Lights of this Part of *Ame-*  
*rica.* He recounted to me many remarkable Effusions of



the Blessed Spirit which have been sent down amongst them, and one may judge of their being true, faithful Soldiers of Jesus Christ, because they are every where spoken evil of by natural Men. The Devil, and carnal secure Ministers rage horribly against them. Several pious Souls came to see me at his House, with whom I took sweet Counsel. At their Request, and finding there was a general Expectation of hearing me, *I read the Church Li-*

*turgy,*

35

*turgy*, and preached in the Evening at Mr. Tennent's Meeting-house.—For there is no Place set apart for the Worship of the Church of *England*; and it is common, as I was told, in *America*, for the Dissenters and Conformists to worship at different Times in the same Place. *Oh that the Partition Wall was broken down, and we all with one Heart and one Mind could glorify our common Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ!*

At my first getting up I was somewhat weak and dry, but God renewed my Strength, and enabled me to speak with Freedom and Power. I was above an Hour in my Sermon, and I trust I shall hear it was not preached in vain. *Paul may plant, Apollos water; thou, Lord, only canst give the Increase!*

*Wednesday, November 14.* Set out from *Brunswick*, in Company with my dear Fellow-Travellers, and my worthy Brother and Fellow-Labourer Mr. Tennent. As we passed along we spent our Time most agreeably in telling one another what God had done for our Souls. He recounted to me many Instances of God's striving with his Heart, and how Grace, at last, overcame all his Fightings against God. About Noon we got to *Elizabeth Town*, 22 Miles from *Brunswick*. Here we took Boat, and about four reached *New-York*, where we were most affectionately received by the Family of Mr. Noble. As soon as we had refreshed our Bodies by eating a little Food, and our Souls by giving of Thanks, I waited upon Mr. Vessey the Commissary, but he was not at home:

Then I went to the Meeting-house to hear Mr. *Gilbert Tennent* preach, and never before heard such a searching Sermon. *He went to the Bottom indeed, and did not daub with untempered Mortar.* He convinced me more and more that we can preach the Gospel of Christ no further than we have experienced the Power of it in our own Heart: Being deeply convicted of Sin, *and driven from Time to Time off his false Bottom and Dependencies,* by God's Holy Spirit at his first Conversion, he has learned experimentally to dissect the Heart of a natural Man. Hypocrites must either soon be converted or enraged at his Preaching. He is a Son of Thunder, and does not fear the Faces of Men. *He is deeply sensible of*

E 2

the

36

*the Deadness and Formality of the Christian Church in these Parts, and has given noble Testimonies against it.* After Sermon we spent the Evening together at Mr. *Noble's* House. *At their request I expounded and prayed, and after we had sung a Psalm, we took our Leaves of each other, and went to Rest.* My Soul was humbled and melted down with a Sense of GOD's Mercies, and I found more and more what a Babe and Novice I was in the Things of GOD.—*Blessed JESUS, grant I may make continual Advances, 'till I come to a perfect Man in thee!*

*Thursday, November 15.* Several came to see me at my Lodgings, who also gave me kind Invitations to their Houses.—Waited upon Mr. *Vessey*, but *could* wish, for his own Sake, he had behaved in a more Christian Manner.—He seem'd to be full of Anger and Resentment, and before I asked him for the Use of his Pulpit, denied it.—He desired to see my Letters of Orders,—I told him they were left at *Philadelphia*.—He asked me for a Licence.—I answered, I never heard that the Bishop of *London* gave any Licence to any one that went to preach the Gospel in *Georgia*, but that I was presented to the Living of *Savannah* by the Trustees, and upon that Presentation

had Letters Dismissory from my Lord of *London*, which I thought was Authority sufficient.—But this was by no Means satisfactory.—He charged me with breaking my Oath, **for** breaking the Canon, which enjoins Ministers and Church-Wardens not to admit Persons into their Pulpit without a Licence. **Alas!** How can I break that, when I am neither a Church-Warden, nor have any Church hereabouts to admit any one into? Upon this, **hearing** he was a Frequenter of Publick Houses, I reminded him of that Canon which forbids the Clergy to go to any such Places.—This, tho' spoke in the Spirit of Meekness, stirr'd **up his Corruptions more and more.**—He charged me with making a Disturbance in *Philadelphia*, and sowing and causing Divisions in other Places.—But you, says he, have a Necessity laid upon you to preach; I told him I had.—For the Clergy and Laity of our Church seem'd to be settled on their Lees, but my End in Preaching was not to sow Divisions, but to pro-

pagate

37

pagate the pure Gospel of JESUS CHRIST.—He said they did not want my Assistance; I replied, if they did preach the Gospel, I wished them good Luck in the Name of the Lord.—But as he had denied me the Church without my asking the Use of it, I would preach in the Fields, for all Places were alike to me.—Yes, **says** he, I find you have been used to that. After this, he taxed me with censuring my Superiors. I told him I was no Respecter of Persons; if a Bishop committed a Fault, I would tell him of it; if a common Clergyman did not act aright, I would be free with him also, as well as with a Layman.—Whilst we were talking, he called for some Wine, and I drank his Health; soon after, he rose up, said he had Business to do; (and as we were going out) full of Resentment, said to Mr. *Noble*, who accompanied me, and brother *Seward*,—Mr. *Noble*, as you sent for this Gentleman, so I desire you will find him a Pulpit.—**Alas! alas!** what manner of Spirit are the Generality of the Clergy *possessed* with? Is this the Spirit of the meek

Lamb of GOD? Are these the Fruits of the Holy Ghost, which they pretend to be moved with when they take Holy Orders? It cannot be.—Surely the Kingdom of GOD will be taken from them. They cause the Sacrifices of GOD to be abhorr'd. Their Bigotry, if it was nothing else, in Time would destroy them. *Lord, for thy Mercy's Sake, lighten their Darkness, and grant that many of the Priests also may be obedient to the Faith!*

Dined with Mr. Pemberton, the Presbyterian Minister.—Preached in the Fields to upwards of Two Thousand about Three in the Afternoon, and expounded at Six in the Evening, to a very thronged and attentive Audience in Mr. Pemberton's Meeting-House.—At first, for the Sake of my weak Brethren, I was unwilling to preach there, but hearing that Mr. Vessey the Commissary himself had preached in the Dutch Calvinistical Meeting-House, when there was no Place of Worship for the People of our own Communion, and the Dutch Meeting-House, being denied me, as well as the Church, I thought it my Duty to accept the kind Offer made me by Mr. Pemberton and his Friends.—In the Field some few mocked, but GOD gave me Power to speak to them, and they grew

more

38

more serious. At Night the People seem'd exceedingly attentive, and I have not felt greater Freedom in Preaching, and more Power in Prayer, and a stronger Witness of the Spirit, since I came into America, than I have had here at New York.—I find it has been a secure Place, and but little of the Work of GOD seen in it for many Years. *Oh that this may be the accepted Time! Oh that this may be the Day of their Salvation!*

Friday, November 16. Preached at Three in the Afternoon to a lovely Congregation in the Meeting-House, it being too cold to go into the Fields.—Expounded in the Evening, at the same Place, to a far greater Congregation than I have seen here yet.—Great Multitudes returned Home for want of Room.—GOD enabled me to

preach with Power, and I hope some Good will be done, because *Satan* is disturb'd.—After Evening Service, I was told by several Persons, that the Constables of the Town had been placed at the Door of the *English Church*, lest my Adherents, encouraged by me, should break it open, and take it by Force.—Well may the Heads of our Church People be said to reject the Kingdom of GOD against themselves. I fear GOD will shortly take it from them. They so imitate the Scribes and Pharisees in their Crimes, I fear they will be made Partakers of their Punishment! *Oh that they would see in this their Day, the Things which belong to their Peace, before they are hid from their Eyes!*

Saturday, November 17. Preached as usual in the Afternoon, at the Meeting-House, to a full Congregation; and again at Night to a great Multitude standing round the Doors, besides those that were within. Woe be unto those who by their Bigotry, Prejudice, and Party Zeal, oblige us to preach the Gospel in so confined a Place! But no Matter, this, as well as every Thing else, shall be over-ruled for the Good of CHRIST's Church.—Had the Pleasure of hearing that some blessed Effects had been produced by the Preaching of the Word, and several express'd a strong Inclination to go with me.—When GOD will work, who can hinder? *Praised be the Lord, who daily shews me this is the Way wherein I should go: Lord, make me ever humble and thankful!*

*Sunday,*

39

Sunday, November 18. Preached this Morning by Eight o' Clock, unto a very attentive Auditory; went to the *English Church*, both Morning and Evening, and felt my Heart almost bled within me, to consider what blind Guides were sent forth into her.—If I have any Regard for the Honour of CHRIST, and Good of Souls, I must lift up my Voice like a Trumpet, and shew how sadly our Church Ministers are fallen from the Doctrines of the Reformation.—Her Prophets prophesy *Lies*, and I fear many of the People love to have it so.—*It is high*

*Time, O Lord, that thou have Mercy upon Sion, Oh let that Time shortly come!*

In the Second Lesson *in the Morning* were these Verses, and some I found made an immediate Application of them, by looking on me; *John, Chap. x. Ver. 19. There was a Division therefore again among the Jews for these Sayings. Verse 20. And many of them said, he hath a Devil, and is mad, why hear ye him? Others said, These are not the Words of him that hath a Devil.*—In the Evening, a vast Multitude flock'd to hear the Word; some petition'd the Mayor to allow the Use of the Town-Hall, but it was denied: Then we thought of expounding *out of* a Window, and *to* let the People stand in the Street: But at last, with much Difficulty, I got into the Meeting-House, and *the People being prevail'd on to open* the Windows, Numbers could hear that stood *on the Outside. GOD was pleased to enlarge my Heart, and I was pressed in Spirit to bear my Testimony against the Doctrine deliver'd in the English Church, both Morning and Evening. Tho' it may seem a hard Saying to many, yet our People need to be caution'd against the Generality of the Scribes and Pharisees of our Communion, as much as the Jews were caution'd to beware of the Scribes and Pharisees by our dear Lord JESUS.*—After Sermon, many Persons came to pray with me, and take their *last Farewel.*—They also gave me Tokens of their Love, and I had great Reason to believe GOD has begun a good Work in *New York.*—*I have not felt such Freedom and Sweetness of Soul since I have been in America: One Reason I believe is, because I have been somewhat uncommonly opposed.*—Saw my Sermon on Regeneration

Advertised

40

Advertised in the *New England Paper*, and gave Leave for my Answer to *my Lord of London* to be printed at *New York.*

About Ten at Night, *having spent some Time in Prayer,* I took Boat with my Friends, and had a pleasant Passage to a Place about half Way to *Elizabeth Town,*

where we lay down with Joy and Thankfulness for the great Things the Lord had shewn us.—*Oh, that I was duly sensible of his distinguishing Mercies!*

*Monday, November 19.* Took Boat about Five in the Morning, and reached *Elizabeth Town Point* at Seven.—Spent the Morning in writing Letters and my Journal, and in Religious Conversation with dear Mr. *Tennent*, Mr. *Noble*, and other Friends who accompanied me.—Paid a Visit to Mr. *Vaughan*, the Minister of the Church of *England* in *Elizabeth Town*, who, as I heard afterwards, had preached against me, and said I should not have the Use of his Pulpit.—Dined with Mr. *Dickerson*, the Dissenting Minister, who had sent a Letter of Invitation to *New York*, and offer'd me the Use of his Meeting-House.—About Twelve, I preach'd in it, according to Appointment, to upwards of 700 People, many of whom seemed much affected, and GOD was pleased to open my Mouth against both Ministers and People among the Dissenters, who hold the Truth in Unrighteousness, contenting themselves with a bare speculative Knowledge of the Doctrines of Grace, but never experiencing the Power of them in their Hearts.—*These shall receive the greater Condemnation!*

#### NEW BRUNSWICK.

*Tuesday, November 20.* Reached *hither* about Six last Night, and preached *about* noon, for near Two Hours, in worthy Mr. *Tennent's* Meeting-House, to a large Assembly gather'd together from all Parts; and amongst them, as Mr. *Tennent* told me, *there* was a great *Body* of solid Christians. About Three in the Afternoon, I preach'd again, and at Seven I baptized two Children, and preached a third Time with greater Freedom than at either of the former Opportunities.—It is impossible to tell

with

4<sup>1</sup>

with what Pleasure the Children of GOD heard those Truths confirm'd by a Minister of the Church of *England*,

which for many Years have been preached to them by their own Pastor.—Mr. *Tennent's* Opposers Mouths were stopt, several were brought under strong Convictions, and our Lord's dear Disciples were ready to leap for Joy. To me the Meeting seemed to be like the Meeting of the Twelve Tribes, when they came from different Parts to worship the Lord at *Jerusalem*.—Among others who came to hear the Word, were several Ministers, whom the Lord has been pleased to honour, in making Instruments of bringing many Sons to Glory. One was a *Dutch Calvinistical* Minister, named *Freeling Housen*, Pastor of a Congregation about Four Miles off *New Brunswick*; he is a worthy old Soldier of JESUS CHRIST, and was the Beginner of the great Work which I trust the Lord is carrying on in these Parts.—He has been strongly opposed by his carnal Brethren, but GOD has *always* appeared for him in a surprising Manner, and made him more than Conqueror, thro' his Love.—He has long since learnt to fear him *only* who can destroy both Body and Soul in Hell.—Another was *one* Mr. *Cross*, Minister of a Congregation of *Barking-Bridge*, about Twenty Miles from *Brunswick*.—A most remarkable Out-pouring of the Spirit has been frequently seen in his Assembly, for which he has been opposed much by natural Men.—He himself told me of many wonderful *Effects*, and sudden Conversions that had been wrought by the Lord under his Ministry.—For some Time Eight or Nine used to come to him together in deep Distress of Soul; and I think he said, Three Hundred of his Congregation, which is not very large, were *effectually* brought Home to CHRIST; but tho' they are the excellent ones of the Earth, they are look'd upon as Enthusiasts and Madmen, and treated as such by those who know not GOD, and are ignorant of the hidden Life of JESUS CHRIST in their Hearts. He *indeed* is one who I believe would rejoice to suffer for the Lord JESUS.—Oh! that I may be like minded!—A Third Minister was *one* Mr. *Camell*, who has been a Preacher of the Doctrines of Grace for these Four Years, was a regular moral Liver, and accounted a very good



F

Man,

42

Man, but within these last few Months being convinced of Sin, and that he knew nothing experimentally of JESUS CHRIST, tho' he had pretended to preach him so long, after many Struggles with himself, told the Synod he was unconverted, and therefore dare not preach till he was; accordingly, he has left off preaching these Two Months, and has labour'd under unspeakable Anguish and Distress of Soul.—By some he is look'd upon as melancholy and besides himself; but I had much Discourse with him, and really believe these Humiliations will prepare him for great and eminent Services in the Church of GOD.—His Case puts me in Mind of Professor Frank, who being on Easter-Day to preach on the Nature of Divine Faith, and finding he had not that Faith himself, was convicted by GOD of his unregenerate State, upon which he ran into the Woods, was there deeply humbled, and at last became a most exalted Instance of Faith. At our Persuasion, Mr. Camel promised to preach next Sunday, and I believe will be instrumental in convicting many Heart Hypocrites among the Dissenting Ministers.—For that there are many such is evident from this;—tho' they hold, have been bred up in, and preach the Doctrines of Grace, yet whenever the Power of God appears in any Congregation, they cry it down as much as our Ministers of the Church of England. *Oh that the Lord may comfort poor Mr. Camel, and cause him to detect these Wolves in Sheep's Clothing.*—With these Ministers, and many other Disciples of our Lord JESUS, I took sweet Counsel; we eat our Bread with Gladness and Singleness of Heart, and comforted ourselves with this Consideration, that tho' we must be separated from each other on Earth, yet we should sit down to eat Bread with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the Kingdom of Heaven. *Hasten, O Lord, this blessed Time! Oh when will thy Kingdom come!*

***Maidenhead, and Trent-Town.***

*Wednesday, November 21.* Set out early, with about a Score in Company, for *Maidenhead*, a little more than Twenty Miles from *Brunswick*, where, at Mr. *Tennent's* Request, I had appointed to preach to Day.—At Noon

---

we

43

we got thither, and I preached from a Waggon to about 1500 Persons on the Conversion of *Saul*, and God was pleased to direct my Words, and enabled me to speak so suitably to the Condition of the poor despised Christians in those Parts, that they know not well how to express their Satisfaction. *The Lord is gracious in all his Ways, and wonderful in all his Works! Oh that I could praise him as I ought!* Here one Mr. *Rowland*, another faithful Minister of JESUS CHRIST, gave us the Meeting.—He has been a Preacher about Two Years, has went about doing Good, and had many Seals to his Ministry.—Much of the Simplicity of CHRIST was discernible in his Behaviour. *Blessed be GOD for sending forth such burning and shining Lights in the Midst of the thick Darkness that is upon the Face of this Generation!—Thou Lord of the Harvest, send forth more such Labourers into thy Harvest!*—After Sermon, we were kindly entertain'd at a House near the Place where I preached, and being strongly desired by many, and hearing a condemn'd Ma-lefactor was to suffer there that Week, in Company with above Thirty Horse, I went to *Trent Town*, Ten Miles from *Maidenhead*, and reached thither by Five in the Evening.—Here GOD was pleased to humble my Soul, and bring my Sins to Remembrance, so that I could scarce hold up my Head.—However, knowing that GOD called, I went out trusting in his Divine Strength, and preached in the Court-House; and tho' I was quite barren and dry at the Beginning of the Discourse, yet GOD enabled me to speak with great Sweetness, Freedom, and Power, before I had done. The unhappy Criminal seem'd harden'd, but I had great Reason to believe some

Good was done in the Place. Lord, send forth others to carry it on, for thy dear Son's Sake!

***Trent Town, and Neshamini.***

*Thursday, November 22.* Set out for *Neshamini* (twenty Miles distant from *Trent Town*) where old Mr. *Tennent* lives, and keeps an Academy, and where I was to preach to Day, according to Appointment. About Twelve we came thither, and found above 3000 People gather'd together in the Meeting-House Yard; and Mr. *William*

F 2

*Tennent,*

44

*Tennent*, an eminent Servant of JESUS CHRIST, preaching to them, because we had stayed beyond the Time appointed. When I came up, he soon stopp'd, and sung a Psalm, and then I began to speak as the Lord gave me Utterance.—At first the People seem'd unaffected, but in the midst of my Discourse, the Power of the Lord JESUS came upon me, and I felt such a Struggling within myself for the People, as I scarce ever felt before.—The Hearers began to be melted down immediately, and cry much; and we had good Reason to hope the Lord intended Good for many. After I had finished, Mr. *Gilbert Tennent* gave a Word of Exhortation to confirm what had been deliver'd. At the End of his Discourse, we sung a Psalm, and then dismiss'd the People with a Blessing. *Oh that the Lord may say Amen to it!*—After our Exercises were over, we went to old Mr. *Tennent*, who entertain'd us like one of the ancient Patriarchs. His Wife to me seemed like *Elizabeth*, and he like *Zacchary*; both, as far as I can find, walk in all the Ordinances and Commandments of the Lord blameless.—Tho' GOD was pleased to humble my Soul, so that I was obliged to retire for a while, yet we had sweet Communion with each other, and spent the Evening in concerting what Measures had best be taken for promoting our dear Lord's Kingdom. It happens very providentially, that Mr. *Tennent* and his Brethren are appointed to be a Presbytery by the Synod, so that they intend breeding up gracious Youths,

and sending them out from Time to Time into our Lord's Vineyard. The Place wherein the young Men study now is in Contempt call'd *the College*. It is a Log-House, about Twenty Feet long, and near as many broad; and to me it seemed to resemble the Schools of the old Prophets.—For that their Habitations were mean, and that they sought not great Things for themselves, is plain from that Passage of Scripture wherein we are told, that at the Feast of the Sons of the Prophets, one of them put on the Pot, whilst the others went to fetch some Herbs out of the Field. All that can be said of most of our publick Universities is, they are all glorious *without*. From this despised Place Seven or Eight worthy Ministers of JESUS have lately been sent forth; more are almost ready to be sent, and a Foundation is now laying for the

---

Instruction

45

Instruction of many others. The Devil will certainly rage against them, but the Work, I am persuaded, is of GOD, and therefore will not come to nought. Carnal Ministers oppose them strongly; and because People, when awaken'd by Mr. *Tennent*, or his Brethren, see through, and therefore leave their Ministry, the poor Gentlemen are loaded with Contempt, and look'd upon (as all faithful Preachers will be) as Persons that turn the World upside down.—A notable War I believe is commencing between *Michael* and the Dragon, we may easily guess who will prevail.—*The Seed of the Woman shall bruise the Serpent's Head.*

***Neshaminy, Abingdon and Philadelphia.***

*Friday, November 23.* Parted with dear Mr. *Tennent*, and his other worthy Fellow-labourers, but promised to remember each other publicly in our Prayers. Rode to *Abingdon* about 10 Miles from *Neshamini*, and preached to above 2000 People from a Porch-window belonging to the Meeting-house, whither I was invited Yesterday, after I had preached at *Neshamini*. Many of the People seemed affected; and I think I have not seen greater Things, no

not in *England*. It is surprizing how such Bodies of People so scattered abroad, can be gathered at so short a Warning. I believe at *Neshamini* there might be near a thousand Horses, which the People do not sit on to hear the Sermon as in *England*, but tye them to the Hedges; and thereby much Disorder is prevented. As soon as I had done, fresh Invitations were made me to come to several Places, would Time and Business permit. Tho' it was cold, the People stood very patiently in the open Air, and seem'd in no Hurry to return home after the Discourses were ended. What are outward Things to a Soul intent on God? Less than nothing.

As soon as I had finished, I hastened to *Philadelphia*, and blessed be God found my Family in good Order, and all Things carried on according to my Desire. Oh how can I express my Thankfulness for this little Excursion! The Lord has done great Things for us in it, whereat the People of God are much rejoiced. Oh that I may now begin to do something for Christ, not to justify my Person,

but

46

but my Faith, and to shew my Love and Gratitude for what God has done for my Soul.

Saturday, November 24. Preached this Morning in the Church with much Freedom and Power. Afterwards several came to me enquiring about inward Feelings and receiving the Holy Ghost; and I found many began to be awakened out of their carnal Security by the Word preached. Received an excellent Letter from one grievously vexed with Temptations, whom God has been pleased to make me an Instrument of comforting. Preached again at four in the Afternoon in the Church, that being judged more convenient than the Market-place, as the Weather was so cold. A vast Concourse of all Denominations were present. God gave me, particularly towards the Close of my Sermon, to speak with divine Energy. After Sermon, I visited two sick Persons, supped comfortably with my Family, and laid me down with a

strong Desire to see my own Unworthiness, and the Freedom and Riches of that Grace which alone has made me to differ from the most abandoned of Men. *Whatever others may see in themselves I know not. This one Thing I know, I see nothing but Hell in my Soul. And therefore, whenever I do glory, I desire only to glory in thee, O Lord!*

*Sunday, November 25.* Had great Travail of Soul, and struggling within myself about a Text to preach on, *and could not conceive the Reason of such uncommon Perplexity:* At last I fixed on one for the Morning, and trusted to God to direct me to one for the Evening. But before I came from Church God shewed me what I should do. For after I had done Preaching, a young Gentleman, once a Minister of the Church of *England*, but now a Secretary to Mr. *Penn*, stood up with a loud Voice, and warned the People against the Doctrine I had been delivering, urging, That there was no such Term as *imputed Righteousness* in Holy Scripture; That such a Doctrine put a Stop to all Goodness; That we were to be judged for our good Works and Obedience; and were commanded *to do and live*.—When he had ended, I denied his first Proposition, and brought a Text to prove

an

47

an imputed Righteousness was a Scriptural Expression; but thinking the Church an improper Place for Disputation, I said no more at that Time. The Portion of Scripture appointed for the Epistle, was *Jerem. xxiii.* wherein were these Words, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS. Upon these I discoursed in the Afternoon, and shewed how the Lord JESUS was to be *our whole Righteousness*. Proved how the contrary Doctrine overthrewed all Divine Revelation. Answered all the Objections *that were made against the Doctrine of an imputed Righteousness.* Produced the Articles of our Church to illustrate it, and concluded with an Exhortation to all to lay aside a Reasoning Infidelity; and to submit to Jesus Christ, who

is the End of the Law for *Righteousness*, to every one that believeth. The Verses at the Beginning of the Chapter out of which the Text was taken, are very remarkable (*Jer. xxiii. 1, 2, 3, 4.*) God was pleased to fulfil that Promise in me; for blessed be his Name, I was not dismayed.—*The Word came with Power*; the Church was thronged within and without, all wonderfully attentive, and many, as I was informed, convinced that the Lord Christ was *our Righteousness*. In the Evening the Gentleman came to me, but alas! was so very dark in all the Fundamentals of Christianity, and such an intire Stranger to inward Feelings, that I was obliged to say to him, *Art thou a Master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Lord Convict and Convert him for thy infinite Mercy's Sake.*

Went to the Quaker's Meeting for a *little* Time. Gave the Sacrament at a private House, and came home and exhorted, prayed and sung Psalms with a Room full of People. They follow me wherever I go, as they used to do in *London*; and I believe a noble gathering of Souls might be in this Place. Here, as elsewhere, they only want somebody to preach the Truth as it is in Jesus. *Dearest Lord, remember thy Church, and revive thy Work amongst us in the midst of the Days!*

*Monday, November 26.* Read Prayers and preached twice in the Church to very large and attentive Congregations. The Word, *I perceived*, came with great Power, and People now apply to me so fast for Advice under

Con-

48

Convictions, and so continually crowd in upon me, that I have not *so much as* Time to write a *Letter* to my *English* Friends. Some little Presents have been sent for the Orphan-house, and a large Collection, I believe, might be made: But I choose to defer that till my Return hither again. As yet it seems *absolutely* necessary for the good of the Church in general, and my Orphans in particular,

that I should visit every Place in *America* whither I have been before.—*Good Lord direct my Goings in thy Way!*

***Philadelphia and German Town.***

*Tuesday, November 27.* According to Appointment, preached at *German Town*, seven Miles from *Philadelphia*, off a Balcony, to above 6000 People. **Before I began I retired and was humbled at the Throne of Grace.** But God strengthened me to speak **very** near two Hours with such Demonstration of the Spirit, that great Numbers continued weeping for a considerable Time. I have not seen a more gracious Melting for a **long Season**. After I had done, People came to me shaking me by the Hand, and inviting me to their Houses, and fresh Places. A *German* most kindly entertain'd me. I had sweet Converse, and felt a blessed Union and Communion with many Souls, though of different Nations and Professions. I think there are no less than fifteen **particular** Denominations of Christians in *German Town*, and yet all agree in one Thing, that is, to hold Jesus Christ as their Head, and to worship him in Spirit and in Truth. I talked with one who had been banished out of *Switzerland* for preaching Christ, **and** Numbers are scattered round about the Town who were driven out of their native Countries for the Sake of their Holy Religion. About four in the Afternoon we went **in Company** with many dear Disciples of the Lord, to see one *Conrade Mattheus*, an aged Hermit, who has lived a solitary Life near forty Years. He was **an** Heir to a great Estate, but chose **a** voluntary Poverty. He has work'd hard, but **would** always **work** without Wages. He is now unable to do much, but God sends somebody or other to feed him. A Friend built him the little House wherein he lives; and Jesus, I am persuaded, dwells with him. He talk'd most feelingly of

inward

49

inward Trials; and when I asked him whether he had not many such in so close a Retirement, he answered, "No Wonder that a single Tree that stands alone is more



“exposed to Storms, than one that grows among others.” After **about** half an Hour’s Conversation, we took our Leave; he kissed me and my Friends, and was **much** rejoiced to hear what was doing in *England*. **The Germans, I find, are about to translate my Journals into High Dutch.** Our Hearts were knit together, and the God of Love was with us of a Truth.—About eight in the Evening we reached *Philadelphia*, and found great Numbers waiting round my Door to hear the Word of Life.—After I had paid a Visit, and talked closely to two Persons who were doubting of the Principles of the Quakers, I returned home; and though I was weak, I could not bear to let so many **Souls** go away without a Spiritual Morsel; I therefore gave them a Word of Exhortation, **as the Spirit gave me Utterance,** sung a Hymn, prayed and dismissed them with a Blessing. Many wept bitterly, and the People’s Behaviour more and more convinces me that God has begun a good Work in many Souls. Was there proper Encouragement given, I am persuaded *Georgia* might soon be peopled; many would gladly go with me thither. I cannot but hope that it will be in Time a fruitful Soil for Christians. One great Reason, I believe, why *Pensilvania* flourishes above other Provinces, is the Liberty of Conscience which is given all to worship God in their own Way; by this means, it is as it were an Asylum or Place of Refuge for all persecuted Christians; **and methinks they live here as so many Guardian Angels.**—I want to go up in the Woods **to see more of them,** but Time will not permit. Oh when shall the Children of God sit down together in the Kingdom of their Father! There we shall all speak *one Language*, and join in singing the Song of the Lamb for ever! **Lord make my Soul to thirst more and more after that blissful Communion of Saints!**

#### PHILADELPHIA.

Wednesday, November 28. **Redeemed a little Time before it was light, to write a Letter or two to my dear**

G

Friends

50

Friends in *England*. I have not had a *Moment's* Time before since my Return from *New-York*. People are continually coming in, and enquiring with strong *Crying and* many Tears how they must come to Christ. It grieves me to send them away with such short Answers, but Necessity compels me. *Oh that the Lord may send forth more Labourers into his Harvest!*—Read Prayers and preached in the Morning, as usual, to a thronged Congregation; heard of more that were under Convictions, and as I was walking out to Dinner, a *German* came to me saying, “Thou didst sow some good Seed Yesterday “in *German Town*, and a Grain of it fell into my “Daughter’s Heart. She wants to speak with thee, that “she may know what she must do to keep and increase “it.” The young Woman being near at hand, came at her Father’s Call. Both melted into Tears immediately, and after I had exhorted her to watch and pray, and keep close to Christ by Faith, I took my leave, beseeching God to water the good Seed his own Right Hand had planted in her Heart.—In the Morning Notice had been given that I should preach my Farewell Sermon in the Afternoon. But the Church (though as large as most of our *London Churches*) being not large enough to contain a fourth Part of the People, *by the Advice of Friends* we adjourned to the Fields, and I preached for an Hour and a half from a Balcony to upwards of ten thousand Hearers very attentive, and much affected *with what God enabled me to deliver.*—I endeavoured to come in all Plainness of Speech, without any Respect of Persons. The mention of my Departure was a Grief to many, and it almost melted me down, to see with what Eagerness and earnest Affection they follow after the Preaching of the Word. If I could preach, they would attend all the Day long. Blessed be God for this effectual Door. I wonder we have no more Adversaries: By and by, I expect Satan and his Emissaries will rage horribly.—I endeavoured to forewarn my Hearers of it. *Lord, prepare us against a Day of spiritual Battle!* Took my leave of the Governor

and Proprietor. Supped with one of the Church-Wardens and his Friends; and when I came home, exhorted and sung Psalms, and prayed with a great Company of People

who

<sup>51</sup>

who were waiting at my Door. After I was in Bed I received the following Letter from *New-York*.

*Reverend and Dear Sir,*

'I was heartily sorry that the Disorder of a Cold should 'hinder me from waiting upon you in the *Jerseys*: But 'am in Hopes it was ordered by Divine Providence for 'the best. I found the next Day, that you had left the 'Town under a deep and universal Concern: Many were 'greatly affected, and I hope abiding Impressions are left 'upon some.—Some that were before very loose and profligate, look back with Shame upon their past Lives and 'Conversations, and seem resolved upon a thorough Reformation.—I mention these Things to strengthen you 'in the blessed Cause you are engaged in, and support you 'under your abundant Labours.—When I heard so many were concerned about their eternal Welfare, I appointed a Lecture on *Wednesday* Evening, tho' it was not an 'usual Season. And tho' the Warning was short, we had 'a numerous and attentive Audience.—In short, I cannot but hope your coming among us has been the Means 'of awakening some among us to a serious Sense of practical Religion, and may be the Beginning of a good 'Work in this secure and sinful Place.—Dear Sir, Let 'your Prayers be joined with mine for this desirable Blessing. I desire your Prayers for me in particular, that I 'may be faithful in my Master's Work; That I may be 'an Instrument in the Hands of Christ for pulling down 'the strong Holds of Sin and Satan, and building the 'Redeemer's Kingdom in this Place. Pray for us, that 'the good Impressions any have received may not wear 'off, and prove as the Morning Cloud, and as the early 'Dew, but that he would grant a Resurrection of Religion in the midst of us, that many may flock to Christ

‘as Doves to the Windows.—I pray God take you under  
 ‘his gracious Protection, sustain you under your many  
 ‘Trials, and make you gloriously successful to convert  
 ‘Sinners from the Error of their Ways, and turning  
 ‘them to the Wisdom of the Just.—My Wife joins  
 ‘with me in affectionate Regard to you, Mr. Seward,

G 2

‘and

52

‘and your other Friends, whom we love in Sincerity.

‘I am,

*Your affectionate Brother, and very humble Servant,*

E. PEMBERTON.

Blessed be God for such Success at *New-York*. Nor is  
 he working less here.—One of the Printers has told me  
 he has taken above two hundred Subscriptions for printing  
 my Sermons and Journals. Another Printer told me he  
 might have sold a thousand Sermons if he had them; and  
 by the Persuasion of my Friends I therefore gave out two  
*extempore* Discourses to be published. *Dearest* Lord, give  
 them thy Blessing.—Numbers of Letters have been sent  
 me from Persons under Convictions. And it is unknown  
 what deep Impressions have been wrought in the Hearts of  
 Hundreds.—An Opposer told me I had unhinged many  
 good Sort of People: And indeed I believe many that con-  
 tented themselves with good Desires, are now convinced  
 they must have good Habits also, and be thoroughly born  
 again ere they can see the Kingdom of God.—Many poor  
 Sinners have, I trust, been called home, and great Num-  
 bers are under strong Convictions. As I have sown spiri-  
 tual Things, People were willing I should reap carnal  
 Things.—They have therefore sent me Butter, Sugar,  
 Chocolate, Pickles, Cheese and Flower for my poor Or-  
 phans; and indeed I could almost say they would pluck out  
 their own Eyes and give me.—Blessed be God, for the great  
 Work begun in these Parts.—The Word has run very swift-  
 ly, and been much glorified.—Oh that what God says of the  
 Church of Philadelphia in the Revelations, may be now ful-  
 filled in the City called after her Name!—I know thy

*Works. Behold I have set before thee an open Door, and no Man can shut it; behold I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, behold I will make them to come and worship before thy Feet, and to know that I have loved thee.*

***Philadelphia, Chester and Wilmington.***

*Thursday, November 29.* Had the Satisfaction of settling all my Family Affairs according to my Desire, got considerably by the Goods that were sold for the Poor, and

had

53

had a Sloop lent me, which Mr. Seward bought and named *Savannah*, in which I left Orders for my Family to set sail immediately after my leaving *Philadelphia*.—My Friend *Gladman* (the Captain mentioned before at the Beginning) has been a Help meet to me, and done every Thing without giving me any (or however, but little) Trouble.—Blessed be God, about eleven in the Morning, having corrected two Sermons for the Press, I took an affectionate Leave of my Family and *Philadelphia* People.—From seven in the Morning they thronged round the Door, and when we parted, oh how bitterly did the poor Souls weep.—As I passed along the Street, they came running out to the Doors, and I discovered the Concern that was in their Hearts by the Sorrow of their Countenances. Near twenty Gentlemen accompanied me on Horseback out of Town.—About seven Miles off, another Company was waiting to meet us, so that at last we were near 200 Horse.—By three we reached *Chester*, a Town fifteen Miles distant from *Philadelphia*, and after we had taken a little Food, I preached to near 5000 People from a Balcony.—It being Court-day, the *Justices* sent Word they would defer their Meeting till mine was over, and the Minister of the Parish, because the Church would not contain the People, took Care himself to provide the Place from which I spoke. The People were very quiet and attentive; and, as I was told, near 1000 came from *Philadelphia*.—After Sermon many of them took their last Farewell, and wished me good Luck in the

Name of the Lord.—About six in the Evening, we left *Chester*, and came to *Wilmington* (thirteen Miles) before nine.—The Evening was warm, the Moon shone bright, and the **pious** Discourse we had on the Way, made the Time imperceptibly glide away. Two loving Quakers received us into their House.—God **also** was pleased to refresh my Heart with a Sense of his Love, and after I had given a Word of Exhortation, and prayed with my own Friends, and some others **that** came in, I went to Bed, admiring the great Work that **was begun by** God in these Parts. I have not seen greater Things, considering the Places, **no not** in *England*! *Oh that the Lord, in answer to People's Prayers, in his due Time, may bring me back hither again!*—I hope **there** to see some substan-

tial

54

tial Fruits of my present weak Endeavours.—*Dearest Redeemer, make me humble, prepare me for thy future Mercies; and whenever thou seest me in Danger of being exalted above Measure, graciously send me a Thorn in the Flesh, as that thy Blessings may not prove my Ruin!*

#### WILLMINGTON.

*Friday, November 30. Had a sweet Retirement this Morning,* preached at Noon, and again at Three in the Afternoon.—Received several fresh and pressing Invitations to preach at **several** different Places, but was obliged to **withstand** them all.—*Oh that I had a Hundred Tongues and Lives, they should be all employ'd for my dear Lord JESUS!*—Spent the Evening in sweet Conversation with Mr. *William Tennent*, Brother to Mr. *Gilbert Tennent*, a faithful Minister of JESUS CHRIST, and with several *Germans*, whose Hearts GOD has been pleased to knit to me in a close and intimate Union. *Blessed be GOD for the Communion of Saints!*—*Lord, why am I thus highly favoured? Even so, Father, for so it seemeth good in thy Sight!*—*Was ever such a Monument of GOD's free Grace!* Who dares despair, when such Mercies are daily poured on such a Wretch as I am?

*Newcastle, Christian-Bridge.*

*Saturday, December 1.* Reached *Newcastle*, Seven Miles from *Willmington*, by Ten in the Morning; was met on the Way by Mr. *Ross*, the Minister of the Place, and kindly entertain'd by Mr. G——, the principal Inhabitant, who sent to invite me and my Friends Yesterday.—Preached to about 2000 People from a Balcony, about Ten o'Clock, but did not speak with so much Freedom and Power as usual, by reason GOD was pleased to humble my Soul by inward Visitations, and a Bodily Indisposition. Lay on the Bed after Sermon, which refreshed me much, and rode and preached at Four o'Clock at *Christian-Bridge*, to about the same Number as was at *Newcastle*.—I believe near 200 Horse came on the Road with us. I had some edifying Conversation with some Children of GOD, as we came on the Way, and great

Power

55

Power from GOD descending on me and the Congregation, in the latter Part of my Sermon.—I always observe inward Trials prepare me for, and are the certain Forerunners of *fresh Mercies*. Oh what a gracious melting of Souls was there! Enough to convince (one would imagine) the greatest Infidels.—Oh with what Earnestness did People beseech me to visit other Places! Surely the divine *Herbert's* Prophecy is now being fulfilling.

*Religion stands a Tiptoe in our Land, &c*  
*Ready to pass to the American Strand! &c.*

(See his *Church Militant*.)

*Sunday, December 2.* Return'd last Night after Sermon to *Newcastle*, that I might once more see my dear Family, who came thither in the Sloop just after I had left it.—Lay at the House of Mr. G——n [[*Gladman*]], and this Morning went on board, prayed, sung Psalms, gave a Word of Exhortation, and rejoiced much to see all Things in such excellent Order.—My dear Friend the Captain told me how kind the People of *Philadelphia* had been to my Family after my Departure: One brought them But-

ter, another Beer, &c. and the Collector would not take his Perquisite for clearing the Sloop.—The two Children the People were particularly fond of, and gave them so many Things that I was obliged to desire them to **hold their Hands**.—*Oh how plentiful are those Mercies which GOD has laid up for them that fear him, even before the Sons of Men!*—About Ten we came to *Christian-Bridge* again, where we had left some of our Friends last Night. Here we took a little Refreshment, and by Twelve reach'd *Whitely Creek*, the Place appointed for my preaching.—The Weather was rainy, but upwards of 10000 People were assembled **together** hear the Word.—It surprised me to see such a Number of Horses.—There were several Hundreds of them.—I preach'd from a Tent erected for me by Order of Mr. *William Tennent*, whose Meeting-House lay near the Place.—I continued in my first Discourse an Hour and a Half, after which we went into a Log-House near **adjoining, and having taken** a Morsel of Bread, and warm'd ourselves, I preached a second Time from the same Place.—My Body, **I perceived**, was a little

weak,

56

weak, but GOD magnified his Strength, and caused his Power to be known in the Congregation.—Many Souls were melted down; **and** here I had the Pleasure of meeting with one Mr. *Gelaspie*, another faithful Minister of JESUS CHRIST.—He, as well as Mr. *Tennent*, was very solicitous for my going to his House, but being pre-engaged, I rode Three Miles, and was kindly and hospitably entertain'd **at the House of one** Mr. *Howell*, who came with his Family some Years ago from *Cardiff* in *Wales*. One in the House had heard me preach in *Kingswood*, and every Thing was carried on with so much Freedom and Love, that I rejoiced much that GOD had sent me thither. I stayed up as long as I could, but finding my Body weaken'd by the Posture in which I stood to preach, about Ten o' Clock, after Family Prayer, I went to Bed throughly weary, but full of that Peace



which the World cannot give, but which I wish the whole World were Partakers of.

**MARYLAND. North East.**

*Monday, December 3.* Parted from some more Friends who accompanied us from Newcastle, eat our Bread with Gladness, and came to North East in Maryland, where I appointed to preach to Day.—Little Notice having been given, there were not 1500 People; but GOD was with us, and I observed many were deeply affected. Several repeated Invitations were sent me to preach at other Places. Immediately after Sermon, we set forwards, and pass'd over Susqueannah Ferry, about a Mile broad, and were received at a Gentleman's House that lay in the Way. Tho' we were Eight in Company, yet all Things were carried on with great Freedom and Generosity; and I hope GOD sent us providentially thither; for the Gentleman told us, that he had been a little melancholy, and had therefore sent for some Friends to help him to drive it away. The Bottle and the Bowl I found were the Means to be made use of; but blessed be GOD, the Design was in a good measure prevented by our coming in; another Turn was soon given to the Conversation, whilst I endeavour'd to talk of GOD as much as I could. All joined in Family Prayer; I went to Bed, pitying the mi-

serable

57

serable Condition of those who live a Life of Luxury and Lust, and are led Captive by the Devil at his Will. They are afraid to look into themselves.—And if their Consciences are at any Time awaken'd, they must be lull'd asleep again by Drinking, or Evil Company. None but a sincere Christian can with Pleasure practice the Duty of Self-Examination. *Lord, grant I may always so live as to keep a Conscience void of Offence, both towards thee and towards Man! then I shall never be less alone than when alone;—for thou, Father of Mercies, and GOD of all Consolations, wilt every where be with me!*

**JOPPA.**

*Tuesday, December 4.* Set out about Eight in the Morning, and took Leave of two dear Friends, who parted from us with weeping Eyes.—Baited at *Joppa*, a little Town about Fifteen Miles off the Place where we lay, and gave a Word of Exhortation to about Forty People in the Church. *Oh that the Holy Ghost may fall on all them who heard the Word, in as real tho' not in so visibly miraculous a Manner as it did once on Cornelius and his Household!*—But *Maryland*, as far as I can hear, seems to be a Place as yet unwater'd with the true Gospel of CHRIST, and no Likelihood of much Good *in it*, unless one could abide *in it* for some Time.—They have scarce any Town worth mentioning, because almost every Planter has a Landing-Place, from which he exports his Tobacco at his own House, which generally lies very near the River.—By this Means the People are much dispersed, and consequently cannot be gather'd together without much previous Notice, which notwithstanding is difficult to be given, because there are many large Ferries between Place and Place.—However, I trust the Time will come when GOD will visit these dark Corners of the Earth.—*I long to see those New Heavens and New Earth, wherein dwelleth Righteousness.*

**NEWTOWN and ANAPOLIS.**

*Wednesday, December 5.* Lay last Night at *Newtown*, Fifteen Miles from *Joppa*; eat *of* what was set before us;

H

joined

58

joined in Family Prayer; and, as Opportunity offered, put in a Word for GOD.—In the Morning we sung and prayed; at Noon we baited at a House lying about Fifteen Miles off, and by Four in the Afternoon reached *Anapolis*, a little Town, but the Metropolis of *Maryland*. The House where we lodged was very commodious, considering it was in *Maryland*; but the People of it seem'd to be surprized when they heard us talk of GOD and CHRIST; notwithstanding, both they and the other

Strangers attended very orderly at Family Prayer, and I endeavoured to recommend them, as I was enabled, to the Mercy of our gracious and good GOD. Oh that I may prevail in their Behalf! It grieves me to my Soul to see poor Sinners hanging as it were by a single Hair, and dancing (insensible of their Danger) over the Flames of Hell! Oh that GOD may make me instrumental in plucking them as Firebrands out of the Fire! For here is the Misery of fallen Man, he is miserable, poor, and blind, and naked, and yet *knows it not*. Lord JESUS, send forth, we beseech thee, thy Light, and lighten our Darkness, for thy Mercies Sake!

### ANAPOLIS.

Thursday, December 6. Had a providential Opportunity of writing some Letters last Night and this Morning to England.—Waited on Governor Ogle, and was received with much Civility. Went to pay my Respects to Mr. Stirling, the Minister of the Parish, who happen'd not to be within; but whilst we were at Dinner, he came with the greatest Civility, offer'd me his Pulpit, his House, or any Thing he could supply me with.—About Four, he came and introduced me and my Friends to a Gentleman's House, where we had some useful Conversation.—Our Discourse run chiefly on the New Birth, and the Folly and Sinfulness of those Amusements, whereby the polite Part of the World are so fatally diverted from the Pursuit after this One Thing needful.—Some in Company I believe thought me too strict, and were very strenuous in Defence of what they called innocent Diversions, but when I told them every Thing was sinful which was not done with a single Eye to God's Glory, and that such

Enter-

Entertainments not only discovered a Levity of Mind, but were contrary to the whole Tenor of the Gospel of CHRIST, they seem'd somewhat convinced, at least I trust it set them doubting, and I pray GOD they may doubt more and more;—for Cards, Dancing, and

such like, draw the Soul from GOD, and *lull* it *asleep* as much as Drunkenness and Debauchery.—And every Minister of CHRIST ought, with the Authority of an Apostle, to declare and testify the dreadful Snare of the Devil, whereby he leads many Captive at his Will, by the falsely call'd *innocent* Entertainments of the polite Part of the World;—for Women are as much enslaved to their *fashionable Diversions*, as Men are to their *Bottle* and their *Hounds*: Self-pleasing, Self-seeking is the *Ruling Principle* in both, and therefore such Things are to be spoken against, not only as so many *trifling Amusements*, but as Things which shew that the Heart is *wholly alienated* from the *Life* of GOD.—For if I may speak *by* my own, as well as others Experience, as soon as ever the Soul is stirred up to seek after GOD, it *cannot away with* any *such* Thing; nothing but what leads towards GOD *can delight it*.—And therefore, when in Company, I love to lay the Ax to the Root of the Tree, show the Necessity of a thorough Change of Heart, and then all Things fall to the Ground at *once*. My Friend, C. Wesley, well describes the Misery of a Modern Fine Lady in the following Verses.

## I TIM. v. 6

*She that liveth in Pleasure is dead while she liveth.*

*HOW hapless is th' applauded Virgin's Lot,†  
Her GOD forgetting, by her GOD forgot!†  
Stranger to Truth, unknowing to obey,†  
In Error nurs'd, and disciplin'd to stray;†  
Swoln with Self-Will, and principled with Pride,†  
Sense all her Good, and Passion all her Guide:†  
Pleasure its Tide, and Flatt'ry lends it Breath,†  
And smoothly waft her to Eternal Death!*

*A Goddess here, she sees her Vot'ries meet,†  
Crowd to her Shrine, and tremble at her Feet;*

*She hears their Vows, believes their Life and Death;†  
 Hangs on the Wrath and Mercy of her Breath;†  
 Supreme in fancy'd State she reigns her Hour,†  
 And glories in her Plenitude of Power.†  
 Herself the only Object worth her Care,†  
 Since all the kneeling World was made for her.†  
 For her Creation all its Stores displays;†  
 The Silk Worm's Labour, and the Diamond's Blaze;†  
 Air, Earth, and Sea conspire to tempt her Taste,†  
 And ransack'd Nature furnishes the Feast.†  
 Life's gaudiest Pride attracts her willing Eyes,†  
 And Balls, and Theatres, and Courts arise:†  
 Italian songsters pant her Ear to please,†  
 Bid the first Cries of Infant Reason cease,†  
 Save her from Thought, and lull her Soul to Peace.*

*Deep sunk in Sense th' imprison'd Soul remains,†  
 Nor knows its Fall from GOD, nor feels its Chains,†  
 Unconscious still, sleeps on in Error's Night,†  
 Nor strives to rise, nor struggles into Light:†  
 Heav'n-born in vain, degen'rate cleaves to Earth,†  
 (No Pangs experienc'd of the Second Birth)†  
 She only fall'n, yet unwaken'd found,†  
 While all th' enthrall'd Creation groans around!*

Friday, December 7. Observed two Persons came in with the Family to Prayer last Night, and a visible Alteration was made in the Behaviour of the People of the House; preached in the Morning and Evening to small polite Auditories.—The Governor put by his Court to come to Morning Service, and at Noon, upon an Invitation sent last Night, I and my Friends dined with him; he treated us very humanely; and in the Evening, two of the Head Inhabitants favour'd me with a Visit.—The Minister seem'd somewhat affected, and under Convictions; but I fear a false Politeness, and the Poms and Vanities of the World, eat out the Vitals of Religion in this Place. I bless GOD I did not spare to tell my Hearers of it in my

Discourses, and the Minister told me they took it kindly. At Night Four Persons came to join in Family Prayer, to whom I gave a warm Exhortation; for GOD was pleased to enlarge and shed abroad his Love in my Heart.—

Here

61

Here are but few Inhabitants: But God, I hope, will shew that he hath some chosen ones in this Place.

***Upper-Marlborough.***

*Saturday, December 8.* Had more come last Night to Family-Prayer.—Left Anapolis this Morning. Baited at Upper-Marlborough, about 15 Miles distant, intending to go farther; but being desired by some Gentlemen to stay and preach on the Morrow, I was prevailed upon, and spent the Remainder of the Day in sweet Conversation with my Friends, and in Writing Letters to some under Convictions at Philadelphia; and supp'd with a Gentleman who kindly entertained both me and my Fellow Travellers.—Our Talk ran upon the Fall of Man; but I fear Deism has spread much in these Parts.—I cannot say I have yet met with many here who seem truly to have the Fear of God before their Eyes. Satan does here particularly reign in the Children of Disobedience. *Dearest Redeemer, once more lead Captivity captive, and send thy Holy Spirit even amongst these thine Enemies. As thou didst drive the Devil out of the Country of the Gadarens, drive them out of this Country also for thy Mercy's Sake. Amen.*

***Upper-Marlborough, Portobacco.***

*Sunday, December 9.* Preached at Upper-Marlborough to a small, polite, and seemingly very curious Audience. Dined with the Gentleman with whom we supped last Night.—Parted with a dear Friend who came from Philadelphia; took Horse, (there being no Sermon in the Afternoon) and went a Sabbath-day's Journey as far as Piscataway, where we were kindly entertained.—Wrote some Letters to our English Friends. Conversed to the

Use of edifying, and *felt* an uncommon Freedom and Sweetness in *each other's* Spirits.—Well might our Lord say, *The Kingdom of God is within you.*—For they who are truly born of God, carry Heaven in their Hearts.

*Piscataway,*

62

***Piscataway, Tobacco, and Potomock.***

*Monday, December 10.* Was sweetly refreshed by the Rest God gave us.—Wrote another Letter to *England*; baited at *Portobacco*, and reached *Potomack* by three in the Afternoon. *Potomack* is a River which parts the two Provinces of *Maryland* and *Virginia*. It is six Miles broad. We attempted to go over it; but after we had rowed about a Mile, the Wind blew so violently, and Night was coming on so fast, that we were obliged to go back and lye at the Person's House that kept the Ferry, where they brought out such Things as they had. Here God was pleased to humble my Soul by Inward Trials.—I retired as soon as possible, and bewailed my Wretchedness before him that is of purer Eyes than to behold Iniquity.—Afterwards my Heart was more at Ease. And God shewed us the Benefit of returning back, for the Wind was very boisterous, and the Night snowy; so that without a Miracle (which in such a Case we had no Right to expect) both we and our Horses must have been lost.—*Lord grant we may always keep between the two Extremes of distrusting or tempting thee!*

***Virginia, Seals-Church.***

*Tuesday, December 11.* Had a short and delightful Passage over the River this Morning, which we could not pass last Night.—Rejoiced that God had brought us into another Province. Observed the Country to be much more open, and the Roads better than in *Maryland*. Passed over two more Ferries in the Day's Journey, but were put to some little Inconveniency for want of finding a Publick House in the Way. However, at last we met a Poor Woman in our Road, who was going to sell Cakes

to the Train'd Bands, of which we bought some.—A few Miles further, a Planter let us have some Provender for our Beasts, and a little Milk and small Beer for ourselves.—In the Strength of which, by six at Night we got to a Place called *Seals-Church*, twenty nine Miles from *Potomack*.—Here we called at a Person's House to whom we were recommended.—But the Mistress of it

not

63

not being at home, and the Overseer of the Slaves at first was unwilling to receive us. However, finding we were wet and Strangers, he was at last prevailed upon to let us abide there all Night. And in a little Time furnished us with a good Fire, with some Meat, Milk, and a Cake baked on the Hearth, which was exceedingly refreshing, and afforded us no small Matter for Praise and Thanksgiving. *Oh that we may abound in that Duty more and more!*

*Wednesday, December 12. Took a little Break-fast:* Went on, having pleasant Roads and a warm Day, till we came to *Piscataway* Ferry, eighteen Miles off, where the Man of the House spared us some Corn and Sheaves for our Horses, but had neither Milk nor Bread in the House for ourselves.—However, I endeavoured to feed him with Spiritual Bread; but he seriously asked one of us, if I was not a Quaker, because (as I supposed) he heard me talk of the Necessity of being born again of the Spirit.—If I talk of the *Spirit*, I am a *Quaker*; if I say Grace at Breakfast, and behave seriously, I am a *Presbyterian*. Alas! what must I do to be accounted a Member of the *Church of England*? About one we set out, and before four in the Afternoon reached an Ordinary. Here we were most opportunely refreshed with what Meat was in the House.—There being no other publick House for some Miles, and being wearied more than common, for want of usual Sustenance, we tarried all Night.—In the Evening some Gentlemen came disordered in Liquor; but the Woman of the House kept them from us, so we slept very comfortably on the Bed that she made us in the Kit-



chen.—I talked to her of Religion, and *that we were to* be born again after Death; *but* she thought God was very merciful; that it would be no Harm to swear by her Faith. *However, she was very solicitous to please us; and* I could not help remarking how the Devil loves to represent God as *all Mercy, or all Justice.*—When Persons are *awakened*, he would, if possible, tempt them to *despair*; when *dead* in Trespasses and Sins he tempts them to *presume.*—*Lord preserve us from making Shipwreck against either of these Rocks! Give us such a Sense of thy Justice as to convince us that we cannot be saved if we continue in Sin, and such a Sense of thy Mercy as may keep*

us

64

*us from Despair, through a Living Faith in thy Dear Son, who is the Saviour of Sinners!*

*Thursday, December 13.* Set out just as the Sun rose, got to an Ordinary by Noon; eat what was set before us with *Comfort, and* some Degree of Thankfulness, and reached the House of Colonel *Whiting*, Father of my dear Friend Captain *Whiting*, long before Night. Here God spread a plentiful Table for us, and what was *still* more desirable, sent to us a well-inclined Person, to whom I trust my Conversation was bless'd. That Passage in *St. John*, wherein it is said that our Lord must needs go through *Samaria*, (when the Poor Woman was to be converted) has often been affecting to my Mind.—The same good Providence, I trust, led me through these Parts, for the Sake of the Person before mentioned. *Oh that, like the Woman at the Well, he may have Christ revealed in his Heart, and be filled with a Holy Zeal to go and invite his Neighbours to him. Amen, so be it!*

#### **Gloucester, York and Williamsburgh.**

*Friday, December 14.* Left Colonel *Whiting's* about seven in the Morning, pass'd through *Gloucester Town*, a very small Place. Crossed a Ferry a Mile *over*. Dined at *York*, a Place somewhat larger, and reached *Williams-*

*burgh*, the Metropolis of *Virginia*, by the Evening. The Gentleman before mentioned was so kind as to accompany us; with him I discoursed much on the Things pertaining to the Kingdom of God.—He seem'd to be one to whom God had given a Hearing Ear, and an obedient Heart.—I have not met with a Temper more resembling that of *Nathan* a great while. *Oh that the Lord may make him an Israelite indeed!*

*Saturday, December 15.* Waited on, and afterwards (at his Invitation) dined with the Governor, who received me most courteously.—Paid my Respects to the Mr. *Blair* the Commissary of *Virginia*, and by far the most worthy Clergyman I have yet conversed with in all *America*.—His Discourse was savoury, such as tended to the Use of edifying. He received me with Joy, asked me to preach,

and

65

and wished my Stay was to be longer.—Under God he has been chiefly instrumental in raising a beautiful College at *Williamsburgh*, in which is a Foundation for about eight Scholars, a President, two Masters, and Professors in the several Sciences. Here the Gentlemen of *Virginia* send their Children; and as far as I could learn by Enquiry, they are near in the same Order, and under the same Regulation and Discipline, as in our Universities at home. The present Masters came from *Oxford*. Two of them I find were my Contemporaries. I rejoiced in seeing such a Place in *America*. It may be of excellent Use if learning Christ be made one End of their Studies, and other Arts and Sciences only introduced and pursued as subservient to that.—For want of this most of our *English* Schools and Universities are sunk into mere Seminaries of Paganism. Young Men's Heads are stuff'd with Heathen Mythology; Christ or Christianity is scarce so much as named amongst them; so that when they come to be converted, they are obliged to undo what they have been doing for many Years; and they are the most happy who can soonest forget their Education.—*Revive, O Lord, a*

Primitive Spirit, *and then we may hope for some Primitive Schools to be erected and encouraged amongst us!*

Sunday, December 16. Preached in the Morning (as I afterwards was informed) to the Satisfaction and Profit of many. Several Gentlemen came from York, 14 Miles off to hear me, and were desirous of my going back to preach at their Town, on the Morrow.—A large Audience (I found) might have been expected, could timely Notice have been given; but being in great Haste, and there being no Sermon customarily in the Afternoon, I dined with the Commissary, who entertained me and my friends with great Civility, and left Williamsburgh in the Afternoon, promising, if possible, to visit these Parts again some Time in the Summer. About three Miles off the Town we took Leave of our Friend from Gloucester, whose Heart God has much melted by the Foolishness of Preaching.—Here also, as well as at Williamsburgh, we left some Letters to be sent to England.—And I could not but think, that God intended, in his own Time, to work a good Work in these Southern Parts of America.—

I

At

66

At present they seem more dead to God, but far less prejudiced than in the Northern Parts. At his Request I gave the Printer leave to print my Journals and Sermons, and I trust that God who loves to work by the meanest Instruments, will be pleased to bless them to the Conviction and Edification of these his people.—*Visit them, O Dearest Lord, with thy salvation.*

*Stretch out thine Arm, Victorious King, &*

*Their raging Sins subdue, &*

*Drive the old Dragon from his Seat, &*

*With his Infernal Crew!*

Monday, December 17. Got over a Ferry three Miles broad the last Night, and providentially met with a young Man who shewed us the Way to one Captain R—n's, who entertained us with much Simplicity and Freedom.—

He seem'd well disposed, and was so kind as to go with us this Morning fourteen Miles in our Way. At my first getting up I perceived myself much indisposed, but God was pleased to strengthen me, and I held out my Journey till we came to an Ordinary about 30 Miles from the Place where we lay last Night.—Here we met with what some would account very indifferent Entertainment; but God enabled us to be resigned and thankful.—Bashfulness, and a Fear of being troublesome, have kept us from embracing Offers of Gentlemen's Houses: But we have heard a good Report of the Generosity of the *Virginia* Gentlemen, and I have great Reason to believe what is reported; for I find they are so willing and accustomed to entertain Strangers, that few think it worth their while to keep public Ordinaries. It is good to find People given to Hospitality.

*Tuesday, December 18.* Was very restless and indisposed with a Fever all Night, which continuing upon me, and one of our Horses being foundered, it was thought advisable to stay at the Ordinary the whole Day.—Being very weak I could scarce lift up my Head, or eat any Food: but God caused me to rejoice in it, so that my greatest Concern was about the Trouble I gave my dear Friends.—I never feel the Power of Religion more than when under

Out-

67

Outward or Inward Trials. It is that alone can enable any Man to sustain with Patience and Thankfulness his Bodily Infirmities. *Lord, let me feel the Power of it more and more, and then, though thou kill me, yet will I put my Trust in thee!*

#### **NORTH-CAROLINA.**

*Wednesday, December 19.* Finding myself somewhat stronger, and the Horse also being in better Order, we took a short Day's Journey of about 26 Miles, and were most affectionately received by one Mr. A—n in *North-Carolina*. A little while after our coming in, I begg'd

Leave to lye down to rest my weary Limbs.—**And** some Way or other, in my Absence, my Friends acquainted our Host who I was.—Upon which he was so rejoiced that he could not tell how to express his Satisfaction. His Wife also seem'd most **sollicitous** to oblige, and they were only concerned that they could do no more for us. The honest old Man told us, that his Son-in-law, who lived about three Miles off, ever since he heard of me in the News, wished that I would come thither.—This is not the first Time, by many, that I have found the Advantage of the Things my Adversaries have inserted in the publick Papers: They do but excite People's Curiosity, and serve to raise their Attention, while **all** Men of Seriousness and Candor naturally infer that some good must be doing where such Stories and Falsities are invented. It often gives me unspeakable Comfort, to see how wisely God over-rules every Thing for the good of his Church. **And how he never more effectually bruises the Serpent's Head, than when he permits him most cruelly to bruise our Heel.**

*The World, Sin, Death, oppose in vain,†  
Christ by his dying, Death hath slain!†  
My great Deliverer, and my God!†  
In vain does the old Dragon rage,†  
In vain all Hell its Pow'rs engage;†  
Nought can withstand thy conquering Blood!*

I 2

EDEN-

**EDEN-TOWN.**

*Thursday, December 20.* Found myself better in the Morning than I have been for some Days past. Took **our** Leave of our kind Host, and travelled cheerfully onwards. About Noon we lighted in the Woods to give our Horses Provender, and to take a little Refreshment **to** ourselves, which we have done every Day this Week, because there are no Ordinaries in the Way. **No one can tell with what Gladness we took our Food, and how com-**

fortably we praised God for spreading us a Table in the Wilderness.—By four in the Afternoon we reached *E-den-Town*, a little Place, beautifully situated by the Water-side.—Here we were well entertained at a publick House; and though God was pleased to humble my Body by Weakness, and my Soul by Conviction of past Sin, yet before we went to Rest, he was pleased to refresh me with a Multitude of Peace, and in the *midst* of my Humiliations exalted me, by giving me a more lively Sense of his Favour and Loving-kindness, which is better than Life itself! I think I often feel what our Lord means, when he says the Publican went down to his House justified rather than the Pharisee. I doubt not, but while he was pouring out his Soul and smiting upon his Breast, the Holy Spirit overshadowed him, and sealed to him his Pardon. It is a dreadful Mistake to deny the Doctrine of Assurances, or to think it is confined to a Time of Persecution, or to the Primitive Ages of the Church.—Not only Righteousness and Peace, but Joy in the Holy Ghost, which is the Consequence of Assurance, is a necessary Part of the Kingdom of God within us.—And tho' all are not to be condemned who have not an immediate Assurance, yet all ought to labour after it. And I really believe one great Reason why so many go mourning all their Life long, is owing to Ignorance of their Christian Privileges.—They have not Assurance, because they ask it not; they ask it not, because they are taught that it does not belong to Christians of these last Days; whereas I know Numbers whose Salvation is written upon their Hearts as it were with a Sun-beam.—They can rejoice in God their Saviour, and give Men and Devils the Chal-

lenge

69

lenge to separate them, if they can, from the Love of God in Christ Jesus their Lord! *Dearest Redeemer, enlighten all thy Followers to see their Privileges, and never let them cease wrestling with thee, till thou dost bless them, by assuring them of their Eternal Salvation!*

*Why should the Children of a King, ‡  
 Go mourning all their Days? ‡  
 Great Comforter, descend, and bring ‡  
 The Tokens of thy Grace! ‡  
 Assure their Conscience of their Parts ‡  
 In the Redeemer's Blood; ‡  
 And bear thy Witness with their Hearts, ‡  
 That they are born of God!*

### **BELL's-FERRY.**

*Friday, December 21.* Was refreshed much both in Body and Spirit; and the Weather being too hazy to pass over the Sound, I had a **sweet** Opportunity **given me** of Writing **some Things that lay upon my Mind**.—I intended, had I staid, to preach to those few People that were in the Town: But about Noon the Sun shining bright and dispelling the Mist, at three o'Clock we went in a Pettiagua over the Sound, and were near seven Hours in our Passage.—It was about twelve Miles **over**. God favoured us with a calm and pleasant Night; we praised him as we went over by singing Hymns, and met with a convenient Ordinary when we **came** on the other Side. How short a Way can a Boat go in a long Time, when there is no Wind or Tide to carry it forwards? Thus it is with the Soul. When God with-holds the gentle Gales and Breathings of his Spirit from us, we sail but slowly toward the Haven of eternal Rest. Happy the Man who gets out of himself, and lives upon the Promises of the Gospel.—He is sure whether he is becalm'd, or in a Storm, that all **shall** work together for his good.

### **BATH-TOWN.**

*Saturday, December 22.* Set out at break of Day, and came by eight at Night at *Bath-Town*, near fifty Miles

from

---

70

from *Bell's-Ferry*.—It is by far the longest Stage, and the worst Roads we have had since we begin our Journey. The Ground, most Part of the Way, was wet and

swampy, the Country uninhabited, and a very sensible Alteration was discernible in the Climate.—It was as hot as generally it is at Midsummer in England; but we had a sweet Breeze of Wind intermixed, which made our Riding through the Woods in the Day-time exceeding pleasant. About mid-way we met with an Ordinary where we refreshed ourselves and Beasts. We observ'd a Variety of Birds, and in the Evening heard the Wolves on one Side of us howling like a Kennel of Hounds, which made me reflect on what the Psalmist says, *The Lions roaring after their Prey do seek their Meat from God.*

*They range all Night on Slaughter bent, &  
Till summon'd by the rising Morn, &  
To skulk in Dens, with one Consent, &  
The conscious Ravagers return.*

God's Providence sent us a Guide, and better Entertainment at our Inn than we have had for some Time.—As we rode along, one of my Friends said, How dreadful must it be for a natural Man to be placed in such a Howling Wilderness, surrounded with those many Wolves, Bears, and Tygers, which come forth at Night roaring upon him? But then added he, how infinitely more dreadful must it be to be cast into Hell, and surrounded continually with the Howlings of damn'd Spirits! When we came to our Inn, we were told of a Man and Woman who one Night were surrounded with a Company of these Wolves, and pursued by them a long Way; this made me think of an Observation of Mr. Gilbert Tennent: "The Creatures are up in Arms against us, "to revenge their Maker's Quarrel: Thanks be to God "for the Death and Resurrection of our dear Lord Jesus, "who has not only delivered us from the Power of Wild "Beasts, but of Death and Hell itself!"

*Tho' in a bare and rugged Way, &  
Thro' desert lonely Wilds I stray,*

*Thy*



71

*Thy Bounty shall my Pains beguile;†  
 The barren Wilderness shall smile†  
 With sudden Greens and Herbage crown'd,†  
 And Streams shall murmur all around!*

Sunday, December 23. Sent to the Minister of the Place, and had some Conversation with him last Night; preached about Noon to near 100 People, which, *as* I found, was an extraordinary Congregation, there being seldom more than Twenty at Church. *In my preaching* I felt the Divine Presence, and did not spare to tell *the* Hearers *how* I thought GOD was angry with them, because he had sent *them for a long while* a Famine of the Word, and not given them a Teaching Priest.—All seem'd attentive to what was spoken.—After Sermon, one poor Woman came with a full Heart, desiring my Prayers; I asked her whether she had been convicted by the Sermon, or whether she knew CHRIST; she answered, she had been seeking him for some Time, but wanted to find a Minister who had Understanding in Divine Things. This Case is not uncommon!—Most that handle the Law know not what they say, nor whereof they affirm. *Lord JESUS, in thy Mercy purify the Sons of Levi; accomplish the Number of thine Elect, and hasten thy Kingdom: Oh make no long tarrying, O our LORD and our GOD!*

#### NEWBORN TOWN.

Monday, December 24. Crossed Pamlico River, about Five Miles wide Yesterday Evening.—Lay at an Ordinary at the Water-side. Set out by break of Day; crossed *New River* about Four in the Afternoon, and reached *Newborn Town*, Thirty Two Miles from *Bath Town*, by Six at Night.—*Perceived my Appetite to grow better; experienced some inward Teachings of GOD's Spirit by the Way, &c.* Had a sweet Communion in Spirit, after I came to the Inn, with my dear Friends *at England*, who I supposed were joining with one Accord

in fervent Prayer, and ushering in the Festival of our dear Lord's Nativity, by singing of Hymns and Spiritual Songs. This Time Twelve Months I was with them, and even

now

72

now I am not absent from them; my Soul is closely united with them, and all GOD's Children, by the Spirit of his dear Son; and however separated here, this is my Comfort, *nor* Men, nor Devils can keep us from meeting and dwelling together eternally hereafter. Oh that the Cry was made, *Behold the Bridegroom cometh!* As the Hart panteth after the Water Brooks, so doth my Soul long for that Time *wherein* I shall be summon'd to go forth to meet him!

*Tuesday, December 25.* Endeavoured still to keep my Mind as much as possible in Union with all those *pious Souls* who I knew were rejoicing in the Glad Tidings of Salvation by JESUS CHRIST.—Went to publick Worship, and received the Holy Sacrament, which was celebrated in the Court-House; but mourned much in Spirit, to see in what an indifferent Manner every Thing was carried on.—I cried mightily to the Lord in my secret Devotions, and in the Afternoon when I read Prayers and preached, he was pleased to shew that he had heard me, for I scarce know when we have had a more visible Manifestation of the Divine Presence since our coming into *America*. The People were uncommonly attentive, most melted into Tears, and shewed what a great Impression the Word made upon their Hearts.—I myself was much carried out, I felt the Power of GOD come upon me, and I spoke with Demonstration of the Spirit to the Hearers *Souls*.—After Sermon, a poor Woman, with a Heart full of Concern, ran to me, desiring that I would come and preach where she lived; another told me I had given him a home Stroke; and indeed all, I believe, felt an unusual Effect upon their Minds. The Woman where we lodged would take nothing for our *Christmas* Dinner, and wished we could stay with them longer.—This unexpected

Success rejoiced me the more, because I looked upon it as an Earnest of future and more plentiful Effusions of GOD's Spirit in these Parts.—I **really** believe, whenever the Gospel is preached in these Parts with Power, it will be remarkably bless'd. I have scarcely heard of one faithful Minister sent over amongst them; and *how shall they believe on him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a Preacher? And how shall they preach,*

*unless*

73

*unless they are sent by and taught of GOD? Oh how it will rejoice me to hear that some poor Soul this Day was born again! Then it would be a Christmas Day indeed! And why should I doubt? I have great Reason to think,*

*In many a Soul the Saviour stirr'd;  
I trust some yielded, and believ'd.*

Soon after Evening Service, I and my Friends took Horse, rode about Eight Miles, and were **sweetly** entertain'd **at** a **German's House**, who kept an Ordinary, and had been one of my Hearers. The People of that Nation, (as far as I can find) are the most industrious as well as serious People that ever came into *America*; **I doubt not but the Lord will bless them more and more.**—Wrote this Morning to the Minister of *Newborn*, who I heard countenanced a Dancing-Master, by suffering his own Son to be one of his Learners. Several of the Inhabitants, I was inform'd, had subscribed to his Assemblies, and they were generally attended with ill Consequences, which made me the more desirous to leave my Testimony against them.—It grieves me to find that in every little Town there is a settled Dancing-Master, but scarce any where a settled Minister to be met with; such a Proceeding must be of dreadful Consequence to *any*, especially a *new settled* Province. All Governors, if it were only **out of a Principle** of human Policy, ought to put a Stop to it; for such Entertainments **do not so properly unbend, as altogether enervate** the Minds of People, insensibly leading them in-

to Effeminacy, and unfitting them to endure those Hardships, and go thro' those Fatigues, which must necessarily be undergone, in order to bring any Province to Perfection. True Religion alone exalts a Nation; such sinful Entertainments are a Reproach, and will, in Time, be the Ruin of any People.

*Wednesday, December 26.* Set out early, and rode very pleasantly till Dinner-time. Met with some comfortable Refreshment at an Ordinary on the Road, and lodged at a little House in the Woods, about Thirty Five Miles off where we lay last Night. The People were apprized of my coming, and got such Things as they had

K

in

74

in a decent Manner, and we endeavoured to receive all the divine Blessings with Thankfulness. I had a good deal of Discourse with the People of the House, and after much previous and suitable Conversation, I baptized Two Strangers Children, who providentially lay at the same House that Night.—I believe there may be Hundreds of Children in this Province unbaptized, for want of a Minister. Oh that the Lord would send forth some who, like *John the Baptist*, might preach and baptize in the Wilderness! I believe they would flock to him from all the Countries round about.

*Thursday, December 27.* Set out about Eight in the Morning; crossed *Trent* River, a Ferry about half a Mile wide, and got to an Ordinary a little Way out of the Road, and about Thirty Three Miles Stage, before Six at Night. As soon as I came in, a young Man welcomed me into *America*, who, upon Enquiry, I found had been one of my Parishioners at *Savannah*; this gave me an immediate Opportunity of falling into Religious Conversation, and afterwards I went, as my usual Custom is, among the Negroes belonging to the House. One Man was sick in Bed, and Two of his Children said their Prayers after me very well. This more and more con-

vinces me, that Negroe Children, if early brought up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord, would make as great a Proficiency as any white People's Children *whatsoever*.—I do not despair (if GOD spares my Life) *to see* a School of young Negroes singing the Praises of Him that made them in a Psalm of Thanksgiving!—Lord, thou hast put into my Heart a *good Design* to educate them, I doubt not but thou wilt enable me to bring *it* to good Effect!—*All that truly love thy Name I am confident will say Amen!*

**NEWTOWN on Cape Fear River.**

*Friday, December 28.* Had a very *blusterous* Night, and the Weather continued rainy most Part of the Day.—*However, the Lord strengthen'd us to go on our Way.* After about Fifteen Miles Ride, we *comfortably* refreshed both ourselves and Beasts at a poor Widow's Ordinary,

who,

75

who a few Days ago had buried her Husband, which made her *more thankful, and* better prepared for Religious Discourse.—After Dinner we had a pleasant Ride to *Newtown on Cape Fear River*, near Eighteen Miles from the Place where we baited.—It is a little but thriving Place for Trade, *and* we rejoiced greatly that the Lord had brought us so far on our Journey, and had not suffer'd us to go out of our Way thro' so many almost uninhabited Woods, nor so much as to hurt our Feet against a Stone! The little wet Weather to Day made our Inns more acceptable, and we could not help reflecting that it is in our Spiritual as in our Temporal Journeys; sometimes the *Sun* of Righteousness arises with great Lustre upon our Hearts, sometimes a *Cloud* overshadows us, and *Storms* surround us. *Lord enable us thro' all continually to press forwards, and suffer us not to grow weary and faint in our Minds; for we know that one Moment of the Beatifick Vision will make amends for all!*

*Saturday, December 29.* Thought proper to rest to Day for the Ease of our Beasts. Had another Opportunity of writing some Letters to *England*. Dined with Mr. *Murray* the Naval Officer, who gave us an Invitation last Night to his House, and spent the Remainder of the Day in writing down some Things that lay upon my Heart. *Sanctify them, O Lord, to the promoting thy Glory, and the Good of Mankind!*

*Sunday, December 30.* Wrote *some* more Letters to my Friends in *England*. Read Prayers, and preached, both Morning and Evening in the Court-House, to as many as could be expected at so short a Warning.—There being many of the *Scotch* amongst the Congregation, who lately came over to settle in *North Carolina*, I was led in the Afternoon to make a particular Application to them, and to remind them of the Necessity of living holy Lives, that so they might prove a Blessing to the Province, and give Proof of their Zeal for those Truths which *I* had *been delivering, and which they had* heard preached to them with great Purity and Clearness in their native Country.—After service, *a Gentleman inform'd me that several were affected;* two *other* Gentlemen came and press'd

K 2

me

76

me to stay longer, but being intent on my Journey, about Five in the Evening I and my Friends passed the Ferry, about Three Miles distant, and lay *comfortably* at the House of the High Sheriff of the County.—Here we met with some other Persons, whom I pray'd with, and instructed to the best of my Power, for which they seem'd thankful.—Much Good may be done by an earnest and circumspect endeavouring always to introduce proper Religious Conversation. Our Lord did so wherever he was; and every true Minister of JESUS CHRIST ought to live so exemplarily, that wheresoever he comes People should expect some edifying Discourse immediately *to drop* from *his Mouth*. Every Christian ought to bring Light and

Heat with him, like the Sun, whithersoever he comes.—  
Wicked Men will **lead** us an Example of Boldness.

*They can brave th' eternal Laws,†  
Zealous in their Master's Cause;†  
JESU, shall thy Servants be†  
Less resolv'd or bold for thee?*

*Monday, December 31.* Set out early, and met with more Perils by Land than we have been exposed to yet.—It **having** rained almost the whole Night, the Swamps and Creeks which lay in the Way were filled with Water; and the Bridges being out of Repair, render'd Travelling very dangerous. In one Place we were obliged to swim our Horses; in many the Waters were very high, and were not to be pass'd without much Difficulty, **and I was of so little Faith as to be sometimes rather afraid!** But **God** sent us two good Guides, by whose Assistance we were carried thro' all, and brought at Night to a little House, where with Pleasure we reflected on the Dangers and Deliverances of the Day, and reminded one another of the unspeakable Satisfaction we might expect hereafter **upon a View of** those many Crosses, Difficulties, and Temptations, which we must necessarily endure whilst in our Pilgrimage here. *Oh that we may learn to endure any Pain, despise any Shame, submit to any Difficulties, from a believing Prospect of what we shall hereafter enjoy, when raised to Glory at the Right Hand of God our Saviour!*

*SOUTH-*

### **SOUTH-CAROLINA.**

*Tuesday, January 1* [[1740]]. Rode about Ten Miles, and to **my great Comfort**, where we baited, met with one who I had great Reason to believe was a Child of GOD.—It **somewhat** grieved me that I could stay no longer, but being in Haste, we pass'd over a half Mile Ferry.—About Sun-set, we came to a Tavern **lying near** Five Miles within the Province of *South-Carolina*. Here I immediately perceived the People were more polite than those we gene-

rally met with, but I believe the People of the House at first could have wish'd I had not come to be their Guest that Night; for, it being New Year's Day, several of the Neighbours were met together, in order to divert themselves by dancing Country Dances.—By Advice of my Friends, I went in amongst them whilst a Woman was dancing a Jigg. At my first Entrance I endeavour'd to shew the Folly of such Entertainments, and to convince her how well pleased the Devil was at every Step she took. For some Time she endeavour'd to out-brave me; neither the Fiddler or she desisted; but at last she gave over, and the Musician laid aside his Instrument. It would have made any one smile to see how the rest of the Company, one by one, attack'd me, and brought, as they thought, Arguments to support their Wantonness; but CHRIST triumph'd over Satan.—They were all put to Silence, and were for some Time, so over-aw'd, that after I had discoursed with them on the Nature of Baptism, and the Necessity of being born again, in order to enjoy the Kingdom of Heaven, at their Entreaty, I baptized one of their Children, and pray'd afterwards as I was enabled, and as the Circumstances of the Company required.—Then I and my Companions took a little Refreshment; but the People were so bent on their Pleasure, that notwithstanding all that had been said, after I was gone to Bed, I heard their Musick and Dancing, which made me look back upon my own past Follies with Shame and Confusion of Face; for such a one, not long since was I myself. Lord, for thy Mercies Sake, shew all unhappy Formalists the same Favour, and suffer them not to go on in such a carnal Security till they lift up their Eyes in Tor-

ment!

78

ment! Draw them, Oh draw them from feeding upon such Husks! Let them know what it is to feast upon the fatted Calf, even the Comforts of the Blessed Spirit! Amen, Amen.



*Wednesday, January 2.* Rose very early, pray'd, sung a Hymn, and gave a sharp Reproof to the Dancers; **they** were very attentive, and took it in good Part.—At Break of Day we mounted our Horses, and I think never had a more pleasant Journey. For nearly Twenty Miles, we rode over a beautiful Bay as plain as a Terras-Walk, and as we passed along were wonderfully delighted to see the Porpoises taking their Pastime, and hear, as it were Shore resounding to Shore the Praises of him who hath set Bounds to the Sea that it cannot pass, and hath said, "Here shall your proud Waves be staid!"—At Night we **thought** to call at a Gentleman's House, where we had been recommended, about Forty Miles distant from our last Night's Lodging, but the Moon being totally eclipsed, we missed the Path that turned out of the Road; and then thought it most advisable, as we were in the main Road, to go on our Way, trusting to the Almighty to strengthen both our Beasts and us. We had not gone far **but** we saw a Light; Two of my Friends went up to it, and **saw** a Hutt full of Negroes; they enquired after the Gentleman's House whither we **were** directed, but the Negroes seemed surprized, and said they knew no such Man, and that they were **but** new Comers. From these Circumstances one of my Friends inferr'd that these Negroes might be some of those who lately had made an Insurrection in the Province, and **were** run away from their Masters. When he return'd, we were all of his Mind, and therefore thought it best to mend our Pace. Soon after we saw another great Fire near the Road Side, and imagining there was another Nest of such Negroes, we made a Circuit into the Woods, and one of my Friends at a Distance observed them dancing round the Fire. The Moon shining bright, we soon found our Way into the great Road again; and after we had gone about a Dozen Miles, expecting to find Negroes in every Place, we came to a great Plantation, the Master of which, **to our great Comfort**, gave us Lodging, and our Beasts Provender.

Upon

79

Upon our relating the Circumstances of our Travels, he gave us Satisfaction about the Negroes, inform'd us whose they were, and upon what Occasion they were in those Places in which we found them. This afforded us much Comfort, after we had rode near Threescore Miles, and, as we thought, in great Perils of our Lives. *Blessed be thy Name, O Lord, for this, and all other thy Mercies, thro' JESUS CHRIST!*

*Thursday, January 3.* Had a hospitable Breakfast set before us by the Gentleman who last Night received us into his House.—Set out late in the Morning, passed over a Three Mile Ferry near *George Town*, and, for the Ease of our Beasts, rode not above Nineteen Miles the whole Day. *A good Man, says Solomon, is merciful to his Beasts: How will they answer it at the Great Day, who abuse the inferior Creatures as tho' they had a License to use them as they pleased, I know not; sure I am, that for every such Abuse GOD will bring them into Judgement.*

*Friday, January 4.* Lay at a little House on *Santa River*, where I met with a Soldier, formerly one of my Catechumens, who had been discharged, but retained a grateful Sense of the Instructions that had been given him. Passed over Two Ferries in the Morning, baited at Dinner Time, after we had rode about Eighteen Miles, and were then obliged to ride Twenty Five Miles further, there being no proper Place to stay at by the Way. About Eight in the Evening, we came to a Tavern, within Five Miles from *Charles Town*, where we were comfortably refresh'd with Food convenient for us. We had Family Prayer, and therein endeavour'd to express our Thankfulness to GOD for thus causing us to renew our Strength, and bringing us so near a Place where we would be! *Oh, that our Hearts may be excited more and more to praise the Lord for these and all other Mercies which he daily pours down on us, the unworthiest of the Sons of Men!*

**CHARLES TOWN.**

*Saturday, January 5.* Left our Lodging before Day-light, and reached *Charles Town*, after we had passed

over

80

over a three Mile Ferry, about ten in the Morning. Went to the House of one Mr. *L——re*, where we dined, and were entertained with great Civility. In the Afternoon several Gentlemen of the Town were so kind as to come and see me, and expressed great Willingness to hear me preach; Letters and Papers were also brought me from *New-York*, informing me how mightily the Word of God grew and prevailed there.—The Accounts in the *English* Papers of the War being daily carried on there between *Christ* and *Belial*, afforded us fresh Matter for praising that God, who we hoped would, in his Kingdom of Grace, bring mighty Things to pass, whilst the World was busied in Wars and Rumours of Wars.—  
In the Evening I wrote some Letters to my *English* and *New-York* Friends. Felt such Comfort within myself as the World cannot give, and verified what the Psalmist says, *They shall be in perfect Peace whose Minds are staid on thee!*—Oh that all were Partakers of *It!*

*Sunday, January 6.* Went to publick Service in the Morning, but did not preach, because the Curate had not a Commission to lend the Pulpit, unless Mr. *G——n* (then out of Town) *had been* present. *However*, most of the Town being *very* eager to hear me, in the Afternoon I preached in one of the Dissenting Meeting-houses, but was grieved to find so little Concern in the Congregation, *after the Sermon was over*. The Auditory was large, but very polite; and I question whether the Court End of the *Town at London* could *equal, at least* exceed them in affected Finery and Gaiety of Dress, and a Deportment ill-becoming Persons who have had such divine Judgements lately sent *abroad* amongst them.—I reminded them of *it* in my Sermon; but *I thought at first* I seem'd to them as one that mocked. This made me more importunate in

secret Prayer, and I hoped God would let me see that he intended to visit the Inhabitants with Mercy as well as Judgements; for nothing is a greater Sign of a People's being hardened than their continuing unreformed under Divine Visitations: Thus it was with *Pharaoh* and the *Egyptians*. *Lord, for thy Mercy's Sake, let it not be the Case of this People! Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.*

*Mon-*

81

*Monday, January 7.* Finding the Inhabitants were desirous to hear me a second Time, about eleven in the Morning I preached at the *French Church*, and blessed be God, saw a glorious Alteration in the Audience which was so great that many stood without the Door, and I felt much more Freedom in my self than I did Yesterday. Many were melted into Tears, and one of the Town most remarkably gay, was observed to weep, and instead of the People's going out (as they did Yesterday, in a light, airy, unthinking Manner, a visible Concern was in most of their Faces, as tho' they could not resist the Power with which God enabled me to speak. *Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy Name alone, be all the Glory!*—After Sermon, I and my Friends dined at a Merchant's in Town; and as I was passing along, a Letter was put into my Hands, wherein were these Words. 'Remember me in your Prayers, for Christ's Sake, who died for me a Sinner.—I appeal to you for Help in the Way to Salvation. Pray fail me not, and I beseech you to pray for my Soul; and the Lord bless you, and grant you may win many Souls to God by your sincere Preaching.' Many of the Inhabitants, with full Hearts, entreated me to give them one more Sermon, which I looked upon as a Call from Providence, and therefore, though I was ready for Departure, and just about to take Boat, yet I thought it my Duty to comply with the People's Request, and to put off my Journey till the Morrow. Notice was immediately given, and in about half an Hour a large Congregation was assembled in the Meeting-house, where I preached Yesterday, because it was the

largest Place. God strengthened me to speak, I trust as I ought to speak. In the Evening I supped at another Merchant's House, **where** I had an Opportunity, for near two Hours, to converse of the Things of God with a large Company, and **afterwards** retired to my Lodgings, full of Joy at the Prospect of **having** a good Work begun in that Place. It grieves me to see People humane, hospitable, willing to oblige, and every Way accomplished, excepting that they are yet ignorant of *the one Thing needful*.—Lord, send forth thy Servants, let there be now a great Cry made, *Behold the Bridegroom cometh*, and incline

L

all

82

all formal Professors, all polite and foolish Virgins, *to trim their Lamps, that they may be ready to go forth to meet thee!*

### ***Beaufort in Port-Royal.***

*Tuesday, January 8.* Rose a good while before Day, left our Horses in *Charles-Town*, and set out for *Georgia* in an open Canoe (having five Negroes to row and steer us) **and** God being pleased to give us, for the most part, fair Weather. The poor Slaves were very civil, diligent and laborious.—We lay one Night on the Water, and about five on *Wednesday* Evening arrived at *Beaufort* in *Port-Royal* (100 Miles from *Charles-Town*) within the Province of *South Carolina*. We drank a little Tea at our Inn, and then waited upon the Reverend Mr. *Jones*, the Minister of the Place, who receiv'd us with great **undissembled** Civility, and was very desirous I should take a Bed at his House, as I did when I pass'd through the Place after I left *Georgia* last. But intending to set out by two in the Morning, we thought it best to lye at our Inn; and therefore, after Supper, and a little friendly Conversation, we took our Leave, **rejoicing** (as we always do on such Occasions) that we had met with *another Clergyman* who seemed to have the Fear of God before his Eyes! *Lord, increase the Number of them for thy dear Son's Sake. Amen, Amen.*

*Wednesday, January 9.* The Wind being very high, and **thereby** sailing **rendered** impracticable; **I and my Friends** staid at *Beaufort* all the Morning, dined, **at his Invitation**, with kind Mr. *Jones*, **and** afterwards, the Weather being fair, and the Tide serving, we took Boat, and refreshed ourselves at a Plantation in the Way. In the Night, we made a Fire on the Shore, and slept round it for about four Hours; a little after Midnight we prayed with the Negroes, took Boat again, and reached *Savannah* before Noon the next Day.—Had a joyful Meeting with my dear Friends, who I found had **been** arrived three Weeks, **and also was much refreshed with a most comfortable Packet of Letters from England, New-York, &c.** Blessed be God, the Work of our dear *Emanuel* is every-

where

83

where **carrying** on. Ere long I expect that *mighty Things will be brought to pass. Oh that the Lord may strengthen me to make full Proof of my Ministry in this Place, to the Glory of his great Name, and the Good of his dear Church!*

Here I would stop, but I think it may not be amiss to put down some Remarks I have made on the State of Religion in those Provinces, which I have lately passed through.—And here I cannot but give *Pensilvania* the Preference.—**For** to me it seems to be the Garden of *America*.—*Their Oxen are strong to labour, and there seems to be no complaining in their Streets.* What is best of all, I believe they have the Lord for their God. This I infer from their having so many faithful Ministers sent forth amongst them; and except *Northampton* in *New-England*, the Work of Conversion has not been carried on with so much Power in any Parts of *America*, that I can hear of, as under the Ministry of Messieurs *Tennents*, *Cross*, and the other Labourers before mentioned. The Constitution is far from being arbitrary; the Soil is good, the Land exceeding fruitful, and there is a greater Equality between the Poor and Rich than perhaps can be found in any

Place of the known World. **And**, for my Part, I like it so well, that, God willing, I purpose taking up some Land to erect a School for Negroes, and settle some of my *English* Friends, whose Hearts God shall stir up, or whom the Fury of their Enemies shall oblige to depart from their native **Country**. *Philadelphia* is one of the most regular planned Towns I ever saw. Above seventy new Houses were built in it last Year, and it is likely to increase in Inhabitants every Day. It is rightly called *Philadelphia*, i.e. *Brotherly Love*.—For by the Charter all are permitted to worship God their own Way, without being branded as Schismatics, Dissenters, or Disturbers of the established Constitution.—The Quakers have the Pre-eminence in the Government.—The Assembly, **as I was told**, is made up of them, except about four, which prevents all Preparations for martial Defence, it being one of their Principles not to fight at all. Much of the Simplicity of Dress and Manners, which may be observed among the Inhabitants, I think is in a great Measure owing to

L 2

them

84

them. **And** I saw less of the Pride of Life in *Pensilvania* than elsewhere. But it has happened to them as it will to all other religious Societies **whatsoever**, when they flourish and have the Upper-hand. I mean, many for Profit's Sake have been known to dissemble with them. I fear Numbers amongst them, as amongst us, can give no other Reason why they are Quakers, than that their Fathers were so before them.—I say this, because I find **but** little of Divine Power stirring amongst them; and most of them are too stiff and rigid about external Things, **as** I was credibly informed. One of their own Preachers warned them lately of their Backsliding, and told them, without a Reformation, God would remove the Candlestick from them, and **not** work by their Hands **any more**.—In the City of *Philadelphia* they have two large Meeting-houses; they assemble frequently together, and, all Things considered, are the most regular Society of Men I have seen or heard of. Besides this, there **is a** Baptist and

Presbyterian Meeting. I had the Pleasure of conversing with the Ministers of both, and found there were some in their Congregations, particularly in *that of* the Baptist, who loved the Lord Jesus in Sincerity. The Church of *England* is *but* at a low Ebb in the Province in general, and in *Philadelphia* in particular.—In all the Places I passed through, the Presbyterians and Quakers had larger Congregations than any of our Missionaries.—And we may guess *how* the Love of many of the Church of *England* in *Philadelphia* must have waxed cold, *because* the Church, which *has been* begun, if I mistake not, some Years ago, is far from being finished within; *however*, many of late have been convinced what true Christianity is; and I hope a Church of Jesus Christ will ere long be selected out of the Members of our own Communion. The little Time I was *at New-York* would not permit me to make so many Observations of the Situation of Affairs of Religion in the Province as otherwise I might have done.—A great Complaint was made to me by some of the most serious Inhabitants of it, that it was a very secure Place, and that a Work of God had never been carried on in it, since its first Settlement.—The Heads of the Church of *England* seem'd resolved to shut out the Kingdom of God from amongst them.—But our Lord Jesus has been

pleas'd

85

pleas'd to get himself the Victory; *and* tho' I was mostly opposed in *New-York*, yet, if I may judge of what I saw myself, and have heard since my Departure, as much, if not more good has been done there, than in any other Place, *where I have been for* so short a time. *At Maryland* Religion seems to be at a very low Ebb. There are *Roman Catholics* in some Parts, four Congregations of Presbyterians, and a few Quakers; but far the greatest Part call themselves of the Church of *England*, which might no doubt greatly flourish were *their* Ministers found faithful. But the Government, I fear, spoils them by giving them too much Tobacco.—For some, I hear, have 30000, others 50000, and others 60000 Pounds of To-



bacco *per Annum*. It is gathered by the High Sheriff of the County, and every Person taxable is obliged to pay 40 Pounds of Tobacco yearly to the Ministers, though great Numbers never hear or see them.—In *Virginia* Matters are not quite so bad. The Ministers Stipends are not so large; the Commissary seems to have more Power, and to exercise more Discipline.—But almost all are quite settled upon their Lees, and I could not hear of any true vital Piety subsisting in that Province.—In *Maryland* I was told of one Mr. *Colebatch*, a godly Minister, who died five Years ago. And I heard of another Layman in *Virginia* who has been dead 25 Years, that did make Religion his chief Business. In *Virginia* are no Dissenters from the established Church, except one Meetings or two of Quakers. The Importation of so many Negroes and Convicts is one great Reason why so little Religion is to be seen.—But the main Cause of Irreligion both in *Virginia* and *Maryland* I take to be their not incorporating into Towns: For hereby People living at a Distance from the Church, are apt to make every little Thing serve as an Excuse to keep them from publick Worship. Religious Societies cannot well be settled, and wicked Men may more easily revel and get drunk without Controul. Ministers, had they a Will, cannot visit from House to House. And what is as bad as any Thing, Schools for the Education of Children cannot be so conveniently erected when the Houses are so separate. The greatest Probability of doing Good in *Virginia* is among the *Scots-Irish*, who have lately settled in the Mountainous Parts of that Pro-

vince.

vince. They raise little or no Tobacco, but Things that are useful for common Life.—And I hear the Governor has given Leave for a Minister of their own Way of Thinking to come whenever he can be procured. In *North-Carolina* there's scarce so much as the Form of Religion. There are two Churches begun for some Time, but neither finish'd. There are several Dancing-masters, but scarce one regularly settled Minister; so that in most

Places they have Readers, who read a Sermon every *Sunday* to the People, for which they pay five Shillings a Quarter of their Currency, which is ten Shillings for one *Sterling*. However, the Governor, I hear, has made Proposals to the Society for propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, to send Missionaries. But I should rather that People had no Minister than such as are generally sent over. And I cannot see the Charity of contributing towards sending out Missionaries, unless greater Care be taken in the Choice of those that are sent.—For it is nororious the generality of them walk directly contrary to the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. All the Accounts most of them have given for some Time is, that they have baptized so many, and that so many received the Sacrament. And, upon the whole, if it be asked why there is so little Religion in the Church of *England*? It may be answered, the Missionaries, for the most Part, lead very bad Examples. I think there was a visible Difference after we had been preaching amongst them. In *South-Carolina* they have many Ministers, both of our own and other Persuasions; but I hear of no stirring among the dry Bones.—Mr. Garden, the present Commissary, is strict in the Outward Discipline of the Church. The Clergy have an annual Meeting, and most of them, I believe, are kept from open Immoralities. And now I am come to *Georgia* what shall I say? Many of the Inhabitants have left it since we were here last; but still I hope Blessings are yet in Reserve. Oh that all who remain would acquaint themselves with God, and be at Peace with him; then would they be more than Conquerors over all their Enemies.

Thus have I put down a few Thoughts that have occurred to my Mind. May God enlighten me where I am in the Dark, Correct me wherever I am wrong, and bless

this

87

this further Account of his Dealings with me to the Conviction of Gain-sayers, the Comfort of Saints, and to the

*Edification of all that shall read it. Even so Lord Jesus.  
Amen and Amen.*

I cannot express my Desire for the advancing of our dear Lord's Kingdom, both in the Hearts of my Friends and all Mankind, better than in the Hymn altered from Dr. More by one of the Reverend Mr. Wesleys.

1. *When CHRIST had left his Flock below, &  
The Loss his faithful Flock deplor'd: &  
Him in the Flesh no more they know, &  
And languish for their absent Lord.*
2. *Not long—For He gone up on high, &  
Gifts to receive, and claim his Crown, &  
Behold them sorrowing, from his Sky, &  
And pour'd the Mighty Blessing down.*
3. *He, for the Presence of his Flesh, &  
The Spirit's seven-fold Gifts imparts, &  
And living Streams their Souls refresh, &  
And Joy Divine o'erflows their Hearts.*
4. *While all in sweet Devotion join'd, &  
Humbly to wait for GOD, retire, &  
The promis'd Grace in rushing Wind &  
Descends, and cloven Tongues of Fire.*
5. *GOD's might Spirit fills the Dome, &  
The feeble Dome beneath him shook, &  
Trembled the Crowd to feel him come, &  
Soon as the Sons of Thunder spoke.*
6. *Father! if justly still we claim &  
To Us, and Ours, the Promise made, &  
To Us be graciously the same, &  
And crown with Living Fire our Head.*
7. *Our Claim admit, and from above, &  
Of Holiness the Spirit show'r, &  
Of wise Discernment, humble Love, &  
And Zeal, and Unity, and Pow'r.*

8. *The Spirit of convincing Speech, ‡  
Of Pow'r demonstrative impart, ‡  
Such as may ev'ry Conscience reach, ‡  
And sound the Unbelieving Heart.*
9. *The Spirit of refining Fire: ‡  
Searching the Inmost of the Mind, ‡  
To purge all fierce and foul Desire, ‡  
And kindle Life more pure and kind.*
10. *The Sp'rit of Faith, in this Thy Day, ‡  
To break the Pow'r of cancel'd Sin, ‡  
Tread down its Strength, o'erturn its Sway, ‡  
And still the Conquest more than win.*
11. *The Spirit breathe of Inward Life, ‡  
Which in our Hearts Thy Laws may write; ‡  
Then Grief expires, and Pain, and Strife, ‡  
'Tis Nature all, and all Delight.*
12. *On all the Earth Thy Spirit show'r, ‡  
The Earth in Righteousness renew; ‡  
Thy Kingdom come, and Hell's o'erpow'r, ‡  
And to thy Sceptre all subdue.*
13. *Like mighty Wind, or Torrent fierce, ‡  
Let it Opposers all o'er-run, ‡  
And ev'ry Law of Sin reverse, ‡  
That Faith and Love may make all one.*
14. *Yea, let thy Sp'rit in ev'ry Place ‡  
Its Richer Energy declare, ‡  
While lovely Tempers, Fruits of Grace, ‡  
The Kingdom of thy CHRIST prepare.*
15. *Grant this, O Holy GOD, and True! ‡  
The Antient Seers Thou didst inspire: ‡  
To Us perform the Promise due, ‡  
Descend, and crown Us now with Fire.*

484

GEORGE WHITEFIELD

**FINIS.**

SIXTH JOURNAL

485

[SIXTH JOURNAL]

A

CONTINUATION

Of the REVEREND

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL

After his ARRIVAL at

*GEORGIA*,

To a few Days after his second Return thither from

*PHILADELPHIA.*

LONDON:

Printed by W. STRAHAN for JAMES HUTTON,  
at the *Bible and Sun*, without *Temple-Bar*. 1741.

A  
CONTINUATION  
OF  
Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s  
JOURNAL, &c.

*SAVANNAH.*

**F**RIDAY, *January* 11, 1739-40. Went this Morning, with some Friends, to view a Tract of Land, consisting of 500 Acres, which Mr. *H*— [[Habersham]] whom I left School-Master of *Savannah*, was directed, I hope by Providence, to make Choice of for the *Orphan-House*. It is situated on the Northern Part of the Colony, about 10 Miles off *Savannah*, and has various Kinds of Soil in it; a Part of it very good.—Some Acres, through the Diligence of my Friend, are cleared. He has also stock'd it with Cattle and Poultry. He has begun the Fence, and built a Hut; **all** which will greatly forward the Work. I choose to have it so far off the Town, because the Children will **then** be more free from bad Examples, and can more conveniently go upon **their Lands** to work. For it is my Design to have each of the Children taught to labour, so as to be qualified to get their own Living.—*LORD, do thou teach and excite*

A 2

*them*

*them to labour also for that Meat which endureth to everlasting Life!*

Thursday, January 24. Went this Morning and took Possession of my Lot.—*I hope it is cast in a fair Ground, and GOD, in answer to our Prayers, will shew that he has given us a goodly Heritage.* I called it Bethesda, that is, the House of Mercy. For I hope many Acts of Mercy will be shown there, and that many will thereby be stirred up to praise the LORD, as a GOD whose Mercy endureth for ever.

Tuesday, January 29. Took in three German Orphans, the most pitiful Objects, I think, *that* I ever *yet* saw.—No new Negroes could *possibly* look more despicable, or require more Pains to instruct them.—They have been used to exceeding hard Labour, and tho' supplied with Provisions from the Trustees, *yet* treated in a Manner unbecoming even Heathens.—Was all the Money I have collected, to be spent in freeing these three Children from Slavery, it would be well laid out.—I have also in my House near twenty more, who, in all Probability, if not taken in, would be as ignorant of GOD and CHRIST, *comparatively speaking*, as the Indians. Blessed be GOD, they begin to live in order. *Continue this and all other Blessings to them, for thy infinite Mercies sake, O LORD, my Strength and my Redeemer.*

Tuesday, January 29. This Day I began the Cotton Manufacture, and agreed with a Woman to teach the little ones to spin and card.—I find annual Cotton grows *indifferently* well in Georgia: And to encourage the People, I *this Day bought* three hundred Pounds Weight, and have agreed to take all the Cotton, Hemp, and Flax that shall be produced the following Year through the whole Province.—*I see more and more the Excellency of the Charity in which I am engaged. I trust it will make Savannah lift up her drooping Head.* Tho' there are fewer Inhabitants, yet I think they are in a better Situation than when I was here last.—They now live independent on a Public Store. Provisions, (Flour especially) are much cheaper, Cattle more plenti-



ful;

5

ful; and *by the Divine Blessing*, if any Manufacture can be raised among themselves, to prevent *their* exporting so much Money, they may yet do well.—*I bless GOD* my Congregations are as large as usual.—The Court-House is generally full, and I keep as near as *may be*, to my old Way of Proceeding.—We have the Sacrament every *Sunday*, and public Prayer and Exposition twice every Day in the Week.—*The LORD bless my coming, and grant the Inhabitants may know the Things which belong to their Peace before they are eternally hid from their Eyes!*

*Wednesday, January 30.* Went *this Day* with the Carpenter and Surveyor, and laid out the Ground whereon the Orphan-House is to be built. It is to be sixty Feet long and forty wide. *A Yard and Garden before and behind.* The Foundation is to be Brick, and is to be sunk four Feet within, and raised three Feet above the Ground.—The House is to be two Story high, with an Hip-Roof: The first ten, the second nine Foot high.—In all, there will be nearly twenty commodious Rooms.—Behind are to be two small Houses, the one for an Infirmary, the other for a Work-house. There is also to be a Still-House for the Apothecary; and I trust *ere* my Return to *England*, I shall see *my* Children and Family quite settled *in it*.—I find it will be an expensive Work: but it is for the LORD CHRIST. He will take Care to defray all Charges. The Money that will be spent on this Occasion, will keep many Families from leaving the Colony, and in all Probability bring many others over. There are near thirty working at the Plantation already, and I would employ as many more, if they were to be had.—Whatsoever is done for GOD, ought to be done speedily, as well as with all our Might.—*Oh that there was such a Mind in all!*

Monday, February 4. Met, according to Appointment, all the Magistrates, and the former Trustee of the Orphans, who heard the Recorder read over the Grant given me by the Trustees, and took a Minute of their Approbation of the same.—*LORD, grant I may*

*care-*

6

*carefully watch over every Soul that is or shall be committed to my Charge!*

Monday, February 11. Had much of the Divine Presence Yesterday, both at Morning and Evening Service. Took in four fresh Orphans, and set out with two Friends to Frederica, in order to pay my Respects to General Oglethorpe, and to fetch the Orphans that were in the Southern Parts of the Colony.—*LORD, preserve my Going out and Coming in from this Time forth for evermore.*

**Providence, fourteen Miles from Frederica.**

Tuesday, February 12. Lay here last Night at a Planter's House, expecting to meet the Scout Boat this Morning, but finding it did not come at the Time appointed, I and my Friends went to Bethesda, and I hope spent the Day to GOD's Glory and our own Good. At night, we returned to Providence.—About eight o'clock the Scout Boat came; but it being late, we chose to defer going till next Morning.—In the mean while, GOD was pleased to give us refreshing Sleep, and to fill my Soul, after it had been much cast down, with unspeakable Peace and Joy in the Holy Ghost.—*Oh that I was careful always to behave so, as not to provoke that Blessed Guest to depart from me! But I find that I have yet a Body of Sin and Death. Thanks be to GOD, yet a little while, and I hope to have a compleat Victory through our LORD JESUS CHRIST!*

**DARIEN near FREDERICA.**

*Friday, February 15. Lay on the Water two Nights, and reached the Scots Settlement To-day at Noon.—Was kindly received by Mr. Macleod, the Minister, and those of his house.—Engaged to take four Orphans which were in his Flock; and about seven in the Evening, after some edifying Conversation and friendly Office of Love, I took Boat for Frederica, where we arrived about two in the Morning; and having warmed and refreshed ourselves, retired to Bed, blessing GOD for the*

*bodily*

7

*bodily and spiritual Comforts which he from time to time imparted to us.—Oh that my Eyes were open to see the Length, and Breadth, and Depth, and Height of the Loving Kindnesses of the LORD! I can only adore, comprehend it I cannot; it is past my finding out.*

**FREDERICA.**

*Saturday, February 16. Waited upon, and was courteously received by the General, with whom I and my Friends breakfasted and dined, and spent most Part of the Day. At Night GOD was pleased to visit me with a Fever, which obliged me to go to Bed sooner than usual. My Mind was also exercised with inward Trials: But in a few Hours my Pain both of Body and Mind, were somewhat abated, and the Remainder of the Night I was blessed with sweet Repose. For ever adored be the Keeper of Israel, who neither slumbereth nor sleepeth!*

*'Tis he sustains my feeble Pow'rs, &*

*With his Almighty Arms: &*

*He watches my unguarded Hours, &*

*Against invading Harms.*

*No scorching Sun, nor sickly Moon, &*

*Have leave from him to smite: &*

*He shields my Head from burning Noon, &*

*From blasting Damps at Night.*

*He guards my Soul, he keeps my Breath, &  
 When thickest Dangers come: &  
 Still I'll go on, secure from Death, &  
 Till he commands me home.*

*Sunday, February 17.* Found myself better in Body, tho' somewhat weak.—Preach'd in the Morning in a Room belonging to the Store-House.—GOD was pleased to give me much Freedom, and the People seemed very attentive.—The General, Soldiers and People attended very orderly.—After Sermon I married a Couple, baptized a Child, and spent the Remainder of the Evening

with

8

with my two Friends.—*Oh what a happy Thing is it for Brethren to dwell together in Unity!*

*Monday, February 18.* Rose this Morning by one o'Clock.—Took Boat in order to go to *St. Andrew's*; but the Rudder breaking, we were obliged to return back and desist from our intended Voyage.—Went to Bed and slept for a few Hours. Spent a good Part of the Day with the General. Received from him a Bill of Exchange for 150 l, which he advanced me in order to begin a Church at *Savannah*. About seven o'Clock, set off for the *Darien*, whither I promised to return, to take Mr. *Macleod* and the Orphans with me to *Savannah*.—The Passage to that Place takes generally about four Hours: But the Wind being high and contrary, we were obliged to come to a Grapling, near an open Reach, and did not get to *Darien* till the next Day at Noon.—Mr. *Macleod* and his Friends received us with Joy, and finding me ill, advised me to lie down; by which I was much refreshed, and was thereby enabled at Night to give GOD Thanks in Family Prayer.—*Oh, who can express the Loving Kindness of the LORD, or show forth all his Praise!*

**DARIEN.**

*Wednesday, February 20.* Preached **about** ten in the Morning to Mr. *Macleod's* Congregation, **who seemed rejoiced at what GOD enabled me to deliver.**—About two o'Clock, took Boat for *Savannah.*—**But** after we had rowed about twelve Miles, the Wind grew rough, and the Water beat so fast into our Boat, which was but small, and very heavy laden, that we were obliged to put in at a Place called *Doboy Island*; where we sat **very comfortably** round a large Fire, and praised the LORD with joyful Lips, for providing such a Place for our Safety.—*Oh God, thou and thou only art our Refuge against every Storm! O be thou my Guide even unto Death!*

*DOBOY*

9

**DOBOY and DARIEN.**

*Friday, February 21 [[22]].* Continued all Day Yesterday, **to my abundant Satisfaction, and Spiritual Advantage** on *Doboy Island*, and finding the Wind still continue high and contrary, we thought it best to return **back** to *Darien*, where we arrived **this Day** about Noon.—The People were much pleased at our Return; **and tho' I wanted to see my dear Family at Savannah, yet I felt such a peculiar Satisfaction within myself, and gave me Hopes GOD intended some Good for the Scots People at Darien.**—*Oh that they may have some Spiritual Gift imparted to their Souls!*

*Sunday, February 24.* Preached once Yesterday and twice To-day. Prayed with a sick Person. Spent some Hours in discoursing with a well-disposed Family.—**Was enabled to see more of the Vileness of my Heart and Nature.**—Felt GOD's Spirit striving with my Spirit; **and upon many Accounts, both bodily and spiritual, had Reason to bless GOD for bringing me to, and detaining me at Darien.**—I have Reason to say, *It is good for me that I have been here.*—Retirement is a sweet Means to

keep up and quicken the Divine life.—*LORD, grant I may never be afraid to converse with thee and myself.*

### SAVANNAH.

*Thursday, February 28.* Preached on *Monday*, and on *Tuesday* settled a School both for grown Persons and Children at the *Darien*, to the great Satisfaction of the Inhabitants—Set out with my Friends and four Orphans on *Tuesday* Evening.—Had pleasant Weather.—Lay two Nights in the Woods.—Reached *Bethesda* about Noon; and was pleased with the Improvements that had been made in my Absence.—*Was refreshed with some comfortable Christian Letters that I received from New-York.*—Took Horse and came home to my dear Family at *Savannah*; who received me with *abundance* Love and Joy.—The People of the Parish *I found were re-*  
B joiced

---

10

joiced at my Coming.—They flocked to and seemed very attentive at Public Worship.—*GOD also was pleased to grant me some peculiar Vouchsafements of his Blessed Presence in my Soul, and I was comforted on every Side.*—*LORD, prepare me for an Hour of Temptation. Amen, LORD JESUS! Amen and Amen.*

*Tuesday, March 11.* Buried this Evening one of the Women *that* came over with me, who I trust died in the LORD.—The Orphans sung before the Corpse from our House to the Court-House, where I preached, and after *that* gave another Word of Exhortation at the Grave.—My Soul was much affected with the Awfulness of the Solemnity.—The Word came with Power.—*I pray GOD it may make such a deep Impression upon all our Hearts, that we may be so wise as practically to consider our latter End!*

**CHARLES-TOWN.**

*Friday, March 14.* Arrived last Night at *Charles-Town*, being called there to see my Brother who lately came from *England*, and had brought me a Packet of Letters from my dear Friends.—*Blessed be GOD! his Work goes on amongst them!*—Waited on the Commissary, with my Brother and other Companions, but met with a cool Reception.—After I had been there a little while, I told him I was informed he had some Questions to propose to me, and that I **was** now come to give him all the Satisfaction I could in answering them.—Upon this I immediately perceived Passion **begin** to arise in his Heart.—Yes, Sir, **says he**, I have several Questions to put to you.—But, added he, you **are** got above us, or something to that **Purpose**.—Then he charged me with Enthusiasm and Pride, for speaking against the generality of the Clergy, and desired I would make my Charge good.—I told him I thought I had already: **But** as yet I had scarce begun with them.—He then asked me wherein the Clergy were so much to blame?—I answered, they did not preach **up** Justification by Faith alone: And upon talking with the Commissary, I found he was as ignorant **of it as any** of the rest.—He then sneer'd me

with

II

with telling me of my Modesty, expressed in my Letter to the Bishop of *Gloucester*.—Charged me with breaking the Canons and Ordination Vow: And notwithstanding I **told** him I was ordained by Letters Dimissory from the Bishop of *London*, **yet** in a great Rage he told me, if I preached in any public Church in that Province, he would suspend me.—I replied, I **shall** regard that as much as I would a Pope's Bull.—But, Sir, said, I, why should you be offended at my speaking against the generality of the Clergy; for I always spoke **worthily** of you?—I might be as well offended, added my Brother, at your saying, the generality of People were notorious Sinners, and **might** come and accuse you **for** speaking evil of me, because I was one of the People.—I further added,

Sir, you did not behave thus when I was with you last.—No, says, he, you did not speak against the Clergy, or some such Thing. Because, replied I more Light has been given me since that Time.—But, Sir, said I, if you will make an Application to yourself, be pleased to let me ask you one Question.—“Have you delivered “your Soul by exclaiming against the Assemblies and “Balls here?”—What, Sir, says he, must you come to catechise me?—No, says he, I have not exclaimed against them; I think there is no Harm in them.—Then, Sir, said I, I shall think it my Duty to exclaim against you.—Then, Sir, replied he in a very great Rage, Get you out of my house.—I made my Bow, and with my Friends took our leave, pitying the Commissary, who I really thought was more noble than to give such Treatment.—After this we went to public Prayers, dined at a Friend’s House, drank Tea with the Independent Minister, and preached about four in the Afternoon to a large Auditory in his Meeting-House.—GOD was pleased to favour us with his Presence during Sermon, and I spent the Remainder of the Evening with my dear Brother and Companions: Who I trust will be all knit in one Communion and Fellowship, by Faith in a crucified GOD. *Amen, so be it.*

Saturday, March 15. Breakfasted, sung an Hymn, and had some Religious Conversation on board my Brother’s Ship.—Preached in the Baptist Meeting House,

B 2

and

12

and was much pleased, when I heard afterwards, that from the same Pulpit a Person not long ago had preached, who denied the Doctrine of Original Sin, the Divinity and Righteousness of our LORD, and the Operation of GOD’s Blessed Spirit upon the Soul.—I was led to shew the utter Inability of Man to save himself, and absolute Necessity of his depending on the rich Mercies and Free Grace of GOD in CHRIST JESUS, in order to be restored to his Primitive Dignity.—Some I observed



were put under Concern; and most seemed willing to know whether those Things were so.—In the Evening I preached again in the Independent Meeting-House, to a more attentive Auditory than ever: And had the Pleasure afterwards of finding that a Gentlewoman, whose whole Family had been carried away for some Time with Deistical Principles, began now to be unhinged, and to see that there was no Rest in such a Scheme for a fallen Creature to rely on.—*LORD JESUS! for thy Mercies Sake, reveal thyself in her Heart, and make her willing to know the Faith as it is in thee. Amen and Amen.*

Sunday, March 16. Preached by eight in the Morning, in the Scots Meeting-House to a large Congregation. Visited a sick Person. Went to Church. Heard the Commissary represent me under the Character of the Pharisee, who came to the Temple, saying, *GOD, I thank thee that I am not as other Men are.*—But whether I do what I do, out of a Principle of Pride, or Duty, the Searcher of Hearts shall discover ere long, before Men and Angels.—Found my self very sick and weak at Dinner.—Went to Church again; and preached about five in the Independent Meeting-House Yard, the House itself being not near capacious enough to hold the Auditory.

*With restless and ungoverned Rage,†  
Why do the Clergy storm?†  
Why in such rash Attempts engage,†  
As they can ne'er perform?*

*The*

13

*The Great in Council and in Might,†  
Their various Forces bring,†  
Against the LORD, they all unite,†  
And his Anointed King.*

*Must we submit to their Commands,†  
Presumptuously they say?†*

*No, let us break their slavish Bands,†  
And cast their Chains away.*

*But GOD, who sits enthron'd on high,†  
And sees how they combine,†  
Does their conspiring Strength defy,†  
And mocks their vain Design.*

Felt much Freedom after Sermon, in talking to a large Company at a Merchant's House; and then supped with another Friend.—Expounded Part of a Chapter, prayed and went to our Lodgings with my dear Companions, praising and blessing GOD. *Hasten that Time, O LORD, when we shall join the Heavenly Choir that is now about thy Throne.*

*Monday, March 17.* Preached in the Morning in the Independent Meeting-House; and was more explicate than ever in exclaiming against Balls and Assemblies, to which the People seemed to hearken with much Attention.—Preached again in the Evening, and being excited thereto by some of the Inhabitants, I spoke in behalf of my poor Orphans. GOD was pleased to give it his Blessing, and I collected upwards of Seventy Pounds Sterling, the largest Collection I ever yet received on that Occasion.—A further Earnest to me, that we shall yet see greater Things in America, and that GOD will carry on and finish the Work, begun in his Name at Georgia.

*Tuesday, March 18.* Preached twice again this Day, and took an affectionate Leave of, and gave Thanks to my Hearers for their great Liberality. Many wept, and my own Heart yearned much towards them. For I believe a good Work is begun in many Souls. Generally every Day several came to me, telling me with weeping Eyes, how GOD had been pleased to convince them by the Word preached, and how desirous they

were

14

were of laying hold on and having an Interest in the compleat and everlasting Righteousness of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Numbers desired privately to converse with me.—Many sent me little Presents, as Tokens of their Love, and earnestly entreated that I would come amongst them again.—Invitations were given me from some of the adjacent Villages; and People daily came to Town more and more from their Plantations to hear the Word.—*Providentially many of my Sermons, Journals, and my Answer to the Bishop of London lately printed, were sent from Philadelphia, which gave me an Opportunity of doing the more Good.* The Congregations grew larger on Week Days, and many Things concurred to induce us to think that GOD intends to visit some in *Charles-Town* with his Salvation. *Grant this, O Father! for thy dear Son's sake, CHRIST JESUS our LORD. Amen. Amen.*

#### SAVANNAH.

*Friday, March 21.* Breakfasted at a Friend's House on *Wednesday* Morning, went on board the Sloop, prayed, sung an Hymn, and took a most affectionate Leave of my dear Brother and other Friends.—Got over the Bar and reached *Savannah* about Noon this Day, to the great Joy of my Friends and Family, who immediately joined with me in giving Thanks to GOD for the signal Mercies vouchsafed unto us since our last Parting.—*O how plentiful is thy Goodness, O LORD, which thou hast laid up for them that fear thee, even before the Sons of Men!*

*Tuesday, March 25.* Went this Day to *Bethesda*, and with full Assurance of Faith laid the first Brick of the great House. The Workmen attended, and with me kneeled down and prayed. After we had sung a Hymn suitable to the Occasion, I gave a Word of Exhortation to the Labourers, and bid them remember to work heartily, knowing that they worked for GOD and

not for Man. Much Satisfaction seemed to be amongst them, and blessed be GOD's holy Name, his Work prospers much in our Hands! Nearly twenty Acres of

Land

15

Land are cleared, and almost ready for Planting. Two Houses are already raised, and one near upon being finished. All the Timber for the Frame of the great House is sawn, and most of it brought to the Place where it is to be built. A good Part of the Foundation is dug, and many Thousands of Brick ready for Use. Near forty Children are now under my Care. I have many Pounds of Cotton spun ready for the Loom; and near a hundred Mouths are daily supplied with Food from our Store.—The Expense is great; but our Great and Good GOD, I am persuaded, will enable me to defray it. As yet I am kept from the least doubting. The more my Family encreases, the more Enlargement and Comfort I feel. And tho' what has been hitherto done, comparatively speaking, may be only like a Grain of Mustard Seed, yet I believe it will, in GOD's due Time, take Root and fill the Land, and many poor distressed Souls will come and lodge under the Branches of it.—*Set thy Almighty Fiat to it, O Gracious Father, and for thy own Name's Sake, let the unbelieving World know that thou never will forget those that put their Trust in thee!*

Sunday, March 30. Found my self very sick and weak in Body; but was strengthened notwithstanding, to go through most of the Duties of the Day, and to take an affectionate Leave of my dear Parishioners, because it appeared that Providence called me at this Time towards the Northward. An unspeakable Trouble and Agony of Soul did I feel most Part of the Day, and was enabled to wrestle with my LORD in behalf of the People in general, and those belonging to the Orphan-House in particular. Blessed be GOD he has already, and I trust in a great Measure, heard my Prayer. All Things belonging to the Orphan-House succeed beyond Expectation, and

some of my little Flock have lately (as far as I can judge) been effectually called of GOD. One Woman, *that* had been a constant Attender on the Means of Grace, and thought herself a Christian for many Years, came to me acknowledging, that she had been a Self-Deceiver, and knew nothing of the Righteousness or true living Faith in JESUS CHRIST. A Tradesman of the same Stamp, having felt the Power of the Doctrines of Grace,

sent

16

sent me seventeen Volumes of Archbishop Tillotson's Sermons, of which he had been a great Admirer, to do what I would with them. A Captain of a Ship, who had been a strong Opposer of the Truth, wrote and came to me under great Convictions, confessing his Sin, and desirous of being a Christian indeed. Some others also there are who have received the Love of GOD in the Truth of it. So that I hope, if ten Saints could preserve *Sodom*, the few righteous Souls left behind, will prevent the utter Desolation of declining *Savannah*.—*Blessed JESUS! let our Extremity be thy Opportunity, and for thy Mercy's Sake, take the Colony into thine own Hands; so shall we sing and praise thy Power!*

*Wednesday, April 3* [[2]]. Read prayers, as usual, as soon as it was light, expounded the Lesson, and then went on Board with several of my Family and my Parishioners, whose Hearts GOD had touched by his Grace. The Weather was very pleasant, and we spent the Day to our mutual Edification and Comfort.—In the Evening we *wept over and* took Leave of each other; and the Searcher of Hearts only knows what yearnings I felt in my own Soul. I have always observed, that I am under a greater Concern, when leaving *Savannah*, than any other Place in the World: For it has proved a blessed Place for my Soul; and leaving my Companions, and more particularly familiar Friends, gives Nature a deeper Wound than any other outward Trial.—*Dearest Redeemer, guide*

and preserve them in my Absence, for thy infinite Mercy's Sake! Amen. *Amen.*

### **PENSILVANIA.**

Sunday, April 13. *Newcastle.* After a short Passage of ten Days, (in which GOD was pleased to exercise my Body with Sickness, and my Soul with Spiritual Conflicts) we cast Anchor about eight this Morning at *Newcastle*, in the Province of *Pensilvania*. Mr. G\_\_ [[Grafton]], at whose House I lodged when last there, very courteously received both me and my Friends. The Minister of the Parish, who has been an Advocate for me, but was now sick, readily accepted my Offer to officiate for him. I

read

17

read Prayers and preached twice in his Church. *In the Morning I was much carried out; and in the Evening The Word came with Power.* People were surprized, but much rejoiced at the News of my Arrival, which they expressed by flocking, as soon as they were apprized, of my Coming, to hear the Afternoon's Sermon. Mr. *Charles Tennant*, mentioned in my last, came with great Part of his Congregation. *And* People began to invite me several Ways to come and preach to them: But being in Haste to go to *Philadelphia*, I appointed to preach on the Morrow at *Willingtown*, which lay in the Way. Thither I went, with Mr. *Tennant* and other Friends, after Evening Service; and my Soul was much rejoiced, in hearing how mightily the Word of God had prevailed since I was at *Pensilvania* last. The LORD was also pleased to give new Strength to my Body, and I wanted Words to express my Gratitude for this and all his other innumerable Mercies from Time to Time showered down upon me.

*My Soul, inspir'd with sacred Love,†  
GOD's Holy Name for ever bless:†  
Of all his Favours mindful prove,†  
And still thy humble Thanks express.*

'Tis he *that* all thy Sins forgives, &  
 And after Sickness makes thee sound: &  
 From Danger he thy Life retrieves, &  
 By him with Grace and Mercy crown'd.

The LORD abounds with tender Love, &  
 And unexampled Acts of Grace; &  
 His weaken'd Wrath doth slowly move, &  
 His willing Mercy flies apace.

Let every Creature jointly bless &  
 The mighty LORD; and thou, my Heart, &  
 With grateful Joy thy Thanks express, &  
 And in this Consort bear thy Part.

C

Wil-

18

### **Willingtown and Philadelphia.**

Monday, April 14. Had sweet Visitations from above, and felt much of the Divine Presence and refreshings of GOD's Spirit in my Soul. Preached to near 3000 People about eleven in the Morning; and GOD was pleased to be amongst us, as in the Holy Place of *Sinai*.—Many went away refreshed and comforted, and several importunate Visitations were given me to preach in several Country Places round about. After Sermon, I and my Friends dined at a Quaker's, who seemed to have a right Spirit within him, and could speak as one experienced in the Things of GOD. Numbers embraced me with the tenderest Affection, and blessed the LORD of all Lords for sending me back to them again. As soon as Dinner was over, we took Horse, baited at *Chester*, (where the Landlord of the House would take nothing either for the Entertainment of ourselves or Horses) and reached *Philadelphia* about eight in the Evening. GOD was here again pleased to vouchsafe me great Enlargements of Heart; and it is impossible to express the Joy many felt when they saw my Face again. O how did they comfort my Heart with the Account of what GOD

had done for their own and many other People's Souls, by the Doctrine I had delivered when there last. The Baptist Minister in particular, who has been made instrumental to water what GOD had planted, recounted to me many noble Instances of GOD's Power of Free-Grace, shewn in the Conviction and Conversion of some Ministers, as well as common People.—*Oh that the LORD may revive his Work in the Midst of the Years. The World is now up in Arms. Blessed JESUS, do thou now gird on thy Sword upon thy Thigh, and whilst the Kings of the Earth are striving to extend their Dominions, do thou secretly carry on thy Kingdom in Believers Hearts, till the Earth be filled with the Knowledge of thee our LORD, as the Waters cover the Sea!*

#### PHILADELPHIA.

Tuesday, April 15. Paid my Respects to the Governor and Proprietor. Went to the Commissary's

House,

19

House, who was not at home: But afterwards speaking to him in the Street, he soon told me that he could lend me his Church no more, because I had not treated the Bishop of London well in my Answer to his late Pastoral Letter; and also had misquoted and misrepresented Archbishop Tillotson, in a Letter published in the last Week's Gazette. I told him he had best shew that in Public.—He replied, the Printers would not publish any Thing for them, and that the Press was shut up against them. I answered, it was without my Knowledge. Upon this we parted; and in the Afternoon I was much pressed in Spirit to preach upon the Blind Beggar, to whom the Scribes and Pharisees said, *Dost thou teach us?*—I stood upon a Balcony, on Society Hill, from whence I preached my Farewell Sermon last Fall; and felt somewhat of that Divine Fire and inward Strength which I am persuaded the poor Beggar felt, when bearing his Testimony for the Blessed JESUS, before a Bench of Wolves in Sheep's Cloathing. Towards the Conclusion of my Dis-



course, I read to the People some Extracts I had taken from Dr. *Edwards* against Archbishop *Tillotson's* Writings; and then appealed to them where was the Presumption in pretending to teach even *Him*.—It cannot be expressed how many carnal Hearts were disturbed by my Testimony against the Archbishop, that great and good Man, as they call him. But before I have done, I do not despair of seeing People bring his Works, as they once brought the Books of curious Arts, and burn them before all Men.—It is difficult to determine which have done the most mischief.—Have Compassion, sweetest JESUS! on thy Flock, and suffer them no longer to be given over to such Guides, who had the Form of Religion, but never felt the effectual Power of it in their Hearts!

Wednesday, April 16. Talked in the Morning with three or four who were convicted, and I believe I can say, converted by my Ministry last Fall.—In the Afternoon two Men came to me; one of which with a full Heart, cried out, Blessed be GOD, for you, under Him, have begotten me again to a lively Hope.—Preached upon *Society Hill* twice; in the Morning to about 6000, in the Evening to near 8000 People.—GOD was much

C 2

with

20

with me in both Exercises.—In the Afternoon I was particularly assisted in speaking from these Words, *Yea, and all that will live godly in CHRIST JESUS must suffer persecution*.—The Storm, I find, is gathering apace.—As the Word of GOD increases, so will the Rage and Opposition of the Devil.—LORD, support us in a Suffering Hour, and overshadow us by thy Wings till the Tyranny of our Adversaries shall be overpast! Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen.

#### **Abington and Philadelphia.**

Thursday, April 17. Rode last Night after Sermon about eight Miles.—Lay at a Friend's House, and preached this Morning to near 3 or 4000 People at *Abington*,

a District under the Care of **one** Mr. *Treat*, (a **Dissent-  
ing** Minister) to whom GOD has been pleased lately to shew Mercy.—He has been a Preacher of the Doctrines of Grace for some Years; but was deeply convinced, when I was here last, that he had not experienced them in his Heart.—**And** soon after I went away, he attempted to preach, but could not. He therefore told his Congregation, how miserably he had deceived both himself and them; and desired **them that** were gifted, to pray for him.—Ever since, he has continued to seek JESUS CHRIST sorrowing, and is now under deep Convictions, and a very humbling Sense of Sin.—He preaches as usual, tho' he has not a full Assurance of Faith; because he said it was best to be found in the Way of Duty. I believe GOD is preparing him for great Services, and I hope he will also be a Means of awakening some dead, false-hearted Preachers among the Dissenters, who hold the Form of sound Words, but have never felt the Power of them in their own Souls.—**I observed a great Presence of GOD in our Assembly, and the Word, as I was informed afterwards, came with a Soul-convicting and comforting Power to many.**—When I had done, I took a little refreshment, baptized a Child, and hasted to *Philadelphia*, where I preached to upwards of 10000 People, upon the Woman **that** was cured of her bloody Issue.—Hundreds **I found**, were graciously melted; and many, I hope, not only thronged round, but also touched the LORD JESUS

CHRIST

21

CHRIST by Faith. **Near** ten came to me after Sermon, under deep Convictions, and told me the Time when, and Manner how the LORD JESUS made himself manifest to their Souls.—What gives me greater Hopes that this Work is of GOD, is, because these Convictions have remained on many **ever** since I was here last. **Some have not only Righteousness and Peace, but also Joy in the HOLY GHOST.**—Blessed be GOD, there is a most glorious Work begun in this Province. The Word of GOD every Day mightily prevails, and Satan

loses Ground apace.—*LORD JESUS, stretch out thy Arm, and let not this Work be stopped till we see that new Heaven and new Earth wherein dwelleth Righteousness!*

#### ***German-Town and White-Marsh.***

*Friday, April 18.* Was employed for two Hours this Morning in giving Answers to several **that** came to me under strong Convictions; amongst whom was a Negroe or two, and a young Girl of about fourteen Years of Age, who was turned out of the House where she boarded, because she would hear me, and would not learn to dance.—Set out about nine o' Clock for *White-Marsh*, about twelve Miles from *Philadelphia*.—Had near forty Horse in Company before we reached the Place. Preached to upwards of 2000 People, and **perceived** great Numbers **much** melted down, and brought under Convictions, when I made free Offers to them of JESUS and his Benefits, if they would believe on him.—Took a little Refreshment at a Quaker's. Baptized two Children belonging to the Church of *England* at his House.—Returned back to and preached at *German-Town*, **with much of the Divine Presence**, to near 4000 Hearers, and came to *Philadelphia* about seven in the Evening, refreshed both in Body and Soul.—*Blessed be the LORD GOD of Jacob, who seems to be building up his Spiritual Jerusalem, and to be gathering together the Outcasts of Israel.*

#### ***PHILADELPHIA.***

*Saturday, April 19.* Was still much engaged in giving Answers, and praying with divers **that** applied to me under deep Convictions **of their damnable Condition by Nature**. Preached Morning and Evening to 7 or 8000 People each Time; and **it** much rejoiced **my Heart** to see with what Order and Devotion they constantly attend.—Scoffers seem to be at a Stand what to say. They

mutter in Coffee-Houses, give a Curse, drink a Bowl of Punch, and then cry out against me for not preaching up more Morality. Poor Men! where is the Morality they so much boast of? If GOD judges them, as he certainly will do, by their Morality, on which they so much rely; out of their own Mouths will he condemn them. *Their Morality, falsley so called, will prove their Damnation.* They say, but do not. And how can they, since they are ignorant of a living Faith in JESUS CHRIST, which alone can enable us to do any Thing acceptable in the Sight of GOD.—*From such profane Moralists may I turn away. My Soul, come not nigh their Dwellings. Mine Honour, be not thou united unto them.*

Sunday, April 20. Preached *this Morning* at seven o' Clock, with much *Clearness and* Freedom, to about 10,000 People, and collected 110 *l.* Sterling for my poor Orphans. The People threw in their Mites willingly, and thereby reminded me much of what GOD had done for me at *Moorfields* and *Kennington-Common*, when I was last in *England*. Went to Church Morning and Evening; and heard the Commissary preach a Sermon upon *Justification by Works*, from *James ii.* 18.—Many people seeing me go in, followed; and Numbers of them told me afterwards, the Commissary (tho' undesignedly) had confirmed them *more and more* in the Truths which I had delivered. In the Evening I preached from the same Words to about 15,000 People, and confuted the false Doctrines and many fundamental Errors contained in the Commissary's Discourse. For he all along took Faith to be only an Assent to the Truths of the

Gospel.

23

Gospel. He said, *St. Paul* and *St. James* spoke of the same Kind of Justification. That *Works* mentioned by *St. Paul* were only the Works of the Ceremonial Law. That the Doctrine of an imputed Righteousness had done much Harm, and hindered the Conversion of the

Heathens. That we were to be Justified by our Works at the last Day, and consequently were to be justified in the same Manner now.—To all these Things I endeavoured to answer distinctly; and was obliged, in the Conclusion of my Discourse, to tell the People, since CHRIST was not preached in the Church, they might go hear him preached where they could. After Sermon we collected 80 *l.* Currency for my Children in *Georgia*, and came home, rejoicing in Spirit, to see how Satan was continually bruising his own Head. Little do my Enemies think what Service they do me. If they did, one would think, out of Spite they would even desist from opposing me. *Oh what a good Master is JESUS CHRIST!*

***Greenwich and Gloucester in the West-Jerseys.***

*Monday, April 21.* Had fresh Application made to me by Persons under Convictions. Went by Water about four Miles, and then rode, in Company with many others, who came to meet me, to *Greenwich* in the *West-Jerseys*, and about twelve Miles from *Philadelphia*. There being a Mistake made in the News, about the Place where I was to preach, I had not above 1500 Hearers. At first I thought I was speaking to Stocks and Stones: But before I had done, the Power of the Lord came upon the Congregation, the HOLY Ghost overshadowed them, and a gracious Melting was visible in most that heard. Sermon being ended, I dined with my Friends; and taken very ill in the Way; lay down for about an Hour. Rode back to *Gloucester*; where I took Horse in the Morning, and preached with some Power to about 1500 People. It being but four Miles distant from *Philadelphia*, many came in Boats from thence.—And the Moon shining very bright, we went back to Town very pleasantly. GOD was pleased to communicate fresh Strength to my Soul; we sung Hymns good

Part

Part of the Way, and GOD enabled me to second them by a warm Exhortation. About eight at Night we reached Philadelphia, with no small Satisfaction in my own Soul, that I had this Day been plowing up some Fallow Ground, and opening a Way into a Place where I find there has been a great Famine of the Word of GOD.—I must confess I am, in that respect, like-minded with St. Paul, and desire to go chiefly where CHRIST has not been named.—*Oh that the LORD may endue me with his Meekness, Holiness and Zeal, and then after I preach to others, I shall not be a Castaway myself. Amen, LORD JESUS! Amen.*

#### PHILADELPHIA.

Tuesday, April 22. Hearing a Sloop was going to Georgia, I shut up myself for some Time, in the Morning, in order to write some Letters to my dear Friends at Savannah. Preached both Morning and Evening to rather larger Congregations than I have yet seen in a Week-day. There were not less than 10,000 People.—A sweet Power was amongst them; and when I came to take my Farewell, being about to depart for New-York on the Morrow, a great Number was dissolved into Tears, and wept sorely. Many of the Negroes were also much affected, and I trust some will now experimentally know the LORD JESUS, and feel the Power of his Resurrection. This Day I bought 5000 Acres of Land on the Forks of Delaware. Ordered a large House to be built thereon for the Instruction of these poor Creatures. The Land, I hear, is exceeding rich. It is a Mannor, and pays only a White-Rose yearly for Chief Rent.—I took up so much, because I intend settling some English Friends there, when I come next from England. I have called it Nazareth; and I trust in a few Years the LORD will let us see much Good come out of it.—*Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen.*

Went in the Evening to visit a young Woman under deep Convictions. She was struck down by the Power of GOD's Word on *Sunday*, and has continued, as *Paul* did, ever since sick in Body, and under great Agony of Soul. I talked and prayed with her, and with near twen-

ty

25

ty more that came into the Room. My Soul was exceedingly carried out, and the Power of the HOLY GHOST descended in a wonderful Manner upon most that were there. I also gave them a strong Exhortation. They wept sorely and prayed earnestly; and I have not seen Circumstances more like those of the Apostles, when the HOLY GHOST shook the Room, wherein they were lifting up their Voice with one Accord to the most High GOD. By this we know, O LORD, that thou art the same Yesterday, and To-day, and for ever.—*Grant that the HOLY GHOST may in like powerful Manner fall on all them that shall hear the Word from, or pray with me at any other Time! Amen, and Amen.*

#### NESHAMINI.

*Wednesday, April 23.* Was more than ordinarily employed the first Part of the Morning in writing Letters, answering People, and preparing for my Journey. Set out about eight with many Friends; bailed at a Friend's House in the Mid-way.—Reached *Neshamini* near three in the Afternoon, and preached to upwards of 5000 People in old Mr. *Tennent's* Meeting-House Yard. When I got there, my Body, through Heat and Labour, was so weak and faint, that my Knees smote one against another, my Visage changed, and I was ready to drop down as soon as I had finished my Prayer. But GOD was pleased so to revive me by Communications from himself, that I spoke with great Demonstration of the Spirit and with Power. A very great Commotion was in the Hearts of the Hearers. Great Numbers were much melted; and one in particular, after Sermon came to me with strong Cryings and Tears, saying, *You have*

*brought me under deep Convictions, what shall I do to be saved? I gave him the Apostle's Answer.—Believe on the LORD JESUS, and thou shalt be saved. Upwards of fifty, I hear, have been lately convicted about this Place.—The LORD grant his Arrows may stick fast in them, till they have got a Closing Interest with JESUS CHRIST. For many, I find, receive the Word with Joy for a Season, but having no true Root in themselves, soon fall away. Better were it for them that always continue*

D

thus,

26

*thus, that they had never been convicted at all. LORD, if it be thy Will, have Mercy on these and such-like unhappy Apostates, and let them be renewed again unto Repentance! Amen and Amen.*

#### **Montgomery and Shippack.**

*Thursday, April 24. Was hospitably entertained with my Friends last Night at Montgomery, about eight Miles from Neshamini, whither I came to make this Day's Journey the easier. Wrote some more Letters to my Flock and Family at Savannah. Preached at Shippack, sixteen Miles from Montgomery, where the Dutch People live.—It was seemingly, a very Wilderness Part of the Country; but there were not less, I believe, than 2000 Hearers. GOD was with me much at the latter End of the Sermon. And when I had done, Peter Boehler, a Deacon of the Moravian Church, a dear Lover of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, preached to his Countrymen in Dutch. Travelling and preaching in the Sun again, weakened me much and made me very sick; but by the Divine Assistance I took Horse, rode twelve Miles, and preached in the Evening to about 3000 People at a Dutch Man's Plantation, who seemed to have drunk deeply into GOD's HOLY SPIRIT. Here GOD much strengthened and quickened me. The German Brethren were exceeding loving to me, and I spent the Evening with many of them in a most agreeable Manner. The Order, Seriousness, and Devotion of these People in common Life, is*



most worthy of Imitation. I never saw so much Simplicity as in them. Surely, GOD was with us this Night. They prayed and sung in their own Language, and then GOD enlarged my Heart to pray in ours. I was in a great Agony in the Field. *Do thou, O blessed JESUS, who wast in an Agony in the Garden, hearken to the Petitions thou didst enable me in that Hour to put up!*

*Amwell*

27

### ***Amwell in the East Jerseys.***

*Friday, April 25.* Rose before Day. Sung and prayed with my own Friends and the German Brethren. Set out before Sun-rising, and reached Amwell, thirty five Miles from Shippack, where I had appointed to preach by six at Night. Some Thousands of People were gathered together, expecting I would have been there by Noon; but Mr. Gilbert Tennant, and Mr. Rowland, mentioned in my last Journal, coming there to meet me, had given the People three Sermons.—In my Way thither, the LORD was pleased to bring me low by inward Trials, and very great Weakness of Body, occasioned by the Heat of the Sun, want of Sleep, and the Length of the Journey. But before I had preached six Minutes, bodily and spiritual Strength were given me, and the LORD was pleased to set his Seal to what he enabled me to deliver.—After Sermon, a Friend took me in his Chair to an old Christian's, who invited me and my Company to his House, five Miles distant from the Place where I preached. We were comfortably refreshed under his Roof, and tho' my Body was weak, yet my Soul was strong in the LORD, and in the Power of his Might. *Oh that I may wax stronger and stronger every Day. Amen and Amen!*

### **NEW-BRUNSWICK.**

*Saturday, April 26.* Was much comforted and refreshed both in Body and Soul last Night, after I went

to Rest. Sung Psalms, prayed, and set out for *New-Brunswick* about eight. Reached thither by four in the Afternoon, and preached to about 2000 Hearers in the Evening. Many were affected. Here also my true Christian Friend and Host, Mr. *Noble*, from *New-York*, gave me the Meeting, and brought me a Packet of Letters from *Savannah*, which affected me much. Blessed be GOD, many of my Friends in the Orphan House, I trust, will be Friends of GOD. Grant this, O LORD, for thy Mercy's Sake!

D 2

Sun-

28

*Sunday, April 27.* Was told last Night by Mr. *Gilbert Tennant*, of two that were savingly brought home by my Ministry when here last.—Got a little Time to write a Letter to my *English* Friends, giving them a short Account of what GOD was doing here.—Preached Morning and Evening to near 7 or 8000 People: And GOD's Power was so much amongst us in the Afternoon Sermon, that had I proceeded, the Cries and Groans of the Congregation, I believe, would have drowned my Voice. One Woman was struck down, and a general Cry went through the Assembly. The Power of GOD fell much upon my Heart, and I believe the Word was sharper than a two-edged Sword. We collected both Times upwards of *L. 20 Sterling* for my Orphans; And at Night a Woman came to me under strong Convictions. She told me she had often been somewhat moved; but now she hoped GOD had struck her home.—She cried out, I can see nothing but Hell!—*Oh that all were in as good a Way to Heaven!*

***Brunswick, Woodbridge, Elizabeth-Town and***

***New-York.***

*Monday, April 28.* Underwent great Conflicts in my Soul last Night and this Morning. Wrote some Letters to my dear *English* Friends, who are continually upon my Heart. Took a sorrowful Leave of Captain *Glad-*

man, and my dear Brother and Fellow-Traveller, Mr. Seward, whom I have dispatched to *England* to bring me over a Fellow-Labourer, and to transact several other Affairs of the last Importance. Captain Gladman is the Person mentioned in my last Journal, who was cast away in the Gulph of *Florida*, and whom GOD made me an Instrument of converting in my Passage to *England*.—Hitherto he has had the Command of our Sloop: But being obliged to dispatch him on Business to *England*, I have now committed the Care of the Sloop to his Mate, whom GOD was pleased to bring home to himself when I was last at *Philadelphia*. Not long since he was an abandoned Prodigal, and Ring-leader in Vice; but GOD struck him to the Heart. Captain Gladman had

---

prayed

29

prayed that GOD would send him a Mate. This young Man was strongly drawn to come and offer himself; the Captain hired him; and now, I believe, he is a Child of GOD. Numbers at *Philadelphia* cannot but see the new Creature in him; and yet the Doctrine of free Justification by Faith in CHRIST JESUS, does Harm to the Christian World.—Surely such Talkers plainly prove, that they never yet knew what it was to believe on the LORD JESUS with their whole Heart.

Set out about eight in the Morning, and reached *Woodbridge* by ten, where I preached to about 2000 People. Here again I perceived my bodily Strength was small; but GOD enabled me to speak home to many Hearts; for many were affected, blessed be GOD.—After Sermon, I and my Friends dined at the Dissenting Minister's House, who invited me to preach; and then we hasted to *Elizabeth-Town*, where the People had been waiting for me some Hours.—I preached in the Meeting-House, as when I was there last. It was full, and was supposed to contain 2000 People. Near ten Dissenting Ministers were present, and two Church Ministers; but they did not tarry very long. GOD gave me much Freedom of Speech. I dealt very plainly with the Pres-

byterian Clergy; many of whom, I am persuaded, preach the Doctrines of Grace to others, without being converted themselves. No doubt some were offended: But I care not for any Sect or Party of Men. As I love all *that* love the LORD JESUS, of what Communion soever; so I'll reprove all, whether Dissenters, or not Dissenters, who take his Word into their Mouths, but never felt him dwelling in their Hearts. *Such close-hearted Hypocrites are the Bane of the Christian Church.—LORD JESUS, convince and convert them for thy Mercy's Sake! Amen and Amen.*

After Sermon, I took Leave of Mr. Gilbert Tennant, and Mr. Cross, *a Minister mentioned in my last Journal*, who accompanied me thus far, and told me their Souls were much refreshed by this Day's Work. *LORD, not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy Name be all the Glory!*

After I parted from them, I intended to ride six Miles: But being over-ruled by the Advice of Friends,

I

30

I stopped, and lay at an Inn all Night, near the Water-side, where People take Boat to go to *New-York*. *Our Conversation tended to the Use of edifying; and GOD was pleased to give me an Appetite to my bodily Food, which I have not had before for some Time. Surely this frail Body cannot hold me long.—When, O LORD, wilt thou set my imprisoned Soul at Liberty! When shall I be dissolved and be with thee, O CHRIST! LORD, give me Patience to wait till that blessed Time come!*

### NEW-YORK.

*Tuesday, April 29.* Took Boat about nine in the Morning.—Was blessed with a fair Gale of Wind, which brought us to *New-York* before Noon.—Here my dear Friends kindly received me, and here also I met with Mr. *William Tennant*, who refreshed my Heart, by telling me what the LORD was doing for Numbers of Souls in the Highlands, where he has lately been.—

Surely JESUS CHRIST is getting himself the Victory indeed! About five in the Evening I preached in the Common to 5 or 6000 People. But observed no Scoffers, as when I was here last.—The People were still and quiet after I began; and tho' I did not perceive much Power in the Congregation, yet GOD enabled me to speak with all Boldness. *Oh that I may never be ashamed of CHRIST or of his Gospel: For it has been the Power of GOD to my Salvation. O grace! Grace!*

Wednesday, April 30. Preached this Morning from a Scaffold, erected for that Purpose, to a somewhat less Congregation than last Night, but with much greater Power: For towards the Conclusion of my Discourse, GOD's Spirit came upon the Preacher and the People, so that they were melted down exceedingly.—Afterwards I began to collect Money from private Hands for my Orphans, and met with Success.—*Blessed be GOD! who has the Hearts of all Men in his Hands.*—Dined at Mr. P——'s, but was obliged to retire as soon as Dinner was over; for my Body was weak, and my Soul was in an unspeakable Agony for near an Hour. At length I dropt asleep, but rose about five in the Evening, and preached

to

31

to upwards of 6 or 7000 People on our LORD's Temptations.—*Oh that I may follow the Captain of my Salvation, and be willing to be tempted in all Things like unto my Brethren, that I may be experimentally able to succour such as apply to me when tempted! Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen.*

#### ***Flat-Bush on Long-Island.***

Thursday, May 1. Went in a Ferry this Morning, over to Flat-Bush on Long-Island; on the East Part of which, GOD has lately begun a most glorious Work, by the Ministry of two young Presbyterian Ministers, who have walked in an uncommon Light of GOD's Countenance for a long while together. Prosper

*thou, O LORD, more and more the Work of their Hands upon them! Oh prosper thou their handy Work!*

At our coming to *Flat-Bush*, the *Dutch Ministers* received me with all Civility, and gave me the Use of their Church. There were also seven or eight Dissenting Ministers present.—I scarce was ever enabled to speak of the Doctrines of Grace with greater Freedom and Clearness. I continued discoursing on the Knowledge we ought to have of JESUS CHRIST, near an Hour and a Half.—*GOD's Spirit went through the Congregation.* Many People, and some of the Ministers wept. My own Soul was wonderfully carried out; and at last I applied myself to the Ministers themselves.—*Oh that we all were a Flame of Fire!*

About two in the Afternoon, having a fair Wind, we returned to *New-York*; where I received another comfortable Packet of Letters from *Charles-Town* and *Savannah*, amongst which were two or three from my little Orphans. *Here GOD was pleased again to humble me both in Body and Soul, and caused me to mourn, like a Sparrow sitting alone upon the House-Top.* I preached in the Evening at *New-York* to as large a Congregation as ever. But my Spirits being exhausted, and GOD being pleased to suspend his wonted Assistance, I preached, as I thought, but heavily. But I have been too apt to build on my Frames, and think I do no good, or do not please GOD, only because I do not please myself: For I

have

32

have often found, that my seemingly less powerful Discourses have been much owned by GOD.—*And I find it absolutely necessary that Gospel Ministers should meet with such Thorns in the Flesh, that both Ministers and Hearers may know themselves to be but Men.—LORD, show that thou dost love me, by humbling and keeping me humble as long as I live! The Means I leave to thee. I am thy Clay, thou art the Potter, mould me, as it seemeth good to thy Sovereign Good-will and Pleasure! Amen and Amen.*

**NEW-YORK.**

*Friday, May 2.* Preached twice in the Field, and once in the Meeting-House, and was agreeably refreshed in the Evening with one, Mr. *Davenport*, whom GOD has lately highly honoured, by making Use of his Ministry for the Conversion of many at the East End of *Long-Island*. His Soul seemed to be much wrapped up in GOD, and he told me that GOD had brought home several Children about eleven or twelve Years old, as well as many grown Persons. He has been favoured with large Communications from the Blessed JESUS, and is looked upon as an Enthusiast and a Madman by many of his Reverend Pharisaical Brethren: And, as far as I can find, there is as great an Enmity against the Work of GOD in the Hearts of most even of the Dissenters, tho' they preach the Doctrines of Grace, as there is in our Clergy, who, for the generality, intirely disown them. As *Jannes* and *Jambres* withstood *Moses*, so do these also resist the Truth. *Men they are of corrupt Minds, and reprobate concerning the Faith.* But I trust they will not proceed much further; for their Folly shall be manifest unto all Men, as theirs also was.—*Hasten that blessed Time, my LORD and my GOD!*

*Sunday, May 4.* Preached by seven in the Morning in the Meeting-House.—Went to the *English* Church twice, and heard two legal Sermons, tho' not quite so bad as those I heard when here last. Preached in the Evening to about 8000 in the Field, and had a comfortable Evidence that the LORD was amongst us. *I had much of*

the

33

the Divine Presence in my own Soul, tho' I have not felt such continual Enlargement of Heart, as when I was here before. I believe, it is because mine Adversaries have been more silent, and have not so openly opposed the Truths of GOD, tho' their secret Enmity is as great, nay, I believe, greater than ever.—To speak against the favourite Writings of Archbishop *Tillotson*, and the Au-

thor of the *Whole Duty of Man*, grieves them to the Heart; and yet Fear of the People restrains their Fury for the present. By and by, the Number of our LORD's Disciples will be gathered in, and then they must be permitted to bruise our Heel.—*LORD, prepare me, LORD, strengthen me against a Suffering Time. Thou, Son of GOD, take me by the Hand, and then I care not, if I am thrown into a fiery Furnace, or cast into a Den of devouring Lions.*

*Give me thy Strength, O GOD of Pow'r,†  
Then let, or Men or Fiends assail:†  
Strong in thy Strength, I'll stand a Tow'r†  
Impregnable to Earth or Hell.*

After Evening Sermon, Numbers came to me, giving GOD Thanks for what they had heard. They were desirous of my Return amongst them again, and brought several large Contributions for my poor Orphans. *Blessed be GOD!* by public Collections and private Donations, I have received upwards of 300 *l.* since I came *hither*; and I doubt not but my dear LORD will always provide for my little Ones.—*Oh what a blessed Thing is it to live upon GOD!* I believe *Elijah* never lived more comfortably than when fed by the Ravens.—*LORD, increase my Faith! and accept my poor Thanks for what thou hast done for me and thy People, during my short Stay here. Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen!*

***Stratton-Island, Freehold, and Amboy.***

*Monday, May 5.* Prayed with, and parted *in an affectionate Manner* from my dear *New-York* Friends last Night. About ten o'Clock, took Boat with my worthy Host Mr. Noble, and some others, and came by Midnight to *Stratton-*

*Island,*

34

*Island*, where we were kindly received by one of our LORD's true Disciples. Not long after our coming ashore, the Wind blew, and the Weather grew very tempestuous, and so continued all the Morning; but



GOD strengthened my weak Body.—About eleven I set out; preached at a Place appointed on the Island, about seven Miles distant, and afterwards hastened to *Amboy*, about twelve Miles farther, and preached again a little after six in the Evening.—I sent to the Minister of the Place for the Use of his Pulpit: But he was very angry, and said he wondered at my Assurance in asking such a Thing.—It being such rainy Weather, only a few People came, and I did not feel much Power in preaching to them.—After Sermon, my Friends advised me to stay at *Amboy* all Night: But my dear Brother and Fellow-Labourer, Mr. *William Tennant* coming to fetch me, I passed over a Ferry with him and his Brother *Gilbert*, who also came to *Amboy* to meet me. With them I set out for *Freehold*, twenty Miles from *Amboy*, the Place where GOD has more immediately called Mr. *William Tennant*.—Oh how sweetly did the Time glide on, and our Hearts burn within us when we opened the Scriptures, and communicated our Experiences to each other. Our LORD was with us, as with the two Disciples going to *Emaus*.—About Midnight we reached *Freehold*; and about two in the Morning retired to Rest. My Body was weak, but my Soul much comforted; and I think I sleep with double Satisfaction when lying in a good Man's House.—For the Angels of the LORD encamp about the Dwellings of the Righteous.—*Oh that we may be like them, and be unwearied in administering to and watching over those who are Heirs of everlasting Salvation!*

***Freehold, Amboy and Burlington.***

*Tuesday, May 6.* Preached at *Freehold* in the Morning to about 3000, and the Power of GOD was much manifested, and many, I believe, brought under Convictions. Took a little Refreshment, and went in Company with many of GOD's Children to *Allen's Town*, about sixteen Miles from *Freehold*. Preached with Power

to

35

to about 3000 more, and afterwards reached *Burlington*, about twenty Miles farther, by Midnight.—As I came along, a Man who had been dissuaded from coming to hear me, came to me under strong Convictions, and desirous to follow me whithersoever I went. I scarce know a Day wherein I have not had several apply to me for the same Purpose, and under the same Circumstances. It is natural for Persons to be desirous of being with those, who have, under GOD, brought them from Darkness to Light. Thus the Man out of whom the Devil had been cast, desired to go with the Blessed JESUS. But our LORD's Answer I find best to be given. “Go home to thy House, and tell what great Things the LORD hath done for thee.”—Dearest Redeemer, teach me in this, and all other Respects, to follow thy perfect, unerring Example. Amen and Amen.

#### ***Bristol in Pensilvania and Philadelphia.***

*Wednesday, May 7.* Had a little refreshing Sleep; crossed the Ferry into *Pensilvania* Province. Preached to about 4000 at *Bristol*, and made all possible Haste to *Philadelphia*, twenty Miles off, where I was received with great Joy and Satisfaction by my kind Host Mr. B——t, [[Benezet]] and many other Friends.—After dispatching some private Affairs, I went and heard Mr. *Jones*, the Baptist Minister, who preached the Truth as it is in JESUS.—He is the only Preacher that I know of in *Philadelphia*, who speaks feelingly and with Authority. The poor People are much refreshed by him, and I trust the LORD will bless him more and more.—Pity, O dearest JESUS, thy poor People, and suffer them no longer to be scattered abroad, as Sheep having no Shepherds!

#### ***PHILADELPHIA.***

*Thursday, May 8.* Had, what my Body much wanted, a thorough Night's Repose; was much refreshed in Spirit, and was called up very early in the Morning, as I am always, to speak to poor Souls under Convictions.

The first, *I think*, was an *Indian* Trader, whom GOD was pleased to bring home by my preaching when here

E 2

last.

36

last. The Account he gave of GOD's Dealings with him was very satisfactory.—He is just come from the *Indian* Nation, where he has been praying with and exhorting all he met, *that* were willing to hear: Some of the *Indians* he had Hopes of: But his Fellow-Traders endeavoured to prejudice them against him. However, *by my Advice*, he proposes visiting them again at the *Fall*: And I humbly hope the LORD will open a Door amongst the poor Heathen.—The Conversion of one of their Traders I take to be one great Step towards it.—LORD, *carry on the work begun. Fulfil thy ancient Promises, and let thy Son have the Heathen for his Inheritance, and the utmost Parts of the Earth for his Possession. Come, LORD JESUS, come quickly!*

Conversed also with a poor Negroe Woman, who has been visited in a very remarkable Manner. GOD was pleased to convert her by my Preaching the last *Fall*; but being under Dejections on *Sunday* Morning, she prayed that Salvation might come to her Heart, and that the LORD would be pleased to manifest himself to her Soul that Day. Whilst she was at Meeting, hearing Mr. M——n, a Baptist Preacher, *whom the LORD has been pleased lately to send forth*, the Word came with such Power *upon* her Heart, that at last she was obliged to cry out; and *such* a great Concern *also* fell upon many in the Congregation, *that several betook themselves to secret Prayer*. The Minister stop'd, and several persuaded her to hold her Peace: But *the Glory of the Lord shone so brightly round about her*, that she could not help praising and blessing GOD, and telling how GOD was revealing himself to her Soul. After some time, she was taken out of the Meeting-House; but she fell upon her Knees, praising and blessing GOD. She continued in an Agony for some considerable Time; and afterwards came in

and heard the Remainder of the Sermon.—Many since this, have called her mad, and said she was full of new Wine: But the Account she gave me was rational and solid, and I believe in that Hour the LORD JESUS took a great Possession of her Soul. Such Cases indeed have not been very common: But when an extraordinary Work is carry<sup>ing</sup> on, GOD generally manifests

him-

37

himself to some Souls in this extraordinary Manner. And I doubt not, when the poor Negroes are to be called, GOD will highly favour them, to wipe off their Reproach, and shew that *he is no Respector of Persons, but that whosoever believeth in him shall be saved.*

Preached in the Morning about eleven to 6 or 7000 People. Had great Freedom of Spirit, and cleared myself from some Aspersions that had been cast upon my Doctrine, as tho' it tended to *Antinomianism*. But I abhor the Thoughts of it; and whosoever entertains the Doctrines of Free-Grace in an honest Heart, will find, they will in their own Nature cause him to be fruitful in every good Word and Work.—Many expressed how the Power of GOD was amongst them; and I believe GOD has much People in *Philadelphia* City. The Congregations are very large and serious, and I have scarce preached this Time amongst them but I have seen a stirring amongst the dry Bones.—At five in the Evening I preached again with the like Power, but rather to a larger Audience; and after Sermon rode ten Miles to a Friend's House, that I might be in readiness to preach according to Appointment the next Morning.—How differently am I treated from my Master? He taught the People by Day, and abode all Night upon the Mount of *Olives*. He had not where to lay his Head: But go where I will, I find People with great Gladness receiving me into their Houses.—LORD, I lack for nothing: O prepare me for a Suffering Time, and make me willing, naked, to follow a naked CHRIST. Amen. Amen.

***Pennypack and Philadelphia.***

*Friday, May 9.* Preached at *Pennypack*, about three Miles Distance from the House where I lay, to about 2000 People. *Eat a little Dinner.* Came to *Philadelphia* about two in the Afternoon.—Agreed *with Persons* to build my Negroe Schools on the Land which I have lately purchased; preached in the Evening *with great Freedom and Power*; and afterwards began a Society of young Men, many of whom I trust will prove good Soldiers of JESUS CHRIST. *Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen and Amen!*

*Saturday,*

38

*Saturday, May 10.* Tho' GOD has shewn me great Things already in this Place, yet *to* To-day I have seen greater. I preached twice *with Power*, and to larger Congregations than ever: *And* in the Evening went to settle a Society of young Women, who I hope will prove wise Virgins.—As soon as I entered the Room, and heard them singing, my Soul was *uncommonly* delighted. When the Hymn was over, I desired to pray before I began to converse: But, *contrary to my Expectations*, my Soul was so carried out that I had not Time to talk at all. A wonderful Power was in the Room, and with one Accord, they began to cry out and weep most bitterly for the Space of half an Hour. They seemed to be under the strongest Convictions, and did indeed seek JESUS sorrowing. Their Cries might be heard a great Way off. When I had done, I thought proper to leave them at their Devotions. They continued in Prayer (*as I was informed by one of them afterwards*) for above an Hour, confessing their most secret Faults: And at length the Agonies of some were so strong, that five of them seemed affected as those *that* are in Fits.—The present Captain of our Sloop going near the Water-side, was called into a Company almost in the same Circumstances; and at Midnight I was desired to come to one who was in strong Agonies of Body and Mind, but felt somewhat of Joy and Peace, after I had prayed with her several Times.

Her Case put me in Mind of the young Man whom the Devil tore, when he was coming to JESUS. *Some* such-like bodily Agonies, I believe, are from the Devil; and, now the Work of GOD is going on, he will, no doubt, endeavour by *these* to bring an evil Report upon it.—*But, O LORD, for thy Mercy's Sake, rebuke him; and tho' he may be permitted to bite thy Peoples Heel, fulfil thy Promise, and let the Seed of the Woman bruise his accursed Head! Amen. Amen!*

Sunday, May 11. Preached to about 15,000 People in the Morning, and observed a great Melting to follow the Word. Went twice to Church, and heard myself tasked by the Commissary, who preached from these Words: *I bear them Record, they have a Zeal for GOD,*

*but*

39

*but not according to Knowledge.* I could have wished he had considered the next Words: *For they being ignorant of GOD's Righteousness, and going about to establish their own Righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the Righteousness of GOD.* Had he considered these Words, I might justly have said, Speaketh Mr. Commissary of this false Zeal in Reference to himself, or of some other Man? *In the Afternoon, the Tenth of the Romans, out of which his Text was taken, was appointed for the Lesson; and had he not been more perverse than Balaam, it must have restrained the Madness of this false Prophet. But* he exclaimed loudly against me in the Pulpit, and, *as* I soon found, obliged many of his Hearers to do what they were before inclined to, *viz.*, resolve to leave *him* entirely. I bear him Record, that Experience will soon convince him, that whatever mine be, his own Zeal is by no means according to Knowledge. After he had done, I preached my Farewell Sermon to *I believe* very near 20,000 Hearers.—*As* the Commissary's Sermon was chiefly *full only* of personal Reflections, I thought it not proper to render Railing for Railing. How-

ever, I **thought** it my Duty, in an especial Manner to recommend the Messrs. *Tennants* and their Associates, being most worthy Preachers of our **dear** LORD JESUS. One Passage out of the second Lesson for the Morning, much affected me. *And the LORD had Compassion on the Multitude, because they were scattered, as Sheep having no Shepherd.* I then reminded them of our LORD's Command, *Pray ye therefore the LORD of the Harvest, that he may send out Labourers into his Harvest: For tho' the Harvest is **so great**, the Labourers are **very few**.* The poor People were much concerned at my bidding them Farewell. And after I had taken my Leave, **oh how** many came to my Lodgings, sorrowing **most of all** that they were **likely** to see my Face no more for a long Season.—I **believe** near 50 Negroes came to give me Thanks, **under GOD**, for what had **been** done **for** their Souls. **Oh** how heartily did those poor Creatures throw in their Mites for my poor Orphans!—Some of them have been effectually wrought upon, and in an uncommon Manner. Many of them have **now** begun to learn to read.—**And** one **that** was free, said she would give me her two Chil-

dren,

40

dren, whenever I settle my School.—I believe Masters and Mistresses will shortly see, that Christianity will not make their Negroes worse Slaves.—I intended, had Time permitted, to have settled a Society for Negroe Men and Negroe Women. But that must be deferred till it shall please GOD to bring me to *Philadelphia* again. I have been much drawn out in Prayer for them, and have seen them exceedingly wrought upon under the Word preached.—I cannot well express how many others of all Sorts came to give me a last Farewell. **And indeed** I never **yet** saw a more general Awakening in any Place. Religion is all the Talk; and I think I can say, the LORD JESUS hath gotten himself the Victory in many Hearts.—I have scarce had Time to eat Bread from Morning **till** Evening; some one or other was generally applying to me under deep Soul-Concern, and others con-

tinually pressing upon me to baptize their **little** Infants. I did comply with as many as I could; but I was obliged sometimes to say, The LORD sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel.—Many of the Quakers have been **most powerfully** convinced of the Righteousness of JESUS CHRIST, and openly **profess** the Truth as it is in JESUS; for which I believe they will shortly be **thrust** out of their Synagogues. Some of their Head-Men are zealous against me, and are much afraid their Foundation will be sadly shaken. Great Numbers of the Inhabitants would have built me immediately a very large Church, if I would have consented: But the LORD, I am persuaded, would have his Gospel preached in the Fields; and building a Church would, I fear, insensibly lead the People into Bigotry, and make them place the Church again, as they have done for a long Time, in the Church-Walls. For these Reasons I declined it; tho' notwithstanding I believe they will build some Place **or another**.—What I mostly fear, now there is such a general Awakening, People will not know where to go for proper Food (**for they will no longer take up the Husks, as they have done**) and thereby fall into different Sects and Parties.—LORD JESUS, *look upon them, let not Satan divide them again; but raise them up Pastors after thy own Heart, for thy infinite Mercy's Sake. Amen and Amen!*—With preaching, and praying, and **advising**, I

was

41

was truly weary by eight at Night. **However**, I went and baptized two Children; took my Leave of both the Societies; and I had not pray'd long in the Women's Society, before two of them fell down **into** violent Fits, so that I was obliged to leave them.—At my Return home I supped with some Christian Friends, and went to Bed, astonished at, and desirous to be humbly thankful for the great Things the LORD has done **for me** at Philadelphia.—*Blessed be the LORD GOD of Israel, for he hath wonderfully visited this People, and raised up for*



*them a Means of Salvation from whence it was least expected. Oh Grace, Grace!*

***Derby, Chester and Willingtoun.***

*Monday, May 12.* Rose **very** early to answer those who came for private Advice.—Visited three Persons, one of whom was under such deep Convictions, that she had taken scarce any Thing to eat for **near** a Fortnight. Another had a Prospect of Hell set before her last Night in the most terrifying Colours; but before **the** Morning received Comfort.—When I came to my Lodgings, my Friends were waiting to accompany me on Horseback, and great Numbers of the common People were crowding about the Door. About nine I left *Philadelphia*; and when I came to the Ferry, was told, People had been crossing over as fast as two Boats could carry them, ever since three in the Morning.—After we had waited some Time, I and my Friends got over and preached at *Derby*, seven Miles from *Philadelphia*, to about 4000 Hearers.—Sweetly did the LORD assist me in speaking to them; and I believe many of the Hearers Hearts were ready to break, for they wept much.—After Sermon, and eating a little Food, I took Leave of many: Then preached at *Chester*, about nine Miles off, to about 2000, and collected there and at *Derby* upwards of L. 40 for my Orphans. Here **also** I parted with more Friends, but several went with me **after Sermon** to *Willingtoun*, fifteen Miles from *Chester*. We got in about eleven at Night. My Body was **somewhat** weak: But GOD strengthened me to pray, sing Psalms **with**, and exhort a Room full of People for about an Hour, **and then** I lay

F

at

42

at a Quaker's House, who I believe was a Christian indeed, and, as I observed before, could say *Shibboleth*.—*Oh that all of the like Denomination were like-minded.*

***Willingtown and White-Clay Creek.***

*Tuesday, May 13.* Preached at *Willingtown* in the Morning to **about** 5000: And at *White-Clay Creek*, about ten Miles distant, in the Evening, to **about** 3000. **A great Presence of GOD was in both Places, especially at White-Clay Creek, a Place under the Care of Mr. William Tennant.** The Word, I believe, was both like a Fire and a Hammer; for many were **exceedingly** melted, and one cried out most bitterly, as in great Agonies of Soul. At both Places we collected about *L. 24* for the *Orphan-House*, and the People were very solicitous for me to bring our Sloop up their Creek, the next Time I came, that they might put in Provisions.—Never did I see a more plentiful Country than *Pensilvania*. I have seen but very few poor Objects since my Arrival. Every one **almost** enjoys Peace and Plenty. The Rich do not swallow up the Poor, as in other Provinces; but there seems to be a proper Balance.—After Sermon I rode towards *Nottingham* with **Mr. Tennant**, Mr. *Craghead* and Mr. *Blair*, all worthy Ministers of the **dear LORD JESUS**. **The last, especially, has been remarkably owned of GOD, and for that has been despised by his Reverend, Pharasaical, Letter-learned Brethren.** Many others belonging to *Philadelphia* accompanied us, and we rode through the Woods, **most sweetly** singing and praising GOD. We were all rejoiced to see our **dear LORD's** Kingdom come with such visible Power, and endeavoured to strengthen one another against a Suffering Time should come. *May the great Shepherd make us willing, when called to it, to lay down our Lives for his Sheep. Amen. Amen!*

***NOTTINGHAM.***

*Wednesday, May 14.* Got to a Quaker's House, which lay in our Way to *Nottingham*, about Midnight, and met with a hospitable Reception. **Received fresh**

**Power**

43

Power from above in the Morning, and preached both Morning and Evening at *Nottingham*, but with such Demonstration of the Spirit, and such a wonderful Moving amongst the Hearers, as few ever saw before.—I was invited thither in the strongest Terms by some of the Inhabitants, who had a good Work begun amongst them, some time ago, by the Ministry of Mr. *Blair*, Messrs. *Tennants*, and Mr. *Cross*, the last of which had been denied the Use of the Pulpit by one of his own Brethren, and was obliged to preach in the Woods, where the LORD manifested forth his Glory, and caused many to cry out, *What shall we do to be saved?* It surprized me to see such a great Multitude gathered together, at so short a Warning, and in such a Desert Place. I believe there were near 12,000 Hearers. I had not spoke long, but I perceived Numbers melting. As I proceeded, the Power increased, till at last, both in the Morning and Afternoon, Thousands cried out, so that they almost drowned my Voice. Never before did I see a more glorious Sight! Oh what strong Cryings and Tears were shed and poured forth after the dear LORD JESUS.—Some fainted; and when they had got a little Strength, they would hear and faint again. Others cried out in a Manner, almost, as if they were in the sharpest Agonies of Death! I think I never was myself filled with greater Power. Oh what Thoughts and Words did GOD put into my Heart! And after I had finished my last Discourse, I was so pierced, as it were, and overpowered with GOD's Love, that some thought (I believe) that I was about to give up the Ghost.—Oh how sweetly did I lie at the Feet of my JESUS! With what Power did a Sense of his All-constraining, Free and Everlasting Love flow in upon my Soul! It almost took away my Life. However, at length I revived, and having taken a little Meat, was strengthened to go with my Brother *Blair*, *Tennant*, and some other Friends to Brother *Blair's* House, about twenty Miles from *Nottingham*. In the Way we refreshed our Souls by singing Psalms and

Hymns. We got to our Journey's End about Midnight, where, after we had taken a little food, and recommended ourselves to GOD by Prayer, we went to Rest,

F 2

and

44

and slept, I believe, in the Arms of our dear LORD JESUS.—*Oh LORD, was ever Love like thine!*

***Fog's Mannor.***

Thursday, May 15. Preached at *Fog's Mannor*, about three Miles from Mr. *Blair's* House, where I was earnestly invited me to come, by him. And here also the LORD was pleased to cause much of his Glory to pass before us. The Congregation was about as large as that Yesterday at *Nottingham*. As great, if not a greater Commotion was in the Hearts of the People. Look where I would, most were drowned in Tears. The Word was sharper than a two-edged Sword, and their bitter Cries and Groans were enough to pierce the hardest Heart. Oh what different Visages were then to be seen? Some were struck pale as Death, others wringing their Hands, others lying on the Ground, others sinking into the Arms of Friends, and most lifting up their Eyes towards Heaven, and crying to GOD! I could think of nothing, when I looked upon them, so much as the Great Day.—They seemed like Persons awakened by the last Trump, and coming out of their Graves to Judgment. One would imagine, none but a Devil incarnate could have withstood the Power, or avoid crying out, *Surely GOD is in this Place: And yet one* Mr. *El—son*, a Dissenting Minister, a virulent Opposer of Mr. *Tennant* and his Brethren, after Sermon was over, whilst Thousands were under the deepest Distress of Soul, came desiring to have a public Disputation: I told him I was going to *Newcastle*, and that the Place we were now in was not proper to dispute in. But he thinking that was only to evade the Trial, I desired him to begin, and I would answer such Questions as he should propose. He then charged me with saying,

That such as had only a Faith of Adherence, were in a damnable Condition. I answered, such a Thing never entered my Thoughts. I only said, a Faith of Adherence was not to be rested in: But that all should ask for, and labour after a full Assurance of Faith. He then quoted a Passage from *Isaiah*, Chap. 1 [[50]] v. 10, to prove that a Person might be in CHRIST, and yet not know it.

I

45

I told him, if he **was** a Spiritual Person, he would have known, there was a Time when GOD withdraws his sensible Presence from a Believer's Soul, and yet that Soul may even then be kept from doubting of his Interest in CHRIST. He was about to quote some other Passage of Scripture: But by this Time the People were exasperated **at his Ill-treatment of me**; and one cried out in Haste, that he would take Mr. *El—son* out of the Place: For this I rebuked him **sharply, saying**, that was not the Spirit of CHRIST; and at the same Time blamed Mr. *El—son* for coming at such an improper Time to dispute, when he saw the Power of GOD so **visibly** amongst us. I also told him, **that I believed he was an Enemy to GOD: But** if he had any Objections to make, I would answer them as I rode to *Newcastle*, or in a Letter, if he would send **his Objections** to me. Upon this, he seemed somewhat sensible of his Fault, and said he thought it was best to withdraw.—The **poor convicted Souls** hung so upon me, that with **great** Difficulty I got upon a Horse; and after I had given them a Word of Exhortation, to answer those who opposed themselves, **with Meekness and Fear**, I rode to a Friend's House, who had invited me to Dinner, where we all rejoiced to find what a Fool the Devil and his Servants proved themselves to be. For Mr. *El—son* did his Cause much Hurt by this Action, and discovered his Enmity against the Work of GOD so evidently, that even his Friends now began to suspect him. Blessed be GOD! I trust all of his Stamp will shew themselves as clearly ere it be long: For I hate to have Communion with ungodly unconverted Ministers.

I care not if they all with one Accord were set in Opposition against me. And I pray GOD they may effectually be convinced and converted; otherwise by worrying our LORD's Sheep, they will but increase their Torment in a future State.—*I would*, says the great St. Paul, of those that troubled the Disciples, *that they were even cut off* (that is, at least) from all Communion with you.

After this Contest, the LORD gave me fresh Manifestations of his Love. I dined comfortably with my Friends; rode at the Rate of eight Miles an Hour to *Newcastle*, about twenty four Miles from *Fog's Mannor*; preached to about 4000, and wrote some Letters; dispatched some o-

ther

46

ther Affairs, gave a Word of Advice, and prayed with several, who came many Miles under violent Convictions, and then went and supped on board our Sloop with my Friends. Here GOD was again pleased to fill me with a Sense of his Love. My Soul was ready to burst; Tears trickled plentifully down my Cheeks, and I was much carried out in Behalf of those poor Souls, whom I had left behind hungering and thirsting after the Righteousness of JESUS CHRIST. LORD, for thy Mercy's Sake, let them be filled!

After Supper, and singing a Hymn and Prayer, many who have accompanied me ever since I left *Philadelphia*, as well as Messrs. *Tennant*, *Blair*, and *Craghead*, took their final Leave. Their Hearts were melted with Love towards me: But being much fatigued with Expence of Spirits, I could only sigh out my Heart's Desire for them, commend them to GOD; and then, as soon as possible, I betook my self to Rest, ashamed that I could be no more affected with a Sense of the Blessings I had received on shore.—LORD, whatever thou deniest me, deny me not a thankful humble Heart. Amen, LORD JESUS, Amen!

**On Board the Savannah Sloop.**

*Friday, May 16.* Rose by break of Day, parted with two more dear Friends, and put my Things and little Family in order as soon as I could. Was pleasingly surprized to see the Variety and Quantity of Provisions and Sea-Stores which had been sent on board by *Philadelphia* People. And found that in Goods and Money I had received near *L. 500 Sterling*.—*Blessed be the LORD GOD of Israel, who alone bringeth mighty Things to pass!* I am now going to make an Addition to my Family of Half a Dozen Persons, a Bricklayer, a Tailor, two Maid-servants, and two little Girls, whose Father kept a Dancing-School, Assembly and Concert Room in *Philadelphia*. Their Mother, I believe, had a Work of Grace upon her Heart, was well-bred, and concerned much, for some Time, at the Business in which her Husband was engaged. When last at *Philadelphia*, I did what I could, but now GOD opened Mr. *Seward's* Heart to

relieve

47

relieve the Parents. I took these two Children, and blessed be GOD! an End will entirely be put to the Assembly, &c. at least in that House.—Many of the young Ladies have been much affected by the Word preached; and I believe those Entertainments will never be so much countenanced again. It is a Shame they should be permitted in any Christian Country.—They enervate People's Minds, unfit them for Business, as well as Religion, and grieve the HOLY SPIRIT exceedingly. Wretched and miserable are those false Prophets who frequent such Entertainments themselves, or any Way encourage others so to do. The LORD will call them to account for it at the last Day.—*Oh that I could lament my past Misconduct in this Respect with Tears of Blood!*

*Saturday, May 17.* Both Yesterday and this Day perceived the BLESSED SPIRIT moving on the Faces of some Souls in the Ship. Felt much of the Presence of GOD in my Heart, and had several Captains and Ship-

Carpenters (the Wind being contrary) come to hear me pray and exhort.—*The LORD being with me*, I observed the Tears trickling down their stern Faces plentifully. Three seemed to be under strong Convictions; and one, especially, not long since remarkably wicked, I have great Hopes will be effectually brought home.—*Grant it, O LORD, for thy dear Son's Sake! Amen and Amen!*

### **On Board Ship, and Reedy Island.**

*Sunday, May 18.* The Weather not permitting us to sail, at the People and Sailor's Desire, I went on shore and preached twice on *Reedy Island*, near which our Sloop, and several other Ships came to an Anchor. Having but a few Hours Notice, not above 200 came together: *But there was a sweet Power of the LORD amongst us*, and it pleased me to see the Ships Companies haste in their Boats to hear the Sermon. Many People wept bitterly. *And* in the Evening I returned to *my Sloop with much of GOD's Presence*, and was enabled to finish my Journal to this Day, not having Time to write a Word of it before I came on board for a Fortnight. *Blessed be GOD! our dear LORD JESUS fulfils his Promises, and*

his

48

*his BLESSED SPIRIT brings all Things to my Remembrance.—Thanks be to GOD for his unspeakable gift!*

*Monday, May 19.* Was much refreshed To-day by reading the Journal of an *Indian* Trader mentioned a little before, and could not *but* think GOD would open a Door for preaching the Gospel among the *Alleganian Indians*. Being much pressed thereto in Spirit, I wrote them a Letter, wherein I laid down the Principles of our Holy Religion, told them the Promises of the Gospel, that had especial Reference to them, and cautioned them against such Things, *which* I thought might be an Hindrance to their embracing Christianity. The Head or Chief of them is well inclined, and the white People thereabouts have heard of me, and have got my Sermons.—Who knows but GOD may now begin to give



his Son the Heathen for his Inheritance, and the uttermost Parts of the Earth for his Possession. This Trader I really believe is called of GOD, and GOD never sends any of his Servants on a needless Errand. *Hereafter Gospel-Ministers may be sent also. But the Gospel must first be preached to our baptized Heathens.—When this has been done, the Self-righteous reject the Kingdom of GOD against themselves, then, lo! we turn to the Gentiles.*—I long to see that time when the Earth shall be filled with the Knowledge of the LORD, as the Waters cover the Sea.—*Even so, come LORD JESUS, come quickly.*

*Wednesday, May 21.* Preached for these three Days last past, once every Day on shore at *Reedy Island*, and *perceived* the Congregations increased much every Time. Felt much of the Divine Assistance, both on shore and on board, and was enabled to exhort and pray with *great Power* to the Captains and Sailors that came to our Sloop. *One Captain and a Pilot were wonderfully affected.* I find they all had made an Agreement to come constantly, so long as the Wind continued against us. But after Evening Sermon, the Weather clearing up, and the Wind being somewhat fair, we weighed Anchor, and went *some* few Miles towards the Bay.—Blessed be GOD for retarding us at *Reedy Island*.—Tho' I long to

see

49

see my *dear* Flock and Family at *Georgia*, yet I rejoice in this Delay, because I hope some Servants of GOD have been refreshed, and others brought into a fair Way of coming to JESUS CHRIST. *Draw them, O LORD, with the Cords of thy Love, and then they cannot fail following after thee! The Love of CHRIST is a constraining Love, oh shed it abroad in the Hearts of all poor unbelieving Sinners! Amen and Amen.*

#### LEWIS-TOWN.

*Friday, May 23.* Came this Morning to *Old-Kil-road*.—Dropt Anchor, the Wind being contrary. Went

ashore at *Lewis-Town*, and read Prayers and preached in the Church to a small, and as unaffected a Congregation as I have spoke to since my Arrival in *America*. The Minister hearing our Sloop was coming, staid to give me the Meeting. But I quickly found he was one of those who subscribed to the Articles of the Church of *England* in his own Sense. He inveighed bitterly against the Doctrines of Grace in private; but was seemingly struck dumb after he heard me in public. For he did not open his Lips about the Doctrines afterwards.—Oh how Divine Truths make their own Way, when attended by a divine Power! They will either convict or confound Gainsayers. As for my own Part, I am in love with them more and more every Day.—I find few besides carnal, earthy, sensual, devilish Men oppose them. And I think the Church of *England* is by no Means beholden to Bishop *Burnet* for his Exposition on her Articles. He has opened a Door for the most detestable Equivocation; and was it possible for the Compilers of our Articles to rise again from the Dead, I am persuaded they would insist on their being taken in the Grammatical Sense. They cannot, in my Opinion, admit of a two-fold Interpretation: But how is that once faithful Church become an Harlot? Her own Sons have been her Betrayers; and I fear, if God does not speedily prevent, will prove her Murderers! *Father, for thy Mercy's Sake, purify her Sons, the Clergy, and grant that all who serve at her Altars may be cloathed with the Righte-*

G

*ousness*

50

*ousness of thy dear Son, and preach and live according to the Faith as it is in JESUS!*

Saturday, May 24. Wrote some Letters to *England*, by the Way of *Lisbon*. Read Prayers, and preached twice in the Church to a much larger and abundantly more affected Auditory than Yesterday. Many People stood without the Church Door, and I was enabled to speak, especially in the Morning, with such abundant Freedom and Power, that I cannot believe any one

Hearer could avoid being affected in some Degree or other. I was carried out for a long Time, and saw the Word strike the Hearers like so many pointed Arrows. It came with Demonstration of the Spirit indeed. Carnal Reasoning could not resist it. Blessed be GOD!—In the Evening I retired and looked towards Georgia: But this Text was much pressed upon my Mind, *We essayed to go into Bythinia, but the Spirit suffered us not.*—LORD, *I submit. Thy Will be done. I desire not to move, till that which now letteth be taken out of the Way. Oh when shall I learn to have no other Will but thine!*

Sunday, May 25. Preached twice from a Balcony to about 2000 People, the Church being not capable of holding them. In the Morning I had not much Freedom. But in the Evening, discoursing on Abraham's Faith, a great many, and some even of the most polite, wept much. But alas! when I came to turn from the Creature to the Creator, and to talk of GOD's Love, in sacrificing his only begotten Son JESUS CHRIST, their Tears, I observed, dried up. I told them of it; and could not but from thence infer the dreadful Depravity of Human Nature.—We can weep at the Sufferings of a Martyr, a Man like ourselves; but when are we affected at the Relation of the Sufferings of the Son of GOD? Monsieur Paschal, I have been informed, always wept, whenever he read of our dear LORD's Passion. And tho' Weeping be not always a Sign of Grace, yet I think it is an Evidence of the Hardness of our Hearts, and a Want of a due Sense of Sin, when we can weep at any other melancholy Relation, and yet be unmoved at the Ac-

count

51

count of the Sufferings of a dying Saviour.—The divine Herbert, modernized by my dear Brother Mr. Charles Wesley, furnishes me with a sweet Prayer on this Occasion.

*Sin is still spreading o'er my Heart, &  
A Hardness void of Love: &*

*Let suppling Grace, to cross her Art, ‡  
Drop gently from above!*

After Evening Service, thinking it Time to visit my little Family (in all seventeen Souls) I went on board, and GOD was with us of a Truth. I prayed with and exhorted them. My Eyes gushed out with Water; my Soul was full of a Sense of the Divine Love, and my little Flock wept plentifully too. I was much carried out for them and my Savannah Friends, and had some Thoughts that the LORD would now send me to them. Whether that be his good Pleasure or not, I desire to be resigned and thankful for this Delay. It has been made very beneficial to many Souls, especially to some of our own Sloop, particularly to one most profligate Sinner, who I trust will make an eminent courageous Saint.— I think I have now preached sixty eight Times since my Arrival at Newcastle, and have been near forty Days on Shore. The LORD has been much both with me and his People; and whether he is pleased to detain me longer here, or permit me to return to my dear Charge, I hope his Name will be glorified, and the Salvation of Souls promoted.

*While in these Regions here below, ‡  
No other Good will I pursue, ‡  
I'll bid this World of Noise and Shew, ‡  
With all its flatt'ring Snares, Adieu!*

*That Path with humble Speed I'll seek, ‡  
Wherein, O LORD, thy Footsteps shine: ‡  
Nor will I hear, nor will I speak, ‡  
Of any other Love than Thine.*

G 2

*Wednesday,*

52

**TYBEE-ISLAND.**

*Wednesday, June 4.* Cast Anchor about Midnight, at Tybee Island, fifteen Miles from Savannah, after a short Passage of nine Days, a Thing very extraordinary at

this Time of the Year. But our GOD is a GOD hearing Prayer.—*LORD, give me evermore to exercise Faith on thy Promises, and then all Things whatsoever I ask in thy dear Son's Name, I know I shall receive.*

### SAVANNAH.

Thursday, June 5. Took Boat at Tybee, about one in the Morning, and arrived at Savannah about eight. What *oh what* a sweet Meeting had I with my dear Friends. What GOD has prepared for me I know not; but surely I cannot well expect a greater Happiness till I embrace the Saints in Glory. When I parted, my Heart was ready to break with Sorrow, but now it almost burst with Joy. All Things concurred to render our Meeting exceeding happy.—None of my Letters had come to Hand, so that my Family did not expect me for a long Season. They had also been informed that I was cast away; so that they received me as one rising from the dead. *Oh how did each in Turn, hang upon my Neck, kiss and weep over me with Tears of Joy. And my own Soul was so full of a Sense of GOD's Love, when I embraced one Friend in particular, that I thought I should even have expired in this Place.* All that Joseph felt, when he wept over his Brother Benjamin, or David, when making a Covenant with Jonathan, did I feel, and I could almost say, far more. In short, my Soul was quite full with Peace, with Love and Joy; and I took the first Opportunity of kneeling down with my dear Family, and venting my Heart before them. Several of my Parishioners came with great Joy to see me, and after we had wept and prayed and gave Thanks for a considerable Time, I took a little Refreshment for my Body; but felt my Soul so full of a Sense of the Divine Love, that I wanted Words to express myself! O

*dearest*

53

*dearest JESU! why am I thus highly favoured? Oh unspeakable, free, almighty, and everlasting Love! And yet these are only Earnests and Foretastes of future Bliss!*

*Hasten, **dearest** LORD! hasten that happy Hour, when I shall be received into Abraham's Bosom, and praise thee to all Eternity for what thou hast done for our Souls! Even so, come, LORD JESUS! **Make no long tarrying, O my GOD!***

Friday, June 6. Blessed be the GOD of all Grace, who continues to do for me marvellous Things! This Day, I hope Salvation is come to many in my House.—Long have I interceded for poor *Savannah*. Strong Wrestlings have I had with GOD Time after Time, both in public and private, on the Inhabitants Behalf; and this Night GOD has most remarkably answered my Requests.—**Ever since my Arrival, my Soul has been quite carried out with a Sense of GOD's Love, in bringing me back so opportunely. And all this Day, one or two of my Friends perceived a Divine Power coming gradually amongst us.—In the Afternoon, one of the Men that I brought over, was enabled to wrestle with GOD exceedingly, both for himself and others.—About four, GOD gave me to pray earnestly, and particularly with strong Cryings and Tears for my Friends, who were in the Room with me.—Many came into the Passage near us, and wept much before the LORD, deeply labouring in their Souls.—After this I went up and pray'd for **near** half an Hour with some of the Women of the House, and three Girls, who seemed to be weary with the Weight of their Sins. But when we came to public Prayer, the HOLY GHOST seemed to come into the Congregation like a mighty rushing Wind, carrying all before it.—I was so carried out in Exposition, that the Sweat poured most plentifully from my Face, till my animal Spirits were almost exhausted.—I had not long begun long before several fell crying sorely; and the Number still increased, till young Men and Maidens, old Men and Children, were all dissolved in Tears and Mourning after JESUS. I believe there were scarce half a Dozen in the whole Congregation, but what were**

deeply

54

deeply affected. I think I never saw the like before. It amazed me, and must have affected the Heart of any one not quite dead to GOD, to behold the little Lambs crying most bitterly. And what was more extraordinary, after Church, several of my Parishioners, all my Family, and the little Children, came crying along the Street, and many could not avoid praying very loud.—Being come home, I laid myself upon the Bed, weak in Body, and astonished at the Power of GOD. But finding so many came up in such a Condition, I rose from Bed, and betook myself to Prayer again. But had I not lifted up my Voice like a Trumpet, the Groans and Cries of the Children would have prevented my being heard. This continued for nearly an Hour, till at last, finding their Concern rather increase than abate, I desired all to retire. But oh how I was delighted afterwards, to hear some or other praying most earnestly to GOD in every Corner of the House: And it surprized me to hear what a Spirit of Supplication was put into the Hearts of some of the Boys and Girls. It happened also to thunder and lighten, which added much to the Solemnity of the Night, and reminded us more of the Coming of the Son of Man. After my Parishioners had been gone, and the Family retired for about an Hour, when I thought their Spirits were composed, I called all together, and sung an Hymn to our dear LORD JESUS, whose hand alone had brought such mighty things to pass. My exerting myself so much, threw my Body into a Fever; and GOD's Comforts so refreshed my Soul, that I slept but little the whole Night. The next Day the Concern still continued, especially amongst the Girls, four of whom I have great Reason to believe are coming home truly to JESUS CHRIST, with as many Boys. Their Convictions increase. They are even now in frequent Agonies, when lying and groaning under the Sense of their original and actual Sins. The next Day after this Awakening, for near two Hours, they cried out as violently as they did the Night before. One has been so

filled with Love, Peace and Joy, that she has continued almost **whole** Nights in Prayer. Her Heart burns with longing Desire for the Salvation of her dear Relations

and

55

and Fellow-Creatures; she is surprisingly enabled to pray to GOD for them, and has wrote such Truths, as I am persuaded none could write without an inward Feeling of the Spirit of GOD in the Heart. The Boys also go on well. I walk out with them or the Girls under Conviction once every Day, and am delighted to find what a rational Account they give me of the Work of GOD, and how they are let to see the Corruption of their Nature. They are observed frequently to retire, and some of them have prayed sweetly before me, and at other Times they have been overheard wrestling with GOD in the strongest Manner, and praying to JESUS CHRIST to deliver them from the bottomless Pit.—Several also of my Parishioners are under great Concern: But I mention my Orphans in particular, that their Benefactors may rejoice in hearing what GOD is doing for their Souls. Blessed be his holy Name! our Affairs are now carried on with Decency and Order, and I **really** believe, *Savannah* will yet become the Joy of the Earth. **Ere** long, I trust, the LORD will take it into his own Hands, and then the Curse which I **believe** has hitherto been lying on it, will be taken off. I am **now** beginning to build a Church, and when Matters are brought to a sufficient Extremity, then I believe will be the LORD's Opportunity to save and deliver us. He seems to be purging the Province apace. The Sword will sweep away the Refuse of Lies, and I trust a Rest will yet be prepared in this despised Place, for our dear LORD's own People.—Blessed be GOD, the Children are industrious. We have now in the House near 100 Yards of Cloth spun and **weaved**. We have **also** several Tradesmen belonging to the House, much Cattle on our Plantation, and I hope **ere** long we shall live amongst ourselves. There are several Masters set over the Children, who watch over



them both in and after School Hours. Generally once a Day, if I do not, they walk with their respective Charges, tell them of the Glory of GOD in **the** Creation, and praise him by singing a Hymn. But I shall give a more particular Account when I send my next Journal.—As it is uncertain when I shall return to my native Country, I thought it my Duty to send this in the mean while,

that

56

that my dear Friends may give Thanks **in my Behalf**, and by their Prayers strengthen my Hands: For an effectual Door is opening in *America*; and I trust the Time is coming, when the Earth shall be filled with the Knowledge of the LORD, as the Waters cover the Sea.—We hear of Wars and Rumours of Wars, but let not the Servants of JESUS CHRIST be troubled; **for the LORD generally ushers in his Kingdom with dreadful Pomp, and destroys those with the Sword of the Enemy, who would not be wounded with the Sword of the Spirit.**—*May the LORD be glorified in all his Dispensations! and may that happy Time now hasten on, wherein the Leopard shall lie down with the Kid, and the Lion eat Straw like the Ox, and the People learn War no more!*—The Concern I have for the Church in general, and *Savannah* and the *Orphan-House* in particular, lies much upon my Heart **Day and Night.**—But I commit myself to GOD in a Hymn composed by **the Great Luther**, and translated by my Friend, Mr. *Wesley*.

I.

*Commit thou all thy Griefs, €  
And Ways into his Hands; €  
To his sure Truth and tender Care, €  
Who Earth and Heav'n commands.*

II.

*Who points the Clouds their Course, €  
Whom Winds and Seas obey; €*

## SIXTH JOURNAL

545

*He shall direct thy wand'ring Feet, ‡  
He shall prepare thy Way.*

## III.

*Thou on the LORD rely, ‡  
So safe shalt thou go on; ‡  
Fix on his Work thy stedfast Eye, ‡  
So shall thy Work be done.*

## IV.

*No Profit canst thou gain ‡  
By self-consuming Care; ‡  
To him commend thy Cause; his Ear ‡  
Attends the softest Pray'r.*

V. Thy

57

## V.

*Thy everlasting Truth, ‡  
Father, thy ceaseless Love ‡  
Sees all thy Children's Wants, and knows ‡  
What best for each will prove.*

## VI.

*And whatso'er thou will'st, ‡  
Thou dost, O King of Kings; ‡  
What thy unerring Wisdom chose, ‡  
Thy Pow'r to Being brings.*

## VII.

*Thou ev'ry where hast Way, ‡  
And all Things serve thy Might; ‡  
Thy ev'ry Act pure Blessing is, ‡  
Thy Path unsully'd Light.*

## VIII.

*When thou arisest, LORD, ‡  
 What shall thy Work withstand? ‡  
 When all thy Children want, thou giv'st, ‡  
 Who, who shall stay thy Hand?*

## IX.

*Give to the Winds thy Fears; ‡  
 Hope, and be undismay'd; ‡  
 GOD hears thy Sighs, and counts thy Tears, ‡  
 GOD shall lift up thy Head.*

## X.

*Thro' Waves, and Clouds, and Storms, ‡  
 He gently clears thy Way; ‡  
 Wait thou his Time, so shall this Night ‡  
 Soon end in joyous Day.*

## XI.

*Still heavy is thy heart; ‡  
 Still sink thy Spirits down: ‡  
 Cast off the Weight, let Fear depart, ‡  
 And ev'ry Care be gone.*

## H

XII. *What*

## XII.

*What tho' thou rulest not, ‡  
 Yet Heav'n, and Earth, and Hell ‡  
 Proclaim, GOD sitteth on the Throne, ‡  
 And ruleth all Things well!*

## XIII.

*Leave to his Sov'reign Sway ‡  
 To choose and to command; ‡*

## SIXTH JOURNAL

547

*So shalt thou wond'ring own his Way, ‡  
How wise, how strong his Hand.*

## XIV.

*Far, far above thy Thought, ‡  
His Counsel shall appear, ‡  
When fully he the Work hath wrought, ‡  
That caus'd thy needless Fear.*

## XV.

*Thou seest our Weakness, LORD, ‡  
Our Hearts are known to thee; ‡  
O lift thou up the sinking Hand, ‡  
Confirm the feeble Knee!*

## XVI.

*Let us in Life, in Death, ‡  
Thy steadfast Truth declare, ‡  
And publish with our latest Breath, ‡  
Thy Love and Guardian Care! ‡  
Amen and Amen!*

**FINIS.**

**BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by JAMES HUTTON, &  
at the Bible and Sun without Temple-Bar.**

I. TWenty Sermons on Various Subjects, by *George Whitefield*, A.B. of *Pembroke College, Oxford*, 2 vol. 8vo, most of which may be had single.

II. Seventeen of the same Sermons, in 2 vol. 12mo. N.B. The Rev. Mr. *Whitefield's* Journals, and all his other Works will be printed at the same Place.

III. The following Sermons published since by the same Author, viz. 1. *What think ye of Christ?* on *Matth. xxii. 42.* Preached at *Kennington Common*. 2. *The Foolish and Wise Virgins*, on *Matth. xxv. 14.* Preached at *Moorfields* and *Kennington Common*. 3. *The Marriage of Cana*, on *John ii. 2.* Preached at *Blackheath*.

IV. Sixteen Discourses on the Redemption of Man by the Death of Christ, Preached at *Berlin* by the Right Reverend and most illustrious Count *Zinzendorff*, Bishop of the ancient *Moravian Church*, translated from the *High Dutch*.

V. Hymns of Sacred Poems, by *John Wesley*, M.A. Fellow of *Lincoln College, Oxford*, and *Charles Wesley*, M.A. Student of *Christ's Church, Oxford*.

VI. Two Sermons on Free-Grace, and Salvation by Faith, by *John Wesley*, M.A. Fellow of *Lincoln's College, Oxford*.

VII. A Sermon on Free-Grace by the Reverend Mr. *Ingham*.

VIII. The Country Parson's Advice to his Parishioners, in two Parts. 1. Containing a plain and serious

Exhortation to a Religious and Virtuous Life. 2. General Directions how to live accordingly.

IX. The Spiritual Combat, or the Christian Pilgrim in his Spiritual Conflict and Conquest, by *John de Castaniza*.

X.

A

X. A Manual of Prayers for the Use of the Scholars of *Winchester College*, and other devout Christians; by Dr. *Thomas Kenn*, late Lord Bishop of *Bath and Wells*.

XI. The true Christian, or Way to a Holy Life; Containing the whole Duty of a Christian, collected chiefly from Bishop Taylor.

XII. A serious Exhortation to Repentance, or Sorrow for Sin, and a strict and mortified Life. Written about the Middle of the fourth Century, by St. *Ephraim*, the *Syrian* deacon of *Edessa*.

XIII. Private Prayers for every Day in the Week, and for the several Parts of each Day, translated from the *Greek Devotions* of Bishop *Andrews*, with Additions, by *George Stanhope*, D.D. late Dean of *Canterbury*.

XIV. The Christian's Support under all Afflictions; being the Divine Meditations of *John Gerhard*, D.D. translated from the *Latin* Original.

XV. Sermons preached upon several Occasions, by *Benjamin Calamy*, D.D. late Vicar of *St. Lawrence Jewry*, and one of his Majesty's Chaplains in Ordinary. To which is added, a Sermon preached at his Funeral, by *William Sherlock*, D.D. Dean of *St. Paul's*, Master of the *Temple*, and Chaplain in Ordinary to his Majesty.

XVI. The Sinner's Complaints to God, being devout Entertainments of the Soul with God, fitted for all States and Conditions of Christians, whatever their Circumstances or Necessities be.

*At the same Place may be had Bibles, Common Prayer Books, and all Sorts of Books of Piety and Devotion.*

SEVENTH JOURNAL

551

[SEVENTH JOURNAL]

A

CONTINUATION

Of the REVEREND

Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

JOURNAL,

From a few Days after his RETURN to

*GEORGIA*

To his ARRIVAL at

*FALMOUTH,*

ON THE 11TH OF March 1741.

CONTAINING

An ACCOUNT of the Work of GOD at *Georgia, Rhode-Island, New-England, New-York, Pennsylvania, and South-Carolina.*

The Seventh JOURNAL.

LONDON:

Printed by W. STRAHAN, and sold by R. HETT at the *Bible* and *Crown* in the *Poultry*, and Sold by T. COOPER at the *Globe* in *Pater-noster-row*. 1741.

[PRICE ONE SHILLING.]



A

## CONTINUATION

OF

### Mr. *WHITEFIELD*'s

### JOURNAL, &c.

#### *EBENEZER.*

*Wednesday, June 25.*

**W**ENT on *Monday* to, and returned this Evening from *Ebenezer*, which I have seen with no small Satisfaction. Surely there is a Difference, even in this Life, between those that serve the Lord, and those that serve him not. All other Places of the Colony seem to be like *Egypt*, where was Darkness, but *Ebenezer* like the Land of *Goshen*, wherein was great Light. For near four Miles did I walk in almost one continued Field, with a most plentiful Crop of Corn, Pease, Potatoes, &c. growing upon it. All the Product of a few Months Labour. But God gives the Labourers a peculiar Blessing. They are unanimous: The Strong help the Weak: And all seem hearty for the Common-Good. In a few Years the *Saltzburghers*, I believe will be a flourishing People. Their Land is good, and lies very near the River. They already provide Food, and ere long will be capable of providing Raiment for themselves. I shall send them up Cotton, Spinning Wheels, and a Loom to begin a Manufactory for themselves; and next Year they hope their own Land will produce enough Flax, Cotton, &c. to carry it on. I had sweet Communication with their Ministers. Our Sister Orphan-House there is blessed by their Means. And Yesterday was set apart as a Day of Thanks-

B

giving

giving for Assistances lately sent the dear Lambs from *Germany* and *Savannah*. The People seem very grateful. They willingly received me into their clean, but little Huts,

and seemed proud when I would accept any Thing from their Hands. Blessed be God, certainly some Blessings are in Reserve in Georgia. As I said formerly, so I say again, they who help the Saltzburghers will do a good Work. They want Assistance. Lord raise them up Benefactors for thy infinite Mercy's Sake.

#### SAVANNAH.

Friday, June 27. With great Comfort received Captain Grant, who has been at Cape Fear to fetch a Load of Boards, and returned with his Sloop in fourteen Days. He was received very courteously by the head Inhabitants; and many, he tells me, were in Expectation of seeing me at North Carolina. Lord send me whithersoever and whensoever it shall seem good to thy Divine Majesty. Amen and Amen.

Monday, June 30. For these ten Days last past, have had frequent Communications from above, both by Way of Humiliation and Exaltation. God has often been pleased, since my Return, to make himself known in our Sanctuary, and has caused a mighty Power to attend the Word preached, both in Publick and Private. I have been much refreshed with a Packet of Letters from English Friends. Providence seems to smile upon the Orphan-House, and to prosper every Thing I take in Hand. A wealthy, moral, civiliz'd Planter, of South Carolina came lately to see us, and God, I believe, has been pleased to give him a true Knowledge of himself, and a true Faith in his dear Son Jesus Christ. His Wife also was much quickened, having been wrought upon by God sometime last Winter. She was a great Admirer of Archbishop Tillotson; but having her Eyes now opened, to discern spiritual Things, can no longer take up with such Husks, fit only for carnal, unawakened, unbelieving Reasoners to eat. With this happy Pair (hearing that Charles-town People were in great Expectations of seeing me before I went to the Northward, and that God had been pleased to work by my late Ministry among them) I and a dear Friend left Savannah this Morning, in a large Boat, conversed with one another in the Way, and arrived at Beaufort in Port-Royal about Midnight. Our Friend and his Wife went to a Re-

lation's House, but my Companion and I chose to continue in the Boat, where our Lord **was pleased to** cause us to lie

down,

3

down and sleep in Peace and Safety. *Blessed, for ever blessed be the Keeper of Israel, who neither slumbereth nor sleepeth.*

### ***Beaufort in Port-Royal.***

*Tuesday, July 1.* **Felt a most sweet and humble Sense of the divine Presence in my Soul this Morning.** Went as soon as it was Light, to a Relation of our Fellow Travellers, and afterwards had some **close** Conversation with Mr. J—— *[[Jones]]*, the Minister of the Parish, about the great Doctrines of the Gospel. He received us with much Tenderness and Respect, but thought I went too far in condemning Archbishop Tillotson. I think the Arguments I brought were conclusive, and the Account my new Convert (**being** one of his Parishioners) gave of God's Dealing with his Soul **was** rational, and as he confess'd satisfactory: But he could not see clearly into the Doctrine of *Free Justification*, without Regard to any Thing foreseen in the Creature. However, being more noble than most of his **other** Brethren, he was candid, courteous, and notwithstanding he was in Danger of incurring the Commissary's Displeasure thereby, **yet** he read Prayers, and requested me to preach in the Evening at his Church. I **did** preach, but to a small Auditory, there being but little Notice given of **my Preaching**. After Sermon, Mr. J—— **returned me Thanks**, and having promised to preach again, God willing, in my Return to *Savannah*, I took my Leave, and spent the Evening with my Fellow-Travellers at their Relations Houses. *May God convert every one related to them, and make them all Members of the Household of Faith. Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen.*

### ***CHARLESTOWN.***

*Thursday, July 3.* Set out Yesterday **about** one in the Morning. Reach'd Mr. *Bryan's* Plantation about ten. Stayed and din'd **comfortably** together. **Wrote a few Letters**. Rode through extreme Heat. Put in and lay at a Planter's House,

by Reason of the Thunder, Lightning and Rain. Breakfasted this Morning at Mr. B——'s, of *Ponpon*. Pray'd, talk'd of the Things of God, and was enabled to hold out, notwithstanding the Weather was exceeding hot, till I came to *Charlestown*, about eighty Miles from *Beaufort*. Here again my Spirits were much raised, and my Heart comforted by a Packet of Letters from the Northward, giving me an Account how the Word of God runs and is glorified in *Phil-*

B 2

*adelphia,*

4

*adelphia*, and other adjacent Places. *The Lord's Name be praised from the Rising up of the Sun to the going down of the same.*

*Friday, July 4.* Lay at a Gentlewoman's House, who came last Night to give me an Invitation. Was visited by many dear Friends of the Town, who were rejoiced to see me. Received a Letter from the Commissary, which I immediately answered. Wrote some Letters to *Savannah*. Dispatched some Affairs for the Orphan-House, and preached in the Evening in the Independent Meeting-House to as large and attentive Congregations as usual. *Blessed be God for giving the People a Hearing Ear. Lord give them also an obedient Heart for thy dear Son's Sake. Amen.*

*Sunday, July 6.* Preached twice Yesterday, and twice To-day, and had great Reason to believe our Lord got himself the Victory in some Hearts: *For the Word was with Power.* Went to Church Morning and Afternoon, and heard the Commissary preach as virulent, unorthodox and inconsistent a Discourse as ever I heard in my Life. His Heart seem'd full of Choler and Resentment. Out of the Abundance thereof he poured forth so many bitter Words against the Methodists (as he call'd them) in general, and me in particular, that several who intended to receive the Sacrament at his Hands withdrew. Never, I believe, was such a Preparation-Sermon preached before. I could not help thinking the Preacher was of the same Spirit as Bishop *Gardner* in Queen *Mary's* Days. After Sermon, he sent his Clerk to desire me not to come to the Sacrament till he had spoke with me. I immediately retired to my Lodgings, rejoicing

that I was accounted worthy to suffer this further Degree of Contempt for my dear Lord's Sake. *Blessed Jesus, lay it not to the Commissary's Charge. Amen and Amen.*

### **ASHLEY-FERRY.**

*Monday, July 7.* Set out early this Morning, in Company with several, whose Hearts the Lord had lately opened, and went to the House of **one** Mr. G—— [[*Chandler*]], a gracious Baptist Minister, who lives about fourteen Miles from *Charlestown*. After Dinner, according to Appointment, I preached at his Meeting-House, to the Conviction of some, and Comfort of others, who came to me rejoicing that the exploded Doctrines of the Gospel were so publickly and successfully preached, Sermon being ended, and much Importunity used, I went with some *Charlestown* Friends to the House of Mrs. P——r's,

about

5

about five Miles from the Meeting-House, but was obliged to lie down (as I now am generally every Day) by Reason of the violent Heat of the Weather, and great Expence of Sweat. **However**, God strengthened me much, and so assisted me in giving an Exhortation to the Company that came with me, that all seemed to be put under great Concern. Three or four in particular came out telling me how powerfully God was working in their Souls. *Father, shew that it is thy especial Work, by carrying it on and perfecting it till the Day of our Lord Jesus. Amen.*

### **Dorchester and Ashley-Ferry.**

*Tuesday, July 8.* Left my Lodgings **about** eight in the Morning, and hasted to *Dorchester*, where I preached twice **with much of the divine Presence, and** to a large Audience in Mr. O——'s [[*Osgood's*]] Meeting-House, a young Independent Minister. At four in the Afternoon we set out again; took a little Refreshment at a Gentleman's House in the Way, and lay at Mr. C——'s at Night. Here, my bodily Strength failed me again. And therefore, being very weak, I retired to Bed as soon as possible, but slept very little. *Lord, hasten that blessed Time when I shall sleep no more.*

*Oh when shall I, in endless Day,†  
 For ever chase dark Sleep away,†  
 And Hymns, with the supernal Choir,†  
 Incessant sing, and never tire!*

***Ashley-Ferry and Charlestown.***

*Wednesday, July 9.* Found myself still weaker **than before**; but was strengthened to preach under a Tree near Mr. C——'s Meeting-House **about** ten in the Morning, it being now too small to contain the Congregation. People seem'd to come from all Parts, and the Word (**as I was told**) came with a convincing Power. Having changed my Linen (which I am obliged to do after every Sermon, by Reason of my prodigious Sweating) I hastened to *Charlestown*; but my Body was so exceeding weak, and the Sun shon so intensely hot, that five Miles before I reach'd Town, I called in at a Publick-House, and lay for a considerable Time, almost breathless and dead. But God **poured ineffable comforts into my Soul**. And being thereby strengthened in the Inner-man, I once more set forwards with my **dear** Fellow-Travellers,

reached

6

reached Town about four, and preached at six in the usual Place, **and** with more Freedom and Power than could **any ways** be expected, considering the great Weakness of my Body. But I can do all Things through Christ strengthening me. *I thank thee, Holy Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, that I have so often the Sentence of Death within myself. Oh, let me be daily taught thereby, not in the least to trust to myself, but in thee the everliving God!*

***Christ's Church, Charlestown, and John's Island.***

*Saturday, July 12.* Went over the Water on *Thursday*, and read Prayers and preached at the Request of the Church-Wardens and Vestry at *Christ's Church*. Returned in the Evening to *Charlestown*; preached twice there Yesterday, and went this Morning to *John's Island*, about twenty Miles up the River, whither I was invited by Colonel G——s. He received me and my Friends most hospitably, provided several

Horses, Chairs, &c. for us and his Family. We rode **very pleasantly** to the Church. There was a great Congregation. God strengthened me to read Prayers and preach twice with much Freedom. About four we returned to the Colonel's. I **eat with some Appetite**. Was enabled to give a warm and close Exhortation to the Rich that sat about me, and returned to Town in the Evening **with my dear Friends**, praising and blessing God. *Glory be to his most holy Name, Dagon seems daily to fall before the Ark.* A lasting Impression, I am persuaded, is made on many Hearts: And God, I believe, will yet shew that he hath much People in *Charlestown*, and the Countries round about. *Lord, thou hast visited them with thy Judgements, melt them down with thy Mercies. Stretch out the golden Sceptre of thy Favour, and bruise them no more with thy Iron Rod!* **Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen!**

Sunday, July 13. Preached this Morning **with much Power**, and collected in the Evening for my poor Orphans. Great Numbers stood without the Doors, and, it raining very hard, **in** Time of divine Service, many of them were driven away. However, God caused the other People's Hearts to devise liberal Things. Upwards of 50 *l.* Sterling was collected on the Occasion. Most shewed a Readiness to assist me, **and the Lord was pleased much to enlarge my Heart to give Praise unto his Name.**

In the Morning, I went to Church, and heard the Commissary preach. **But**, had some *infernal Spirit* been sent to draw my Picture, I think it scarcely possible he could paint

me

7

me in more horrid Colours. I think, if ever, then was the Time that all Manner of Evil was spoken against me falsely for Christ's Sake. The Commissary seemed to ransack Church-History for Instances of Enthusiasm and Grace abused. He drew a Parallel between me and all the *Oliverians*, Ranters, Quakers, *French* Prophets, till he came down to a Family of the *Dutarts*, who lived not many Years ago in *South Carolina*, and were guilty of the most notorious Incests and Murders. To the Honour of God's Free-Grace be it spoken, whilst **he** was representing me thus, I felt the Blessed

Spirit strengthening and refreshing my Soul. God, at the same Time gave me to see what I was by Nature. How I had deserved his eternal Wrath, and therefore I did not feel the least Resentment against the Preacher: No, I pitied, I prayed for him, and wish'd, from my Soul, that the Lord would convert him, as he did once the Persecutor *Saul*, and let him know that it is *Jesus* whom he persecutes. In the Evening many came, *as* I was inform'd, to hear what I would say; but as the Commissary hinted, that his Sermons *should* be printed, and as they were full of invidious Falsehoods, I held my Tongue, and made little or no Reply. *Father, forgive him, for he knows not what he does.* Saturday, July 19. Preach'd *all this Week*, twice every Day at *Charlestown*, except on *Wednesday* and *Thursday* Evening, the last of which Days I was called upon to go to *James's Island*, to preach at the House of Madame *W—d*. This Gentlewoman, as she inform'd me herself, was *once* much prejudiced against me, insomuch that she thought it dangerous to come and hear me. But having read my Sermons, she changed her Mind, and coming both to Town, and to *John's Island* to hear me preach, was, with her Daughter and another Gentlewoman, much melted down. Being given to Hospitality, she provided Food sufficient for a great Multitude. People came from Town and *all* the *other* neighbouring Places. Her Barn was put into proper Order, and I read Prayers and preached in it, *with much of God's Blessed Spirit in my Soul*. A lovely Melting was visible in several Parts of the Auditory. After Sermon God enabled me to speak many Gospel Truths, amidst a polite Set of People. At the Request of Madame *W—d*, I staid all Night, which gave me an Opportunity of teaching her Family the Way of God more perfectly, and also of resting my weary Body, which seems to be declining *more and*

more

8

more every Day. *Blessed be God, I hope it will not be long ere Worms destroy it, and my Soul carried to see God.*

*Jesus, to thy dear faithful Hand.†*  
*My naked Soul I trust;†*



*My Flesh awaits thy blest Command,  
To drop into my Dust.*

[Here would follow a particular Account of my Trial, but it is judged proper not to publish it, whilst the Cause is depending.]

*Sunday, July 20.* Preached in the Morning as usual, and went afterwards to Church to hear the Commissary. His Text was, *Take heed how ye hear.* At first I thought we should have a peaceable Sermon, especially since we had conversed the Night before so amicably. But the Gall soon began to flow from his Tongue, tho' not with **so much** Bitterness as **the** last *Sunday*. He endeavoured to apologize for his Proceedings, condemned all that followed me, and gave *all* Hopes of Heaven that adhered to him and the Church. In the Evening (tho' I went off my Bed to do it, and was carried in a Chaise) the Lord Jesus strengthened me to take my last Farewell of the People of *Charlestown*. **My Soul was full of Tenderness for them, and** many seemed to sympathize with me.

Blessed be God for sending me once more among them. Tho' the Heat of the Weather and Frequency of Preaching, have perhaps given an irrecoverable Stroke to the Health of my Body; yet, I rejoice, knowing it has been for the Conviction, and I believe Conversion of many **a** Soul. *Glory be to God on high, the Fields here, as well as elsewhere, are now white, ready to Harvest. Numbers are seeking after Jesus. And* two or three **gracious** Dissenting Ministers, by my Advice, agreed to set up a weekly Lecture. I advised the People, since the Gospel was not preached in the Church, to go and hear it in the Meeting-Houses. *May the Lord be with both Ministers and People, and cause them to preach and hear as become the Gospel of Christ. What makes the Change more remarkable in Charlestown People is, that they seemed to me, at my first coming, to be a People* wholly devoted to Pleasure. One well acquainted with their Circumstances and Manners told me, **more had been annually** spent on polite Entertainments than **Poor's-Rate** came to. But now the Jewellers and Dancing-Masters begin to cry out *That*

*their*

9

*their Craft is in Danger.* A vast Alteration is discernible in the Lady's Dress: And some, whilst I have been speaking, have been so convinced of the Sin of wearing Jewels, that I have seen them, with Blushes, put up their Hands and cover their Jewels with their Mobs. But, I hope, the Reformation has went further than Externals. Many moral, good Sort of Men, who before were settled on their Lees, have been gloriously awakened to seek after Jesus Christ. And many a Lydia's Heart hath the Lord opened to receive the Things that were spoken. Indeed the Word often came like a Hammer and a Fire. And a Door, I believe, will be opened for teaching the poor Negroes. Several of the them have done their Work in less Time than usual, that they may come to hear me. Many of their Owners, who have been awakened, resolve to teach them. Had I Time and proper Schoolmasters, I might immediately erect a Negroe-School in South Carolina, as well as in Pennsylvania. Many would willingly contribute both Money and Land. Every day almost something or another was sent for my Orphans at Georgia. The People were very solicitous about my Health, when they saw me weak, and sent me many small Presents. I feared sometimes they would be too hot; but I endeavoured to stop their Resentment against the Commissary, as much as possible, and recommended Peace and Moderation to them, in most of my Discourses. May the Lord Jesus reward them for all their Works of Faith, and Labours which have proceeded of Love. May he never leave them without a Teaching Priest, and grant that the Seed sown in their Hearts may grow up into an eternal Harvest! Amen and Amen!

#### **Ashley-Ferry and Ponpon.**

Monday, July 22[[21]]. Left Charlestown very early, accompanied by many of the Inhabitants, who, I hope, will prove true Followers of the Lamb. Read Prayers and preached at Ashley Ferry to a large Congregation, and great Power was amongst them. The Weather continuing extreme hot, sweating and preaching weakened me very much. I went in a Chariot to Madam B——'s, who kindly invited me and my

Friends to Dinner. I **eat** but little; took Leave of my dear Fellow-travellers, as well as I could; took Horse, put in for Shelter from the Rain at Major **S——**'s, in the Evening, and reached Mr. **B——**'s, of *Ponpon*, nearly forty Miles from Town about Midnight. Here I had the Pleasure of meeting Mr.

C

*Hugh*

10

*Hugh B——n*: But Nature being quite worn out, I went to Rest, as soon as possible, not doubting **but** the Lord would cause me to renew my Strength before the Morning. *Why should I doubt it, since the Lord hath said, I will never leave or forsake thee?*

*Tuesday, July 23[[22]]*. Slept **pretty** well, but found **myself** not strong enough to engage in Family-duty. Met with, **and was civilly treated by** Mr. **S——** and Mr. **S——**, two *Scots* Presbyterian Ministers, and Mr. **T——** a Church of *England* Missionary, who refused to preach or sit in Judgement against me. About Noon God strengthened me to ride a Mile, and preach, under a great Tree, to an attentive Auditory. Some, **I observed**, were affected. **And** I would willingly have preached a second Time; but my Body was so weak, that, by the Advice of Friends, I resolved to continue where I was all Night. *Surely it cannot be long ere this earthly Tabernacle will be dissolved. Never did the Hart pant more eagerly after thy Water Brooks, than my Soul thirsts after the Enjoyment of thee my God.*

#### ***Hoospanah-Chapel and Good-Hope.***

*Wednesday, July 24[[23]]*. Rose some Time before Day, and about Noon got to *Hoospanah-Chapel*, near thirty Miles from Mr. **B——**'s. Here I preached to a very small Auditory, few People living thereabouts; **but (as I was afterwards informed) not without good Effect**. Sermon being over, I went on Horseback to *Good-Hope*, where Mr. *Hugh B——n* lived, and several followed, hoping I would preach again in the Evening. But here my bodily Strength so failed me, and **God poured such ineffable Thirstings and Hungerings into my Soul after him**; that I sometimes hoped he was about to set my imprisoned Soul at Liberty. Surely God

then placed me upon Mount *Pisgah*, and gave me a distant Prospect of the heavenly *Canaan*. I stretched for Immortality, and longed for the blessed Angels to come and carry me to *Abraham's Harbour*. These Words, *I know that my Redeemer liveth*, with wonderful Sweetness and Power **were pressed upon** my Soul: And the Thoughts of my Saviour's dying Love, and of the Lord's being *my Righteousness*, melted me into Tears. My dear Friend and Companion **wept over me, answered almost Tear for Tear**, and seemed willing to take his Flight with me into the Arms of our beloved Jesus. The poor Negroes crowded round the Windows,

and,

11

and, **by their Looks and Officiousness**, expressed a great Concern for me. Their Master had acquainted them, I believe, that I was their Friend. He himself sat by and wept **too**. But, **alas! God soon shewed me that** the Time of my Departure was not yet at Hand. In a short Time, I **perceived** my Body grow stronger, and I was enabled to walk about. **As well as I could** I joined in Family-Prayer, **and begg'd of** God, if I was not to die, but live, it might be to declare the Works and Loving-kindness of the Lord. *Grant this, O Father, for thy dear Son's Sake. Amen and Amen.*

### ***Good-Hope and Beaufort.***

*Thursday, July 25[[24]].* Being too weak to ride on Horseback, I went in Mr. B——'s Boat to *Beaufort*. We got thither about ten in the Morning, but the Heat of the Sun almost struck me down, and took away my Senses, as soon as I put my Foot on Shore. Kind Mr. J——s courteously received me. In the Cool of the Evening, I preached in his Church, to a larger Auditory, **and with more Power**, than when there last. Mr. J—— thanked me for my Sermon, disapproved entirely of the Commissary's Treatment of me, and kindly entertained me and my Friends all Night. *The Lord Jesus bless his Habitation, and give him to know how it is that we are freely redeemed by his precious Blood!*

**Beaufort and Savannah.**

*Friday, July 26* [[25]]. Took Boat before Day, and having fine Weather, and a favourable Gale, reached Savannah, and saluted my dear Family about five in the Evening. My Body being weak, it could not bear up under the Joy and Satisfaction which I felt in my Mind. However, I kneel'd down, wept out a short Prayer and Thanksgiving, and, as well as I could, told my Assistants what God had done for my Soul. In the Evening, I expounded, and, and undesignedly, thinking it was the Lesson for the Night, read the last Chapter of St. Paul's second Epistle to Timothy, in which were these encouraging Words. *But, watch thou in all Things, endure Afflictions, do the Work of an Evangelist, make full Proof of thy Ministry. Alexander the Coppersmith did me much Evil, the Lord reward him according to his Works. Of whom be thou aware also. For he hath greatly withstood our Words. At my first Trial, no Man stood by me. Notwith-*

C 2

*standing,*

12

*standing the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me, that by me, the Preaching might be fully known: And I was delivered out of the Mouth of the Lion: And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil Work, and will preserve me to his heavenly Kingdom, to whom be Glory for ever and ever. Amen.*

*Thursday, August 1* [[July 31]]. Continued very weak, ever since my Return from Charlestown; but was much refreshed this Morning with the Sight of some dear Friends, (amongst whom was Mr. T——y [[Tilly]], a Baptist-Minister) who came in our Sloop to see the Orphan-House. I gave them the Meeting at early Prayers, and God enabled me to expound with Power. *Lord let them not depart hence without having some spiritual Gift imparted to them. Amen and Amen!*

*Sunday, August 3.* Felt more than common of the divine Presence in my Soul since the Arrival of Charlestown Friends, who brought the Orphans many Presents, and blessed God for the Footsteps of his Goodness and Providence, plainly discernible amongst us. But last Night, through Weakness of Body, and a prodigious Concern, which lay upon my Soul, just as I began Family Prayer, I was struck, as I thought, almost

with Death. I put up a few broken Accents and breathed out, *Lord Jesus, receive my Spirit.* This Morning *my Master shewed me why I was thus humbled.* Soon after I rose, I found that Mr. J—— and his Wife of *Port-Royal*, Mr. *Jonathan B——*, Brother of Mr. *Hugh B——*, and Mr. *B——ll*, were all come to pay us a Visit. Tho' exceeding weak, and I had almost laid aside Thoughts of officiating this Day, yet, upon Mr. J——'s intimating that Friends came expecting to hear me, I promised, if I could, to preach, and begg'd him to read Prayers. He did, but I found myself so ill, that I would fain have persuaded Mr. *T——y* to preach for me. He *peremptorily* refused, urging that God would strengthen me if I begun. *Upon this I stood up, and soon found Power communicated to me from above. I felt a sweet Melting in my Soul, and ere* I had prayed long, Mr. *B——ll* dropp'd down, as tho' shot with a Gun.—He *soon* got up, and sat attentively to hear the Sermon. The *Power soon* spread *abroad.* The greatest Part of the Congregation were under great Concern. Tears trickled down apace. God manifested himself also amongst us much during the Time of the Sacrament, and I went home ashamed that I was so unwilling to preach. I stood justly reprov'd, when Mr. *T——y*, after we came home, said, "Did I not tell you, God would strengthen you?"

*Dearest*

13

*Dearest Lord, for thy Mercies Sake, never let me distrust Thee again. Oh me of little Faith!*

*Monday, August 4.* Was sent for at Noon to see Mr. *Jonathan B——n.* At my coming, I found him under great Concern, and strong Convictions of Sin. *Oh! How did* he reflect on his *past* misspent Life! *How did he* bless God for bringing him now to *Savannah*, and *desire* that he might be found in Christ *ere* he returned Home! His Wife sat weeping by, and Mr. *B——ll* lay on a Bed groaning in Bitterness of Soul, under a Sense of Guilt, and crying out for an Interest in Jesus. I asked "what caused him to fall down Yesterday." He answered, "The Power of God's Word." After *about* half an Hour's Conversation on the Nature of the New-Birth, and the Necessity of a *saving* Closure with

the Lord Christ; I kneeled down, prayed with them, and then took my Leave, well hoping, that the Lord would pluck them as Fire-brands from the Burning. *Even so Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.*

Sunday, August 10 [[9]]. Went on Tuesday with Mr. B——J——s, &c. to Bethesda, and had the Pleasure of seeing the Work of God going on in most of our Visitor's Hearts. It was but seldom I could officiate; but, when I did, the Lord generally caused the Word to come with very great Power. This Morning I expounded early as usual, and read Part of the Prayers at ten o' Clock; but got Mr. T——y to preach, who (tho' a Baptist Minister) joined with us in receiving the Sacrament, in the Church of *England* Way. The KING was pleased to sit at his Table: He brought us into his Banqueting House, and caused it to be a Feast of fat Things to our Souls. Many, I believe, fed on Jesus in their Hearts with Thanksgiving. *After the Ordinance was over, the Lord enlarged my Heart, and I prayed as the Spirit gave me Utterance.* I went home much refreshed in my Soul, but so weak in Body that I declined going to public Worship in the Afternoon. In the mean while God gave me a fresh Supply of Strength. About the Evening, when my Friends were sitting down together, finding the Power of the Lord come upon me, I began to speak to them of the Things of God. A great Alteration was soon discernible in most of the Company; their Concern gradually increased, till many burst into Floods of Tears, and one fell on the Ground.—E'er I had done, some of my Parishioners came up, and the rest of my Family: *They also felt the divine Power.* When I had done speaking to them from God, I spoke in Prayer to

God

<sup>14</sup>

God for them. My Soul was carried, as it were, out of the Body, and I was enabled to wrestle mightily with our Lord in their Behalf—He did not let us go without a Blessing.—The Room was filled with the Cries of those around me, and many, I believe, at that Time sought Jesus sorrowing.—The Concern continued after the Duty was over—*Several were in great Agonies of Soul, and a Cherokee Indian Trad-*

er, who providentially was present, desired to speak with me, saying, *he never saw or felt the like before. Mr. J——s also of Port-Royal (who went away on Friday, but was forced back by contrary Winds, and officiated for me this Afternoon at Savannah) told a Friend that surely God was with us of a Truth. Blessed be his rich, sovereign, and distinguishing Grace! Lord make me lowly in mine own Eyes, and cause me still to go on from conquering to conquer. Not unto me, not unto me, but unto Thee, my King and my God be all the Glory!*

Saturday, August 15 [[16]]. Parted with Mr. B—— and Mr. B——n, on Tuesday, who, I hope, could say, *Lord now lettest thou thy Servants depart in Peace; for our Eyes have seen, our Hearts have felt thy Salvation. Met with closer outward Tryals this Week than ever I was visited with before. Was forced several Times to come out thro' Concern of Soul, and Weakness of Body in the midst of public Worship, and, had not God uncommonly supported me, I must frequently have given up the Ghost. But, as Troubles abounded, Consolations abounded also. These Words, But David strengthened himself in the Lord his God, were pressed with a wonderful supporting Power upon my Soul. The Eleventh of Hebrews also was blessed to me. I found the Benefit of being afflicted. God enabled me to sanctify him in my Heart, and my greatest Grief was, that I should be so naughty as to oblige my heavenly Father to chastize and scourge me. Lord, I adore thy infinite, condescending Goodness. Oh do not leave me to myself, but purge, O purge me, for thy Mercies Sake, that I may bring forth more Fruit!*

*Correct me when I go astray,†  
And lead me in thy perfect Way.*

Monday, August 17 [[18]]. Preached Yesterday Morning, and took Leave of my Parishioners. Administer'd the blessed Sacrament, and gave an Exhortation afterwards. Settled every Thing to the best of my Power for the Orphan-house, which succeeds beyond Expectation, and was so filled with

the



15

the Love of Christ in this Evening's Exposition, and my private Farewell-discourse, that I could almost say I was within the Veil.—My hearers, both in public and private, were vastly affected, and a strange Woman was so touched, that she came to me confessing her Sins, and crying out *what shall I do to be saved?* When I came to converse with her, I found God had struck her the last Time I preached at *Port-Royal*, and I hope he will now effectually call her by his Grace. Pleased, and I hope, in some Measure thankful to the Lord of all Lords for setting such Seals to my Ministry just at Departure. About 10 at Night I went on Board our Sloop with my other dear Visitors, in order to go to *Charlestown*; where, by the Advice of Friends, the Captain is to take in Freight for *Boston*, for the Benefit of the Orphan-house. *The Lord preserve my dear Lambs and Flock, in my Absence; bring them into green Pastures, and lead them beside the Waters of Comfort, for his own Name's Sake!*

#### CHARLESTOWN.

Friday, August 21 [[22]]. Had a comfortable Passage with my dear Friends. Found the Sea Air improved my Health; and arrived at *Charlestown* about 4 this Afternoon. Many came to the Wharf, and saluted me most kindly. I retired as soon as possible, to my Lodgings; and spent the Evening most sweetly at the House of Mr. F——r; where I hope many true Disciples of the blessed Jesus were met together. The Lord, who once came to the eleven by Night, and said, Peace be unto you, I am persuaded by his Spirit spoke to many of them. The Lord, I believe, has made a willing People in this Day of his Power. *Praised be his Name from the rising of the Sun, unto the going down of the same!*

Monday, August 24 [[25]]. Being weak in Body (except on Sundays) I have preached only once each Day: But I think with greater Power than ever, and with greater Success.—I scarce know the Time, wherein I did not see a considerable melting in some Part or other of the Congregation, and often it spread over all the Parts of it. Several Times I was so weak before I began to preach, that I thought it almost im-

possible **I should go** through half the Discourse. But the Lord quickened, enlightened, and supported me above Measure. Out of Weakness, I became strong, **and the Lord manifested himself in the Sanctuary**. The Audiences were more numerous than ever, and it was supposed, not less than 4000

were

16

were in and about the Meeting-house, when I preached my Farewell-Sermon. The Commissary, having run his utmost Length, thought it best to say no more **himself**; finding, when I was here last, that Jesus Christ was not preached in the Church, my Conscience would not suffer me to attend on those that preached there any more. I therefore went to the Baptist and Independent Meeting-houses, where Jesus Christ was preached **in Sincerity**. I **likewise** administered the Sacrament thrice in a private House, **Yesterday, Yesterday was sevensnight, and this Morning**—Never did I see any Thing more solemn.—The Room was large, and most **dis-solved into** Tears, as tho' they were weeping at their Saviour's Cross. Surely **Jesus** Christ crucified was **evidently** set forth before them. Many, at their Request, stood by that did not receive, but they wept bitterly. I prayed for them all **with great Power**, and I hope the Lord will **cloath** them with a Wedding Garment. What was best, Baptists, Church Folks and Presbyterians, all joined together, and received according to the Church of *England*, except two, who desired to have it sitting: I willingly complied, knowing it was a Thing quite indifferent. Many others hearing how God was amongst us Yesterday, desired I would administer to Day; I did, and our Lord was with us again. Having more Leisure from my private Studies, **by Reason** my Weakness **would** not permit me to read much; I had better Opportunities of conversing with, and confirming those that were under Convictions. Most of them, I found grown in Grace, and their Hearts softened by redeeming Love. Mr. *Jonathan B—n* came much established. Mr. *Hugh B—n* was left sick at Home **drinking deeply of the Cup of God's Consolations**, and his Wife **a gracious Woman** came to *Charlestown*. By my Advice they resolved to begin a Negroe-School.

A young Stage Player, convinced when I was at *New-York* last, and who providentially came to *Georgia*, when Mr. *Jonathan B—n* was there, is to be their first Master. The Time would fail me *was* I to *descend to* every Particular.—Great, a very great Alteration is made in the Life and Manners of several of the polite Ladies. The Rooms that were usually employed for Balls and Assemblies *were* now turned into Society-Rooms. Every Night, where I was invited to Supper, it became customary to have the House filled with Company, with whom the Lord enabled me to pray and exhort *often with great Power; but* once I was so sick that I was obliged to be led Home. Many came in private under the deepest

Con-

17

Convictions. Several were esteemed mad by their Relations. One young Lady *in particular* was for some Time turned out of Doors, but afterwards was recalled; and one who was looked upon as a very good Man, was convinced of Self-righteousness in an extraordinary Manner, and burnt near 40 *l.* worth of Books written by such as *Mr. Chubb, Foster, &c.* The *Care which* People *express'd for my Health and Preservation, was uncommon.* They were *generally* sending me something or *another*, and so loaded our Sloop with Sea Stores, that I was *obliged* to send much of them to the Orphan-house. *How this Work will end I know not.* *At present there is a comfortable Prospect that the Lord will gather to himself out of Charlestown, a peculiar People zealous of good Works.* Being to be absent from them for a long Season, I exhorted them with all my Power to continue in the Grace of God; I forwarned them of their Danger, and told them how they must deny themselves, and take up their daily Crosses, if they would follow Jesus Christ. Having our Sloop freighted, and the Wind favouring us, after Dinner, with several *Charlestown* Friends, I embarked for *Rhode-Island*, intending to go from thence by Land to *Boston*. In the Evening we got over the Bar, *but* the Pilot would *not* take *any* Thing for his Trouble. Here I parted with all Friends, except four, two of which, God willing, intend to accompany me during this Excursion. *Do thou, O Lord,*

*who claspest the Winds in thy Fists, and holdest the Waters in the Hollow of thy Hand, accept our Thanks for past Mercies, sanctify our Voyage, and if it be best, carry us with Speed to the Haven where we would be. Amen and Amen.*

***Newport in Rhode-Island.***

Sunday, September 14. Was sick Part of the Passage, but found afterwards the Sea-air, under God, much improved my Health. Arrived at New-Port in Rhode-Island just after the Beginning of Evening Service. We came purposely thither first with our Sloop. I think it the most pleasant Entrance I ever yet saw. Almost all the Morning the Wind was contrary; but I found a very strong Inclination to pray that we might arrive Time enough to be present at public Worship. Once I called the People; but something prevented their Coming. At last, finding my Impression increase upon me, I desired their Attendance immediately.—They came. With a strong Assurance that we should be heard,

D

we

18

we prayed that the Lord would turn the Wind, that we might give him Thanks in the great Congregation; and also that he would send such to us, as he would have us to converse with, and who might shew us a Lodging. Though the Wind was a Head when we began; yet when we had done praying, and came up out of the Cabbin, it was quite fair. With a gentle Gale, we sailed pleasantly into the Harbour; got to public Worship before they had finished the Psalms, and sat, as I thought, undiscovered. After Service was over, a Gentleman asked me, whether my Name was not Whitefield? I told him yes; he then desired me to go to his House, and he would take Care to provide Lodgings and Necessaries for me and my Friends. I went, silently admiring God's Goodness, in answering my Prayer so minutely. Several Gentlemen of the Town soon came to pay their Respects to me, amongst whom was Mr. C——p [[Clap]], an aged Dissenting Minister, but the most venerable Man I ever saw in my Life. He look'd like a good old Puritan, and gave me an Idea of what Stamp those Men were, who first settled

*New-England*. His Countenance was very heavenly; he rejoiced much in Spirit at the Sight of me, and prayed most affectionately for a Blessing on my coming to *Rhode-Island*. In the Evening, with him and some more Friends, I waited on Mr. *H——n*, the Minister of the Church of *England*, and desired the Use of his Pulpit. At first he seemed a little unwilling, being desirous to know “what extraordinary Call I had to preach on Week Days, which he said, was disorderly?” I answered, “St. *Paul* exhorted *Timothy* to be “instant in Season and out of Season: That, if the Orders of “the Church were rightly complied with, our Ministers should “read public Prayers twice every Day, and then it would “not be disorderly, at such Times, to give them a Sermon. “As to an extraordinary Call, I claim’d none otherwise “than upon the Apostle’s Injunction, *as we have Opportunity let us do Good unto all Men.*” He still held out, and did not give any positive Answer; but, at last, after he had withdrawn and consulted with the Gentlemen, he said, “If my preaching would promote the Glory of God, and “Good of Souls, I was welcome to his Church, as often as “I would, during my Stay in Town.” We then agreed to make Use of it at ten in the Morning, and three in the Afternoon. After this, I went to wait on the Governor, who seemed to be a very plain Man, and had a very plain House, which much pleased me. By Profession, I think,

he

19

he is a seventh Day Baptist; he is a Man of good Report, as to his Conduct and Dealing with the World. After a short Visit I returned to take leave of Mr. *H——n*, and to fetch my Friends, who were at his House, waiting for me. We then went to the House of Mr. *B——e*, who first spake to me, when coming out of the Church. The House was soon filled with Company. I expounded and prayed for about an Hour, and then retired to a Lodging, the Lord in his good Providence had provided for me. The blessed Jesus was pleased sweetly to manifest himself to my Soul. A Consideration of his distinguishing repeated Mercies quite melted me down, and I called upon all that was within me to praise his

Holy Name. *O Lord, in the Night Season, let me arise and give Thanks unto thee, and let my talking be of thy loving Kindness and tender Mercies all the Day long!*

Monday, September 15. Breakfasted this Morning with old Mr. Clap, and was much edified with his Conversation. I could not but think, whilst at his Table, that I was sitting with one of the Patriarchs. He is full of Days, a Bachelor, and has been Minister of a Congregation in *Rhode-Island* upwards of 40 Years. People of all Denominations, *I find*, respect him. He abounds in good Works, gives all away, and is wonderfully tender of little Children; many of different Persuasions come to be instructed by him. Whenever he dies, I am persuaded, *with good old Simeon*, he will be enabled to say, *Lord, now lettest thou thy Servant depart in Peace*. At 10 in the Morning, and 3 in the Afternoon, according to Appointment, I read Prayers and preached in the Church: 'Tis very commodious, and *I believe* will contain 3000 People. It was more than filled in the Afternoon.—Persons of all Denominations attended—God assisted me much. I observed Numbers affected, and had great Reason to believe the Word of *the Lord* had been sharper than a two-edged Sword in some of the Hearers Souls. After Evening Service, I received the following Letter.

*Newport in Rhode-Island, September 15, 1740.*

*Reverend Sir and beloved Brother,*

“ALthough mine Eyes never saw your Face before this Day, yet my Heart and Soul have been united to you in Love, by the Bond of the Spirit. I have longed and expected to see you for many Months past: Blessed be God, mine Eyes have seen the joyful Days! I trust, through Grace, I have some Things to communicate to

D 2

you

20

“you, that will make your *Heart glad*. I shall omit writing any Thing; and only hereby present my hearty Love, and let you know, that I am waiting now at *the Post* of your Door for Admission: Though I am unwor-

“thy, my Lord is worthy, in whose Name, I trust I  
“come.”

*I am your unworthy Brother,*  
JONATHAN B——R.

On reading it, I could not but think this was one of those young Ministers, whom God had lately made Use of, in such a remarkable Manner, at the East End of *Long-Island*. I sent for him, and found he was the Man. My Heart rejoiced. We walked out, and took sweet Counsel together; and amongst other Things, he told me, that he came to *Rhode-Island*, *under a full Conviction, that* he should see me there, and had been waiting for me about a Week; *for, he said, these Words were mightily impressed upon his Heart, Is not Aaron the Levite thy Brother? I know that he can speak well. And also Behold he cometh forth to meet thee; and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his Heart. And I will be with thy Mouth and with his Mouth, and will teach you what ye shall do.* What rendered this more remarkable was, I had no Intention of sailing into *Rhode-Island*, till about 3 Days before I left *Carolina*; and also, I had a great Desire to put in, if I could, at the East End of *Long-Island*, to see this very Person, whom the great God now brought unto me.—*Lord, accept our Thanks, sanctify our Meeting, and teach us both what we shall do for thy own Names Sake!* After a long Conference, we took Leave of each other for the present, but agreed, that we should now be Companions in Travel, till the Lord should make our Way more plain. In the Evening, I went to venerable Mr. *Clap's*, and exhorted and prayed with a great Multitude, who not only crowded into the House, but thronged every Way about it. The dear old Man rejoiced to see the Things which he saw; and after my Exhortation was over, dismissed me with his Blessing. *Lord Jesus, do thou say Amen to it. Even so Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.*

*Friday [[Tuesday]], September 16. Perceived myself a little low in the Morning, but was enabled to read Prayers and preach with much Flame, Clearness and Power to still greater Audito-*

ries than Yesterday. It being Assembly Time, the Gentlemen adjourned in order to attend the Service, and several

In-

21

Invitations were given me to come to other adjacent Places. The People were exceedingly attentive. Tears trickled down their Cheeks; and they so far prevailed with me by their Importunity, that, *by the divine Permission*, I promised to call upon them in my Return from *Boston*. When I came Home to my Lodgings, the Woman of the House saluted me with "Blessed art thou of the Lord." I looked round to see the Reason of such a Salutation, and on the Couch there lay a young Woman under great Distress of Soul. After a little Conversation, I found she had a gracious Discovery of the Lord Jesus made to her Soul, when I was speaking these Words, *Come see a Man that told me all Things that ever I did*. She told me "She had often grieved the Spirit of God, "but now she believed the Lord was calling her Home effectually. The Word, added she, came with such Power, that I was obliged to go out of the Church, otherwise "I must have disturbed the Congregation. When I came "from Home, contrary to my Parents Inclinations, I insisted, I knew not why, on staying at *Newport* 6 Weeks. "They *would have me* stay only a Month, but at last consented that I should stay my own Time. To Morrow, "*says she*, is the last Day of the six Weeks, and Oh the "Goodness of God in sending you just now, before my "Time was out." Or Words to that Effect.—Afterwards one or two more came under *the like* Circumstances, crying out, in the Bitterness of their Souls, after the Lord Jesus.—I prayed with each of them, and exhorted them not to rest 'till they found Rest in Jesus Christ. In the Evening I went, as I thought privately, to a Friend's House. But the People were so eager *after* the Word, that in a short Time, I believe, more than a thousand were before the Door, besides those that were within, and filled every Room in the House. I therefore stood upon the Threshold, and spake for near an Hour on these Words, *Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after Righteousness, for they shall be filled. Blessed be God,*



it was a very solemn Meeting. Being Night, I could not see how the Hearers were affected, but the Lord assisted me in speaking. *Glory be to his great Name.* Before I retired to Bed, I went to take Leave of Mr. H——n, and had some close Talk with him about the New-Birth. *The Lord gave him an experimental Knowledge of it.* He was very civil, and would have had me to stayed with him longer; but being to go a Journey on the Morrow, after we had conversed near half an Hour, I took my Leave.

At

22

At my Return to my Lodgings, good old Mr. *Clap* went with me into a private Room, gave me something for my Orphans, and spoke many affectionate Things to me. Altho' very old, yet he followed me from one End of the Town to another; so that People said I had made old Mr. *Clap* young again. Oh what a Crown of Glory is a hoary Head, when found in the Way of Righteousness. He was exceedingly desirous of my coming to *Rhode Island* again, which I promised to do by divine Permission: For *Rhode Island* seems to be a Place where much good may be done. They are very plain People for the generality; tho' I observed there were some foolish Virgins at Church, covered all over with the Pride of Life. I find they are sadly divided amongst themselves as to outward Things. I think there are no less than four different Congregations of Baptists, two of the Independent, and one of the Quaker's Persuasion. Dean *Berkeley's* Name is had in much Respect amongst them. The established Church is in excellent Order as to Externals; but many of the Head-Members I soon found were exceeding great Bigots. They seem'd very fearful lest I should preach in Mr. *Clap's* Meeting-House, and gloried much in my bringing the good old Man to Church. Nor is there less Bigotry amongst those of other Communion. All, I fear, place the Kingdom of God too much in Meats and Drinks, and have an ill Name abroad for running of Goods. One Day, when I said in my Sermon, "What will become of you, who cheat the King of his Taxes?" The whole Congregation seem'd surprized, and look'd on one another,

as tho' they should say, *We are guilty. Lord Jesus, give them to know thee, and the Power of thy Resurrection, and teach them to live soberly, righteously and godly in this present World. Amen and Amen.*

### ***Newport and Bristol.***

*Wednesday, September 17.* Left *Newport* in *Rhode Island* about nine in the Morning, and reached *Bristol*, a Town twelve Miles distant, about Noon. Several Friends from *Rhode Island* accompanied me, and before we came to the Town, a Dissenting Minister (as I found afterwards) met me, and in the Name of the Court, which was then sitting at *Bristol*, invited me and my Friends to dine with them, and also desired me to give them a Sermon. I complied. The Gentlemen received us with much Civility; and, af-

ter

23

ter Dinner, I preached in the Meeting-House to more People than might be expected on such sudden Notice. My Heart was much shut up in the Exercise. I felt, I saw but little Power. However, the Gentlemen seem'd very thankful. I took my Leave about four in the Afternoon, and lay at an Inn about ten Miles further on the Road. Here the Lord gave me a Spirit of Prayer. I wrestled with God in behalf of myself and Friends; supped comfortably; sung a Hymn, and went to Rest. Thanks be to God for his unspeakable Mercies!

*Thursday, September 18.* Rose a long while before Day, and set out as soon as it was Light. Breakfasted at a Minister's House on the Road. Found People were apprized of my Coming, and solicitous for my Preaching; but being resolved, under God, if possible, to reach *Boston*, we travelled on for near fifty Miles, and came to *Boston* about eight in the Evening. When we were within four Miles of the City, the Governor's Son, several other Gentlemen, and one or two Ministers waited at a Gentleman's House to give me the Meeting. They received me with great Gladness, and told me many more would have come, had not a large

Funeral been in the Town, or if there had been more certain Notice of my arriving. This rejoiced me; for I think I can stand any Thing better than this. It favours too much of human Grandeur: But I must be tried every Way. The Lord be my Helper. After stopping a while, we went together in Company to *Boston*, to the House of Mr. S——, Brother in Law to the Reverend Dr. *Coleman*, who long since had sent me an Invitation. Several Ministers and other Gentlemen came in to pay their Respects. My Heart was but low, and my Body weak; but, at the Request of one of the Ministers, I gave Thanks to our gracious God, for bringing me in Safety, and prayed that my Coming might be in the Fullness of the Blessing of the Gospel of Peace. We then parted. I eat a little Supper, and then retired, beseeching the Lord to raise my Heart, and make his Power known in the Hearts of his People. *Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.*

#### BOSTON.

*Friday, September 19.* Slept pretty well, and in the Morning perceived fresh Emanations of divine Light break in upon and refresh my Soul. Was visited by several Gentlemen and Ministers, and went to the Governor's with Esquire *Willard*,

Secretary

24

Secretary of the Province, a Man fearing God, and with whom (tho' before unknown in Person) I have corresponded some Time. The Governor received me with the utmost Respect: He seemed to favour the things which were of God, and desired me to see him as often as I could. At eleven I went to publick Worship at the Church of *England*, and afterwards went home with the Commissary, who read Prayers. He received me very courteously, and it being a Day whereon the Clergy of the established Church met, I had an Opportunity of conversing with five of them together. I think, one of them began with me for calling "*That Tent*" and his Brethren *faithful* Ministers of Jesus Christ." I answered, "I believed they were." They then questioned me about "the Validity of the Presbyterian Ordination." I replied, "I believed it was valid." They then

urged against me a Passage in my first Journal, where I said, "That a Baptist minister at *Deal* did not give a satisfactory "Answer concerning his Mission." I answered, "Perhaps "my Sentiments were altered." "And is Mr. *Wesley* altered, said one, in his Sentiments? For he was very strenuous for the Church, and rigorous against all other Forms of Government when he was at *Boston*." I answered, "He was then a great Bigot, but God has since enlarged his Heart, and I believed he was now like-minded with me in this Particular." I then urged, "That a Catholic Spirit was best, and that a Baptist-Minister had communicated lately with me at *Savannah*." And, "I suppose, says another, you would do him as good a Turn, and would communicate with him." I answered, "Yes." I then urged, "That it was best to preach up the New Birth, and the Power of Godliness, and not to insist so much upon the Form: For People would never be brought to one Mind as to that; nor did Jesus Christ ever intend it." "Yes, but, says Dr. *Cutler*, he did," "How do you prove it." Why, says he, "Christ prayed, *That all might be one, even as thou Father and I are one*." I replied, "That was spoken of the inward Union of the Souls of Believers with Jesus Christ, and not of the outward Church." "That cannot be, says Dr. *Cutler*, for how then could it be said, *That the World might know that thou hast sent me?*" He then (taking it for granted that the Church of *England* was the only true Apostolical Church) drew a Parallel between the *Jewish* and our Church, urging how God required all Things to be made according to the

---

Pattern

25

Pattern given in the Mount. I answered, "That before the Parallel could be just, it must be proved, that every Thing enjoined in our Church was as much of a divine Institution as any Rite or Ceremony under the *Jewish* Dispensation." I added further, "That I saw regenerate Souls among the Baptists, among the Presbyterians, among the Independents, and among the Church-Folks, all Children of God, and yet all born again in a different

“Way of Worship, and who can tell which is the most evangelical?” “What, says the Commissary, can you see “Regeneration with your Eyes?” or something to that Purpose. Soon after we began to talk of the Righteousness of Christ, and the Commissary said, “Christ was to make “up for the Defects of our Righteousness.” I asked him, “Whether Conversion was not instantaneous?” He was unwilling to confess it, but he having just before baptized an Infant at publick Worship, I asked him, “Whether he “believed that very Instant in which he sprinkled the Child “with Water, the Holy Ghost fell upon the Child?” He answered, “Yes.” “Then, said I, according to your “own Principles, Regeneration is instantaneous, and since “you will judge of the New Birth by the Fruits, pray “watch that Child, and see if it brings forth the Fruits of “the Spirit.” I also said, “That if every Child was really “born again in Baptism, then every baptized Infant would “be saved.” “And so they are,” said Dr. Cutler. “How “do you prove that?” Why, says he, “The Rubric “says, that all Infants dying after Baptism before they have “committed actual Sin, are undoubtedly saved.” I asked, “What Text of Scripture there was to prove it?” Here, “says he, (holding a Prayer-Book in his Hand) the Church “says so.” We then just hinted at Predestination. I said, “I subscribed to the seventeenth Article of the Church in “its literal Sense with all my Heart.” We then talked a little about falling away finally from Grace. I said, “A “true Child of God, tho’ he might fall foully, yet could never fall finally.” But, says he, the Article says, “Men “may fall away from Grace given.” But then, said I, observe what follows, “And by the Grace of God they may “rise again.” Several other Things of less Consequence passed between us. But, being engaged to dine at my Lodging, and finding how inconsistent they were, I took my Leave, resolving they should not have an Opportunity of denying me the Use of their Pulpits: However, they treated me with

E

more

26

more Civility than any **Set** of our own Clergymen have done for a long While. The Commissary very kindly urged me to dine with them: But being pre-engaged, I went to my Lodgings, and, in the Afternoon, preached to about 4000 People in Dr. *Colman's* Meeting-House; and, **as I** afterwards **was told by several, with great Success.** I exhorted and prayed with many that came to my Lodgings, **and inwardly rejoiced** at the Prospect there was of bringing many Souls in *Boston*, to the saving Knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ. *Grant this, O Father, for thy dear Son's Sake. Amen.*

*Saturday, September 20. Perceived myself still growing more and more comfortable both in Body and Soul. Was sweetly refreshed with several Packets of Letters sent to me from different Parts of England and America, giving me an Account of the Success of the Gospel. Yet I was a little cast down to find some English Friends had thrown aside the Use of Means, and others were disputing for sinless Perfection and Universal Redemption. I know no such Things asserted in the Gospel, if explained aright. Lord, do thou cause even this to work for Good, and give me Grace to oppose such Errors, without respect of Persons, but with Meekness, Humility and Love. Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.*

Preached in the Morning **with much Freedom and Power** to about 6000 Hearers in the Reverend Dr. *Sewal's* Meeting-House, and afterwards on the Common to about 8000, and again at Night to a thronged Company at my Lodgings. I spent the Remainder of the Evening with a few **choice** Friends, in preparing for the Sabbath. *Oh that we may be always in the Spirit on the Lord's Day.*

*Sunday, September 21. Went in the Morning, and heard Dr. Colman preach. Dined with his Colleague the Reverend Mr. Cooper. Preached in the Afternoon to a thronged Auditorium with great and visible Effect at the Reverend Mr. Foxcraft's Meeting. Immediately after, in the Common to about 15000, and again at my Lodgings, as usual, to a greater Company than before. Some afterwards came up into my Room. I felt much of the divine Presence in my own*

Soul, and tho' hoarse, was enabled to speak with much Power, and could have spoke, I believe, till Midnight. To see People ready to hear, makes me forget myself. *Oh that it may be my Sleep, my Meat and Drink to do the Will of my heavenly Father! Oh that all who press to hear the Word, may take the Kingdom of God by Force. Amen and Amen.*

*Monday,*

27

*Monday, September 22.* Preached this Morning at the Reverend Mr. Webb's Meeting-House to about 6000 Hearers in the House, besides great Numbers standing about the Doors. The Presence of the Lord was amongst them. Look where I would around me, visible Impressions were made upon the Auditory. Most wept for a considerable Time; and some-time after I received a Letter wherein were these Words:

"But what I must give the Preference to was that gracious Season at the *New North*, the *Monday* following, where "there was more of the Presence of God through the whole "Visitation than ever I had known at one Time through "the whole Course of my Life. Justly might it have been "said of that Place, it was no other than the House of God "and the Gate of Heaven! O how dreadful was the Place! "and yet how delightful! The Lord Jesus seemed to be "visibly walking in that his golden Candlestick, to try "some of the many Thousands that were then present. But "oh! how few were prepared for so holy an Inquisition. I "am sure I know none who could not but be humble at the "Thoughts of it. And who indeed could help crying out, "Wo is me! for I am undone, because I am a Man of unclean Lips, for mine Eyes have seen the King, the Lord "of Hosts. Indeed my own Soul was so deeply abased and "overwhelmed with such unusual Meltings that I could have "been glad of some private Corner in that House to pour "out my Soul, without Disturbance to the Audience. The "Spirit of God, indeed, seemed to be moving upon the Face "of the Waters at that Time, and who knows, but that to "a great many Souls, God was pleased to say, *Let there be "Light, and there was Light.*"

In the Afternoon I went to preach at the Reverend Mr. *Checkley's* Meeting-House: But God was pleased to humble us by a very awful Providence: For the Meeting-House being filled with People, tho' there was no real Danger; yet on a Sudden all the People were in an Uproar, and so unaccountably surprized, that some threw themselves out of the Windows, others threw themselves out of the Gallery, and others trampled upon one another; so that five were actually killed, and others dangerously wounded. I happened to come in the midst of the Uproar, and saw two or three lying on the Ground in a pitiable Condition. God was pleased to give me Presence of Mind; so that I gave Notice I would immediately preach upon the Common. The Weather was wet, but many Thousands followed in the Field, to whom

E 2

I preached

28

I preached from these Words, *Go out into the Highways and Hedges, and compel them to come in.* I endeavoured, as God enabled me, to improve what had befallen us; and tho' *Satan in this bruised our Heel, yet I doubt not but even this will be a Means of bruising his accursed Head.* Lord, thy Judgements are like the great Deep. Thy Footsteps are not known. Just and holy art thou, O King of Saints!

In the Evening perceived myself weak in Body, so that I could not say much at the House where I supped; but God, by his blessed Spirit, greatly refreshed and comforted my Soul. Blessed be God, I find what our Saviour says exceeding true: *He that believeth on me, as the Scripture hath spoken, out of his Belly shall flow Rivers of living Waters.* I drank of God's Pleasure as out of a River. Oh that all were made Partakers of this living Water, they would never thirst after the sensual Pleasures of this wicked World.

Tuesday, September 23. Went this Morning, with Dr. Colman and the Secretary to Roxbury, three Miles from Boston, to see the Rev. Mr. *Walter*, a good old Puritan, who, with his Predecessor the Rev. Mr. *Elliot*, commonly called the Apostle of the Indians, but now with God, have been Pastor of that Congregation 106 Years. I had but little Conversation with him, my Stay being very short, but I remember,



he told me, "He was glad to hear I said Man was half a "Devil and half a Beast." *The more People drink into God's Spirit, the more, I find, they are inclined to debase human Nature.*

About eleven we returned, and I preached in the Reverend Mr. Gee's Meeting-House, but not to a very crowded Auditory, because the People were in doubt where I would preach. Dined at the Secretary's; Preached in the Afternoon to a thronged Congregation; and exhorted and prayed as usual at my own Lodgings, at neither Place without some Manifestations of a divine Power accompanying the Word. *Lord let thy Presence always follow me, or otherwise I shall be but as a sounding Brass or a tinkling Cymbal.*

Wednesday, September 24. Went this Morning to see and preach at Cambridge, the chief College for training up the Sons of the Prophets in all New-England. It has one President, I think four Tutors, and about a hundred Students. It is scarce as big as one of our least Colleges at Oxford, and as far as I could gather from some who well knew the State of it, not far superior to our Universities in Piety and true Godliness. Tutors neglect to pray with and examine

the

29

the Hearts of their Pupils. Discipline is at too low an Ebb. Bad Books are become fashionable amongst them. Tillotson and Clarke are read instead of Sheppard, Stoddard, and such like evangelical Writers; and therefore, I chose to preach on these Words, *We are not as many who corrupt the Word of God. And in the Conclusion of my Sermon, I made a close Application to Tutors and Students.* A great Number of neighbouring Ministers attended, as indeed they do at all other Times; and God gave me great Boldness and Freedom of Speech. The President of the College and Minister of the Parish treated me very civilly. In the Afternoon I preached again in the Court, without any particular Application to the Students. I believe there were about 7000 Hearers. The Holy Spirit melted many Hearts. The Word was attended with manifest Power: And a Minister soon after wrote me Word, "That he believed one of his Daughters was saving-

“ly wrought upon at that Time.” *Lord, add daily to thy Church such as shall be saved!* Paid my Respects to the Lieutenant Governor, who lives at *Cambridge*, and returned in the Evening to *Boston*, and prayed with and exhorted many People who were waiting round the Door for a spiritual Morsel. I believe our Lord did not send them empty away. *O blessed Jesus, feed them with that Bread of Life which cometh down from Heaven.*

Thursday, September 25. Preached the Weekly-Lecture at Mr. *Foxcroft's* Meeting-House; but was oppressed with a Sense of my base Ingratitude to my dearest Saviour, that *Satan would fain have* tempted me to hold my Tongue, and not invite poor Sinners to Jesus Christ, because I was so great a Sinner myself. But God enabled me to withstand the Temptation, and since Jesus Christ had shewn such Mercy to, and had not withdrawn his Holy Spirit from me the chief of Sinners, I was enabled more feelingly to talk of his Love, and afterwards found that one Stranger in particular, was in all Probability effectually convinced by that Morning's Sermon. After publick Worship, I went, at his Excellency's Invitation, and dined with the Governor. Most of the Ministers of the Town were invited with me. Before Dinner, the Governor sent for me up into his Chamber: He wept, wished me good Luck in the Name of the Lord, and recommended himself, Ministers and People to my Prayers. Immediately after Dinner, I prayed explicitly for them all, and went in his Coach to the End of the Town; but had such a Sense of my Vileness upon my Soul, that I wondered

People

30

People did not stone me. Crossed a Ferry, and preached at *Charlestown*, a Town lying on the North-side of *Boston*. The Meeting-House was very capacious, and quite filled. A gracious Melting was discernible through the whole Congregation, and I perceived much Freedom and Sweetness in my own Soul; tho' the Damp I felt in the Morning was not quite gone off. *Oh! when shall I be free from Indwelling Sin! O Lord, deliver me from the Body of this Death.*

In the Evening I exhorted and prayed as usual, at my Lodgings; and, **blessed be God**, I found a great Alteration in my Hearers. They now began to melt and weep under the Word. *Oh that the Lord may beat them down with the Hammer of his Word, till the Heart of Stone be entirely taken away! Amen, Lord Jesus. Amen and Amen.*

### ROXBURY.

Friday, September 26. Preached in the Morning at Roxbury from a little **Ascent** to many thousand People, **with much of the divine Presence amongst us**. Several, I think, came afterwards to me, telling how they were struck at that Time under the Word: And a Minister wrote to me thus:

*Reverend and dear Sir,*

**"After my sincere Affection, and very humble Service to you,** I return my hearty Thanks for your good Services Yesterday, and especially at *Roxbury*, my native Place. I cannot but admire, and greatly rejoice in those extraordinary Gifts and Graces which it has pleased the Father of Lights to confer upon you. And to see how much the Intention of them is answered, in your flaming Devotion, and zealous and indefatigable Endeavours to do good to Souls, and thereby advance the Kingdom and Interest of our Lord. I think I never saw a more attentive Audience, or more weeping Eyes than Yesterday and *Monday*. The Holy Spirit, the **alone** Author of all spiritual Life, seemed in a very wonderful Manner to be moving upon the Waters of the Sanctuary, breathing upon the dry Bones. For my own Part I was much affected, **for which I** give our glorious Lord the Praise."

Dined at Judge *Dudley's*; **Preached** in the Afternoon from a Scaffold erected without the Reverend Mr. *Byles's* Meeting-House, to near double the **Number as** in the Morning.

Snatch'd

31

**Snatch'd a few Minutes to write a few Lines to Friends in England.** Gave a short Exhortation to a great Crowd of

People, and spent the Remainder of the Evening with several Ministers at Mr. Deacon H——m's. Our Conversation tended to the Use of edifying. After Supper, we sung Psalms, one of the Ministers prayed, and then we took our Leave. *O that the Lord may answer our Request, and revive his Work in the Midst of the Years! We wait for thy Salvation, O Lord; O let thy Kingdom come!*

Saturday, September 27. Preached in the Morning at the Reverend Mr. Welstead's Meeting-House. Dined with Colonel W——l, and preached in the Afternoon on the Common to about 15000 People. But oh how did the Word run! It rejoiced me to see such Numbers greatly affected, so that some, I believe, could scarce abstain from crying out, *That Place was no other than a Bethel, and the Gate of Heaven.* After Sermon, I visited and prayed with two different Persons that were much hurt in the late Fright, and then went home to my Lodgings. The Power and Presence of the Lord accompanied and followed me. Many now wept bitterly, and cried out under the Word like Persons that were really Hungering and Thirsting after Righteousness; and after I left them, God gave me to wrestle with him in my Chamber, in behalf of some dear Friends then present, and others that were absent from us. The Spirit of the Lord was upon them all. It made Intercession with Groanings that cannot be uttered. *O let them enter into thy Ears, O Lord of Sabaoth!*

Sunday, September 28. Preached in the Morning, at Dr. Sewal's Meeting-House to a very crowded Auditory, and almost with as much Power, and as visible Appearance of God among us as Yesterday. In the Afternoon collected 555 l. Currency for my little Lambs; was taken very ill after Dinner; vomited violently; but was enabled to preach at Dr. Colman's in the Afternoon to as great, if not a greater Congregation than in the Morning. Here also 470 l. were collected for the Orphan-House in Georgia. In both Places, all Things were carried on with great Decency and Order. People went slowly out, as tho' they had not a Mind to escape giving; and Dr. Colman said, "It was the most pleasant Time he ever enjoyed in that Meeting-House through

“the whole Course of his Life.” Blessed be God, after Sermon, I perceived myself somewhat refreshed. Supped very early. Had the Honour of a private Visit from the Go-

vernor,

32

ernor, who came full of Affection to take his Leave of me for the present. Went at their Request, and preached to a great Number of Negroes on the Conversion of the *Ethiopian*, *Acts* viii. (at which the poor Creatures, as well as many white People, were much affected) and, at my Return, gave a Word of Exhortation to a Crowd of People, who were waiting at my Lodgings. My Animal Spirits were almost exhausted, and my Legs, through Expence of Sweating and Vomiting, almost ready to sink under me: But the Lord visited my Soul; and I went to Bed greatly refreshed with divine Consolations. *Oh what am I that I should be thus daily fed with heavenly Manna! Lord, thou fillest my Soul with Marrow and Fatness. Oh let me praise thee with joyful Lips!*

#### ***Marble-Head, Salem and Ipswich.***

Monday, September 29. Set out about seven in the Morning; Got to Marble-Head, a large Town twenty Miles from Boston. About eleven preached to some Thousands in a broad Place in the Middle of the Town, but not with much visible Effect. Dined with Reverend Mr. Bernard, one of the Ministers of the Place. Rode to Salem, four Miles from Marble-Head, and preached there also to about 2000. Here the Lord manifested forth his Glory. One was, I believe, struck down by the Power of the Word. In every Part of the Congregation, Persons might be seen under great Concern; and one Mr. C——k, a good Minister, as is granted by all Lovers of God, seemed to be almost in Heaven. Salem is the first settled and biggest Town (next to Boston) in all New-England, but, as far as I could see and hear, rather exceeds it for Politeness. I found the Inhabitants had been sadly divided about their Ministers, and God was pleased, before I knew their Circumstances, to direct me to a suitable Subject. *Lord, heal their Divisions, and grant that with one*

*Heart and one Mind, they may endeavour to glorify thy holy Name. After the Exercise, I immediately set out, and got to Ipswich, another large Town, sixteen Miles (the Way we went) distant from Salem. Two or three Gentlemen came to meet me, and I and my Friends were most kindly entertained at the House of the Reverend Mr. R——s [[Rogers]], one of the Ministers of the Place. The Lord reward him and all others, a thousand Fold, who refresh our Bowels in the Lord!*

*Ipswich,*

33

***Ipswich, Newbury and Hampton.***

*Tuesday, September 30. Preach'd at Ipswich at ten in the Morning to many Thousands. The Lord gave me Freedom, and there was a great Melting in the Congregation. Dined. Set out for and reached Newbury, another Town, twelve Miles distant from Ipswich, about three. Here again the Power of the Lord accompanied the Word. The Meeting-House was very large. Many Ministers were present, and the People were greatly affected. Blessed be God, his divine Power more and more attends us. Took Ferry immediately after Sermon, and with the Reverend Mr. Cotton, Minister of the Place, who came to fetch me, went in a Chaise to Hampton, where I was pleased to see more Plainness in Mr. Cotton's House, than I had seen in any Minister's House since my Arrival. His Wife was as one that serveth. Oh that all Ministers Wives were so! For there is nothing gives me more Offence than to see Clergymen's Wives dressed out in the Pride of Life. They bring a Reproach upon Religion. They generally live up to the utmost of their Income; and, being above working, after their Husband's Decease, they are of all Women most miserable. From such a Wife, good Lord, of thy infinite Mercy, deliver my Soul!*

***Hampton, Portsmouth and York.***

*Wednesday, October 1. Preached in the Morning, tho' not with so much Freedom as usual, at Hampton, to some Thousands in the open Air. The Wind was almost too high for me. Some, tho' not many, were affected. God's Spi-*

*rit bloweth when and where it listeth.* After Dinner, rode in Company with many to *Portsmouth*, a large Town about fourteen Miles from *Hampton*. Got thither in about an Hour and a half. Preached to a polite Auditory, and so very unconcerned, that I began to question whether I had been preaching to rational, or brute Creatures. Seeing no immediate Effects of the Word preached, I was a little dejected; but God, to comfort my Heart, sent one young Man to me crying out, in great Anguish of Spirit, *What shall I do to be saved? Oh how does God pity the Weakness of his Children! Why wast thou so cast down, O my Soul?* Crossed a Ferry immediately after Sermon, and went over a very stony Way to *York*, a Town thirteen Miles, round the Ferry, distant

F

from

34

from *Portsmouth*: *Hither I came* to see one Mr. *Moody*, a worthy, plain and powerful Minister of Jesus Christ, tho' now much impair'd by old Age. He has lived by Faith for many Years, having no settled Salary, and has been much despised by bad Men, and as much respected by the true Lovers of the blessed Jesus. He came as far as *Hampton* to meet me, but getting before him, in our Night-Travelling; a Physician, his Neighbour, who came also to meet me, received us into his House, and kindly entertained us. Some of our Fellow-travellers lost their Way, but came to us sometime after our Arrival at *York*. *Here we prayed and supped very comfortably together. The Air agreed mightily with my Constitution.* As I came along, I was surprized to see such Improvements made in a Place of about a hundred Years standing, and could not but fancy myself in *Old-England*. Surely, God is a God keeping Covenant. He has blessed this Generation for their Fathers Sake, with all temporal Blessings. *Lord, with these temporal, give them spiritual Blessings; otherwise Prosperity will destroy them.*

#### ***York and Portsmouth.***

*Thursday, October 2.* Was comforted to hear good Mr. *Moody* tell me "That he believed I should preach to a "hundred new Creatures this Morning in his Congregation."

And, indeed I believe I did. **For** when I came to preach, I could speak little or no Terror, but almost all Consolation. I preached both Morning and Evening. **The Hearers** looked plain and simple; and Tears trickled apace down most of their Cheeks. **Indeed we saw the Outgoings of the Lord in his Sanctuary.** But one Thing put a little Damp upon my Soul, **and I hope, did me good.** Mr. *Moody* has a Son, a Minister, who was once full of Faith and Joy in the Holy Ghost, and walked in the Light of God's Countenance, and made full Proof of his Ministry; but for these two Years last past, has walked in Darkness, and seen no Light. He has an inexpressible Gloominess **upon his Soul**, and cannot apply any of the Promises to himself. **I was informed he was at Meeting, but dared not see me.** I was assisted to pray for him. **I prayed** the more earnestly, not knowing but his Case might be mine hereafter. *Lord, let me not be high-minded, but fear. Into thy Hands I commit my Spirit. I desire to take no Thought for the Morrow. Deal with me as it shall please thee. Justly mayst thou take every Comfort from me: For I have wretch-*

*edly*

35

*edly abused thy Loving-Kindness. God be merciful to me a Sinner!*

Left York **about** four in the Evening; Reached *Portsmouth* by Night; **Supped**; Conversed, and sung Psalms **very comfortably** with my Friends. **The Lord was pleased to lift up the Light of his blessed Countenance more and more upon my Soul.** *Rightly is Jesus called Immanuel. He is God not only in, but with us. Oh that I may never provoke him to depart from me!*

### ***Portsmouth, Hampton and Newbury.***

*Friday, October 3.* Preached this Morning at *Portsmouth* to a far greater Congregation than before. Instead of preaching to **dead** Stocks, I had now Reason to believe I was preaching to living Men. People began to melt soon after I began to pray, and the **Power** encreased more and more during the whole Sermon. The Word seemed to pierce through and through, and carried such Conviction with it, that ma-



ny, who before had industriously spoken Evil of me, were ashamed of themselves. Mr. *Shutlif* the Minister, when he afterwards sent me 97 *l.* collected at this Time for the Orphans, wrote thus: "You have left great Numbers under "deep Impressions, and I trust in God they will not wear "off; but that the Convictions of some will be kept up and "cherished, till they have **had** their desired Effect." *Amen and Amen.*

Hasten'd after Dinner to *Hampton*; Preached to several Thousands of People, with a great deal of Life and Power. Collected 41 *l.* for **my little Ones**, and set out directly for *Newbury*; which we reached about eight at Night, and was kindly entertained at a Gentleman's House with all my Friends. My Heart was **much enlarged and** filled with Joy, **and** in the Way two old Disciples came to me, acquainting me what sweet refreshing Times God had vouchsafed them under my Ministry. *Lord, not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy Free-Grace be all the Glory!*

#### ***Newbury, Ipswich and Salem.***

*Saturday, October 4.* Lay at the house of Mr. *L——l*, Minister of the Place. Preached in the Morning to a very thronged Congregation **and saw the Outgoings of God in his Sanctuary.** Collected 80 *l.* Hasted to *Ipswich*. Preach-

F 2

ed

36

ed to a larger Congregation, **and with as much Power as** when there last. Collected 79 *l.* for the Orphans. Got to *Salem* about eight at Night. Was kindly received by Colonel *P——r*, and also favoured with a Visit from the Minister belonging to the Church of *England*.

*Sunday, October 5.* Preached at eight in the Morning, in the Meeting-House, at the Minister's Request. Read Prayers, and assisted at the Sacrament in the Church of *England*. But thought Matters were not at all carried on with Decency and Order. Preached again in the Afternoon in the Meeting-House, **but saw no such Power all the Day as when I preached here a few Days ago.** Collected 72 *l.* for the Orphan-House. *Oh that the Lord would reach the Hearts of the In-*

*habitants, and make them a peculiar People, zealous of good Works!*

***Salem, Marble-Head, Maulden and Boston.***

*Monday, October 6. Spent the Sabbath-Evening very comfortably with my dear Fellow-Travellers in conversing, praying and singing spiritual Songs. I trust, we made Melody with Grace in our Hearts unto the Lord. Set out from Salem about nine this Morning. Preached at Marble-Head about eleven, and with such Power, that I trust it will be a Day much to be remember'd by many Souls. I was upon the Mount myself, and the Lord attended his Word with mighty Power. The two Ministers presented me with 70 l. for the Orphan-House, which they had voluntarily collected Yesterday in their own private Meetings. Was most affectionately received and entertained by Colonel M——n, from whom I parted almost with Tears. The Lord make him rich in Faith, and in good Works. At the request of the Reverend Mr. E——n, Son-in-Law to dear Mr. Moody, and, I believe, really a Man of God, we went to Maulden, fourteen Miles from Marble-Head, where I preached not with so much Power as in the Morning. But one Girl came crying to me and saying; "She feared she had not true Faith in Jesus." O that others began to doubt also! Here the Secretary, and several Friends from Boston gave me the Meeting. With them, immediately after Sermon, I set out, and got privately into Boston about seven at Night. Received comfortable Letters from Georgia and South Carolina; and also had the Satisfaction of hearing that Brother Seward had safely arrived in England. The Lord prosper the Work of his Hands upon him. Perceived*

*my*

37

*my Health to be much improved since I left Boston. And tho' I had rode 178 Miles, and preached sixteen Times, I trust to the great Benefit of Thousands; yet I was not in the least wearied or fatigued. The Spirit of the Lord was upon me; and I sat up till near Midnight to answer Correspondents and settle my private Affairs. Afterwards I went to Rest, full of Peace, and desiring to be thankful to the Lord,*

for causing me thus to renew my Strength. *Oh what a good Master is Jesus Christ!*

*Tuesday, October 7.* Preached, both Morning and Evening in Dr. Colman's Meeting-House, **both Times** with much Power. People seem'd greatly rejoic'd at my Arrival, it being **confidently** reported I died suddenly, or was poisoned: **But, I find I must not yet die, but live and declare the Works of the Lord. Father, I submit; thy Will be done.** Visited, **I believe**, a true Disciple, who had been sick for a long Season. The Lord has made his Bed in his Sickness. He has been enabled to rejoice in the Truth. *Who would but be a Christian?* **Supped and** gave a Word of Exhortation to many People, at a House which I trust the Lord will visit with his Salvation. Wherever I go, People will follow me. And I now, hourly almost, receive Letters from Persons under Convictions, **as also congratulatory Letters**, and Visits from many Children of God, who causes me to triumph in the Felicity of his Chosen. *Blessed be God!*

*Wednesday, October 8.* Went with the Governor in his Coach, to Mr. Webb's Meeting-House, where I preached both Morning and Evening, to very great Auditories. Both Times **(especially in the Morning)** Jesus Christ manifested forth his Glory. Many Hearts melted **within them, and** I think I never was so drawn out to pray for **and invite** little Children to Jesus Christ, as I was this Morning. **A little before**, I had heard of a Child, who **was taken sick just after it had heard** me preach, and said, "**He would** go to Mr. Whitefield's "God," **and** died in a short Time. This encouraged me to speak to little Ones. But, oh how were the old People affected, when I said, "Little Children, if your Parents "will not come to Christ, do you come and go to Heaven "without them." There seemed to be but few dry Eyes. **Look where I would, the Word smote them, I believe, through and through, and my own Soul was very much carried out. Surely it was the Lord's Passover.** I have not seen a greater Commotion since my Preaching at *Boston.* *Glory be to God who has not forgotten to be gracious.* Went with

the

38

the Governor, *who seemed more and more affected*, in his Coach to my Lodgings. *Snatched a few Moments to write a Letter or two.* Gave a Word of Exhortation to a great Crowd of People, and afterwards slipped out privately *at a Back-door*, and went *and supped at a Man's House*, whose Wife and Sister, as well as himself, I trust the Lord will visit with his Salvation. *Amen, come Lord Jesus Christ, come quickly.*

*Thursday, October 9. Have been applied to, this and every Morning since my Return*, by many Souls under deep Distress, and was *only* grieved that I could not have more Time with them. *Preached* this Morning the public Lecture at Dr. *Sewall's* Meeting-house, which was very much crowded. *When I had left my Lodgings, I had fixed upon and folded down a particulat Text:* But, when I came near the Meeting-house, I found it much impressed upon my Heart, that I should preach upon our Lord's Conference with *Nicodemus*. *I acquainted a Friend with it.* When I *came* into the Pulpit, I saw a great Number of Ministers sitting around and before me: *And when I came* to these Words, *Art thou a Master in Israel, and knowest not these Things?* the Lord enabled me to open my Mouth boldly, against unconverted Ministers, *to caution Tutors to take Care of their Pupils, and also to advise all Ministers, particularly to examine the Experiences of those that were Candidates for Ordination.* *For I am verily persuaded, the Generality of Preachers talk of an unknown, unfelt Christ.* *And the Reason why Congregations have been so dead, is because dead Men preach to them.* *O that the Lord may quicken and revive them for his own Names Sake.* *For how can dead Men beget living Children?* 'Tis true, God may convert People by the Devil, if he *pleases*, and so he may by unconverted Ministers; but I believe he seldom *or never* makes Use of either of them for this Purpose; No: *The Lord will chuse Men who are Vessels made meet by the Operations of his blessed Spirit, for his Sacred Use.* *And, as for my own Part, I would not lay Hands knowingly on an unconverted Man for ten Thousand Worlds.* Unspeakable Freedom God gave me when *speaking* on this Head. After Sermon, I din-

ed with the Governor, who seemed more kindly affected than ever, and particularly told one of the Ministers, who has lately begun to preach *Extempore* "that he was glad, he had found out a Way to save his Eyes." *Oh that others would follow him! I believe, they would find God ready to help and assist them.* In the Afternoon I preached on the Common to about

15000

39

15000 People; collected upwards of 200 *l.* for the Orphans. Just as I had finished my Sermon, a Ticket was put up to me, wherein I was desired to pray "for a Person just entered upon the Ministry; but under Apprehensions that "he was not converted." God enabled me to pray for him with my whole Heart. *And I hope that Ticket will teach many others, not to run before they can give an Account of their Conversion; if they do, they offer God strange Fire.*—Went to a Funeral of one belonging to the Council, but do not like the Custom at *Boston* of not speaking at the Grave. *When can Ministers Prayers and Exhortations be more suitable, than when the Corps before them will silently as it were assist them; and with a Kind of dumb Oratory, bid the Spectators consider their latter End?* When the Funeral was over, I went, *as privately as possible,* to the Alms-house, and enlarged on these Words, *The Poor received the Gospel,* for near half an Hour; then I went to the Work-house, where I prayed with, and exhorted a great Number of People, who crowded after me, besides those belonging to the House, for near an Hour more. And then, hearing there was a considerable Number more waiting for me at my Lodgings, (tho' some cried out, *spare thyself*) God strengthened me to give them a spiritual Morsel, and then I went and eat Bread very comfortably at a Friend's House, whither I was invited, and soon after retired to my Rest. *Oh! how comfortable is Sleep after working for Jesus! Lord strengthen me yet a little longer, and then let me sleep in thee, never to awake in this vain World again: Still I must intreat thee, if most conducive to thy Glory, and the Good of Souls, to make no long tarrying, O my God!*

**Charlestown and Redding.**

*Friday, October 10.* Still busied, from the very Moment I rose 'till I went out, in answering **poor Souls**, that came to me under great Distress. About nine went with Mr. *Cooper* over *Charlestown* Ferry, where I preached with much **Demonstration** of **the** Spirit, and collected 156 l. for the Orphans. **Then** I dined at *Mystick*, at the House of **Esq; R——l**, a **young rich** Man, who has seemed to be much affected for some Time. *Oh that he may not lack one Thing!* Immediately after Dinner, we hasted to *Redding*, 12 Miles from *Charlestown*. **There** I preached to many thousands, and collected 51 l. 5 s. for **my little Ones**. **And observed** a considera-

ble

40

ble **Moving** in the Congregation. **Returned and supped at Mr. R——l's**. Was **weak**, very weak in Body. But was refreshed to hear of a poor Girl, who was found sitting at the Gate in the Cold. Upon being examined by a **truly experienced** Friend, he found she was under **very** strong Convictions, and had followed me from *Roxbury*. She said, "She *wanted nothing but Christ, and Christ she would have.*" *Blessed are they who hunger and thirst after Righteousness, for they shall be filled. Lord let this Promise be fulfilled in her Heart!*

**Cambridge and Boston.**

*Saturday, October 11.* Was **but** weak in Body, **and perceived I had** taken Cold. But Preaching, I find, is a constant Remedy against all Indispositions. Went to *Cambridge*, four Miles from *Mystick*. Preached at the Meeting-House Door, to a great Body of People, who stood very attentively, tho' it rained, and **were, at the latter Part of the Sermon**, much affected. It being **at the** University, I **preached** on these Words, *Noah the eighth Person, a Preacher of Righteousness*, and endeavoured to shew the Qualifications **proper** for a true evangelical Preacher of Christ's Righteousness. **The Lord opened my Mouth, and** I spoke very plainly to Tutors and Pupils. One hundred Pounds were collected for the Orphans. After **a** Sermon, the President kindly enter-

tained me and my Friends. About four we reached *Boston*; I preached immediately at Dr. *Sewal's* Meeting-House; exhorted a great Number afterwards at my Lodgings: And then was employed till near Midnight in settling my private Affairs, answering Letters, and speaking to Souls under Convictions. One little Girl, about eight Years old, came to me under deep Concern. She, as her Friends told, had been wrestling for Christ, and whilst she was wrestling, it came to her Mind, *That Jesus being in Agony, prayed yet so much the more earnestly, and that an Angel was sent from Heaven to strengthen him.* This encouraged her to persevere, and her Soul soon received some Comfort. Another Minister's Daughter has been quite restless after Christ Night and Day. And a young Man about fourteen came to me crying and saying, "Sir, I am convicted but not converted, Oh pray "for me!" *I thank thee, Holy Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, that thou hast hid these Things from the Wise*

*and*

<sup>41</sup>

*and Prudent, and hast revealed them unto Babes. Even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy Sight.*

Sunday, October 12. Was much refreshed in Body and Soul, when I rose in the Morning. Spoke to as many as I could, that came for spiritual Advice. Preached with great Power and Affection, at Dr. *Sewal's* Meeting-House, which was so exceedingly throng'd, that I was obliged to get in at one of the Windows. Dined with the Governor, who came to me, after Dinner, when I was retired, and weeping, most earnestly desired my Prayers. *The Lord be with and in him, for Time and Eternity!* Went and heard Dr. *Sewal* preach in the Afternoon. Was sick at Meeting, and also after Meeting was over. Went with the Governor in his Coach, to the Common, where I preached my Farewell Sermon to near 30,000 People. A Sight I have not seen since I left *Blackheath*, and a Sight, perhaps never before seen in *America*. It being duskish before I had done, the Sight was more solemn. Numbers, great Numbers, melted into Tears, when I talked of leaving them. I was very particular in my Application, both to Rulers, Ministers, and People; com-

mended what was commendable, blamed what was blameworthy, and exhorted my Hearers steadily to imitate the Piety of their Forefathers; so that, *whether I was present, or whether I was absent*, I might hear of their Affairs, that with one Heart and Mind, they were striving together for the Faith of the Gospel. After Sermon, the Governor went with me to my Lodgings. I stood in the Passage, and spoke to a great Company, both within and without Doors; but they were so deeply affected, and cried so loud that I was obliged to leave off praying. The Governor *was highly pleased to see the Power of God*. He took his leave in the most affectionate Manner, and said, he would come and take me in his Coach to *Charlestown* Ferry the *Morrow* Morning. The Remainder of the Evening was almost entirely *taken up* in speaking to Persons under *very* great Distress of Soul. The poor Girl that followed me from *Roxbury*, *I believe*, got a Saving *Discovery* of Christ this Morning. For when I preached on these Words, *The Lord our Righteousness*, she was enabled to say, *The Lord my Righteousness*, and was not afraid to die. *The poor Creature*, I found upon Enquiry, could not read, which shews the Sovereignty of God's electing Love, and confirms what the Apostle says, *That the Lord chuses the foolish Things of this World to confound the Wise*. *Many offered to go with me to Georgia; and Charity, I be-*

G

lieve,

42

*lieve, will incline me to take her*: For she's cast out, in effect, *already* for Christ's Sake. *Blessed be God, for what Things he has done in Boston*. *I hope a glorious Work is now begun, and that the Lord will stir up some faithful Labourers to carry it on*. "*Boston is a large populous Place, very wealthy. Has the Form kept up; but has lost much of the Power of Religion*. I have not heard of any remarkable Stir for *these* many Years. Ministers and People are obliged to confess, that the Love of many is waxed cold. Both, *for the Generality*, seem to be too much conformed to the World. There's much of the Pride of Life to be seen in their Assemblies. Jewels, Patches, and gay Apparel are commonly worn by the Female Sex, *and even*



“the common People, I observed, dressed up in the Pride of Life. And the little Infants that were brought to Baptism, “were wrapped up in such fine Things, and so much Pains “taken to dress them, that one would think they were “brought thither to be initiated into, rather than renounce “the Poms and Vanities of this wicked World. There “are *nine* Meeting-Houses of the Congregational Persuasion, “one Baptist, one *French*, and one belonging to the *Scots Irish*. There are two *monthly*, and one *weekly* Lectures, “and those too but poorly tended. Several Ministers complained to me of it. I mentioned it in my Sermons, and “I trust God will stir up the People more frequently to tread “the Courts of his House. One Thing *Boston* is very remarkable for, the external Observation of the *Sabbath*. “Men in civil Offices have a Regard for Religion. The “Governor encourages them: And the Ministers and Magistrates are more united than in any other Place where I “have been. Both were exceedingly civil during my Stay: “I never saw so little Scoffing. Never had so little Opposition. But one might easily see much would hereafter arise, “when I come to be more particular in my Application to “particular Persons. For I fear many rest in a Head-Knowledge, are close Pharisees, and have only a Name to live. “It must needs be so, when the Power of Godliness is “dwindled away, and where the Form only of Religion is “become fashionable amongst People. However, no doubt, “there are a few Names left in *Sardis*, which have not defiled their Garments. Many Letters came to me, as far “as I could judge, from truly pious People, in which they “heavily complained of the sad Degeneracy of their Times, “and hoped that God was now about to revive his Work in

the

43

“the Midst of the Years. Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen and “Amen, say I with my whole Heart. For Boston People are “dear to my Soul. They were greatly affected by the Word, “followed Night and Day, and were very liberal to my dear “Orphans. I promised, God willing, to visit them again, “and intend to fulfil my Promise, when it shall please God

“to bring me again from my native Country. *In the mean while, Dear Boston, adieu. The Lord be with thy Ministers and People, and grant that the Remnant, which is still left according to the Election of Grace, may take Root downwards, and bear Fruit upwards, and fill the Land!*

***Boston and Concord.***

Monday, October 13. Took an affectionate Leave of many dear Friends, especially of my kind Host and Hostess, who have been exceedingly kind to me and mine, and wept *over me* at my Departure from them. *The Lord reward them a thousand Fold!* Went with the Governor in his Coach to Carlestown Ferry. He *took me* to the Boat, kissed me, and with Tears *in his Eyes* bid me *farewell*. About Noon, I reached Concord, *a Town* eighteen Miles from Boston. *Here* I preached to some Thousands in the open Air; *and comfortable Preaching it was.* The Hearers were *sweetly* melted down. About 45 *l.* were collected for the Orphans. The Minister of the Town being, I believe, a *true* Child of God, I chose to stay all Night at his House, that we might rejoice together. The Lord was with us. *The Spirit of the Lord came upon me, and God gave me to wrestle with him* for my Friends, especially those then with me. *They felt his Power.* Brother B——s, the Minister, broke into *Floods of Tears*, and we had Reason to cry out, it was good for us to be here. *O blessed be thy Name, O Lord, for these sweet Refreshings in our Way towards the heavenly Canaan.*

***Sudbury, Marlborough and Worcester.***

Tuesday, October 14. Reached Sudbury, *about* six Miles from Concord about ten, *where Mr. L——g, a Man of God, presides.* Preached to some Thousands *with Power*, and observed a considerable Commotion in the Assembly. Got to Marlborough, eight Miles from Sudbury about four. Preached *in the Meeting* to a large Congregation: At first my Heart *was*

44

dead, and I had but little Freedom, but before I had finished, the Word came with such a Demonstration of the Spirit, that great Numbers were **very much** melted down. When I came into the Meeting-House, **I turned about, and** to my Surprise, saw Governor *Belcher* there; **he was affected,** and tho' it rained, and he was much advanced in Years, **yet** he went **in Company** with us as far as *Worcester*, 15 Miles from *Marlborough*, whither we got about 8 at Night.—Here we were kindly entertained at the House of **one** Colonel C——r. We spent the Remainder of the Evening very agreeably with the Governor, and after Prayer retired to Rest. *Oh that I may prove myself a Disciple of that Master, who, whilst tabernacling here on Earth, had not where to lay his Head!*

#### **Worcester and Leicester.**

*Wednesday, October 15.* Perceived Governor to be more affectionate than ever. After Morning Prayer he took me by myself, **kissed me,** “and exhorted me to go on in “stirring up the Ministers.” For, says he, “Reformation must begin at the House of God.” As we were going to Meeting, **says he,** “Mr. *Whitefield*, do not spare “Rulers any more than Ministers, no, not the Chief of “them.” I preached in the open Air to some thousands. The Word fell with **much Weight indeed:** It carried all before it. After Sermon the Governor **said to me,** “I pray “God, I may apply what has been said to my own Heart.” “Pray, Mr. *Whitefield*, that I may hunger and thirst after “Righteousness.” Dinner being ended, with Tears in his Eyes he kissed me, and took Leave of me.—*O that we may meet in Heaven!* “**I have observed that I have had greater Power “than Ordinary, whenever the Governor has been at public “Worship. A Sign this, I hope, that the most High in- “tends to set him at his Right-Hand.” Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.** Was enabled much to rejoice in Spirit. Preached, in the Afternoon, at *Leicester*, 6 Miles from *Worcester*, **with some, tho' not so much Powers in the Morning.** Got to *Brookfield* by Night, and was upon the Mount indeed. My Soul was upon the Wing. I was ex-

ceedingly enlarged, and was enabled, *as it were*, to take the Kingdom of God by Force. *Oh! What precious Hours are those, when we are thus strengthened, as it were, to lay hold on God. Oh that we should ever cast ourselves down from these Frames! God be merciful to me a Sinner!*

*Brook-*

45

### ***Brookfield and Cold-Spring.***

*Thursday, October 16. Rose in great Dejection of Soul at the Consideration of indwelling Sin. Retired, and wept before the Lord. Preached not with extraordinary Freedom at first, but at the last the Word ran, melted many down. After Dinner was much enlarged again, and strengthened to wrestle strongly with God, for a Revival of his Work in these Parts. Preached at Cold-Spring, 15 Miles from Brookfield, at the House of Mr. L——nd, to 3 or 400 People, but perceived little moving, except a few Minutes. Spent the Evening with my dear Fellow-Travellers. Was somewhat cast down, but afterwards recover'd Sweetness and Freedom of Soul, by retiring, and pouring out my Complaints and Petitions before the dear Lord Jesus. Oh the sovereign, distinguishing Freeness of God's Grace. If it was not for the Consideration of that, my Soul must be continually pierced through and through with many Sorrows. Lord, for thy Mercies Sake, never suffer me to let this Consideration go, Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen.*

### ***Hadley and Northampton.***

*Friday, October 17. Set out as soon as it was Light, and reached Hadley, a Place where a great Work was begun, and carried on some Years ago; but lately the People of God have complained of Deadness and losing their first Love. However, as soon as I mentioned what God had done for their Souls formerly, it was like putting Fire to Tinder.—The Remembrance of it quickened them, and caused many to weep sorely. When I had taken a little Refreshment, we crossed the Ferry to Northampton, where no less than 300 Souls, as was supposed, were savingly brought Home to*

the dear Lord Jesus about 5 or 6 Years ago. Their Pastor's Name is *Edwards*, Successor and Grandson to the great *Stoddard*, whose Memory will be always precious to my Soul, and whose Books entitled "A Guide to Christ," and "Safety of appearing in Christ's Righteousness," I would recommend to all. Mr. *Edwards* is a solid, excellent Christian, but at present weak in Body. I think, I may say I have not seen his Fellow in all *New-England*. When I came into his Pulpit, I found my Heart drawn out to talk of scarce any Thing besides the Consolations and Privileges of Saints,

and

46

and the plentiful Effusion of the Spirit upon the Hearts of Believers. And, when I came to remind them of their former Experiences, and how zealous and lively they were at that Time, both Minister and People wept much; and the Holy Ghost enabled me to speak with a great deal of Power. In the Evening, I gave a Word of Exhortation to several that came to Mr. *Edward's* House. My Body was somewhat weak; my Appetite almost gone; But my Lord gave me Meat, which the World knows nothing of. Lord, evermore give me this Bread! Amen and Amen.

#### ***Hadfield and Northampton.***

Saturday, October 18. At Mr. *Edwards's* Request, I spoke to his little Children, who were much affected.—Preached at *Hadfield* 5 Miles from *Northampton*, but found myself not much strengthened. Conversed profitably on the Way about the Things of God with dear Mr. *Edwards*, and preached about 4 in the Afternoon to his Congregation. I began it with Fear and Trembling, feeling but little Power in the Morning, but God assisted me. Few dry Eyes seemed to be in the Assembly for a considerable Time. I had an affecting Prospect in my own Heart of the Glories of the upper World, and was enabled to speak of them feelingly to others. I believe many were filled, as it were, with new Wine. And it seemed as if a Time of Refreshing was come from the Presence of the Lord. Even so, come Lord Jesus, come quickly, Amen and Amen.

**NORTHAMPTON.**

*Sunday, October 19.* Felt wonderful Satisfaction in being at the House of Mr. Edwards. He is a Son himself, and hath also a Daughter of Abraham for his Wife. A sweeter Couple I have not yet seen. Their Children were dressed not in Silks and Satins, but plain, as become the Children of those who, in all Things, ought to be Examples of Christian Simplicity. "She is a Woman adorn'd with a meek and "quiet Spirit, talked feelingly and solidly of the Things of "God, and seemed to be such a Help meet for her Husband, "that she caused me to renew those Prayers, which, for some "Months, I have put up to God, that he would be pleased "to send me a Daughter of Abraham to be my Wife."—"I find, upon many Accounts, it is my Duty to marry.—

"Lord

47

"Lord I desire to have no Choice of my own. Thou "knowest my Circumstances; thou knowest I only desire "to marry in and for thee. Thou didst chuse a Rebecca "for Isaac, chuse one for me to be a Help meet for me, "in carrying on that great Work committed to my "Charge." Lord, hear me, Lord, let my Cry come unto thee. Preached this Morning, collected 59 l. and perceived the Meeting begin sooner, and rise higher than before. Dear Mr. Edwards wept during the whole Time of Exercise.—The People were equally, if not more affected, and my own Soul was much lifted up towards God. In the Afternoon the Power encreased yet more and more. Our Lord seem'd to keep the good Wine till the last. I have not seen four such gracious Meetings together since my Arrival. My Soul was much knit to these dear People of God, and tho' I had not Time to converse with them about their Experiences, yet one might see, that for the most Part, they were a gracious tender People; and, tho' their former Fire might be greatly abated, yet it immediately appeared, when stirred up. Oh that my Soul may be refreshed with the joyful News, that Northampton People have recovered their first Love; that the Lord has revived his Work in their dear Souls, and caused them to do their first Works!

***Westfield and Springfield.***

*Monday, October 20.* Left *Northampton* in the Evening; and rode **very pleasantly** 18 Miles to *Westfield*; conversed with a poor Woman on a sick Bed, who gave an Account of **some Discoveries she had of** our Lord's redeeming Love. Met with a little Book, written by Dr. *Cotton Mather*, entitled, *The Ornaments of the Daughters of Zion*, which I would recommend to all, especially the *Boston-Ladies*. Preached the Morning to a considerable Congregation, **and with considerable Power at the latter End**. Hasted to *Springfield* **about** ten Miles from *Westfield*. Crossed a Ferry; preached to a large Auditory, and then returned and preached to those who could not get over the Ferry, by Reason of the Wind. The Meeting-House was full—**God's Power was with me both Times, but especially at the last**. My Soul was much carried out in Prayer, and the Lord so strengthened me in the inner Man, that I could have preached another Sermon after I had done. A little after I left *Springfield*, my Horse, coming over a broken Bridge, threw me over his Head, di-

rectly

48

rectly upon my Nose. **The Fall** stunn'd me for a while—My Mouth was full of Dust, and I bled a little, but falling upon soft Sand, got not much Damage. After I had recovered my self, and mounted my Horse, God so filled me with a Sense of his sovereign, distinguishing Love, **and my own Unworthiness**, that my Eyes **gushed out** with Tears; but they were all Tears of Love. Oh! how **did** I want to sink before the *High and lofty One who inhabiteth Eternity!* I felt myself less than Nothing; and yet knew that Jesus was my All in All. **The divine Presence was strong upon me all the Evening**. We stopped at a Friend's House, about 4 Miles from *Springfield*; **took proper** Refreshment, **and then** went to Rest, desiring **not** to be **unthankful** for the peculiar Favours conferred upon me the Night past. Lord, *they are noted in thy Book. Oh let them be also written on the Tables of mine Heart!*

***Suffield and Windsor.***

*Tuesday, October 21.* Set out for *Suffield* about 8 Miles from the Place where I lay. Reached thither, and preached about 11 o' Clock to several thousands of People. Meeting with a Minister in the Way who said "It was not absolutely necessary for a Gospel Minister, that he should be converted;" I insisted much in my Discourse upon the Doctrine of the New Birth, and also the Necessity of a Minister's being converted, before he could preach Christ aright. The Word came with great Power, and a great Impression was made upon the People in all Parts of the Assembly. Many Ministers were present. I did not spare them. Most of them thanked me for my plain Dealing: But one was offended, and so would more of his Stamp, if I was to continue longer in *New-England*. For unconverted Ministers are the Bane of the Christian Church: And, tho' I honour the Memory of that great and good Man Mr. *Stoddard*; yet I think he is much to be blamed for endeavouring to prove that unconverted Men might be admitted into the Ministry.—How he has handled the Controversy, I know not. I think no solid Arguments can be brought to defend such a Cause. But the best of Men are permitted to err that we may know they are but Men. A Sermon lately published by Mr. *Gilbert Tennent*, entitled, "The Danger of an unconverted Ministry," I think unanswerable. As I was riding to *Windsor* after Dinner, an old Man came up to me, saying

"He

49

"He knew what I had preached in the Morning was true; "I have felt it, says he, I was under the Spirit of Bondage 20 years, and have received the Spirit of Adoption 23 Years." Another came, giving me an Account of his Experiences, and the People of God seemed much revived at *Windsor*, where, as I am informed, a true converted Man is Minister. I preached in the Afternoon with such Freedom, that a young Minister, who had heard me several Times, told me, "I had kept the good Wine until now." As soon as Sermon was over, I rode about a Mile and a half, and preached to a throng'd Congregation, belonging to old Mr. *Edwards*, Fa-



ther to Mr. *Edwards* of *Northampton*, and I believe a true Disciple and Minister of the Lord Jesus Christ. My Body was somewhat weak, and I was not so much assisted. But it is the Lord—He knows best when to dispense, and when to suspend his Aids. After exercise, we supped at the House of old Mr. *Edwards*. His Wife was as aged, I believe, as himself, and I fancied that I was sitting in the House of a *Zachary* and *Elizabeth*. Indeed I felt great Satisfaction in my Soul, and parted from him and his Son (who came with me so far) with some inward Regret. But, blessed be God, we shall meet again in Eternity. Lord, grant that I may always comfort myself with this Thought!

#### ***Hartford and Weathersfield.***

*Wednesday, October 22.* Preached to many Thousands, with much Freedom and Power in the Morning; and to about the same Number at *Weathersfield*, three Miles from *Hartford*, in the Afternoon. Here my Soul was refreshed by the coming of Messrs. *Wheelock* and *Pomeroy*, two young, faithful, and zealous Ministers of Jesus Christ, which much revived me. This Morning I intended to go and preach at both their Places; as also to *Plymouth*, *Rhode-Island*, &c.—But God shewed me to Day, it was inconsistent with my other Business upon many Accounts. And therefore, after Prayer and Consultation with my Friends, I resolved to go directly to *New-York*. Accordingly, at Night, I rode to *Middle-Town*, 10 Miles from *Weathersfield*, and was entertained at the House of Mr. *Russel*, the Minister of the Place, and, I think, an *Israelite* indeed, and one, who, I hear, has been long mourning over the Deadness of Professors. Oh that all Ministers were like minded!

H

Mid-

50

#### ***Middletown and Wallingsford.***

*Tuesday, October 23.* Was much pleased with the Simplicity of our Host, and the Order wherein his Children attended on their Family Devotions. Preached to about 4000 People (great Numbers of which were considerably affected)

about 11 o' Clock. Preached again in the Afternoon at Wallingsford, fourteen Miles from Middletown; and then rode to New-Haven, fourteen Miles further, where I was most affectionately received by Mr. Pierpoint, Brother to Mr. Edwards of Northampton. As I came along I found wonderful Freedom in my Soul for declining to go so long a Circuit as was proposed. I conversed profitably with a godly, zealous Minister from Long-Island, and when I came to New-Haven, I found God strengthening my inner Man.—I wrestled in Prayer, in Company with my dear Fellow-Travellers, and am persuaded the Lord did not let us go without his Blessing. *Oh that we may sit down in the Kingdom of Heaven!*

#### NEW-HAVEN.

Friday, October 24. Was refreshed with the Sight of dear Mr. Noble of New-York, who also brought me Letters from Georgia. Blessed be God, the Orphan-House Affairs go on prosperously. The Lord is with my dear Family of a Truth. Declined preaching in the Morning, because it was wet, and the People had no Notice of my Coming, and I had much private Business on my Hands. Perceived my Health grow better. Preach'd in the Afternoon with Power towards the latter End of the Sermon, and observed some deeply affected indeed. It being the Time in which the Assembly met, the Governor, the Council, and the Gentlemen of the lower House were present. After Sermon, two young Ministers, who seem'd to have some Experience of divine Things, came to converse with me, and in the Evening I expounded at my Lodgings to a Room full of People. The Power of the Lord was upon me, I spake with much Weight and Freedom, and had sweet Fellowship with my dear Companions afterwards. *Oh! who wou'd but travel for Christ?*

Saturday, October 25. Was again refreshed this Morning by the Sight of Mr. Jedediah Mills, a dear Man of God, Minister at Ripton near Stratford. He wrote to me some

Time

51

Time ago. I felt his Letter, and now also felt the Man. My Soul was much united to him. I could not but think God would do great Things by his Hands. He has had a remarkable Work in his Parish some Time ago, and talked like one who was no Novice in divine Things. With him I dined at the Rev. Mr. C——'s [[*Thomas Clap*]], Rector of *New-Haven* College,

about one third Part as big as that of *Cambridge*. It has one Rector, three Tutors, and about a hundred Students: But I hear of no remarkable Concern amongst them concerning Religion. I preached twice to the Consolation of God's People, many of which, I have heard, live at *New-Haven*, and the Countries round about. There were sweet Meltings discernible both Times. I spoke very closely to the Students, and shewed the dreadful Ill-Consequences of an unconverted Ministry. Dear Mr. Mills, when he took his Leave, told me of one Minister in Particular, who had been wrought upon before, but now was gone Home as full as he could hold. Oh that God may quicken Ministers! Oh that the Lord may make them a flaming Fire! Come Lord Jesus, come quickly, Amen and Amen.

Sunday, October 26. Preach'd both Morning and Evening to much larger Congregations than before, and in the Afternoon observed an especial Presence of God in the Assembly. Many, I believe, were comforted and quickened by the Holy Ghost. The People of God sent me word, that they were much revived, and one came and told me that these Words were lately pressed upon her Heart, *The Winter is gone, the Spring is coming on, the Voice of the Turtle is heard in the Land*. Indeed I believe this will be an acceptable Year of the Lord. Before Evening Service, the following Note was put into my Hand, by one who came to me a Day or two ago, some Miles off, under Distress, and, tho' but weak in Body, could not but follow me "One Self-righteous *Pharisee* resting in Duties, who hath a rational Belief of "his damned Estate, and that he never felt the Pangs of "the New-Birth, desires your Prayers to that God that hath "said, *Ye must be born again*." After Sermon I waited on

the Governor: I observed *him to be* much affected under the Word. When I came in, he said, "I am glad, *Sir*, to see "you, and heartily glad to hear you." His Heart was so full that he could not speak much. *The Tears trickled* down his aged Cheeks *like Drops of Rain*. "He was thankful to God, *he said*, for such Refreshings in our Way to

H 2

our

52

"our Rest. Food does us Good, when we eat it with an "Appetite." And indeed, I believe he had fed upon the Word. *The Lord support him, when his Strength faileth him, and bring his grey Hairs with Comfort to the Grave!* In the Evening I expounded *at my Lodgings* to a great Number of People, and collected upwards of 35 *l.* for the Orphans. *My Soul was much refreshed to hear how the Children of God were revived under the Word preached. And nothing confirms me more that I have been taught of God, and preach the Truth as it is in Jesus, than to find our Lord's dear old Disciples, feeling the Power of the Word wherever I go, saying, "It agrees with their Experiences." My Sheep hear my Voice, says our Redeemer, A Stranger will they not hear.* About eight at Night we left *New-Haven*. The Moon shone bright, and, after we had rode three Miles, we arrived at a House, which, as a *faithful* Minister told me before, "was full of God." *I think, they tell me* the Mother and three Daughters were converted Persons. *As soon as I came into the House, the Spirit of the Lord came upon me.* God gave me to wrestle with him, and my Friends said at departing they were never in such a House before. *Oh* it was a sweet Time indeed! God made his Power to be felt and known. After I had given a Word of Exhortation, that they *would* study to adorn the Gospel of our Lord in all Things, we went forward on our Journey, and got to *Milford*, 10 Miles from *New-Haven*, about ten at Night. *The Lord's Name be praised from the rising up of the Sun, unto the going down of the same. Amen and Amen.*

**Milford and Stratford.**

*Monday, October 27.* Preached this Morning at *Milford*, and, I think, with as much Clearness, Freedom and Power as I have for a long Season. The Presence of God was much in the Assembly, which was large. Many Ministers were present, and they could not help glorifying God much in my Behalf. Dear Mr. Mills, who came again to meet me this Morning, was much affected, and as I was riding out of Town a godly Gentleman met me, and with Tears in his Eyes, said, "I never saw God's Presence in the Sanctuary on this wise before; it has been a blessed Time to my Soul," or Words to that Effect. In the Afternoon I preached at *Stratford*, four Miles from *Milford*, but was not so much assisted as in the Morning. Both Places, especially

---

the

---

53

the latter, were ill-reported of, for their leaning too much towards *Arminian* Principles. O Lord, convince them of the Rottenness of their Foundation, and bring them to know the Truth as it is in Jesus.

**Fairfield and Newark.**

*Tuesday, October 28.* Got to *Fairfield*, 8 Miles from *Stratford*, about 10 last Night. The Weather was very cold, it having snowed a great Part of the Afternoon; but the Lord brought us on in Safety. Preach'd in the Morning to a considerable Congregation, and found myself assisted very much in Prayer after Sermon. I scarce knew how to leave off. In the Afternoon at *Newark*, 12 Miles from *Fairfield*, I was restrain'd much both in Prayer and preaching.—It rained greatly, so that we had not a very large Congregation: However some (I observed) were affected. I believe my Lord never lets me preach in vain.

**Stanford and Rye.**

*Wednesday, October 29.* Came hither last Night in Safety, tho' it was dark and rainy. Was visited with a great inward Tryal, so that I was pained at the Heart. Was somewhat dejected before I went out of my Lodgings, and distressed for

a Text after I got up into the Pulpit; but the Lord directed me to one: And *tho' I looked for no Power or Success, being somewhat low by my last Night's Tryal, yet before I had preached half an Hour, the blessed Spirit began to move on the Hearers Hearts in a very awful Manner. Young, and especially many old People were surprizingly affected, so that I thought they would have cried out. At Dinner the Spirit of the Lord came upon me again, and enabled me to speak with such Vigour against sending unconverted Ministers into the Ministry, that two Ministers with Tears in their Eyes, publickly confessed, that they had lain Hands on two young Men without so much as asking them, "whether they were born again of God, or not?" After Dinner, finding my Heart much enlarged, I prayed, and with such Power, that most in the Room were put under Concern, and one old minister was so deeply convicted, that calling Mr. Noble and me out, with great Difficulty, (because of this weeping) he desired our Prayers: "For, says "he, I have been a Scholar, and have preached the Doc-*

*"trines*

54

*"trines of Grace a long Time, but I believe I have never "felt the Power of them in my own Soul," or Words to that Effect. Oh that all unconverted Ministers were brought to make the same Confession! I was much affected with his Ingenuity, and after having by Prayer recommended him to God, I took Horse, rejoicing exceedingly in Spirit, to see how our Lord was getting himself the Victory, in a Place where Mr. Davenport, a Native of Stanford, a dear Minister of the blessed Jesus, had been slighted and despised. A Prophet is not without Honour, save in his own Country and his Father's House.*

*But here I think it proper to set up my Ebenezer, before I enter into the Province of New-York, to give God Thanks for sending me to New-England. "I have now had an Opportunity of seeing the greatest and most populous Part of "it, and take it all together, it certainly on many Accounts "exceeds all other Provinces in America, and, for the Establishment of Religion, perhaps all other Parts of the*

“World. Never surely was a Place so well settled in so  
 “short a Time. The Towns all through *Connecticut* and  
 “Eastward towards *York*, in the Province of *Massachusetts*,  
 “near the River-side, are large, well peopled, and exceed-  
 “ing pleasant to travel through. Every five Miles, or  
 “perhaps less, you have a Meeting-House, and, I believe,  
 “there is no such Thing as a Pluralist or Non-resident Mi-  
 “nister in both Provinces. Many, nay most that preach,  
 “I fear do not experimentally know Christ; yet I cannot  
 “see much worldly Advantage to tempt them to take upon  
 “them the sacred Function. Few Country Ministers, as I  
 “have been informed, have sufficient allowed them in Money  
 “to maintain a Family. God has remarkably, at sundry  
 “Times and in divers Manners, poured out his Spirit in se-  
 “veral Parts of both Provinces; and it often refreshed my  
 “Soul to hear of the Faith of their good Forefathers, who  
 “first settled in these Parts. Notwithstanding they had their  
 “Foibles, surely they were a Set of Righteous Men. They  
 “certainly followed our Lord’s Rule, *sought first the King-  
 “dom of God and his Righteousness, and behold all other  
 “Things God added unto them. Their Seed are now bles-  
 “sed in temporal Things especially, and notwithstanding  
 “the Rising Generation seem to be settled on their Lees, yet  
 “I believe the Lord hath left more than 7000, who have  
 “not bowed their Knees to Baal. The Ministers and  
 “People of Connecticut seem’d to be more simple than those*

“that

55

“that live near *Boston*, especially in those Parts where I went:  
 “But I think the Ministers Preaching almost universally by  
 “Note, is a certain Mark they have, in a great Measure,  
 “lost the old Spirit of Preaching. For tho’ all are not to  
 “be condemned that use Notes, yet it is a sad Symptom of  
 “the Decay of vital Religion, when reading Sermons be-  
 “comes fashionable where *extempore* Preaching did once al-  
 “most universally prevail. When the Spirit of Prayer be-  
 “gan to be lost, then Forms of Prayer were invented, and  
 “I believe, the same Observation will hold good as to Preach-  
 “ing. As for the Universities, I believe it may be said,

“their Light is become Darkness, Darkness that may be  
 “felt, and is complained of by the most godly Ministers.  
 “*I pray God those Fountains may be purified, and send forth*  
 “*pure Streams to water the Cities of our God.*—The Church  
 “of England is at a low Ebb, and, as far as I can find,  
 “had People kept their Primitive Purity, it would scarce  
 “have got Footing in *New-England*. I have many Evi-  
 “dences to prove that most of the Churches have been first  
 “set up by immoral Men, and such as would not submit to  
 “the Discipline of their Congregations. But I’ll say no  
 “more of the poor Church of *England*. Most of her Sons,  
 “I fear, hate to be reformed, and will but cast my Words  
 “behind them.—As for the Civil Government of *New-*  
 “*England*, it seems to be well regulated, and I think, at  
 “opening of all their Courts, either the Judge or a Minister  
 “begins with a Prayer. Family Worship, I believe, is ge-  
 “nerally kept up. The Negroes, I think better used in re-  
 “spect both to Soul and Body, than in any other Province  
 “I have yet seen: In short, I like *New-England* exceed-  
 “ing well; and when a Spirit of Reformation revives, it  
 “certainly will prevail more than in any other Place, be-  
 “cause they are simple in their Worship, less corrupt in their  
 “Principles, and consequently easier to be brought over to  
 “the Form of sound Words, into which so many of their  
 “pious Ancestors were delivered.” Send forth, O Lord,  
 thy Light and thy Truth, and for thy infinite Mercy’s Sake,  
 shew thou hast a peculiar Delight in these habitable Parts of  
 the Earth! Amen, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen!

### **Rye in New-York Province.**

Being kindly invited by a Minister of the Church of Eng-  
 land, after Dinner I went to Rye, about eleven Miles from

Stan-

56

*Stanford*. I read Prayers and preached to a small Con-  
 gregation. Was civilly entertained by the Minister, and  
 then rode ten Miles further to *East Chester*. Here I spent  
 an agreeable Evening with my dear Companions in Travel.  
 God filled me out of his own divine Fulness, and made me



to drink of his Pleasures as out of a River. I think I know what our Lord means when he promises, *He that believeth on me, out of his Belly shall flow Rivers of living Waters.* Lord, evermore give me this Water.

### ***King's Bridge and New-York.***

*Thursday, October 30.* Preached in the Morning to about 300 People, and observed a sweet Melting amongst them. Dined and rode six Miles to *King's Bridge*, where I preached from the Steps of a publick House to about 500; but did not perceive much visible Effect. Hither several *New-York* Friends came to meet me. I talk'd with them on the Way of the Things of God, and found an inexpressible Satisfaction in my Soul when I arrived at the house of my very dear Friend, Mr. *Noble*. After Supper, the Lord filled my Heart, and gave me to wrestle with him for *New-York* Inhabitants, and my own dear Friends. To add to my Comfort, the Lord brought my Dear Brother *Davenport* from *Long-Island*, by whose Hands the blessed Jesus has of late done great Things. In a Letter to his Mother he writes "thus: "The Lord has, in infinite Mercy, given me, in my Parish, near twenty, in a little more than two Months "Time. In almost all these the Work of Conversion seem'd "very clear." Let God have all the Praise. Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.

### ***NEW-YORK.***

*Friday, October 31.* Met with a bitter Pamphlet wrote against me by some of the Presbyterian Persuasion, and found Freedom given me to answer it. I long since expected close Opposition from that Quarter. I believe will be increasing daily. The Lord will make me more than Conqueror thro' his Love! Met also with two Volumes of Sermons published in *London* as delivered by me, tho' I never preached on most of the Texts. But *Satan* must try all Ways to bring the Work of God into Contempt. Blessed be God, who enables me abundantly to rejoice in all Things that be-

fal

57

fal me. Preached in the Morning at Mr. *P——n's* [[*Pemberton's*]] Meeting-House: *But never saw the Word of God fall with such Weight in New-York before.* Two or three cried out. Mr. *Noble* could scarce restrain himself. And, look where I would, many seem'd deeply wounded. At Night the Word was attended with great Power. *One cried out; and the Lord enabled me, at the latter End of my Sermon, to speak with Authority.* Alas! How vain are the Thoughts of Men! As I came along Yesterday, I found my Heart *somewhat* dejected, and told Mr. *Noble* I expected but little Movings in *New-York*; but Mr. *Noble* bid me “expect great “Things from God”, and likewise told me of several who were, *as he hoped, savingly* wrought upon by my Ministry, when there last. *O Lord, let these Things humble my Soul for thy own Name's Sake!*

*Saturday, November 1.* Finished my Answer to the Pamphlet. God enabled me to write it in the Spirit of Meekness. *O Lord, give it thy Blessing!* Preached twice as Yesterday to very crowded Auditories, and neither Time without *Power. In the Evening Exercise, some fainted, and* the Lord seemed to shew us more and more, that a Time for favouring *New-York* was near at Hand. *O wherefore did I doubt! Lord, increase my Faith.*

*Sunday, November 2.* Preached *this* Morning with Freedom *and some Power*, but was *much* dejected before the Evening Sermon. *For near half an Hour before I left Mr. Noble's House, I could only lie before the Lord and say, “I “was a poor Sinner, and wonder that Christ would be gracious to such a Wretch.” As I went to Meeting, I grew weaker and weaker, and when I came into the Pulpit, I could have chose to be silent rather than speak. But, after I had begun, the Spirit of the Lord gave me Freedom, till at length it came down like a mighty Rushing Wind, and carried all before it. Immediately the whole Congregation was alarmed. Shrieking, Crying, Weeping, and Wailing were to be heard in every Corner. Men's Hearts failing them for Fear, and many falling into the Arms of their Friends. My Soul was carried out till I could scarce speak any more. A*

Sense of God's Goodness overwhelmed me. As I went down, a Woman said, "Come and see what God has done for me "To-night." I looked, and let her Daughter, in a great Agony, was crying out, "O my Jesus, my Jesus!" Another, a little Boy, was so concerned on the Pulpit Stairs, that he could scarce stand. One of my Friends asked him

I

why

58

why he cried. "Who can help it? said he. Mr. *Whitefield's* Words cut me to the Heart." After I came home, I threw myself upon the Bed, and in an awful Silence, admired the infinite Freeness, Sovereignty and Condescension of the Love of God. I was unwilling to move, but was called down to the Marriage of Mr. *P——r*, whom I met at *Rhode-Island*, who being espoused to the young Woman, who was so struck at the same Place, by my Advice, married her this Night, and both are going as my Assistants to *Georgia*. Never did I see a more solemn Wedding. Jesus Christ was called, and he was present in a remarkable Manner. After Mr. *P——n* had married them, I prayed. But my Soul, how it was enabled to wrestle with and lay hold on God! I was in a very great Agony, and the Holy Ghost was remarkably present, that most, I believe, could say, *Surely God is in this Place!* After this, Divine Manifestations flowed in so fast, that my frail Tabernacle was scarce able to sustain them. My dear Friends sat round me on the Bed-sides. I prayed for each of them alternately with strong Cries, and pierced by the Eye of Faith, even within the Veil. I continued in this Condition for about half an Hour, astonished at my own Vileness, and the Excellency of Christ, then rose full of Peace, and Love and Joy. Oh! how am I obliged to my Enemies? God has remarkably revealed himself to my Soul, ever since I have seen the Pamphlet published by the Presbyterians against me. O how faithful is he that hath promised, *It shall bruise thy Heel, and thou shalt bruise his Head!* Lord enable me to lay hold on this, during the Time of my sojourning here on Earth.

Monday, Nov. 3. Preached both Morning and Afternoon, and perceived the Congregations still increase. There was a

great and gracious Melting among the People both Times, but no crying out. Near 110 l. Currency *were* collected for the Orphans; and in the Evening *many came and took an affectionate Leave*. About seven we took Boat; reached *Staten Island* about ten, *greatly refreshed in my inner Man*. A dear Christian Friend received us gladly. We solaced ourselves by singing and praying. And about Midnight retired to sleep, still longing for that Time when I should sleep no more. *Lord keep me from a sinful and too eager Desire after Death. I desire not to be impatient. I desire* quietly to wait till my blessed Change come. Amen and Amen.

*Staten*

59

#### ***Staten Island and Newark.***

Tuesday, November 4. Preached from a Waggon on *Staten Island*, to about 3 or 400 *People*. The Lord came amongst them. One young Man, *in particular, as tho' his verry Heart-strings would break*, came to me after Sermon, *with strong Cryings and Tears*, beseeching me "to pray "that he might be converted." Many *others wept also, and several of God's Children felt the Presence of the dear Lord Jesus in their Hearts*. Many of them rejoiced to see me again. One gray-headed Man came and told me how God had brought him from Darkness to Light, when I was here last. *My Soul was also* much refreshed with the Sight of *dear* Mr. *Gilbert Tennent* and Mr. *Cross*. The former has lately lost his Wife, and tho' dear unto him, yet he was enabled with great Calmness to preach her funeral Sermon, whilst the Corps *were* lying before him. This put me in Mind of *Melancthon*, who, at the News of his Wife's Death, said, "By Kate, I'll come after thee ere it be long." Since his Wife's Decease, Mr. *Tennent* has been in the *West Jerseys* and *Maryland*, and told me how God remarkably had work'd by his Ministry in many Places. Mr. *Cross* also has seen great and wonderful Things in his Congregations, so great that when I came to desire a particular Account, he said, "It directly answered the Account given by Mr. *Edwards* of the Work of God in *Northampton*." *What is*

*the Lord Jesus about to do! If the Beginning is so great, what will the End of these Things be!* Rode after Sermon to Newark, about ten Miles from Staten Island. Preached to a considerable Congregation, but it being dark before I concluded, I could not see what Impressions the Discourse made. **I fear but little.** However, at Night the Lord manifested forth his Glory. For coming down to Family Prayer, where I lodged, and **perceiving** many young Men around me, my Soul was, **as it were**, melted down with Concern for them. After singing, I gave a Word of Exhortation. **With what Power none can fully express but those that saw it.** Oh how did the Word fall like a Hammer and like a Fire! **What a Weeping was there!** One poor Creature in particular was ready to sink into the Earth. His Countenance was altered, till he looked, as it were, sick to Death. At length he said, "What shall I do to be "saved?" Others were dissolved **into** Tears around him; and

---

 one

60

one of my Fellow-travellers was struck down, and so overpowered, that his Body became exceeding weak. He could scarce move all the Night after. God, I believe, was **now** working powerfully on his Soul. **As** for my own Part I was almost spent. **I vomited, threw myself upon the Bed, humbled myself before God, and spent** the Remaining Evening in hearing **dear** Mr. Tennent give an Account of his late Excursion. Oh he is a **choice** humble Minister of the Gospel! *May I follow him as he does Christ. Amen and Amen.*

### **BASKINRIDGE.**

*Wednesday, November 5.* Set out at eight in the Morning. Got to *Baskinridge*, the Place where Mr. Cross exercises his stated Ministry, about one o'Clock. At the House where I waited in the Way, a Woman spoke to me, under strong Convictions, and told me, "she was deeply wounded by my last Night's Discourse." When I came to *Baskinridge*, I found Mr. *Davenport*, **according to Appointment**, had been preaching to the Congregation. It consisted of about 3000 People. **As I went along I told a Friend,**

“My Soul wept for them, and I was persuaded within myself, that the Lord would in that Day make his Power to be known amongst them.” In Prayer, I perceived my Soul drawn out, and a Stirring of Affection among the People. I had not discoursed long, but the Holy Ghost displayed his Power. In every Part of the Congregation, some Body or other began to cry out, and almost all melted into Tears. This abated for a few Moments, till a little Boy about seven or eight Years of Age cried out exceeding piteously indeed, and wept as tho’ his little Heart would break. Mr. Cross having Compassion on him, took him up into the Waggon, which so affected me that I broke from my Discourse, and told the People, “the little Boy should preach to them, and that God, since old Professors would not cry after Christ, had displayed his Sovereignty, and out of an Infant’s Mouth was perfecting Praise.” God so blessed *this*, that an universal Concern fell on the Congregation again. Fresh Persons dropp’d down here and there, and the Cry encreased more and more. At length I concluded, and as I was going away, I asked the little Boy “what he cried for?” He answered, “his Sins.” I then asked, “What he wanted?” He answered, “Christ.” As I passed along, fresh Instances of God’s Power presented themselves to

my

61

my View. Many mourning after Jesus that would not be comforted. After Sermon, Mr. Cross gave Notice of an Evening Lecture in his Barn, two Miles off. Thither we went, and a great Multitude followed. Mr. Gilbert Tennent preached first, and that excellently well upon the Necessity and Benefit of spiritual Desertions. I then began to pray, and felt the Spirit of God working in me mightily. A great Commotion was soon observed among the Hearers. I then gave a Word of Exhortation. The Lord’s Presence attended it in a surprizing Manner. One in about six Minutes cried out, “*He is come, he is come,*” and could scarce sustain the Discovery that Jesus Christ made of himself to his Soul. Others were so earnest for a Discovery of the Lord to their Souls, that their eager Crying obliged me to stop,

and I prayed over them as I saw their Agonies and Distress increase. At length we sung a Hymn, and then retired to the House where the Man that received Christ continued till near Midnight, talking of and praising, "*his sweet Christ, his free-hearted Christ,*" &c. A gracious Woman, who had been wrestling with God for a Display of his Power, was so overcome with a Sense of his Goodness, that she almost swoon'd away. And at length, my own Soul was so full that I retired, and was in a strong Agony for some Time, and wept before the Lord, under a deep Sense of my own Vileness, and the Sovereignty and Greatness of God's everlasting Love. Most of the People spent the Remainder of the Night in Prayer and Praises. Two or three young Ministers spoke alternately, and others prayed as the Lord gave them Utterance. Oh! it was a Night much to be remember'd! *May the Lord make us mindful of it even to the Day of our Death. Amen and Amen!*

**Baskinridge and New-Brunswick.**

Thursday, November 6. After Breakfast this Morning, at the Desire of Mr. Cross, I went and gave a Word of Exhortation to, and sung and prayed with a few People in the Barn. There was a sweet Melting amongst them again, and the Lord was peculiarly present with us. Before I mounted my Horse, many came to me under great Soul Concern. A Lad about thirteen Years old told me, "He never felt Sin till Yesterday." A poor Negroe-Woman said, "she was filled with a Love of Christ," and being too fond of the Instrument, would fain have gone with me. Her

Master

62

Master a godly Man consented: But I bid her go Home, and with a thankful Heart serve her present Master. When I was upon my Horse several Women came to shake me by the Hand. I asked one "whether she knew Christ?" She said "yes." "How long?" "Three Years, said she, the third Sunday in next March." I asked another the same Question. She answered "Yes, but I am waiting for "a fresh Breathing from the blessed Spirit." I, with Plea-

sure, took my Leave of them, and rode agreeably in Company with many Children of God to *New-Brunswick*, 23 Miles from *Baskinridge*. Here Letters awaited me from *Savannah*, acquainting me that there had been a great Mortality amongst the People of that Place. That my Family lived in Love, the Orphans continued very healthy, and that a Minister was coming over to supply my Place at *Savannah*. This last much rejoiced me, being resolved to give up *Savannah* Living as soon as I arrived at *Georgia*. *A Parish and the Orphan-House together are too much for me: Besides God seems to shew me it is my Duty to evangelize, and not to fix in any particular Place.* In the Evening I preach'd in Mr. *Gilbert Tennent's* Meeting-House, and was led in my Discourse to comfort the Hearts of God's dear People. A little after, Mr. B——r (a young Minister, who, I trust, will hereafter come fairly out for God) preach'd for about an Hour, and then, at the Desire of dear Mr. *Gilbert Tennent*, I concluded with a Word of Exhortation. The Lord was pleased to communicate himself to me freely. My Soul was filled with his blessed Presence. The Word fell with Weight: And after Sermon in private Prayer with my dear Friends, oh how did my loving Saviour cause my Cup to overflow! He permitted me to talk with him as a Man talketh with his Friend. This I take to be that *παρρησία* or Freedom of Speech which St. *Paul* speaks of, and thro' the Lord Jesus Believers have Access to the Father. *Oh the Happiness of those who are really born again of God!*

#### ***New-Brunswick and Trenton.***

*Friday, November 7.* Had some Thoughts of going to *Freehold* and *Shrewsbury*, but was prevented by the Coming of Mr. *William Tennent*, whom I wanted to consult about his Brother *Gilbert's* going to *Boston*, in order to help in carrying on the Work of God in *New England*. After Prayer, and some Arguments *pro* and *con*, we thought it the

Will

63

Will of God that Mr. *Gilbert Tennent* should go to *Boston*. He (diffident of himself) was at first unwilling, urging his



Inability for so great a Work, but afterwards being convinced it was the divine Will, he said, "The Will of the "Lord be done." With him also Mr. R——s was to go, a young Minister, one of the Tutors of *Cambridge* College, whom I brought with a View that he should return with Mr. *Tennent*. God has been pleased to work upon his Heart by my Ministry. I cannot but think he will be a burning and a shining Light. It being the last Time we should be together for a long Season, we thought it best to spend some Time in Prayer. Mr. *Gilbert Tennent* was our Mouth to God.—*He prayed in the Holy Ghost.* Many were greatly affected. About 11 o' Clock we parted in Tears, but with a full Assurance that we should see and hear of great Things before we *saw each other again in the Flesh.* I then went on towards *Trenton*, in Company with Mr. *Davenport* and some others. The Lord was with us on the Way. *Some Time before we reached the Inn I could say but little.* I retired as soon as I came to *Trenton*, lay silently before the Lord. He heard the Cry of my Heart. *He* filled it with his abundant Presence, and gave me great Freedom to write something, which, I trust, will tend to promote his Glory. *Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen!*

#### ***Trenton and Philadelphia.***

*Saturday, November 8.* Preached this Morning in the Meeting-House, not to a very large or much affected Auditory.—*Was restrained in public preaching, but felt an especial Presence of God in my private Business.* Set out immediately after Dinner, and was *mercifully and* very providentially preserved in going over two Creeks, which lay in the Way, and were much swell'd by the Rain. In one of them two of my Fellow-Travellers, in all Probability, must have perished had not a Woman cried out, and bid us stop. A Man *touched, as I afterwards found,* by my Ministry, hearing my Voice came and swam our Horses over the other Creek, and conducted us safe over a very narrow Bridge. About 8 we reached *Philadelphia*, tho' the Night was very dark indeed. Some Friends were just come in, who had been *out* another Way to meet me. Several with great Joy came to salute me.

We sang, we prayed. The Lord inclined his Ear. My Soul was filled, as it were, with Marrow and Fatness. I re-

tired

64

tired to Rest, praying the Lord that my Coming to *Philadelphia* might be in the Fulness of the Blessing of the Gospel of Peace. *Amen, so be it!*

### PHILADELPHIA.

Sunday, November 9. Had several gracious Souls come to see me.—We prayed together.—The Lord much enlarged my Heart. Preached about 11 in the Morning to several Thousands in a House built for that Purpose since my last Departure from *Philadelphia*. It is a 100 Feet long, and 70 Feet broad. A large Gallery is to be erected all around it.—Many Footsteps of Providence have been visible in beginning and carrying it on. Particulars I shall (God willing) relate hereafter. Let it suffice at present, that both in the Morning and Evening, God's Glory filled the House: For there was great Power in the Congregation. It was never preach'd in before. The Roof is not yet up, but the People raised a convenient Pulpit, and boarded the Bottom. The Joy of most of the Hearers, when they saw me, was *inexpressible*: Some still mocked. Between the Services I received a Packet of Letters from *England*, dated in *March* last.—*May the Lord heal, and bring Good out of the Divisions, which, at present, seem to be among the Brethren there!—God giving me Freedom, and many Friends being in the Room, I kneeled down and prayed with and exhorted them all. But, Oh how did they melt under both! My Soul was much rejoiced to look round them, because there were some who were now fairly brought through the Pangs of the New-Birth, who had been most marvellous Offenders against the great God. I shall mention two only. The first is one "Mr. Brockden, Recorder of Deeds, &c. "a Man eminent in his Profession, but for many Years a "notorious Deist. In his younger Days, he told me, he "had some religious Impressions, but coming into Business, "the Cares of the World so choaked the good Seed, that he*

“not only forgat his God in some Degree, but at length began to doubt of, and to dispute his very Being. In this State he continued many Years, and has been very zealous to propagate his Deistical, I could almost say Atheistical Principles among moral Men, but he told me he never endeavoured to make Proselytes of vicious, debauched People. When I came to *Philadelphia* this Time Twelve-month, he told me, he had not so much as a Cu-

“riosity

65

“riosity to hear me. But a Brother Deist, his choicest Friend, pressing him to come and hear me, to satisfy his Curiosity, he at length complied with his Request. It was Night. I preach’d at the Court House Stairs, upon the Conference which our Lord had with *Nicodemus*.—“I had not spoke much before God struck his Heart. For, said he, I saw your Doctrine tended to make People good.” His Family knew nothing that he had been to hear me. After he came Home his Wife, who had been at Sermon, came in also, and wished heartily that he had heard me. He said nothing. After this, another of his Family came in repeating the same Wish; and, if I mistake not, after that another, till at last being unable to refrain any longer, with Tears in his Eyes, Why, says he, I have been hearing him; and then expressed his Approbation. Ever since, he has followed on to know the Lord, and I verily believe Jesus Christ has made himself manifest to his Soul. Tho’ upwards of three score Years old, he is now I believe born again of God. He is a little Child, and often (as he told me) receives such Communications from God, when he retires into the Woods, that he thinks he could die a Martyr for the Truth.” The next one is CAPTAIN H——L, formerly as great a Reprobate as ever I heard of: Almost a Scandal and Reproach to human Nature. He used to swear to ease his Stomach, and was so fond of new Oaths that he used to go on Board the Transport Ships, and offer a Guinea for a new Oath, that he might have the Honour of coining it. It would be endless to give Instances of his vile Profaneness. To the Ho-

“nour of God’s grace let it be said, he is now, I believe, a “Christian. Not only reformed, but renewed. The effectual Stroke, he told me, was given, when I preached “last Spring at *Pennytask*, tho’ under good Impressions before. Ever since he has been zealous for the Truth, “stood like a Lamb when he was beaten, and in Danger of “being murdered some Time ago, by many of my Opposers, and, in short, shews forth his Faith by his Works.” I might speak also of some Quakers, who are fairly brought into an experimental Acquaintance with Christ, who are chosen with myself, the aforesaid B——n and H——l, and some others joint Trustees for the House lately erected.—But I mention these in Particular, because I think they are remarkable Proofs of that too much exploded Doctrine, I mean, *God’s Eternal Election and everlasting Love.*

K

“Whatever

66

“Whatever Men’s carnal Reasoning may suggest, yet if the “Children of God fairly examine their own Experiences, “if they do God Justice, they must acknowledge that “they did not chose God, but God chose them. And if “he chose them at all, it must be from Eternity, and that “too without any Regard to any Thing foreseen in them. “Unless they acknowledge this, Man’s Salvation must be “in Part owing to the Free-Will of Man, and if so, unless “Men descend from other Parents than I did, Christ Jesus “might have died, and never have seen the Travel of his “Soul in the Salvation of one of his Creatures. But I “would be tender in this Point and leave Persons to be “taught it of God. I am of the Martyr *Bradford’s* Mind.” *Let a Man go to the Grammar School of Faith and Repentance, before he goes to the University of Election and Predestination. A bare Head Knowledge of the Form of sound Words availeth nothing. I am quite sick of Christless Talkers. From such may I ever turn away! Amen and Amen.*

*Monday, November 10.* Preached Morning and Afternoon to very large Congregations, and observed a wonderful sweet Power attend both, but especially the Evening-Sermon. Ma-

ny afterwards came and told me what God *did* for their Souls thereby. All the vacant Time before and after preaching, I employed in answering my *English Letters*. *Lord bless what was written to the Consolation and Edification of my dear Friends for Jesus Christ's Sake. Amen and Amen.*

*Saturday, November 15.* Preached twice every Day this Week in the new House, one Morning excepted, when I preached in Mr. C——'s Meeting-House on Account of the Snow. *A most sweet and wonderful Power went at that Time through the Congregation. The Lord gave me the Text I preached on just before Meeting; directed me to a Method as I was going up the Pulpit-stairs; and enabled me to discourse with an uncommon Clearness, Freedom, and Power. The Effects plainly shewed that it was of God.—*The Word seemed to smite *them* like so many pointed Arrows. Many afterwards told me what they felt, and in the Evening I was sent for to a young Woman, who was carried Home from Meeting, and had continued almost speechless. *When I came, she look'd like a Person dead and laid out.* I prayed with her, and heard afterwards *that she came out into a more comfortable State.—**Blessed be the Name of the Lord. Indeed* I cannot say we

had

67

had one dry Meeting. The least Moving, I think, was one Afternoon, when I was unaccountably carried out to talk against Reasoning Unbelievers. *When I was* at Dinner I had not fixed upon a Text. When I was going to preach, I was so ill that some of my Friends advised me to go home. I thought it best to trust in God. I went on, began Preaching, and found my Heart somewhat refreshed, but all on a sudden, my Soul was so carried out to talk against depending on our natural Reason, that my Friends were astonished, and so was I too: For I felt the Holy Ghost come upon me *at that Time*, and never spake on that wise before. As I was going home, I said to a Friend, "Surely some Reasoners were in the Congregation." Upon Enquiry, I "found a *Cluster* of them were present, and then I knew "wherefore I was so assisted. *Oh who would but trust in*

God! One of these Reasoners a little after, meeting Mr. B——n, said, “What! Mr. *Whitefield* could not make “the People cry this Afternoon.” “A good Reason for “it,” says Mr. B——n, he was preaching against Deists, “and you know they are a harden’d Generation.” *Lord take from them a Heart of Stone, and give them a Heart of Flesh. Abba, Father, all Things are possible with thee.*

Another Afternoon, there was such an universal Commotion in the Congregation, as I never saw in *Philadelphia* before. *One or two cried out in a most piteous Manner, and Numbers wept so sorely, that I broke off Prayer after Sermon sooner than otherwise I should have done. The Children of God were melted down, and their Souls magnified the Lord.* I preached on these Words, *What shall I do to be saved?* And as I afterwards found, was *very* providentially directed to that Subject. For a Mrs. P——r, as I have it in a Paper taken from her own Mouth, went to Mr. *Cummins* to know “Why I should not preach in the Church?” He, after several *Invectives cast out* against me, said, *He could not answer his Oath to the Bishop of London, if he did give me Leave,* and cautioned her against going to hear me; adding, *That if she followed or adhered to what I said, she was in a woful Condition.* Nay, said he, *You are damned if you do. With all,* he told her, *He was distressed in his Soul for her, because she was a good Liver, and brought up “under pious Parents.* Mrs. P——r asked, “If she, by “God’s Assistance, *could* live up to the Doctrine and Example of our Saviour and the Apostles, as laid down in “the New Testament, she should not do well?” He an-

K 2

swered

68

swered, “Yes.” Then, Sir, replied she, “I must believe “in Mr. *Whitefield*’s Doctrine.” *There now, says* he, *you are running on again; I tell you, you are mad. Go home and hear him no more, and you’ll do well enough.* No, Sir, said Mrs. P——r, “I cannot stay away. And seeing so many People admire Mr. *Whitefield*’s Doctrine, and you so “bitter against him, *What must I do to be saved?* For “you are enough to distract me between you.” *You are*

good enough, replied Mr. Cummins, and may dance or play at Cards, and be in a far better Way than Whitefield or his Followers. For my Part, I will wash my Hands of your Blood, and will leave you. No, said Mrs. P——r, “You “love Money too well, Sir, to leave this Place.” After a great deal more Conversation, Mrs. P——r left him in great Distress of Mind, and often repeating to herself, *Lord, what shall I do to be saved?* Contrary to Mr. Cummins’s Advice, she went in the Afternoon, says the Paper before me, to hear Mr. Whitefield, and he providentially preached on the trembling Jaylor’s Words, *What shall I do to be saved?* Which gave the Gentlewoman so much Satisfaction and Comfort, that she is thankful to God for having an Opportunity of hearing that Text explained, is much strengthened, perfectly easy, and will by God’s Grace follow his Commandments. *Lord, for thy Mercy’s Sake, work in her both to will and to do, after thy good Pleasure. Amen and Amen.* It would be almost endless to recount all the particular Instances of God’s Grace, which I have seen this Week past. Many that before were only convicted, now plainly proved, that they were converted and had a clear Evidence of it within themselves. My chief Business was now to build up and to exhort them to continue in the Grace of God. Notwithstanding many were convicted almost every Day, and came unto me under the greatest Distress and Anguish of Soul. Several Societies are now in the Town, not only of Men and Women, but of little Boys and little Girls. Being so engaged, I could not visit them as I would, but I hope the Lord will raise me up some Fellow-Labourers, and that Elders will be ordained in every Place, then we shall see a glorious Church settled and established in Philadelphia. *Hasten that Time, O Lord, my Strength and my Redeemer.* I cannot leave off giving an Account of this Week’s Work, without mentioning another Instance or two of God’s Grace. One Woman came to me, I think fairly converted to our dear Lord Jesus. She told me, when I was at Philadelphia last, “She

“came

69

“came desiring that I would baptize her Child. I being otherwise engaged, refused. Upon this the Devil assaulted her, being under strong Convictions, in a most violent Manner, and endeavoured to persuade her, that all I had told her were Lies. She was cast into Darkness, but reasoned thus, It is impossible that it should be Lies, or that I should be a false Prophet, since the Word came with such Light, Evidence and unspeakable Power upon her Soul, when she heard me. She went home, retired to Bed, and there the Devil would fain have persuaded her to cut the Child’s Throat with a Pair of Scissars. She being brought into the utmost Extremity, cried and looked up to Christ. He delivered her out of her Distress. Satan immediately left her, and God flowed in upon her Soul. She now knows that her Redeemer liveth. *Praise the Lord, O my Soul!* Another young Woman, who I believe was made a wise Virgin last Spring, and received Jesus Christ into her Heart, acquainted me, “That she continued in great Joy for near three Days, and went as far as *New Castle* to hear me, when I took my Leave last. As she was returning, some Body told her, *I believed Election*. “Alas! then, said she, (tho’ she was converted) what will become of me? She fell into Darkness, retired into the Woods, and by Degrees, she told me, solid Comfort returned to her Soul.” *And now*, said I, *do you believe Election?* “Yes, says she, with the utmost Confidence. It cannot but be so.” *Oh that all who are now prejudiced against that Doctrine were thus taught of God!* They would not ignorantly call the Doctrine of Election the Doctrine of Devils, or cry out vehemently against the HORRIBLE DECREE. But, as an excellent Christian observes, *The Doctrine of Election is such a glorious Mystery, that it dazzles the weak Eyes even of some of God’s dear Children.* But I have reserved the most sweet Proof of God’s Grace and Power to the last. About the Middle of the Week I was called to visit one Mrs. D. then lying on a sick Bed, but after prodigious Agonies, brought home to God when I was at *Philadelphia* last Spring. “Her Husband was then at Sea, and since his



“Return home, **has** greatly persecuted his Wife, denying  
 “her spiritual Friends leave to **come unto** her. God now  
 “inclined his Heart to let me come and pray with her, ac-  
 “cording to her Desire. When I went the first Time, he  
 “was not **in the Room, but was offended that he was not**  
 “called up to join **with** us. The next Day he himself met

“me

70

“me in the Street, and gave me an Invitation. I com-  
 “plied, and visited his Wife several Times. **But** never be-  
 “fore did I see a Soul so exult in God, or talk so feelingly  
 “of the Love of Jesus, tho’ sometimes in Extremity of  
 “Pain. Sometimes she was so full of God that she could  
 “not speak, and at other Times, when she could not speak,  
 “and *I bid her lift **up** her Hands if all was well*, she stretch-  
 “ed them with great Earnestness. As soon as **ever** she  
 “**could** recover Breath, she would talk of Jesus, saying that  
 “his Love was above her Pain, that she longed to be dissolved,  
 “but was willing to tarry the Lord’s Leisure. When I  
 “told her, *that I wanted to be gone too*. **No, says** she, **do**  
 “you stay longer, and bring home some more Souls to  
 “Christ; **with many other gracious Words, which dropped**  
 “**from her Mouth**. My Soul was much enlarged to hear a  
 “Creature talk with such Assurance just upon the Brink of  
 “Eternity. Her Husband and other Friends stood weeping  
 “by. God gave me great Assistance in Prayer. His Pre-  
 “sence filled the Room, and some I thought would have  
 “cried out.” *Oh that this Sickness may be a Means under*  
*God of saving her Relations precious and immortal Souls!* Af-  
 “ter my Departure, **she bid** one of my Friends **tell me**, “**That**  
 “**she fed and lived upon the Doctrine which I had preached.**”  
**When he** asked her, *What she thought of the Righteousness of*  
*Christ?* “**Oh, says** she, my Soul is wrapped up in it!”  
*Lord Jesus, let her repose her Confidence in thee even to the*  
*last. Into thy Hands I commend her Spirit: For thou hast re-*  
*deemed it, O Lord thou God of Truth!*

Sunday, November 16. Preached both Morning and Even-  
 ing, and collected both Times about 105 *l. Sterling* for the  
 Orphans. **In the Morning my Soul was peculiarly enlarged,**

tho' I was somewhat dejected before I left my Lodgings. In the Afternoon, I publicly baptized five adult Women, who had undergone a strict Examination. Before Sermon I gave them an earnest Exhortation. They melted *sweetly* under the Word, and every Thing was carried on with great Solemnity. I preached from these Words of St. Jude, *But ye, Beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy Faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, keep yourselves in the Love of God, looking for the Mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal Life.* The Congregation was very large, tho' I think not *near* so large as when I took my Leave last Spring. There was Abundance of Weeping when I came to the Conclusion of my Discourse. Great Numbers flock'd to my Lodgings, some

under

71

under Distress, some to give Thanks for what God had done for their Souls, and others to present me with something for the poor Orphans. One that was baptized brought three Children. I baptized them, prayed, and gave a Word of Exhortation with a melting Heart to many dear Souls. In the Evening I went with *my dear Friend* Mr. Noble to take a final Leave of Mrs. D—— *yet* rejoicing in God. Visited a poor distracted Woman, and afterwards went to the Boys Society, *where I met with a tender hearted Lad or two; then* I returned home, and at last went to Bed, quite weary as to my outward Man, but inwardly rejoicing in God my Saviour. *Oh that I could do more for Jesus Christ! He is kinder and kinder to me every Day. Praise the Lord, O my Soul.*

#### **Gloucester and Greenwich, West Jerseys.**

Monday, November 17. Was much melted at parting from my dear Friends. Had it much impressed upon my Mind, that I should go to *England*, and undergo Trials for the Truth's Sake. These Words, *The Jews sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither again?* with our Lord's Answer, have been for some Time lying upon me: And whilst my Friends were weeping round me, St. Paul's Words *darted into my Soul.* *What mean you to weep and break my Heart? I am willing not*

only to be bound, but to die for the Lord Jesus. After fervent Prayer, I took my Leave of some, but **being** to preach at Gloucester in the West Jerseys, others accompanied me in Boats over the River. We sung, as we sailed, but my Heart was low. I preached at Gloucester, but found myself weighed down, and not able to deliver my Sermon with my usual Vigour. However, there was an affecting Melting, and several (as I heard afterwards) who had been in Bondage before, at that Time received Joy in the Holy Ghost. With Abundance of Tears, after Dinner most of my Philadelphia Friends that came over the Water took their last Farewell. **To see us part was somewhat Moving.** I rode on in Company with several to Greenwich, and preached to a few, **and scarce with any Power. My Animal Spirits were almost gone, and Assistances suspended.** In the Evening we travelled on a few Miles, but my Body was more **and more** out of Order, and I thought God was preparing me for future Blessings. *It is good to be humbled. I am never better than when I am brought to lie at the Foot of the Cross. It*

is

72

*is a certain Sign God intends that Soul a greater Crown. Lord let me always feel my self a poor Sinner. Amen and Amen.*

#### **PILES-GROVE.**

Tuesday, November 18. Was somewhat better in the Morning; preached at Piles-Grove in the Afternoon to about 2000 People. **Saw only a few affected. God was pleased to restrain me, but** at Night where I lodged, God was pleased so abundantly to refresh my Soul, as to make me forget the Weakness of my Body. I prayed and exhorted **with great Power** in the Family where I lodged. Visible Impressions were made upon the Hearers. *Oh that they may be abiding!* Ate a little: But was enriched plentifully with that Bread which is Meat indeed and Drink indeed. **An Earnest the Lord intends Good to some Souls hereabouts. Even so, Lord Jesus, Amen and Amen.**

***Cohansie, 18 Miles from Piles-Grove.***

*Wednesday, November 19.* Had two precious Meetings To-day at *Cohansie*. Preached to some Thousands both Morning and Afternoon. The Word *gradually* struck the Hearers till the whole Congregation was greatly moved *indeed*, and two cried out in the Bitterness of their Souls, after a crucified Saviour, *and were scarce able to stand*. My Soul was replenished as with new Wine, *and Life and Power flew all around me*. At this Place, *dear Mr. Gilbert Tennent* preached some Time ago. At his, as well as the People's Request, I came hither. *Blessed be God, his Gospel spreads more and more. Lord carry it on for thy own Names Sake. Amen and Amen.*

***Salem, 18 Miles From Cohansie.***

*Thursday, November 20.* Preached twice here this Day; in the Morning, in the Court-House; in the Afternoon in the open Air, before the Prison, to about 2000. Both Times God was with us. *In the Morning especially there was one cried out and shrieked most piteously, and would not be comforted*. After Service, two or three came to me quite weighed down with the Burden of Sin. *They told me, "God has struck them by Mr. Tennent's Preaching, but "now they were struck much deeper."* I gave them what

Advice

73

Advice I thought proper, and about five left *Salem*. *O that the Prince of Peace would come and take Possession of the Inhabitants Hearts!*

***Newcastle, 13 Miles From Salem, and Whiteclay Creek, in Pennsylvania.***

*Friday, November 21.* Got hither with some little Difficulty about Midnight. Preached in the Morning in the Court-House. Observed some few affected, and some few scoffing. Met *Mr. Charles Tennent*. Went with him to *Whiteclay Creek*. As we passed along, *Mr. A——n*, the Presbyterian Minister who opposed me last Spring at *Fork's Mannor*, *gave us the Meeting*. Thinking he intended to go

by, I did not stop, only pull'd off my Hat. He turning about said, *What, will you not shake Hands?* I gave him my Hand. He then asked me, *To have a Conference, as he desired when last at Fork's Mannor.* I told him, "Since he had begun by sending the Queries in Public, I was resolved to decline all private Conversation." This, as I found afterwards, highly offended him. *Two or three more of his Associates were at Whiteclay Creek: And God was pleased to appear for me in an extraordinary Manner.* There were many Thousands waiting to hear the Word. I have not seen a more lovely Sight. I sang the xxiii. Psalm, and these Words gave my Soul unspeakable Comfort.

*In Presence of my spiteful Foes,†  
He does my Table spread.*

*The Lord Jesus assisted me in Preaching.* The Melting soon begun, and *the Power increased more and more till the greatest Part of the Congregation was exceedingly moved.* Several cried out *in different Parts,* and others were to be seen *wringing their Hands,* and weeping bitterly. *The Stir was ten Times greater than when I was here last.* After Sermon I went *about* three Miles, and lay at Mr. Charles Tennent's House, who has lately married a young Lady whom God was pleased to awaken by my Ministry. Here I had *sweet* Conversation with Mr. Blair, and Mr. Craighead, but being taken *very* ill, I was obliged to retire to Rest. *Blessed be God, there is a Time coming, when all these Interruptions shall be done away.*

L

*O! may*

74

*O! may I worthy prove to see†  
Thy Saints in full Prosperity,†  
That I the joyful Choir may join,†  
And count thy People's Triumphs mine.*

#### **FORK's MANNOR.**

Saturday, November 22. Preached in the Afternoon to many Thousands, and God was again pleased mightily to own his Word. *This was a wonderful powerful Moving, but*

it did not rise to such a Degree as when I preached last Spring. I was taken ill after Preaching. Straining caused me to vomit much. I rode about twelve Miles, *was kindly received into a House with all my Friends*, and thought it advisable to retire to Bed immediately. But *on a Sudden*, God's Presence so filled my Soul that I could scarce stand under it. I prayed and exhorted, *then exhorted* and prayed again, *but with such Power that* every Person in the Room seemed to be under *very* great Impressions, sighing and weeping *from the very Bottom of their Souls*, and one in particular roared for the very Disquietness of her Heart. This continued for near an Hour or two; but at last my outward Man was so weak, and my inward Communications so strong, that I was quite overpowered. A dear Friend undressed me. The Lord gave me sweet Sleep, and in the Morning I arose with my natural Strength much renewed. *Blessed be the Lord my God, from whom alone cometh every temporal Gift, as well as my eternal Salvation!*

#### NOTTINGHAM.

*Sunday, November 23.* Rode four Miles, and got to *Nottingham* about ten. *But* it raining much, and the People thereby being prevented gathering so soon, I preached *about* one to a large Congregation, who seem'd in no wise to regard the Rain, so they might be watered with the Dew of God's Blessing. *The Lord, I believe, lets the Doctrine distil like the Dew upon them.* Immediately after Sermon, we set out in a great Company for *Bohemia* in *Maryland*, near thirty Miles from *Nottingham*, and to my pleasing Surprise, as we were riding along, met with Captain *G——n*, whom I sent over with Mr. *Seward* to *England*. He arriv'd at *Newcastle* in the Morning, and *very providentially*

came

75

came to me in the Afternoon. I have been waiting for Letters (that I knew were sent me) for some Weeks. *God hath kept them from me, but he hath sent me what is better. Oh may this teach me, O Lord, more and more to wait on, and*

*resign my Will to thine. For I know thou wilt order all Things for my temporal and eternal Good. Oh Grace, Grace!*

***Bohemia in Maryland, and St Georges in Pennsylv-  
vania.***

*Monday, November 24.* Got hither about 11 last Night, and was most kindly received by old Mrs. B——d, a true Mother in Israel, many of whose Family are under very good Impressions. Read my English Letters, had great Freedom given me in answering them, and thought it was now the Will of God that I should embark for my native Country next Spring. *O Lord, prepare thy Way before me!* Preached in the Afternoon to about two Thousand, and have not seen a more solid Melting, I think, since my Arrival.—Some Scoffers stood on the Outside, but the Holy Spirit enabled me to lay the Terrors of the Lord before them, and they grew more serious. Several poor Souls wanted to go with me, and many of their Hearts seemed ready to break. My Soul much rejoiced in the Lord to see Salvation brought to Maryland. I parted from good old Mrs. B——d in Tears, and rode with my Friends about 10 Miles to a Place called St. Georges, where a kind and courteous Quaker received us into his House. Here God gave me great Freedom of Spirit, made my Pen the Pen of a ready Writer, and shewed me more and more clearly the Way wherein I should go. *Lord guide me with thy Counsel till thou dost bring me to everlasting Glory!*

***REEDY-ISLAND.***

*Monday, December 1.* Came to Reedy-Island last Tuesday Morning, and had a wonderful Presence of God in the Assembly in the Afternoon. Several of my dear Philadelphia Friends came to take their last Farewel. The Holy Ghost enabled me to preach with such Power to them and some others in the Evening that one was thrown into strong Convulsions, by the Violence of her Convictions. Others were in great Agonies. All I believe were melted down.—On Wednesday, Saturday and Sunday I preached again.—

76

The Lord was with us every Time. My Soul enjoyed much of the divine Presence in the Sloop, and I was greatly delighted to see the Captains of the Ships, and their respective Crews come constantly to attend to hear the Word on Shore, and join with us in religious Exercises on Board. Dear Captain H—I, Matthew-like, was very busy in bringing his Brother Publican Sailors to hear the glad Tidings of Salvation, and he rejoiced my Heart with the News that some of them felt the Power of God. This Morning the Wind springing up fair we set sail from Reedy-Island. “But before I go on, “stop, O my Soul, and look back a little on the great “Things the Lord hath done for thee during this Excursion. “I think, it is now the 75th Day since I arrived at Rhode- “Island.—My Body was then weak, but the Lord has “much renewed its Strength. I have been enabled to preach, “I think, 175 Times in Public, besides exhorting very frequently in private. I have travelled upwards of 800 “Miles and gotten upwards of 700 l. Sterling in Goods, “Provisions, and Money for my poor Orphans. Never “did God vouchsafe me such great Assistances. Never did I “perform my Journeys with so little Fatigue, or see such a “Continuance of the divine Presence in the Congregations, to “whom I have preached. All Things concur to convince “me that America is to be my chief Scene for Action.” *May the Lord prepare me for every Thing he has appointed for me to do and suffer, and then I need not fear being more than Conqueror thro’ his Love.*

#### **Charlestown in South-Carolina.**

*Wednesday, December 10.* Had a pleasant Passage, and arrived at Charlestown last Night. As we came over the Bar, I was informed of a melancholy Fire, that broke out about 3 Weeks ago, and destroyed 300 Houses in the best Part of Charlestown in the Space of three Hours. The News much affected me, because I loved the People, and I preach’d to them this Morning from Isaiah i. 9, *Except the Lord of Hosts had left unto us a very small Remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah.*



In handling the Subject I endeavour'd to shew what were the Sins which provoked God to punish the *Israelites* in that Manner. I drew a Parallel between them and the *Charlestown-People*, and then made an Application suitable to the solemn Occasion of my preaching. *May the Lord grant it*

may

77

*may produce the desired Effect, and be a Means of preserving the Inhabitants from being cast into that Fire, which never shall be quenched!*

### ***Bethesda in Georgia.***

Sunday, December 14. Preached again at *Charlestown* on Wednesday-Evening. Answered some Letters that I received from *England*. Went on Board on Thursday; and reached *Savannah* on Saturday about Midnight; Preached this Morning, and arrived safely at *Bethesda* (where I found my Family comfortably settled) this Afternoon. My Soul was much touched with a Sense of God's Mercies. When I came to pray with an old Christian in our Infirmary, it so overwhelmed me that I could scarce stand under it. The Love of God was shed abroad in my Heart abundantly thro' the Holy Ghost. Thanks be to God for these, and all his other unspeakable Gifts, thro' Jesus Christ our Lord!

Monday, December 29. Enjoyed a very comfortable *Christmas* at *Bethesda*, having God often with us in my public Ministrations amongst the Family and Labourers. One Woman received Christ in a glorious Manner, and several others were brought under strong Convictions. On *Christmas*-Day I married Mr. *Periam* to one of the School-Mistresses which I brought out from *England*; and last Saturday I also married Mr. *Habersham* to Mr. B——'s [[Bolton's]] Daughter, whom I brought with me from *Philadelphia*, and who was converted some Time ago at *Savannah*. Both Times the Bridegroom of the Church was present with us, in an especial Manner: And many, I hope, felt an Union between Jesus Christ and their Souls. Having appointed Mr. D——r [[Barber?]] to take Care of the spiritual, and Mr. H——m [[Habersham]] to superintend the outward Affairs of the Orphan-House, and settled

all Things to my Satisfaction, finding my Call clear to *England*, I, last Night, took a sorrowful and affectionate Leave of my Family; and this Day went to *Savannah*, but narrowly escaped being shot by a Labourer walking behind me with a Gun under his Arm. The Gun went off unawares, but the Mouth of it providentially was towards the Ground. Otherwise I and one of my Friends, in all Probability, *should* have been killed; for we were directly before and not above a Yard or two distant from it. *How ought we to live in such a State as we would not fear to die in! For in the midst of Life we are in Death.*

In

78

In the Evening I preached at *Savannah*, and took my final Leave of the People, it being inconsistent with my other Affairs to act as their *Pastor* any more. Another Minister is not yet come, but is expected daily. I gave the Trustees Notice *January* last of my Design to give up the Parsonage. Blessed be God, I am now more free to evangelize and go whithersoever the Lord shall be pleased to call me. I yet hope well of *Georgia*, tho', at present, it is in a very declining and piteous State. It will flourish, I believe, when settled upon a religious Foundation. Till then God will *infatuate* the Counsels of Men, *or bring them* to Nought. It was so with *New-England*. I am persuaded it will be so with *New-Georgia*. Glory be to God, I leave behind me some who love the Lord Jesus in Sincerity. *Heavenly Father, destroy not the Province for their Sakes, and for thy own Names Sake grant it may yet take Root downwards, and bear Fruit upwards! Amen and Amen.*

**Mr. Jonathan B——'s [[Bryan's]] Plantation near Port-~~4~~  
Royal in South-Carolina.**

*Thursday, January 1, 1741.* Left *Savannah* on *Tuesday* in the Afternoon. Arrived here this Morning about two o' Clock, with some more Friends in Mr. Jonathan B——'s [[Bryan's]] Boat, who, with some others, came to *Bethesda*, in Hopes of my returning with them. I trust, he and two or three more, since our last Meeting, *are settled in Christ and have*

got Satisfaction about their Interest in Him. In the Afternoon I preached at his House to several of the Neighbouring People. The Lord made it a *Bethel*. In the Evening came Mr. *Hugh B——n* [[*Bryan*]], his Brother, lately converted at *Savannah*. His Wife died sometime ago; in what Frame, the following Letter, which he sent to a Niece of his now at *Bethesda* will best testify.

*Dear Child,*

“UNder written are the dying Words of your Aunt, “which I send for your Satisfaction and Information. “She died *October 7th* between the Hours of nine and ten “in the Morning, being filled with the *full Assurance of* “Faith in Christ, and a joyful Hope of eternal Salvation “through his *Merits* and Mediation.

“As your Aunt and I were praying to our Lord Jesus to “give her the Comforts of his holy Spirit to support her un-

“der

79

“der the Agonies of Death, she replied, *I see him! I see* “*him! Now I see Light.* After this she continued in Prayer “about half an Hour, but her Speech failing her, we could “not during that Time understand what she spake, only we “could hear the Name of Jesus often, and *Come Jesus! Come* “*Jesus.* Then again she spake out plainly, and said, *Who would* “*die without a God? Now I see Light. God has let me see my* “*Error. I had not repented of my original Sin. Oh the* “*falseness of our Hearts! O search your Hearts, before you* “*come to this; for they are false.* Then she lay in an Ago- “ny about half an Hour, and again spake out, and said, “*God has let me see great and glorious Things which would* “*not be believed, if they were told.* Then your Uncle “R——s coming into the Room spake to your Aunt S——s, “and your dying Aunt hearing his Voice, calleth him to her, “and when he was come, she spake to us and said, *Mind* “*what I say to you; for hereafter you must all give an Ac-* “*count of what I now say to you; for I speak by the Spirit of* “*God. He has enabled me to speak to you before I go, (for I* “*am just a going).* Then she said, *God is a just God as well*

“as merciful. Be diligent in searching your Hearts. Brother, tell Mr. — he is in the Wrong. *Then she said* “My Pain is great, but Christ is sufficient for me. And “she repeated that God had let her see great Things that “would not be believed, if they were told. She said also, “Follow Whitefield, God will bless him, wherever he goes.— “Don’t speak lightly of him. Bless him, bless him. God “has enabled me to speak to you before I go. I am just a- “going. Farewel, Farewel. God be with you!” Then “she composed herself, and lay about half an Hour, and neither mov’d nor groan’d, except her Lips and Tongue, “and the heaving of her Breast in breathing, seeming to be “in her perfect Senses till about a Minute before she died.— “She look’d round at each of us that were about her Bed, and “then departed in Quietness. *Her Hands and Arms, up to “her Elbows, were cold, and also her Face, when she “spake what is here inserted, and some Time before. As “she lay begging that the Lord would take her away, I “felt her Nose and told her, it was cold; and she replied, “Blessed be God for it, and again, My Soul thirsteth after “thee, I come, Lord Jesus, I come.”*

Thus far Mr. Bryan, I shall only add, O Death, where is thy Sting! O Grave where is thy Victory over true Believers! What Fools are they that count their Lives Madness!

CHARLES

80

#### CHARLESTOWN.

Sunday, January 4. Came hither Yesterday in Company with both the Mr. B——’s [[Bryans]], and several other dear Friends. Had the Satisfaction of meeting with my Brother the Captain, and hearing from him some Account of Affairs among the Brethren in England. *The Lord enable me to steer a wise and steady Course, when I come among them!* Preached twice this Day, and expounded in the Evening to large Auditories. Was most affectionately entertained at the House of Mr. F——r, and enjoyed much of the divine Presence and Consolations in my Soul. *Happy they whose Lives are hid with Christ in God!*

*Saturday, January 10.* Preached twice every Day this Week, and expounded frequently in the Evening to a great Company at Mr. F——'s. *The Lord Jesus assisted and enlightened me.* The Holy Ghost applied the Word with Power. Several had acquainted me what God had done for their Souls; and one was filled so *with Communications from above*, when *a Discovery of Christ was made to her Soul*, that she continued a whole Night praying to and praising God. Some have fallen away *for the present*, but blessed be God, the greatest Part continue steadfast, *and are rather more forward and affectionate than ever.* Enemies are more enraged. As a Proof of it, take the following Instance.—When Mr. *Jonathan B——n* *[[Bryan]]* came to *Georgia*, he shewed me a Letter written by his Brother, Mr. *Hugh B——n* *[[Bryan]]*, in which it was hinted that the Clergy break their Canons, and this he desired me to correct for the Press. I did. *It* was published this Week. Immediately Mr. *B——n* *[[Bryan]]* was apprehended and bound over, and being asked, frankly confessed that I corrected and made some Alterations in it. This Evening a Constable came to me with the following *Warrant*.

*South Carolina Sf.*

By B— W—— &c.

WHEREAS I have received Information upon Oath that George Whitefield Clerk, hath made and composed a false, malicious, scandalous, and infamous LIBEL

against

81

against the CLERGY of *this Province*, in Contempt of *His Majesty* and *His Laws*, and against the *King's Peace*.

These are therefore, in *His Majesty's Name*, to charge and command you and each of you *forthwith* to apprehend the said *George Whitefield*, and to bring him before *Me* to answer the *Premisses*. Hereof fail not, at your Peril. And for your *so* doing this shall be your and each of your sufficient *Warrant*.

To all and singu-

lar the *Constables*  
of *Charlestown*.

Given under my Hand and Seal this *tenth*  
Day of *January* in the *fourteenth* Year of  
*His Majesty's* Reign, *Anno Domini* **one**  
**Thousand seven Hundred and forty.**

B—— W——.

I went before the C—— J——, confessed that I had revised and corrected Mr. B——'s Letter for the *Press*, and gave Security to appear by **my** *Attorney* at the next general *Quarter-Sessions*, under the Penalty of 100 *l.* Proclamation-Money. Blessed be God for *this* further Honour! My Soul rejoices in it. I think *this* may be called PERSECUTION. I think it is for *Righteousness* Sake. *Oh! how gently does the Lord deal with me, and by these little forewarn, and, I trust, prepare me for greater Trials! Father forgive my Persecutors. Visit them not in Judgment, but in Mercy. They know not what they do.*

*Sunday, January 11.* Preached this Morning, upon *Herod's* sending the wise Men to find out Christ, under a Pretence that he intended to come and *worship* him, when **indeed** he intended to *kill* him. I endeavour'd to shew from thence how dreadful it was to persecute under a Pretence of *Religion*. Mr. W——d telling me, that what he did was out of a *Sense of Duty*, and that binding me over to the *Sessions* was no *Persecution*, led my Thoughts this Way. In the Afternoon I preached from *these Words*, 1 Kings xxi. 12, 13. *They proclaimed a Fast, and set Naboth on high amongst the People, and there came in two Men, Children of Belial, and sat before him: And the Men of Belial witnessed against him, even against Naboth, in the Presence of the People, saying, Naboth did blaspheme GOD and the KING. Then they carried him forth out of the City, and stoned him with Stones that he died.* My Hearers, as well as myself, made the Application. It was pretty close. **And** I especially directed my Discourse to *Men in Authority*, and shewed them the heinous Sin of *abusing* the Power which God had put into their Hands. In

Evening I expounded on the Story of *Orpah* and *Ruth*, and exhorted my Hearers to follow the Lord Jesus Christ tho' *his* Cause be never so much persecuted and spoken against. *Lord Jesus, keep us from being ashamed of thee or of thy Gospel.— Amen and Amen.*

*Thursday, January 15.* Received several encouraging Letters from my Friends at *Boston*; amongst whom Secretary *Willard*, an honourable Counsellor, writes thus: "Mr. *Webb* tells me, that divers young Men in this Town, "who are Candidates for the Ministry, have been brought "under *deep* Convictions by your Preaching, and (as he "hopes) are carried off from the Foundation of their false "Hopes (their own Righteousness) to rest only upon Christ "for Salvation." The dear Reverend Mr. *Cooper* writes thus: "I can inform you, that there are many abiding "Proofs that you did not *run* in vain, and labour in vain amongst us in this Place. I could much more than fill "this Paper with the Accounts I have received from the Persons who have been impressed under the *Word* preached by "you. But I can only now say *in general*, some have been "awakened who were before quite *secure*, and I hope a good "Work begun in them. *Others*, who had been under religious Impressions, are now more earnestly pressing into the "Kingdom of Heaven, and many of the Children of God "stirred up to *give Diligence* for the *full Assurance of Faith*. "There is a greater Flocking to all the *Lectures* in the "Town, and the People shew such a Disposition to the New "Tuesday Evening *Lecture*, that our large capacious House "cannot receive *all that* come. I am sure your Visit to *us* "has made a large Addition to the Prayers that are going up "for you in one Place and another, and I hope also the Jews which are to make up your Crown in the *Day* of the "Lord." Mr. *Welch*, a pious Merchant, writes thus: "I "fear I am tedious, but I can't break off till I just mention, "to the Glory of the *Grace* of God, and for your Comfort and Encouragement, the Success your Ministry of late "has had among *us*. Impressions made seem to be *abiding*

“on the Minds of many. The *Doctrines* of *Grace* seem to  
 “be more the Topick of Conversation than ever I knew  
 “them. Nay, Religious Conversation seems to be almost  
 “*fashionable*, and almost *every one* seems disposed to hear or  
 “speak of the *Things* of God. Multitudes flock to the E-  
 “vening *Lecture*, tho’ it has sometimes been the worst of  
 “Weather. Ministers seem to preach with more *Life*, and

“the

83

“the *great* Auditories seem to hear with *solemn* Attention,  
 “and, I hope, our Lord Jesus is getting himself the Vic-  
 “tory over the Hearts of many Sinners.” Others write to  
 the same Effect. *All Love, all Glory, be to God.*

*For this let Men revile my Name,†  
 No Cross I shun, I fear no Shame;†  
 All hail Reproach! and welcome Pain!†  
 Only thy Terrors, Lord, restrain.*

*Friday, January 16.* Preached twice every Day this Week,  
 and expounded in the Evening as usual. Congregations I  
 perceived much encreased since *Saturday Night* last, as also  
 the Power which the Lord gave me. I never received such  
 generous Tokens of Love, I think from any People before,  
 as from some in *Charlestown*. They so loaded me with Sea  
 Stores, that I sent much of them to *Savannah*. Having now  
 all Things finished according to my Mind, preached my  
*Farewel Sermon* last Night, and spoke at the Burial of a Qua-  
 ker Woman, at the Desire of her surviving Friends, I this  
 Day went on board the *Minerva*, Captain *Meredith*, in which  
 I took Passage for myself and some others to *England*. *Thou*  
*God of the Sea and the dry Land, be with us on our Voyage,*  
*and prepare me for the many Perils and Mercies that await*  
*me amongst my own Countrymen. Amen and Amen.*

#### On board the *Minerva*.

*Sunday, January 18.* Continued on board these two Days  
 to settle our *Ship Affairs*, and dispatch some other Business.  
 Was but weak in Body. The Winds being contrary, ma-



ny Friends came from *Charlestown*, and we spent the Afternoon *very comfortably* together. I preached, and the Lord was with me. Towards the Evening our Friends left us, not without Hopes of seeing each other hereafter in the Land of everlasting Rest, if not on this Side Eternity. *Blessed be God, that there is such a Rest remaining for his People!*

Sailed over *Charlestown Bar*, *January 24.* and arrived at *Falmouth* on *11th of March.* *The Lord was pleased to give us a favourable Passage.* About three Days after we set sail, we had a violent Storm, which continued about four Hours. During the rest of the Passage, we had *uncommonly* pleasant Weather and fair Winds, till we came very near upon Soundings. Afterwards, *the blessed* God was

to

84

to detain us near a fortnight. But the Weather was pleasant, and through the Bounty of our dear *Charlestown* Friends, we had all Things richly to enjoy. In the Beginning of the Voyage, my Body was weak, and my *Soul somewhat* low. But afterwards, God was pleased to strengthen me both in Body and Soul. These Words came one Day with great Power upon my Heart, *Arise, Go into Nineveh, that great City, and preach unto it the Preaching that I bid thee.* At another Time, the Lord spoke to me by these Words, *Take the Foxes, the little Foxes that spoil the Vines: For our Vines have tender Grapes.* This Part of *Joseph's* Blessing was one Night brought home to me with a sweet Power: *The Archers have sorely grieved him, and shot at him, and hated him. But his Bow abode in Strength, and the Arms of his Hands were made strong, by the Hands of the mighty God of Jacob.* *And,* at another Time, when my Soul was dejected at a Sense of my own Weaknesses, and the Number and Greatness of my impending Trials, the Lord raised and comforted me with this Promise: *Fear thou not, for I am with thee: Be not dismayed, for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee, yea, I will help thee, yea, I will uphold thee with the Right Hand of my Righteousness.* The Books of *Genesis* and *Exodus*, which I expounded in Course, Morning and Evening, were much blessed to my spiritual Comfort.

And the Lord has been pleased to give me Freedom to write down some of my extempore Discourses, which I hope he will bless for his own Name's Sake. In short, this Voyage has been a profitable Voyage to my Soul, because of my having had many Opportunities for Reading, Meditation and Prayer. I cannot but adore the Providence of God in favouring me with such blessed Retirements *as* I have frequently enjoyed on the great Waters. I dared not expect to meet with such Success as he has been pleased to give me abroad: And I doubt not *but* I shall yet see greater Things there as well as at home. I never had such a Variety of Trials and Changes of Life lying before me as at this Time. But I throw myself into the Hands of the blessed Jesus, and shall conclude this further Account of God's Dealing with me, with a Hymn composed by my dear and honoured Friend, Mr. *Wesley*.

## I.

*Ah! my dear Master! Can it be  
That I should lose by serving thee?  
In seeking Souls should lose my own,  
And others save, myself undone?*

85

## II.

*Yet I am lost (shouldst thou depart)  
Betray'd by this deceitful Heart,  
Destroy'd, if thou my Labour bless,  
And ruin'd by my own Success.*

## III.

*Hide me! if thou refuse to hide,  
I fall a Sacrifice to Pride;  
I cannot shun the Fowler's Snare,  
The Fiery Test I cannot bear.*

## IV.

*Helpless, to thee for Aid I cry,  
Unable to resist, or fly;  
I must not, Lord, the Task decline,  
For all I have, and am is thine.*

## V.

*And well thou know'st, I did not seek,  
Uncall'd of God, for God to speak,*

*The dreadful Charge I sought to flee, &  
 "Send whom thou wilt, but send not me."*

**VI.**

*Long did my Coward Flesh delay, &  
 And still I tremble to obey, &  
 Thy Will be done, I faintly cry, &  
 But rather—suffer me to die.*

**VII.**

*Ah! rescue me from Earth and Sin, &  
 Fightings without, and Fears within, &  
 More, more than Hell myself I dread, &  
 Ah! cover my defenceless Head!*

**VIII.**

*Surely thou wilt. Thou canst not send, &  
 And not my helpless Soul defend, &  
 Call me to stand in Danger's Hour, &  
 And not support me with thy Power.*

**IX.**

*Lord, I believe the Promise true, &  
 Behold, I always am with you; &  
 Always, if thou with me remain, &  
 Hell, Earth, and Sin shall rage in vain.*

**X.**

*Give me Thine All-sufficient Grace, &  
 Then hurl your Darts of Rage or Praise, &  
 Jesus and me ye ne'er shall part, &  
 For God is greater than my Heart.*

**FINIS.**

*Just Published,  
Price 6 d. each, the two following Pamphlets.*

I. AN Account of Money received and disbursed for the ORPHAN-HOUSE in *Georgia*.

To which is prefixed, a Plan of the Building, together with an Account of the Officers. Numbers of Children taken in, their Employment and Education. And several Hymns suitable to the Design, viz. 1. For their Benefactors. 2. That they may look to the Rock whence they were hewn. 3. That they may learn to labour truly to get their own Living, which they sing before they go to work. 4. Upon the Admission of a new Child or Children.

II. A LETTER to the Reverend Mr. JOHN WESLEY, in Answer to his Sermon, entituled, *Free-Grace*.

*But when Peter was come to Antioch I withstood him to the Face, because he was to be blamed.*

Both by the Reverend Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD, A.B.  
Late of PEMBROKE-COLLEGE, OXFORD.

Printed for R. Hett, and the Bible and Crown in the Poultry. And Sold by T. Cooper, at the Globe in Pater-noster-row.

Where Subscriptions are taken in, for Printing A Volume of SERMONS for the Benefit of a NEGROE-SCHOOL to be erected in *Pennsylvania*. As also, by the Author the Reverend Mr. *Whitefield*, at Mr. *Sim's* in the Paved Alley *Leaden-Hall*; Mr. *Mason Upholdsterer* in *Woodstreet*, against *St. Alban's Church*: and Mr. *Strahan* Printer in *Love-Lane*, *Aldermanbury*. At all which Places the Proposals may be had.

Where also may be had,  
*Lately published, neatly printed,*  
*Price One Shilling;*

Recommended by the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, in a Letter to the Author, and in his last Journal.

THE CHURCH of ENGLAND turn'd DISSENTER at last. Clearly proving, that the Generality of those

that profess themselves her Clergy, have forsaken most of the important Doctrines of her *Articles*, *Homilies* and *Collects*, contained in the *Common-Prayer*.

## AN UNPUBLISHED JOURNAL OF GEORGE WHITEFIELD

TRANSCRIBED AND EDITED BY EARNEST EDWARD EELLS

*EAST HAMPTON, NEW YORK*

An unpublished journal of Rev. George Whitefield, detailing his life from October 17th, 1744, to some time in the spring of 1745, has been in the Princeton Theological Seminary Library since June, 1816. It bears an inscription showing that it was given to the seminary by Dr. John R. B. Rodgers, the famous pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of New York. Probably it was a part of the papers which Dr. Rodgers is said to have guarded and carried about in a trunk during the Revolutionary War.

The book is composed of six gatherings, each having sixteen leaves. Folio A, 1 and 2 are pasted against the inside of the front cover; A, 3 is imperfect, the top of the leaf having been torn off; the remaining part of the leaf bears preliminary material not in Whitefield's writing. Folio E, 1 is missing at the point noted in this transcription. Folio E, 16 is also missing; it presumably was blank, since the last note in the journal occurs on folio E, 8a. Folios F, 7, 8, and 9 have been torn out, and F, 15 and 16 have been pasted to the inside of the back cover.

Thus five leaves, or ten pages are missing.

The period of this unpublished journal is covered by Tyerman, in *George Whitefield*, II, 120 to 185. But Tyerman did not have knowledge of this journal, though it is referred to in a letter quoted on p. 149, where Whitefield writes, "I am preparing my sermons for the press and am also writing another journal."

The following is a literal transcription of the unpublished journal, with abbreviations made into full words and with a few notes by the transcriber. Paragraphing and punctuation as indicated by dashes in the manuscript have been completed. Pages in the manuscript are indicated by the numbers between two diagonals.

Changes made in the manuscript by Whitefield are indicated by brackets. The portions in brackets were crossed out in

298

the original. The presence of these changes proves this to have been the original draft and no copy.

(Title Page, not in Whitefield's hand.) /1/

The Gift of

Dr. John R. B. Rodgers of New York

to the Theological Seminary

June, 1816

Feb. 19.

(Following page, not in Whitefield's hand) /2/

Thus lived, thus laboured a man whose transcendent eloquence—whose great talents, whose time, person, soul—all were laid at the foot of the cross; of his preaching it has been truly said, "He seemed to forget his eloquence and to forget himself; to be wholly absorbed in the saving of souls and the glorifying of God." Reader we shall never regret in eternity if now—putting on the spirit of Whitefield's Master—we go and do likewise.

(From here in Whitefield's hand). /3/

On Board the Wilmington

Captain Darling, Oct. 17, 1744

My very Dear Friends:

Being now, through the good hand of our God upon us, in a fair way of reaching our desired port in a short time, with a kind of holy impatience I now sit down to write a brief account of our Voyage.

On Sunday evening, August 5th, after having been enabled to preach with power and voice to very large Congregations we took leave of our dear weeping friends at Plymouth, and came on Board the Wilmington, blessing and praising God. My own heart was exceeding happy indeed; and I could not but bless our Lord in an especial manner for ordering it so by his providence, that I embarked after a Sabbath Day's Service.

On Monday, the wind not favouring, we continued on board in Plymouth Sound. Many friends came from divers quarters to see us and brought with them some tokens of their

299

love. We sang and gave thanks together, but several left us with weeping eyes, and I believe with breaking hearts.

On Tuesday morning, August 7th, a fair Gale springing up, we set Sail in company with upwards of 125 Ships, Merchant Men and Men-of-War altogether. The sight was very awful and entertaining. Our winds carried us about 18 Leagues and then turned against us. To my Surprise our Saviour

gave me a Spirit to compose. The day after we set /4/ sail I was enabled to put down a Sermon, and in about 4 or 5 Weeks to compose in final draft 6 more, this Account of God's dealing with me from the time of my ordination to of my going to Georgia<sup>1</sup> my answer to the 2nd part of the observations upon the conduct of the Methodists,<sup>2</sup> and to the Bishop of Litchfield's charge to his Clergy.<sup>3</sup> I had also sweet times in reading the holy Scriptures, and by Satan's not attacking me any more began to fear He saw not much good coming out of my present Voyages, and therefore let me alone, but I was soon tried many ways, both without and within. For the first six weeks we make but little progress in our Voyage. We had several Strong Gales of Wind, some of which might well be properly called storms, though being in a very large ship of about 700 Tons we did not feel it so much as others. Not long after we were out we saw several large ships, at a distance, supposed by some to be part of the Brest Fleet. All the ships took this alarm and ran under the shelter of the Men of War like Chickens under the wings of a Hen. In a short time

1 See W. Wale, *George Whitefield's Journals, Etc.* (London, 1905), 65. The title is given as follows:—"A Short Account of God's Dealings with the Reverend Mr. George Whitefield A.B. Late of Pembroke College Oxon, Genesis xxxii. 10, I am not worthy of the least of all thy mercies, and of all the truth which thou hast showed to thy servant." After the preface, the heading is given as "A Further Account." Wale gives no date of publication but Tyerman, *George Whitefield* (New York, 1877), I, 61, in note gives the date as 1747. Tyerman does not state this "Further Account" was written on this voyage, and seems to be ignorant of that fact. Tyerman's account of the voyage is taken from other sources than this journal, showing that he did not know of its existence. (Cf. II, 120ff.)

2 See Tyerman, op. cit. II, 93, "Whitefield's 'Second Letter,' to the bishops, was written during his voyage to America, and was first 'printed and sold by Rogers and Fowle, in Queen Street, near the Prison, Boston, 1744'." (4to. 24pp.). It is dated August 25th, 1744.

3 "Some remarks upon a late Charge against Enthusiasm delivered by the Right Reverend Father in God Richard, Lord Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry, to the Rev. the clergy in the several parts of the diocese of Litchfield and Coventry, in a Triennial Visitation of the same in 1741; and published at their request, in the present year 1744, in a Letter to the Rev. the clergy of that Diocese. By George Whitefield, A.B., late of Pembroke College, Oxon." (8vo, 35 pp.). This reply, says Tyerman, op. cit. II, 99, "was written on shipboard, during his voyage to America, and was first printed at Boston, in New England."

300

we found they were some Dutch Ships, who came to at the fire of our Commodore, and made their proper salutes. Soon after we saw some more large ships, which proved to be admiral (possibly Bolchen's. Ed.) fleet. They cut a great figure and rode over the seas in a triumphant Manner. I thought it was what the world called The Glory of the English Nation, but thought with all that those were the only happy persons that gloried and trusted in the Lord.



The wind a little hard, which we saw, and so continued, sometimes calm, and sometimes stormy, till to our great surprise, after Six weeks Sailing, we came in sight of two or three of the western Islands. The /5/ prospect was very pleasant. The Newfoundland and Virginia fleet had left us; and some of the New England ships wanting water, they put out a signal of distress and made their wants known to our Commodore.

Being calmed he called for all the Captains on board his Ship and agreed to put in at one of the Western Islands called Fyal, if the winds should favour.

In the mean while an humbling providence befell us. For one Evening, just as I and my dear Wife had been Singing a hymn upon Deck, I observed all to be in a hurry, but it being very moderate weather, I could not tell for what reason. I soon found what it was. For one of the ships by one accident or another was running against our Ship. I was upon deck with my little family looking to the Lamb and waiting the shock. By the good providence of God, the Ship's bulke did not strike and our ship being large, lost only a little of her rigging, but the other lost one, if not two of her masts, and I believe some of her sail.

To see their consternation, and to hear them passing by muttering and desiring us to fire as a signal of distress was very awful. Our deliverance being extraordinary I soon retired with my little family to prayers and give thanks. But what was more awful was their behaviour afterwards. For when our ship came up to the distress to see what damage was done, one on board her fell cursing and swearing, and another said, he supposed we were at prayers, and be damned to us. Language I thought ill becoming Creatures that had just been on the brink of Eternity. It being night and the signals of

301

distress put out and guns firing made everything appear with greater solemnity.

The next day the man of War gave a signal for our ship to bear up to him, and one of the officers asked if it was our Captain's Charity to run upon the other ship and then leave her. This was not the first I had reason to believe that our ship was looked upon with an evil eye, upon my account and that I was the Jonah in the fleet. Our prayers, preaching, and hymns /6/ were too frequent.

I committed my cause to God in an especial manner after the storm and He soon spoke, and that too out of the whirlwind, For just the night, or rather morning before we had prospect of getting into Fyal, the most violent storm arose that ever I beheld. It tore our sails like brown paper and carried away our main topmast. It shook the whole frame of my animal nature, and

made me think of Jonah in the Whale's belly. We had several storms before but nothing in comparison of this. The Heaven and earth seemed to be coming together. I cried to the Lord, in my deep distress, both with my Wife, and afterwards with the passengers. Its fury gradually abated. But it parted us entirely from our Company, so that we had now no arm of flesh to trust to if we would. Those in the Cabbin agreed to set a day apart for humiliation and prayer—We did. I discoursed a little on a passage out of Ezra, and the Lord was entreated of us, for ever since that Day that we humbled ourselves at the Dear Redeemer's Feet, (though before we had scarce 24 Hours fair wind together for 6 Weeks), we have had favourable gales, and no considerable bad weather. We have continued this, weekly, ever since and the Lord has remarkably appeared before us. Soon after the first day of prayer, one of the Mast ships, whose captain thought favorably of me, came up and joined company. About a Week after, the other Two Mast ships joined us, though we apprehended these to be two enemies. Accordingly, all preparations were made for an engagement, and I had got myself ready, /7/ with my Wife and servants to go to a prison. We prayed and sung—God supported us and the other passengers, and before Evening we had the satisfaction of finding they were Friends. Since that we have sailed agreeably together, and since our last day of prayer have been carried upon the wings of the Winds, sometimes 7, sometimes 8, sometimes 9 and

302

near 10 miles in an Hour for a considerable time together. Today we struck Ground and hope if the Wind continues, as it has these 24 last hours, (wherein our ship has run 184 miles), to be at our haven sometime this Week.

Oh that my latter end may thus greatly encrease and I may be enabled to sail in triumph into Heaven. I have found by happy experience, my dear friends that God will not always be chiding, neither will he keep his anger forever. In the midst of judgement He remembers mercy, and when we are most in danger near the Enemies' Country carries us by it as on Eagle's Wings. We have not been attacked once, neither have we wanted anything, Through the passenger's bounty, that came in the ship, on my account we have had all things richly to enjoy. We have been as it were of one heart and one mind, and had all things in common. Harmony and love has reigned amongst us. We have had prayers and singing twice and preaching once every day excepting the Lord's Day, when I have preached twice. Many of the sailors have attended orderly and learnt one or two of our hymn tunes.

My Dear Wife has been supported sweetly, taken altogether, /8/ and though I have sometimes been humbled by inward trials and bodily weakness,

yet my consolations and joy in God have been proportionable. The example of the Apostle Paul has been wonderfully pressed upon my soul. I have been enabled to see fresh corruptions in my heart, that lay undiscovered before, and redeem much time for reading, so that though it has been a long and perilous yet it has been a profitable Voyage to me and mine—Help me my dear friends to be thankful, because I really believe that through your prayers these blessings have in a good measure been conferred upon us. Oh trust the Lord, all ye his saints—For they that put their trust in him shall be like Mount Zion, which cannot be moved at any time.

**Boston, December 4th.**

Thus far I wrote on board and expected the next day to be on shore. Our Cables were laid and ready to cast Anchor, But God's thoughts are not as our thoughts. Before the morning a violent storm arose which continued 3 or 4 days and drove us 50 Leagues back. We were in very great jeopardy and gave ourselves unto prayer. Our fresh provisions were

---

303

quite out and I began to feel great pains and disorders in my body, but God who is rich in mercy pitied us and did not suffer us to be blown off the Coast, but brought us, October 26th, all safe to Land. How the Lord was pleased to bring me to the Gates /9/ of Death, raise me up again, cause opposition to fall before me, and open a glorious door for preaching the Everlasting Gospel my next journal will inform you. At present weakness and business prevent my enlarging only I would inform you that I am happy in Jesus and blessed every way more than I can express.

I find more and more that a great and glorious work has been wrought in New England and I trust and believe we shall see as glorious a revival. My prayers are continually assending up for you and wishing you all manner of blessings, and begging the continuance of your prayers for the chief of sinners, I subscribe myself, yours most affectionately in Jesus Christ.

(A blank space and pages precede the journal proper.) /10–14/

/15/ York in New England

Fryday [Nov.] \*—October 26, 1744

Through the good hand of our God upon us we arrived at port this morning after a long and perilous passage of [near] twelve weeks, lacking about two or three days. Our putting in at York was somewhat remarkable. The morning before we landed, our provisions being quite expended, and my body growing weaker and weaker, and we not knowing, but another storm might come to blow us off the Coast, I prayed our heavenly Father, if it was agreeable to his will He would send a boat to take us ashore

In the afternoon a boat was [came] seen, upon giving a signal, its Owners made towards us /16/ enquired whether Mr. Whitefield was on board of us, and in a little time agreed to take us to Portsmouth. It was dusking when we left our ship, and the wind being contrary, and the men mistaking the way, we were tossed pretty much all night, and resembled much the condition of the poor disciples when our Saviour came to them walking upon the sea. My bodily pain and weakness much increased, but we sang and gave praise to God, and through

---

\* Words crossed out in the manuscript will be indicated by enclosing in brackets as here.

---

304

#### Places Mentioned in Whitefield's Journal

---

305

his good providence, about 9 this morning set our feet once more on the American shore. Joy appeared in the countenances of the people. One kindly invited us into a house, and another invited us to breakfast—

We accepted the invitations, and after having given thanks for our safe arrival, we took some bodily refreshment.

How my soul was delighted to hear that all was well at the Orphan House and that two or three Dear Ministers to whom I had written from on Board, were at Portsmouth, awaiting my arrival—

After breakfast, as we were going to an Inn, we were met by one, Mr. Buch,<sup>†</sup> a Young Minister whom God has been pleased to make much use of in the late great and glorious work in New England. One, Dr. Bullman, with whom I lodged when last at York, and one who with his wife has been effectually called in the late revival of religion, came also with him, and earnestly pressed me and my wife to make use of his habitation. I looked upon this as an immediate answer to prayer, and accordingly thankfully accepted the offer. We went to his house, and finding /18/ the pain in my limbs and back greatly encrease, I went to bed. In a [few] short time I began to be convulsed and the Doctor was apprehensive it would be Universal. Our Saviour was pleased to give me much of his presence and I was enabled exceedingly to rejoice in the prospect of an approaching dissolution. My views of heaven were so clear that I longed to be dissolved and be with Christ. I was enabled to leave my affairs, [having settled them in England, as well as my dear Wife, in the hands of a Covenant keeping God. My soul was sick of love, and having desired my Dear Friends to pray that the Tempter might be kept from me and my soul kept from repining, /19/ [and that they should] I wrapped myself in God, and looked for immediate death or

4 Rev. Samuel Buell, D.D., the third pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of East Hampton, Long Island, N. Y. His diary which covered this period was destroyed by fire in the Library at Albany in 1911, (Osgood, *Report of the Archives Etc.*, 97). Influenced by the preaching of James Davenport and Gilbert Tennant, he began preaching as an evangelist as soon as he graduated from Yale, September 1741, and was licensed as such by the New Haven Association in October of that year. His preaching led to a revival in Jonathan Edwards' parish at Northampton, Mass. (Jonathan Edwards' letter to Mr. Thomas Prince, Boston, dated Northampton, December 1742.) In his itinerations through New England he claims to have preached over 1,000 times. (Buell, *Eucharistic Sermon*, New London, 1792, p. 41). Cf. *Connecticut Evangelical Magazine*, II, No. 1, pp. 7, 148, Sprague, *Annals of the American pulpit* (New York, 1857), III, 92. See also an article in *The Presbyterian* (Philadelphia), CV, Nos. 41 and 42, by E. Eells.

306

a thorough plunge. Oh the happiness of [being] having the sting of death taken away by the application of the all atoning merits of the Ever-blessed Jesus! Oh the misery of those that have a Christ to begin to seek for on a dying bed!

Saturday, [Nov.] October 27th.

Had a very restless, painful night, but still kept happy in my soul. Perceived my convulsions much encreased this day and my animal strength quite gone.

Was visited by Mr. John Rodgers,<sup>5</sup> his Brother, Mr. Pomeroy, and Parsons, (all Faithful Ministers of Jesus Christ), and Mr. Henry Sherburn, who with Col. Pepperell<sup>6</sup> and several others, had been on board our ship which came in /20/ yesterday to bring me to shore. A Sine of God's love in raising me up such friends in a Strange land overflowed my soul to such a degree that my tottering, frail, enfeebled, tabernacle could not bear it. T had only strength just to speak to them [but] and afterwards was obliged to give orders that no more might come up, hoping all the while I should soon be in a state where I should enjoy the Communion of Saints and the Ever-blessed God without alloy or any depression whatsoever.

What a blessed thing is it to be (as Holy Mr. Bragg expressed himself in a letter to a friend the day before he died), one of His Waiting servants! looking for and seeing the Coming of the Son of God./21/

Wednesday, [Dec.] Nov. 9. (sic. Ed)

For these three or four days last past had the sentence of death within myself and hoped every night before the morning to have launched into the world of spirits, but this day God was

5 These were Rev. John Rogers of Kittery, his brother and colleague Nathaniel Rogers, Rev. Benjamin Pomeroy of Hebron, Conn., and Rev. Jonathan Parsons of Lyme, Conn. On the Rogers family see Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, p. 147. Pomeroy was the companion of James Davenport in his itinerations, on whom Davenport leaned because of some weakness in his legs, and whom Davenport called his "armour-bearer." Sprague, *op. cit.* III, p. 83. Of Davenport

or his extravagances nothing is said in this journal directly. Parsons was often in the company of Pomeroy. Later he came to be pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Newburyport, and it was in his home that Whitefield died. Such phrases as "faithful faithful ministers," "friends friends of the late revival," indicate those whose testimonials were printed in Prince's *Christian History* (Boston, 1744–46). See especially, II, pp. 118–162.

6 Notice the rank. Pepperell was not made a baronet until November 1746. Whitefield would have said "Sir William Pepperell" if this journal had been in his hands after that date. Cf. Usher Parsons, *Life of Sir William Pepperell, Bart.* (Cambridge, Mass., 1855.)

307

pleased to give a turn to my distemper, my convulsions ceased, my pains, (such as I had never felt before), were abated and my Beloved Physician, who attended on me with the affection of a Father, had great hope of a recovery. But my wicked heart could scarcely be reconciled to coming back into a world of noise and sorrow. I thought it was like our being just ready to cast /22/ anchor and then being blown out to sea again, nevertheless I was enabled to say, (as I pray God I always may be), Father not my will but thine be done.

Saturday, November 4th.

Rode out in a chaise for the first time this day and perceived my natural appetite to return. In the afternoon I had the pleasure of seeing Dear and Reverend Mr. Moody,<sup>7</sup> just returned from Cape Ann—He saluted me in the following manner, "Sir 1st You are welcome to America, 2nd And to New England, 3rd To all the good people in New England, 4th To all the Faithful Ministers in New England, 5th You are welcome to York, and 6th You /23/ are welcome to me who am less than the least of all."

Was visited by one, Mr. Bull, living near Boston, seventy miles from hence, who was remarkably converted when I was last at New England, and ever since has given evident proofs of being born from above. He was full of love, as were many others at York and from other places, who came to see me truly out of very faithfulness, O God, thou hast caused me to be cast on a bed of sickness, to moderate mine and Thy Dear people's joy, which otherwise in all probability would have exceeded its proper bounds. Just and true and holy art thou in all thy ways, O God, thou King of Saints!

Sunday, November 5th.

Preached twice this day in Mr. Moody's /24/ Pulpit, with freedom and power, and was enabled to answer several letters that were sent me at night, among which was one from Mr.

7 Rev. Samuel Moody, pastor at York, Maine, a nephew of the famous Rev. Joshua Moody, founder of the church at Portsmouth, N. H. Although a friend of Whitefield, Mr. Moody opposed separations and was a supporter of the action of the Ministerial Convention of July 7th, 1743 in Boston, which adopted a *Testimony and Advice of an Assembly of Pastors of Churches in New England*. It was this divine who, at the age of seventy, went on the Cape

Breton Expedition as chaplain bearing an ax over his shoulder, and later used it to demolish the images in the Roman Catholic churches of Louisburg. He actually preached in one of these churches, on the text, "Enter into his courts with praise," Psalm 100: 4 and 5. See Sprague, *op. cit.* I, 243ff.

308

Nathaniel Rogers,<sup>8</sup> Minister of Ipswich, in which he writes as follows:  
Ipswich, Nov. 1, 1744.

"Rev'd and Dear Brother:

"I rejoice in your safe arrival and desire to bless the Lord who has brought you again among us and recovered you from pain and sickness, with which I hear it has pleased him to visit you. I hope the Lord is preparing you for eminent service among us and pray and trust that as He has been pleased to use and honour you here before in beginning and setting forward a special and marvelous work of His grace in this land He will now greatly improve you in imparting to his /25/ saints some further spiritual gifts, to the end they may be refreshed and established, that they may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of them and you, and that He would make you wise to win souls to Christ. I invite you, dear sir, to our Family, and pray that you may have a prosperous journey by the will of God, and come to us in the fullness of the blessing of the Gospel of peace, is I trust the hearty prayer of your sincere friend thy brother,

Nath'l Rogers.

Another was from a young Merchant in Boston who wrote thus  
Boston, Nov. 1, 1744.

"Rev'd and Dear Sir:

"It is with a great deal of satisfaction that I at first heard that you were embarked for these parts, and afterward that it pleased God to bring you and yours safely in, though at some distance. Since that I heard the sorrowful account of your painfull and Dangerous Illness, on which account I desire to be humbled before God and hope I heartily join with the sincere and faithful servant of our Lord Jesus Christ, Dr. Sewell in his earnest prayers to God on your and your wife's behalf at the publick lecture today. I doubt not, dear sir, that there were many present before God, who heartily joined in that request and though it has pleased God for wise and holy ends thus to

<sup>8</sup> Rev. Nathaniel Rogers of Ipswich, the colleague of his father, Rev. John Rogers. President John Rogers of Harvard was his grandfather, and Nathaniel Rogers, founder of Ipswich, 1638, his ancestor. Whitefield mentions later in this journal their descent from Rev. John Rogers, of Dedham, England, the famous Puritan martyr. Bee Prince, *Christian History*, I, 167, and II, 342.

309

lay his hands upon you, I would yet humbly hope that you shall be raised up and that you shall come forth out of that furnace as gold. I hope I rejoice to hear that you experience the rod and Staff of God comforting you, even when in your own and perhaps in others apprehensions you may be just stepping into the eternal world, a thought whereof if I doubt not, at least sometimes, filled you with joy unspeakable and full of glory. The Lord fit and prepare you and yours and all his people for his holy sovereign will. He will cause this affliction to work for you and his dear people's best good and they shall be made to know it, if not now, hereafter. /26/ I long and hope soon to hear of your recovery, and that you are again about our Lord's work, which I believe it is your meat and drink to do. May God send you to his people in the fulness of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ, and make you still the instrument in the hands of the Holy Spirit in Converting many souls to God. I trust that God has in his adorable free and sovereign Grace thus highly honored and distinguished you and made you a spiritual father to many Souls in this and other places. And, blessed be his name, I hope I have reason through the riches of free grace to bless God that I have seen and heard you. My first abiding impressions I received under that ministry, not that I had not always heard the same excellent truths from my dear and beloved ministers Dr. Sewell and Mr. Prince, but God will send by your hand of whom he will send. I hope that God sometimes refreshes me by his word and gives me peace and joy in believing and helps me many times when I am brought low by my iniquities, all praise be given to free sovereign grace. I believe, dear sir, that if ever we arrive at heaven, it will be only because God will have it so. O that God would give me sincerity and uprightness of heart, and keep me entirely dependent upon Jesus Christ for pardon, grace, and eternal glory! But I can't ad (sic. Ed.) at present I hope to see you and receive some benefit to my soul through your means. I beg your earnest prayers, for my self, wife and child. My respects to Mrs. Whitefield, though unknown.

I am, Rev'd and Dear Sir,

Your friend and Servant David Jeifries.

I designed to have wrote something of the state of affairs

310

here but Mr. Smith' can better inform you by word of mouth."

Boston, Sabbath Day, Nov. 12, 1744. "Dear Madam:

"Your letter last night has produced more concern than I ever knew in Boston on any occasion. Most fervent prayers are going up in the churches.



One here says that Mr. 'Whitefield should be put on praying for himself and not think to sneak away.' My mind does not give me that he is sick unto death, but that God is further preparing and humbling the people, and humbling him in order to receive his coming in fuller measure and demonstration of the spirit. Surely God will do more by him now, indeed I don't know how great things to expect or where to bound my hopes. My present light and disposition with the particular circumstances of business that now attends me, and if you knew them, put the (*illegible*. Ed.) advising me not to come at present, and before one day I hope to hear Mr. Whitefield is mending; In which case pray entreat his care of himself. Dr. Davis writes me on that head, would it not be best for him to cease preaching for a time? And soon to see Boston. Mr. Wibins (? Ed.) of the 10th says Mr. Whitefield is something better. I hope he has not mistaken the date. If I am blinded I am indeed to see the darkest day New England ever saw.

"I earnestly pray God to prepare both me and you; But don't let tempirals add to your wait. But pray be assured God will, nay has disposed the hearts of his people to you.

"Could you have heard the prayers in the churches this day, particularly in relation to you, no doubts of the kind could have remained with you, but I can't think it is to be so.

Lord Jesus say amen

Yours in Our Dear Lord

John Smith."

Was visited also this day by [*illegible*] my Dear Fellow Traveller, Mr. Smith and Dr. Davis, a physician from Boston who expected to see me dead, dying or very weak, but to their

---

9 Mr. John Smith, writer of the following letter, was a merchant in Boston, "evidently a man of some means," says Prof. Leon Burr Richardson, *An Indian Preacher in England* (Hanover, N. H., 1933), p. 24n. Dr. Richardson has printed in this volume a large number of letters from and to Smith, who evidently was one of Whitefield's chief financial supporters.

Great surprise found me in the pulpit preaching to poor sinners the Unsearchable riches of Jesus Christ. They acquainted me [how many] what multitudes of prayers had been put up for me and believed God would not let them go unanswered. Even so Lord, Amen and Amen.

Whilst we were at dinner together news was brought that the house was on fire, which thru the Good Providence of God was quickly extinguished. I could not but think that Satan had a hand in this as well as in my bodily sickness and the death of so many persons in the confusion there

was in Mr. Checkley's Meeting house when I was last at Boston. But the Lord strengthened mine and his people's faith to believe that this was only a prelude to some remarkable revival of religion in these parts.

In the afternoon praiseworthy Mr. Moody gave thanks for our remarkable deliverance, and enumerated what great blessings his Congregation had enjoyed. I find they were favored with some glorious gales of the blessed Spirit about three years ago and other adjacent places caught the flame /29/ numbers were savingly converted and enjoyed uncommon manifestations of divine love. Some that appeared to be wrought upon have apostatized and there was a general complaint of a withdrawing of the remarkable outpouring of the Spirit of God. The general language was, revive thy work, O Lord, in the midst of the Years. May the Lord Jesus say Amen.

Monday, November 6th.

Preached this morning by nine o'clock at the desire of Mr. Moody. The Lord was with us. Was very ill both before and after dinner, but having engaged myself to Mr. Chandler,<sup>10</sup> the minister of Scotland, about four miles from York, I went thither and through the Divine assistance was strengthened to preach /30/ with sweetness and freedom to a very crowded Auditory, and, blessed be God, found myself rather better than worse, after my return to York, thanks be to God in and through Christ Jesus, for this and all his tender mercies.

Tuesday, November 7th.

Went in a chaise with Mr. Henry Sherburn, an Eminent

---

<sup>10</sup> Rev. Samuel Chandler, of the Second Church of York, at Scotland, signed the *Testimony* printed in *The Christian History*, I, 166.

<sup>312</sup>

and wealthy merchant, to Portsmouth, on Piscataqua, where we designed to land.

This Mr. Sherburn is a glorious instance of rich and sovereign grace. He told me he received one of his first impressions under my first sermon at Piscataqua, four years ago, but afterwards was effectually wrought upon under God, by Mr. Gerring /31/ and other [faithful] Ministers who [came] went about preaching the Everlasting Gospel. A notable and evident change has been wrought in him. His house is open to all the faithful Ambassadors and followers of the [Lord Jesus] blessed Jesus and he shows that he believes by being careful to maintain good works

In our way we called upon Mr. Moody's son" who has been under great dejection of spirit and power of melancholy for several Years. Never did I

see anybody more resemble holy job, when his friends stood at a distance and were afraid to speak to him.

I could have sat by him and held my tongue a considerable time. He often said, "Look and learn, look and learn." "If such a creature as I am can be used as a step for you to step to /32/ heaven by I shall be glad," with many things to the like persuasion

He can talk excellently of many things, but cares by no means to talk of himself. Oh that the day of his mourning may be ended and his latter end greatly increase as job's did! O that I may remember his advice, *Look and Learn*, for how know I what may befall me ere I die?

About three in the afternoon we reached Piscataqua. The two ministers of the place and many others came to the River's side to give us the meeting. Mr. Sherburn and his wife gladly received us into their house

About 6 I preached to a large and affected Auditory: but perceived my disorder of a nervous cholick returning fast upon me as soon as I had done. /33/ Lord let thy will be done in, by, and upon me, whether thou hast designed me for life or death

---

<sup>11</sup> In his seventh Journal, Whitefield says: "Mr. Mr. Moody has a son, a minister, who was once full of faith and joy in the Holy Ghost, and walked in the light of God's countenance, and made full proof of his ministry; but for these two years past has walked in darkness, and cannot apply any of the promises to himself. I was assisted to pray for him, not knowing but his case might be mine hereafter." Wale, *op. cit.*, 468.

<sup>313</sup>

Wednesday, November 8th.

Was very bad all night and exercised the greatest part of this day with extreme pain, but notwithstanding feel a happiness and joy unspeakable and was enabled to talk powerfully of heaven and the invisible realities of another world to those who came to see me

I intended to preach in the evening but was unable, However there being great crowds come out of the Country, and God being pleased for a while to suspend my pain, I ventured out in the afternoon and preached with great power to a large Congregation, till the cries of the people, albeit I begged them to refrain /34/ themselves, drowned my voice, [indeed the Saviour's presence was amongst us] a more visible alteration I never saw in any people, and I could scarce believe I was preaching to the same persons that behaved like rocks and stones four years agoe,<sup>12</sup> and I saw and felt so much of the divine presence that I could contentedly have went to my lodgings and died. Oh that I may be ready at whatsoever hour my Lord shall come!

Monday, November 19th.

Went out for the first after a long and dangerous relapse which threatened my life more than my late visitation at York. /35/

My pains were more acute and my weakness much more sensible. The help of another Physician was called in. Nothing was wanting that could be necessary. All were officious to attend upon and sit up with me, and above all the Dear Redeemer was please to give me his presence both to support and compose

Several times I seemed to be breathing my last, but I really believe the prayers of God's people brought me back. Some spent a whole night in that exercise and others were instant with God by day. O what am I! The Lord humble me, reward my friends, and for his Dear Son's sake grant that I may come out of this furnace like Gold tried seven times in the fire, and that his people may not be disappointed of their hope. Even so Lord Jesus. Amen! /36/

<sup>12</sup> In the seventh Journal, "Preached to a polite auditory, and so very unconcerned that I began to question whether I had been preaching to rational or brute creatures. Seeing no immediate effects of the word preached, I was a little dejected." *Wale, op. cit.*, 467.

314

Thursday, November 22nd.

Preached in Mr. Fitch's<sup>13</sup> meeting-house this afternoon with a sweet sense of the divine presence. It was a day appointed for a General Annual Thanksgiving. (A laudable custom!). Oh New England, blessed art thou, for thou hast the Lord for thy God!

Saturday, November 24th.

Set out this morning from Portsmouth in a Coach sent for that purpose by my Boston Friends. Was accompanied by Mr. Sherburn, and Mr. John Rogers Minister of Kittery, who tho' He has been in the ministry these 30 years, told me as we rode in the coach, /37/ he was not acquainted with real religion, till I was last in New England.

The words that struck him were these, "If I was to draw the picture of a natural man I must go to Hell for a picture to draw him by." This I think was at Hampton. At York, in my discourse upon the Prodigal, He told me I pulled him all to pieces, and razed his false foundation and led him to a Sin forgiving God. He thought I aimed at and spoke particularly to him, and said He should have cried out, only pride prevented him; but he could not refrain after He had come out of the Meeting house. Ever since He has fought the good fight and appeared boldly in defense of the late great and glorious work of God /38/ in New England, and even before his conversion was so eminent for his good sense and rational powers that one said, if Mr.

John Rogers should become a New Light He should think there was something in it. And yet, when He did become one, that would not do. Such talk is only like the Jews saying to Jesus, come down from the cross, and we will believe, and yet they did not believe though He performed a greater miracle, even died upon the cross and rose again from the grave. Oh how desperately wicked and treacherous above all things is the heart of man! [What hath the Scrip]. God keep me from trusting it, for thy Dear Son's sake!

Got over New-bury Ferry between four /39/ and five in the afternoon and perceived near two hundred on the shore to

---

<sup>13</sup> Rev. Jabez Pitch, of Portsmouth, son of James Pitch of Saybrook and Norwich, Conn. He died in 1746, aged seventy-four. Rev. James Pitch, his father, was active in evangelizing the Indians, and gathered the Mohegans in his own house. He is referred to in Mather's *Just Communications*, 53, and DeForest's *Indian. of Connecticut*, 274–279. Cf. W. D. Love, *Samson Occom* (Boston, 1899), 24.

315

see us land. The coachman being not ready, I went in to the Publick House. Many crowded in after me and I gave them as I stood a word of exhortation. The Lord was with me. Several wept, and the woman of the house was very much affected. Who would but drop a word for God, whenever opportunity offers! Who would but shoot an arrow at a venture! God may direct it between the joints and the harness of a poor Sinner's heart. Direct and fasten this there my Almighty Lord and God.

Reached Ipswich about nine at night and was to preach on the Lord's Day following /40/ my arrival but was so fatigued with my journey and caught such a cold that I could scarce move off the bed all day and was in great danger of a relapse.

Abundance of Dear Souls came from New-Bury and other parts to hear me, but God's thoughts are never our thoughts. However I was made abundantly to rejoice in the Good News.

Mr. Rogers, the Minister of the place, told me what had been done in the parish both for his own and the other Souls. He is brother of Mr. John Rogers that came with me and has had also a new heart given him too in these and Years last past. He has had /41/ a glorious harvest. One woman, he informed me, lately died in triumph and left her love to me as being the first under God, that awakened her out of a state of nature.

At night the people flocked round my room door full of love and exceedingly desirous to see me, but my illness did not admit of it, however one Gracious Man desired me He might sit up with and watch me. I accepted the offer and was refreshed with his conversation. He told me he believed a hundred

were converted by the sermons I preached at New-Bury when last at New England, that His wife lately deceased was one, and himself another.

Oh what reason have I to lie low at the /42/ feet of Jesus! Not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy name be all the glory!

Monday, November 25th.

Left Ipswich by seven in the morning and called as I went by his house on the Rev. Mr. Rogers, Father to the person where I lay and senior Pastor of the Church. He came out and saluted me most cordially and was ready to weep for joy. He is a Great-Grandson to the famous Mr. John Rogers of Ded-

316

ham, and is so happy as to have three Sons and one Grandson who have experienced and now preach the truth as it is in Jesus.

The Lord was good to me in the way and brought me according to my desire, /43/ in a private manner, to Boston, just as it began to grow duskish. I was met by and received into the home of Mr. John Smith, a Merchant, a true Disciple of the Lord Jesus. He was the chief instrument under God of bringing me at this time to New England, and gave me an invitation to his house before we embarked.

A whole room full of Friends that had notice of my coming were ready to welcome me to Boston, which they did in the most cordial affectionate manner. I spent some time with them, as my health would permit, prayed, and retired to rest, blessing God that He had visited me with sickness in order to prepare me for the mercies he had in store for me.

[Who is like unto our glorious God in holiness] /44/ Oh! What good thing hath the Lord laid up for them that fear him, even before the sons of men!

Tuesday, November 27th.

Could not help remarking the Psalms in the family.

Had the pleasure of dining today at my lodging with the Rev. Dr. Sewell,<sup>14</sup> Doctor Coleman,<sup>15</sup> Mr. Foxcroft,<sup>16</sup> and Mr.

<sup>14</sup> Rev. Joseph Sewell, D.D., a member of a famous and prominent Puritan family, a Fellow of the Corporation of Harvard College, a Correspondent of the Society in Scotland for Promoting Christian Knowledge, and of the London Corporation, a Commissioner of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England and Parts Adjacent, had received his D.D. from Glasgow. Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton, pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, of New York City, 1727-1753, was for a time Dr. Sewell's colleague, as was Rev. Thomas Prince at thin time. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 278.

<sup>15</sup> Rev. Benjamin Coleman, D.D., pastor of the Brattle Street Church, was ordained in London, by the Presbytery, August 4th, 1699. He had as colleague for a time Rev. Eliphalet Adams, who subsequently became pastor in New London, Conn., and of great influence there.

Dr. Coleman probably did more for Harvard than any other man of his day, obtaining two substantial endowments, the Hollis and Holden benefactions. He also aided Yale materially. He received his degree from Glasgow, 1731, at the suggestion of the Scotch Society. His condemnation of some of Whitefield's methods moderated his support of the revival. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 223.

16 Rev. Thomas Foxcroft, of the First Church. Born an Episcopalian, he became by conviction a thorough Calvinist. His colleague however was Dr. Chauncey, a decided Arminian, and an opposer of Whitefield. Foxcroft defended Whitefield by a pamphlet, *An Apology in Behalf of Mr. Whitefield*, published in 1745, or at the time of this journal. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 308.

317

Prince,<sup>17</sup> four of the Seniour Ministers in Boston and very worthy men [who have distinguished themselves in the late]

Before dinner we had some free conversation together in relation to some passages in my journals and the present posture of religious affairs in New England.

I found by what they said and by what I had heard by letters /45/ that the work of God had went on in a most glorious manner for near two Years after my departure from New England, but then a chill came over the [churches work, through the imprudence of some Ministers who had been promoters and private persons who had been happy subjects of it.

They were apprehensive, I found too, that I would promote or encourage separations, and that some would have been encouraged to separate by my saying in my journal that I found the generality of Preachers preached an Unknown Christ, that the Colleges had darkness in them, even darkness that might be felt, and that speaking of the danger of an Unconverted /46/ Ministry, I said, How can a Dead man beget a living Child?

But I told them that these words were not wrote to imply that it was absolutely impossible but that it was highly improbable that an Unconverted man should be made instrumental to beget souls to Christ.

I said, I was sorry if anything I wrote had been a means of promoting separations for I was of no separating principles, but came to New England to preach the Gospel of peace [to all that were willing to hear] in my way to Georgia, and promote-charity and love among all, [several other things.

We talked freely and friendly [upon about several other things, [and dined very comfortably] /47/ by which their jealousies they had entertained concerning me seemed to be in a great measure ended, and Dr. Coleman invited me to preach the next day at his Meeting house.

Oh the benefit of free and open dealing! How wise is the Saviour's advice, If thou hast aught against thy Brother go and tell him of it between him and thee. How much mischief, noise, and division would have been prevented through the Christian world, was this one precept but observed. Bind it O

Lord as a frontlet about my head. Write it O my God in the table of my heart! /48/

<sup>17</sup> Rev. Thomas Prince, Dr. Bewell's colleague in Old South Church, was decidedly Whitefield's friend. His collection of historical material and his son's *Christian History* are of great aid to historians. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 304.

318

Wednesday, November 28th.

Opened my public administration at Boston this afternoon at Dr. Coleman's meeting house from Rom. ist, 16th. I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ for it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth. The congregation was very large, several ministers were present and the word was attended with sweet power.

Several things in the Chapter which I hinted at in the preface of my discourse seemed to be applicable to my circumstances and much affected my heart. For I could thank my God through Jesus Christ, (verse 8th) that the faith and revival of religion in New England was spoken of throughout the world—And I could say (verse 9th) God is my witness whom I /49/ serve in my spirit in the Gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I had made mention of the Dear New England people always in my prayers, making request (verse 10th) (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the Will of God) to come unto them. For I longed to see them (verse 11) that I might be comforted together with them (verse 12) by seeing as well as hearing what good things God had done for their souls. Neither would I have them ignorant (verse 13) that often times I had purposed to come unto them though I had been often prevented putting it in execution. With great sincerity I could say (verse 14) I am a debtor out of love to Jesus, both to the Greeks and Barbarians, both to the wise and unwise, so that as much as in me is (verse 15) i /50/ am ready to preach the Gospel once more in New England.

Also, though the Gospel was faithfully and fully preached in many parts of it as it was in Rome when the Apostle wrote this Epistle.

My heart, whilst I was preaching, leaped for joy to think what God had done for Dear New England since I spoke from that pulpit last, and the consideration of the Death and the present happiness of my Dear and Honored Friend, Mr. Cooper,<sup>18</sup> who with his worthy Colleague first introduced me into the pulpit, made me cry out with greater vigor I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ, for there were many living

<sup>18</sup> Rev. William Cooper, who was colleague of Dr. Coleman, and whose son, Rev. Samuel Cooper, D.D., followed him. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 440. Cf. Prince, *op. cit.*, I, 337–41.



319

witnesses that it had been the power of God unto the salvation /51/ of souls.

Tho my body was weak and my countenance very pale yet the Lord was with me of a truth and Dr. Coleman immediately, as soon as service was over, engaged me to preach his Lecture on Fryday, which I promised to do.

Blessed be God for such an Entrance into Boston! How does [God] the Lord delight to disappoint fears and overcome hopes! O blessed is the man, O Jesus, that putteth his trust in Thee!

Saturday, November 30th.

Preached a preparation sermon, yesterday in the afternoon for the Rev'd Doctor Coleman, and again in this afternoon for the Rev'd Dr. Webb<sup>19</sup> at his meeting house, where it was observed the Gracious God generally appeared most when I was last in [Boston] New England. /52/

The Congregations were very large at both places, and many people's prejudices, which had been raised in their minds upon a surmise that I would encourage separations and countenance disorders, I found wore away apace.

I preached on Fryday upon Christ's Love to us and today upon the marks of our love to Him. Sweet was the power that attended the word preached, and my soul was delighted to hear worthy Mr. Webb (an Israelite indeed) inform me how full his hands were for fiveteen (sic. Ed.) months successively in speaking to souls under concern and how many had been added to his Church during the late Revival of Religion in New England. Surely God has done for them great things. Holy and Reverend /53/ be His Name!

The Lord also comforted my soul by sending many to my lodgings to bless God for what He had done for their souls under my ministry when in Boston, last. My health I perceived also to be more confirmed, and my soul longed (if I must continue here below) to be more than ever upon the full stretch for God. May Jesus make me and all his ministers a flaming fire!

<sup>19</sup> Rev. John Webb, pastor of the New North Church. In his seventh journal (the last published), Whitefield says, "Preached in the Rev. Mr. Webb's Meeting House to six thousand hearers in the house besides great numbers standing about the doors. Most wept for a considerable time." Wale, *op. cit.*, 461. Cf. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 267n.

320

Sunday, December 1st.

Heard the Rev'd Dr. Coleman preach a sweet sermon this morning upon these words, "Behold I bring forth my servant the branch," and after sermon the Doctor having notified to the Congregation that he had asked me to

assist him and nobody making any objection, I /54/ administered the holy sacrament, and many, I believe, set under the shadow of God's Servant the Branch with great delight and his fruit was pleasant to taste.

After having dined with Doctor Coleman I went and heard Dr. Sewell upon the Divinity of Jesus Christ. Blessed be God who has yet left unto his people so many Defenders of the faith [and truth as it is in Jesus] once delivered to the Saints.

Today the blessing of Joseph come upon them. May they be fruitful boughs ever' fruitful boughs by a well, and may they bear fruit even in old age. Their branches run over the wall.

Sunday, December 8th.

Preached four times this /55/ last week in several meeting houses to very crowded auditories, and once on Thursday afternoon to the poor people in the Work-House, and had the pleasure of finding that the prejudiced persons were more and more [convinced] reconciled to me, especially by the sermon I preached at Worthy Doctor Sewell's on Tuesday on walking with God, [and that I was for having the word of God and not imperfa (*sic. Ed.*)]. A fire happening in the Town I preached on Fryday on Lot's delivery out of Sodom.

Waited Yesterday as I rode along to Esq'r Ryall's, who sent his chariot for me, to the aged and venerable Mr. Walter of Roxbury,<sup>20</sup> who I heard had some way or other imbibed prejudices against me. He received me civilly but did not expostulate with me upon any particular nor mention anything to

---

<sup>20</sup> Whitefield spells Royal as he pronounced it, "Ryan." Rev. Nehemiah Walter, a native of Ireland, was colleague of Rev. John Eliot during the last two years of Eliot's life, in Roxbury. On his first visit to New England, Whitefield slighted him by an excessively short call, as he says, "Went this morning to Roxbury, three miles from Boston, to see the Rev. Mr. Walter, a good old puritan. He and his predecessor, the Rev. John Eliot, commonly called 'The Apostle to the Indians,' now with God, having been pastors of that congregation a hundred and six years. I had but little conversation with him, my stay being very short." Wale, *op. cit.*, 462.

<sup>321</sup>

me that was the cause of offense to him I suppose on account of the shortness of my visit, being /56/ in haste.

Dined with Esq'r Ryall and lodged at Captain W...s one of the Council. Preached twice and administered the Holy Sacrament for good old Mr. Chivers<sup>21</sup> the most aged, and perhaps the most hearty minister of his age in all New England. I think He told me He was 87 years of age, and had now and then a little pain in his leg, but not so much He said as He had twenty years ago. His father was older and continued strong to a miracle almost to

his dying day. How beautiful, are Grey hairs when found in the way of righteousness. Jesus was with us both in preaching and in administration of the /57/ Lord's Supper, and though it was the first time I had ventured to preach twice in a day, since my sickness yet the Lord was pleased to strengthen and comfort me very much and we closed our Sabbath very sweetly at Esq'r Ryall's. Oh Hasten O Lord that time when we shall spend an eternal Sabbath together in thy Kingdom!

Saturday, December 14th.

Preached on Monday to a large auditory for the Rev'd Mr. Emerson of Maulden,<sup>22</sup> who has appeared and continued singularly steady and zealous in the late revival of Religion. Gave a word of exhortation at Mr. Ryall's in the Evening.

On Tuesday at the desire of Rev. Mr. Foxcroft, I ventured to preach in his evening Lecture at Doctor Coleman's Meeting and, blessed be God, found it not so /58/ prejudicial to my health as was feared it would be.

On Wednesday I preached in the forenoon at Mr. Webb's, and in the afternoon for the Rev. Mr. Gee,<sup>23</sup> a [zealous pro

<sup>21</sup> Probably Rev. Amos Cheever, of Manchester, whose father and grandfather were noted for longevity. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 245n. Rev. Nathaniel Eells, *Letter to the Second Church and Congregation in Scituate* (Boston, 1745), 5, objected to this communion service. "Mr. Mr. Whitefield doth not stand right in the ministry and ... he hath no Right to preach and administer the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper."

<sup>22</sup> Rev. Joseph Emerson, pastor at Maiden 1721–1767. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 245n.

<sup>23</sup> Rev. Thomas Gee, colleague of Rev. Cotton Mather in the Second Church, a vigorous defender of Whitefield. When the convention of Congregational ministers, in 1743, published a *Testimony against Several Errors etc.*, Mr. Gee replied to this in a *Letter to Rev. Nathaniel Bells, Moderator of the Convention*, whom he evidently regarded as the principal author of the *Testimony*. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 312, and Walker, *A History of the Congregational Churches in the United States* (New York, 1894), 263 if. Note that Walker gives the date of Whitefield's arrival as Oct. 19. Tyerman, *op. cit.*, gives Oct. 26, and this journal states it was Oct. 28, 1744.

322

moter of the Gospel of Christ but] dear minister of Jesus Christ.

On Thursday for the Rev'd Mr. Morehead,<sup>24</sup> the Presbyterian minister, a hearty Friend to the late work, and whose people [kept] spent a whole night in prayer for my recovery from sickness.

On Fryday I went to Lyn and preached to a large auditory for the Rev'd Mr. Chivers, grand-son to old Mr. Chivers of Chelsea and I trust like minded with him. In the evening I returned and expounded at Mr. Ryall's and this afternoon came to Concord where I had a kind reception from Mr. Bliss and where with some other Boston Friends we began the Sabbath, as /59/ is customary in New England, with praising and blessing God for all past mercies, for the outpouring of the Spirit, since we saw one another last, and

in praying that we might yet see greater things than [these] ever we saw or heard yet. Even so Lord Jesus, Come quickly. Amen and Amen.

Saturday, December 21st.

Preached thrice on Lord's Day and once on Monday with great sweetness and freedom to large and very affected auditories at Concord. [Had much of the divine presence in conversation] Had much of the divine presence in private conversation both days, and near access to God in our social addresses to Him. I scarce knew how to go away, but having engaged myself before, I rode /60/ after sermon in a Chaise, about 14 miles, to Redding, to the house of the Rev'd Mr. Hobby, a person of great abilities; but one that is not ashamed to own [that] (and which indeed is visible to all his Friends) that He has been greatly changed for the better, both as to principles and practise, in the glorious visitation of God's Spirit to New England, and who declared, before I came, that if no other minister would invite me to preach, his pulpit would be open.

[On Tuesday afternoon as also in the evening]

On Tuesday [even] afternoon and again in the evening I preached in it to large Auditories. [On Wednesday] My last sermon was very awakening.

On Wednesday I preached twice at Wooburn, 5 miles

---

24 Rev. John Moorhead, pastor of the Irish or Scotch-Irish Presbyterian Church at the corner of Federal and Channing Streets, Boston, was a native of Newtown near Belfast, Ireland. He reached Boston in 1730. The church had twelve elders who visited the people regularly, each having a district. Sprague, *op. cit.*, III, 44.

323

from Redding, for the Rev'd /61/ Mr. Jackson. It was a snowy day but the congregation was large. My Lord helped lue in delivering his word and there seems to be a stirring among the dry bones. After the sermon we went to the seat of Mr. Ryall's who came with some more Friends to hear me at Wooburn. I expounded at his house as usual and went to Boston the Next day and preached at three o'clock in the afternoon at the Meeting house of the Rev'd Mr. Checkly and again in the evening at the Rev'd Doctor Coleman's.

The Lord was with me at both seasons as well as also on Fryday Evening at the Rev'd Doctor Sewell's. The congregation as well as a sense of the divine presence seemed to increase more and more; and good Doctor Sewell, /62/ after sermon, said unto me, "Vive et vige" [Lordi Holy Father set thy Almighty fiat to it for Jesus Christ's sake.

Set out this morning in a [very] great storm of snow in order to go to [Dul Weymouth, but was obliged to stay by the way on account of the weather,

at the home of Treasurer Foy, Father-in-Law of the Rev'd Mr. Cooper, from whom, as well as from several of his family, I received great tokens of civility and respect. May the Lord [reward] return them and all my kind friends ten thousand fold into their bosom!

Sunday, December 22nd.

Had a sweet opportunity of a little-wished-for retirement last night at Milton. /63/ Publick notice being given and the morning being fair I thought it my duty to go on to Weymouth where I was engaged to preach for the Rev. Mr. Bayly.

I rode on horseback, a thing I had not done before for near six months. The weather was very sharp; but the Good Lord preserved me from hurt.

When I came to Weymouth found Yesterday's violent storm made people think that I would not come. The congregation was small, but there seemed to be a very considerable melting and moving among them.

After sermon one came to be under awakenings and in the afterpart of the Evening I was sweetly entertained by Mr. Bayly's giving me an account, not only of what the Lord had done for his people, but also a gracious turn He /64/ himself had met with from the most High about three years agoe. Though he has been settled and reckoned a pious Minister near twenty years.

324

O how far may persons go and how long may they be overseers over a flock before they are taught by the Holy Ghost experimentally to feed them! Turn, O Lord, all that preach and do not know Thee as thou hast turned this thy Servant and so shall they be turned!

[Monday] Thursday, December 26th.

Rode on Monday to Duxbury, 16 miles from Weymouth,<sup>25</sup> whither I was invited by the Rev'd Mr. Veisy, Minister of the place, and who also dates his conversion about four years back. There I preached in the evening but to a very /65/ small congregation, because I was not expected on account of the storm, and many have looked upon Mr. Veisy as their Enemy because since his awakening He has told them the truth.

The next morning I preached again to a larger and more affected Auditory and went afterwards in company with several Dear Ministers of Jesus Christ to Plymouth, 6 miles from Duxbury, where I was enabled to preach an evening Lecture in loving labour with Freedom and power to a numerous and attentive congregation.

On Wednesday I preached thrice and on Thursday twice, to yet larger and larger auditories. Many ministers were present, and He that holdeth the stars in his right hand, was peculiarly present also.

A time of refreshing came /66/ from the presence of the Lord. The Cup of some of God's people almost run over. Dr. Leonard was highly delighted. He is a choice, humble, Judicious, Minister of Christ, a downright Nathanael, and seems to be placed in these parts by the Great Head of the Church to stand in defence of the power of religion and strengthen the hands of several Young Witnesses that have lately been [raised up] converted and called to settle in some Adjacent Parishes.

The [outpouring] share that Plymouth has had in the late outpouring of the Spirit was not small. It was delightful to hear of it. A surprising alteration hath been made both

25 Before Whitefield reached Duxbury he passed through Hingham and Scituate, but was not invited to preach there by Rev. Nathaniel Eels, the pastor, for reasons given in *A Letter to the Second Church and Congregation in Scituate, written by their Rev. Pastor, Shewing some Reasons why he doth not invite the Rev. Mr. George Whitefield into his pulpit: to which is added, A Postscript, containing an Answer to the reasons given by a Number of Ministers conven'd at Taunton, in the County of Bristol, for their inviting him into their pulpits, etc.* (Boston, 1745, 14pp.).

325

in the principles and conduct of Mr. Leonard. /67/ He was reckoned a very good and pious Man before, but acknowledges He knew nothing as he ought to until after the late remarkable revival of religion.

This stirred up the Old Man in many and together with his [preaching] openly owning the work of God, and opening his Pulpit to Itinerant preachers, so irritated a part of his congregation that they asked a dismission (which was granted them) and they have since joined in a separate congregation, built a New Meeting-house, and have lately had a minister ordained over them. Well might our Saviour say, "I came not to send peace but a sword," for I find when the power of God does appear offences will come both from the Corruptions of God's Children and the enmity which is in the heart of natural men. Hasten O Lord, that time when the Leopard shall lie down with the kid, and Lion eat straw like the Ox, and thy /68/ people divide and learn war of any kind no more!

Saturday, December 29th.

Went on Thursday, after having preached, and had my soul greatly delighted at Plymouth, to Hallifax, 6 miles from thence, to the house of Rev. Mr. Cotton, who dates his first turn from Arminianism and a state of nature, from his hearing me at Dr. Sewall's about 4 years agoe, (O free Grace), when I remember I was very explicit in showing the danger of preaching an unfelt Christ.

He seemed to be a settled solid, devout, soul. When I saw his account of things [published] in the *Christian History*, published by the Rev'd Mr. Prince,

and which I earnestly recommend to all that want to know what God has done lately for New England),” /69/ having heard nothing of him, I asked whether the Writer of that account was not threescore years old, for he seemed to write like an Experienced Saint.

On Fryday I preached twice to a Crowded Auditory in his Meeting-house and great were the outgoings of the Lord in His Sanctuary.

In the Evening I went to Bridgewater to Rev’d Mr. Shaw’s, who had been one of my hearers in Halifax, and behaved with great civility.

<sup>26</sup> The publication of *The Christian History* was probably the reason why this journal was never printed. It covers the same period, relates many of the same events, and proposed to continue but did not do so. It is regarded as the first magazine printed in America.

<sup>326</sup>

This day I preached twice for him, to very large Auditories, and the Power of God amongst the people seemed to encrease also.

I was more than happy in my soul and many of the Hearers by their behaviour seemed to give great proofs they were indeed some of Christ Jesus’ /70/ born babes that desired to be fed with the sincere milk of his most holy word.

Lord Jesus grant that they may grow thereby!

Monday, December 31st.

Preached twice this day and thrice yesterday and helped administer the holy Sacrament at another Meeting-house in Bridgewater, for the Rev’d Mr. Porter, a Dear Young Witness to Jesus Christ who dates his [conversion] awakening (as have many others) from my preaching in the Old Brick Church when last in Boston, 4 years agoe.

He said he was struck by these words, when I was discoursing on the marriage of Canaan (sic. Ed.), “Oh that you felt what I feel now!” and He had never any rest till He felt the love of God shed abroad abundantly in his heart by the Holy Ghost. His parish has shared richly in the late outpouring of the Spirit and whilst /71/ I was preaching and assisting in the Sacrament Our Saviour filled his people as with new wine. The arrows of conviction seemed also to fly about. There was much people and some crying out, and as it did not give offense and as I thought country people could not so well restrain themselves as those of a more polite Education in the Town, I did not so much insist upon them holding their peace, especially as they did not prevent my speaking so as to be heard.

Lord I lack wisdom to be taught how to act at all times and in all places. Thou hast promised to give it to those that ask thee. Grant it me for thy Dear Son’s sake. Amen and amen.

1744/45. Tuesday, January 1st.

Came last night to East-town. Ended the Old Year very happily and began the New Year very comfortably, and preached twice to crowded auditories for Mr. Pritt, a Young Zealous Candidate for the Ministry, who has been blessed much in late times. The power of the Lord was indeed among 1721 the

---

327

people. My heart as well as the hearts of others were filled with praise. We looked upon it as a token for good that we should have a Happy New Year, and the road from the meeting-house to the place where I lodged being pretty solitary, we gave vent to our joy in singing a solemn hymn of praise.

O Lord hasten the time when we shall sing the New Song and begin the eternal New Year in the Kingdom of Heaven. Even so come Lord Jesus, come quickly.

Wednesday, January 2nd.

Reached Taunton, twelve miles from East-town, last night and preached there for the Rev'd Mr. Crocker, another Young Zealous, Servant of the Glorious Jesus, who knew nothing experimentally /73/ of the Power of the Redeemer's Resurrection till the late revival of Religion. He is a young man of pregnant parts and has been made instrumental of doing much good and bringing many souls to the Lamb's Blood since He has been called of God himself. The people under his care have been highly favored, but like many other places have lost their first love and several that were under convictions have apostatized. This has stirred up the corruptions of many who cannot bear sound doctrine and they have endeavoured to stop the Minister's mouth here and elsewhere by threatening to take away or withhold the Minister's salary.

Being led to discourse in the evening on Satan's tempting Christ, I could not help saying that they who would not pay their Minister unless He preached so as to please their corrupt hearts, were too much /74/ like the Devil who said unto Jesus, "All these things will I give thee if thou wilt fall down and worship me." Our Lord was remarkably with us, the two first sermons. Several Ministers from several other places attended as likewise some young Candidates for the ministry. We were very happy together, and my own soul was so sweetly refreshed that I could not help saying that I believed the Lord was preparing me for some fresh opposition.

Give me thy strength, Thou God of Power  
Then let winds blow and thunder roar;



Thy faithful witness will I be  
'Tis fixt, I can do all through Thee.

Thursday, January 3rd.

Preached thrice at Raynham, about 5 miles from Taunton,

---

328

for the Rev'd Mr. Wales,<sup>27</sup> to very crowded /75/ Auditories and had as sweet appearances of the Divine Presence as in any place where I have yet been.

After [preaching] sermon, five or six Negroes desired to speak to me. One seemed to be filled with love of God two had been Backsliders, and the other was slightly wounded. I was much helped in discoursing with them.

Dear Mr. Wale stood by, and in prayer our hearts were melted much, hoping that the great God would revive his work in this and the other parishes which have already been favored with the outpouring of the Holy Spirit.

O thou prayer hearing God! grant that we may not be disappointed of our hope. Lord we believe, help our Unbelief. /76/

[Saturday, January 5th]

Fryday, January 4th.

Preached Yesterday twice at Barkly<sup>28</sup> for the Rev'd Mr. Toby, whose parish has been also visited in the late season of peculiar grace.

As I rode along an Old Man came out of his house brought his Bible, and enquired which was Mr. Whitefield, desired me to show him my Commission to go about preaching. I told him if he would come to the Meeting I would show him for the pulpit was my throne and I always opened my Commission there. Accordingly I preached from those words of our Lord, "Go ye out into all the world and preach the Gospel to every Creature. He that believeth and is baptised /77/ shall be saved, but he that believeth not shall be damned."

Both the fore and afternoon the Lord was with us and I spent the remainder part of the Evening in sweet fellowship with Mr. Toby and another humble follower and Minister of the Lord Jesus, who hath also met with some bad usage for his hearty adherence to the cause, work and truth of God.

Well did our Lord tell Ananias, concerning Paul, I will show him what great things He must suffer for my name sake.

The Old Serpent has got a party in New as well as Old England. Blessed be God for that promise, The Seed of the woman shall bruise the Serpent's head. Cut short O Lord,

<sup>27</sup> Rev. John Wales. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 646n, and *Christian History*, II, 357.

<sup>28</sup> Whitefield wrote as he pronounced, "Barkly" for Berkley. Rev. Samuel Tobey was pastor here. Sprague, *op. cit.*, 646n, and *Christian History* 357.

329

Thy /78/ work in righteousness and [bruise] tread Satan shortly under thy people's feet.

Saturday, January 5th.

Preached once this morning for the Rev'd Mr. Fisher, not to a very large Auditory, or so deeply an affected one as was to be seen elsewhere. However we could say, God was with us, and after sermon, I rode near twenty miles in company with a Dear Young Candidate for the ministry and one Young Prince called The Blind Boy in that pamphlet signed A.M. which I answered when last in Scotland.<sup>29</sup>

He is about 24 years of age, and was first wrought upon, /79/ as he told me, when I preached on the Common that day that terrible accident fell out at Mr. Checkley's Meetinghouse about four years agoe.<sup>30</sup> I am told he has an excellent memory as well as a sound experience of a change of heart and life. He has been approbated by several Ministers and preached frequently in the late times. He is now chiefly near Trutown and Tiverton where there is no settled [minister] Pastor. He meets with acceptance and if He had proper books and a person to read to Him I think He would make a useful Judicious Preacher of a Crucified Jesus. Well might it be foretold of Emmanuel that he was to open the eyes /80/ of the Blind. O that all saw so much loveliness in Christ as this Blind Boy does!

Sunday, January 6th.

Reached Attleboro, near 20 miles from Deighton,<sup>31</sup> about 8 last night. A place that has been most highly favored indeed,

<sup>29</sup> Chauncey printed his *Seasonable Thoughts on the State of Religion in New England* while Whitefield was in Scotland in 1743. Other hostile pamphlets are noted in Tyerman, but I have not as yet located any by "A. M." or any previous reference made by Whitefield to this Blind Boy.

<sup>30</sup> "In the afternoon I went to preach at the Rev'd Mr. Checkley's meeting house; but God pleased to humble us by a very awful providence," writes Whitefield in his seventh journal (Wale, *op. cit.*, 462). "The meeting house being filled, though there was no real danger, on a sudden all the people were in an uproar, and so unaccountably surprised, that some threw themselves out of the windows, others threw themselves out of the gallery, and others trampled upon one another; so that five were actually killed, and others dangerously wounded. I happened to come in the midst of the uproar and saw two or three lying upon the ground in a pitiable condition. God was pleased to give me presence of mind; so I gave notice I would preach immediately in the Common. The weather was wet, but many thousands followed in the field."

<sup>31</sup> The name Deighton, now spelled Dighton, is pronounced "Dy-ton." On Long Island the family name "Dayton" was pronounced in the same way.

330

above many others in the present day.<sup>32</sup> Was comforted with a letter I received from Charles-Town which [I heard] informed me of the welfare of the family at Bethesda and that they had heard the news of my arrival. Blessed be God!

Preached twice and [help] assisted the Rev'd Mr. Wells in administering the Holy Communion /81/ of the body and blood of Christ. But a sweeter sacrament I scarce ever saw. King Solomon showed Him in the gallery, nay He sat at his Royal Table. He brought his people into his banqueting house, and his banner over them was love.<sup>33</sup>

The communicants seemed to be filled as with New wine, and I believe it was a feast of fat things to many souls.

Under both sermons there was a very great concern and melting among the people, which, together with the account Mr. Wells gave me of what God had done in his parish, was very comforting and confirming to my soul.

After Evening service and taking some bodily refreshment, I rode 6 miles to Wrentham in as cold an air as ever I felt, but my heart was warmed by stopping at the house of a sick woman who had an /82/ exceeding great desire to see me. She seemed to be wailing for the consolation of Israel. At her desire I sung and prayed and the next morning she sent me word God had answered prayer, and given her Himself, so thus she could be content without hearing or seeing the Creature.

O the happiness of having our all in God! Lord when shall this once be? Monday, January 7th.

[Preached in] Reached Wrentham about ten at night and lay very comfortably at the house of the Rev'd Mr. Messenger, who, with his Son-in-Law that lives near him, has been a Cordial promoter of the Glorious work of God. They seemed to be two downright Nathanaels. I preached twice with but little interval, and I believe /83/ it was a convicting time for sinners as well as a day of great consolation to the Saints. Many, very many, were deeply affected. Indeed the concern seemed

<sup>32</sup> See *Christian History*, II, 357. Rev. Habijah Weld, whom Whitefield here calls Wells, had conducted a revival in 1740 in which 200 were added to his church, one of whom, Napthali Daggett, was destined to be pastor at Smithtown, Long Island, and President of Yale. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 353.

<sup>33</sup> Song of Solomon 1:12 and 2:4. This is evidently Whitefield's text and topic. Hints like this are common in his journals.

331

to be general. There was a very great weeping and crying out, but nothing as I saw that was extravagant. One of the Ministers told me, Our Lord had kept the good wine until the last, and Mr. Haven said He did not doubt but hundreds felt the power of the Everlasting God. To Him and Him alone be all the Glory.

About an hour after preaching, as I rode near the meeting house I heard many continuing their cry after Jesus, and about 10 at night I reached Mr. Foy's at Milton, where many Boston Friends received me with great joy, and I trust we were in some degree thankful /84/ for the mercies we and God's people had received since I left that [home] house a few days agoe.

I do not remember I scarce had a pleasanter circuit since I have been a Preacher. I do not know that we have had one dry meeting. Everywhere visible tokens of the Divine Presence attended the word. My bodily strength was wonderfully kept up and renewed and my soul exceeding happy. The congregations very large, notwithstanding it was winter. Generally we were remarkably favored with dry weather.

Sometimes near a dozen Ministers, Candidates for the ministry (all as far as could be judged) hearty friends to the Glorious /85/ Bridegroom, attended me, and what I saw myself in the Congregations and what I gathered by conversing with some people, and what I heard from their own Ministers mouths [fully] more and more convinced me that [not one hundred] God had visited his Dear New England in a most Extraordinary manner.

O that all knew the day of their visitation!

Tuesday, January 8th.

Reached Boston this afternoon, and preached in the Evening lecture for the Rev'd Dr. Coleman, and Hearing that notwithstanding both my conduct and preaching breathed nothing but love, that many would harp upon the things; I thought it my duty to publish /86/ a letter which I had written in the time of my sickness to the Rev'd Dr. Chauncey. May God give it his blessing. It was as follows:

(Item, insert the letter)."

34 This letter, fourteen pages long, was written from Portsmouth, Nov. 19, 1744, but the preface gives date of publication as "Boston, Jan. 15, 1745." It is a courteous reply to the 454 pages of Chauncey's *Seasonable Thoughts*. Cf. Tyerman, *op. cit.*, II, 129.

332

Saturday, February.

Continued preaching for near a month at Boston, sometimes once, sometimes twice a day, to very crowded and affected auditories, and [frequently] with much of the divine Presence, and notwithstanding I preached so often, besides exhorting several times a week in my own Lodging and at private houses, yet the people crowded more and more and would my private business have admitted, I might have spent whole days in talking with souls; but I generally sent them to /87/ their own Ministers.

We had two remarkable Sunday Evening Lectures. In the day I attended on stated sermons, and felt much of the Divine Presence, especially under the Ministry of Mr. Webb, and could not help [thinking] blessing God who had yet left himself so many faithful Witnesses in Boston, who preached the truth as it is in Jesus.

About the last week I opened a 7 o'clock morning Lecture at the Rev'd Mr. Moorhead's meeting house, which to my great surprise and the surprise of hundreds more, was so crowded that [multitudinal numbers were obliged to return home because they could not come in.

People came from all quarters, some 4 or 5 miles off, and it seems very delightful to see those who had been used to lie in /88/ bed till 8 or 9 in the morning, running to hear the word in a cold winter season, by break of day, and hearing a sermon before the time they usually got up.

I opened the lecture with these words:

(A blank space in the ms. Ed.)

and then began with the [book] 1st of Genesis [as I had done before in Scotland.] Our Saviour fulfilled that saying, "They that seek me early shall find me," for He visited both Preacher and Hearers with the light of his countenance, and as the sun in the firmament rose upon the earth, so did the /89/ Sun of Righteousness arise upon them that heard him, with healing under his wings.

I did not think of continuing in Boston above a week, but the Gentlemen of Harvard College having thought proper to publish a testimony against me, I thought it my duty to stay longer in town and employ what time I could redeem from my

---

333

public administrations and other more immediate avocations, in writing them the following answer.

(Here insert my answer to the College.)<sup>35</sup>

Several other testimonies were published one against me; but one or two being downright scurrilous, and the others founded merely upon hearsay

and only idem for idem with that from the College, /90/ I did not think myself called from more important affairs to answer them.

Those words of Nehemiah came much upon my heart

(Blank, evidently for the insertion of "We are doing a great work and can not come down." Neh. 6:1 Ed.)

And the story of Joseph's [being hated] maltreated by his Bretheren because of his dreams and very much comforted and supported my soul. Isaac's blessing refreshed me also. For the archers shot at me and hated me, but the Lord notwithstanding made me a fruitful bough.

My bow abode in strength, and the Arms of my hands were daily made strong by the hands of the mighty God of Jacob.

Thanks be to God for this unspeakable mercy. /91/

Saturday, February:

[Preached last Saturday at Esq'r Ryall's]. Left Boston last Saturday after having preached upon these words, "Put on therefore, as the elect of God, Holy and Beloved, bowels of Compassion, meekness, longsuffering, humbleness of mind, forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any, as God for Christ's sake, hath forgiven you, so also do ye."

The same evening I preached at Esq'r Ryall's.

35 The answer is dated "Boston, January 23rd, 1745," and the tone and style are of a high order. The publication referred to as from the gentlemen of Harvard is *A testimony from the President and Professors, Tutors, and Hebrew Instructor of Harvard College, against the Rev. Mr. George Whitefield and his conduct*. Following Whitefield's *Answer*, (which is too long to quote here, but part of which may be found in Tyerman, *op. cit.*, II, 134), two more publications were launched at him by Harvard, *A Letter to the Rev. Mr. George Whitefield, by way of Reply to His answer to the College Testimony against him and his conduct, by Edward Wigglesworth, D.D., Professor of Divinity in said College, to which is added the Reverend President's Answer to the things charged upon him, by the said Mr. Whitefield as Inconstancies* (Boston 1745, 4to, 68 pp.) As Tyerman notes Whitefield gave the best answer by donating books to the college library, and the College on August 2nd, 1768, records a vote of thanks to Whitefield for a new edition of his journals, Tyerman, *op. cit.*, II, 132ff. Seven pamphlets against Whitefield in addition to the three already mentioned are noted by Tyerman. The authors were The Faculty of Yale and President Clapp, Rev. Nathaniel Hinchman of Lynn, Rev. Theophilus Pickering of Ipswich, Bov. Nathaniel Eels of Scituate, and several ministerial associations.

334

On Lord's Day twice for Rev'd Mr. Chiver's of Lynn.

On Monday once at Maulden and once at Esq'r Ryall's. On Tuesday twice at Lyn again.

On Wednesday Evening I reached Ipswich, where I preached twice on Thursday and on Fryday, and once on Saturday. But with /92/ what sweetness to my own soul and satisfaction to the souls of others I cannot easily tell. Everywhere and at every sermon the blessed Jesus vouchsafed to follow the

word with very promising impressions and though at Lyn my body was but weak, yet the Father of mercies and God of all consolations strengthened me visibly by his power in the Inner man.

Several Ministers came to me at Ipswich to give me fresh invitations to preach in some Neighboring Parishes. Good Old Mr. Rogers and his sons were much delighted and we had repeated reasons given us to lie low at the foot stool of free Grace and repeat our acts of praise and thanksgiving. Accept them at our hand, Good and Gracious God, for the sake of Jesus Christ. Amen, and Amen. /93/

Wednesday, Feb.:

Went to Gloucester on Cape Ann, 13 miles from Ipswich, where I had promised to go when here last if ever I came to New England again. Was met on the road by the Rev'd and aged Mr. White,<sup>36</sup> and the young Rev'd Mr. Rogers, the Ministers of the Town. The latter told me my journals were blessed to make the first abiding impressions on his heart, and the former is a Good Old Man that frankly told me, he wished one or two things cleared up to Him, which I accordingly did in a few minutes as we rode along, to his full satisfaction O that all [would] who have it in their power would take a like method!

On Lord's Day morning I /94/ preached for Mr. Rogers, in the afternoon for Mr. White, and in the Evening a third time, for Mr. Rogers.

On Monday I preached for Mr. White.

On Tuesday twice for the Rev'd Mr. Broadstreet<sup>37</sup> at Squam, about 9 miles distant, and on Wednesday for the Rev'd

<sup>36</sup> Rev. John White of Gloucester. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 152n, and *Christian History*, I, 165, 11, 41.

<sup>37</sup> Rev. Benjamin Bradstreet, of Squam, now Annisquam. *Christian History*, I, 187.

335

Mr. Jacques.<sup>38</sup> All within a few miles one of another. Indeed they were most delightful seasons. All were exceedingly kind. The congregations were large, the weather uncommonly fair and pleasant. Many seemed to be brought under conviction and others to experience a refreshing time from the presence of the Lord, and I could willingly have complied with their invitation to have stayed with them longer would my calls to other places have permitted.

Oh who is like unto our God. If he be for /95/ us, who can be against us.

Thursday, Feb.:

Returned last night to Mr. Rogers, his house at Ipswich, and preached twice today with much freedom at Manchester—miles from thence, to very

crowded auditories, for Mr. Roberts,<sup>39</sup> a choice Young Candidate for the Ministry and who has a call from Manchester people. He dates his awakening under God, from hearing me at Boston about four years agoe. His conversion was very clear and he was then made much use of in awakening and alarming his fellow students at Harvard College. As far as I could gather from his conversation, the concern among the Students was general and continued for some time. Some were savingly converted /96/ but [since] the greater part, as is customary in general awakening, many [fell off] lost their impressions and have fallen off. Oh that it may be only for a time, that Our Saviour may be more glorified in bringing the backsliders home! [However about four] Fryday, Feb.:

Returned to Manchester on Thursday night, and preached twice yesterday at Ipswich Hamlet, 4 miles from Ipswich Town, for the Rev'd Mr. Wigglesworth,<sup>40</sup> who treated me with great civility and told me when I called on him last Wednesday, that there had been a gracious outpouring of the blessed Spirit in his congregation, and that my preaching some /97/ years agoe had been blessed to several of them.

The meeting house was much thronged, some were obliged

38 Rev. Richard Jacques, Gloucester second parish. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 460 n.

39 Possibly Rev. Joseph Roberts. Though he graduated from Harvard in 1741, he was not ordained until 1754, and then at Leicester, Mass. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 419 n.

40 Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth of Ipswich Hamlet, also an M.D., was step-brother to Rev. Edward Wigglesworth of the Harvard faculty. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 145, *Christian History*, I, 164.

336

to stand without, and Our Saviour was pleased to countenance our waiting upon him. Surely these words in the 8th Psalm are wondrous sweet:

(Blank space. Ed.)

Sunday, February:

Preached once yesterday and thrice this day at Ipswich, where our /98/ Lord was pleased to bless and shine upon his congregation more and more. Never did I see people more attentive, solid, and serious.

I took my leave of them at night by preaching on [Jacob's] Joseph's blessing and indeed our parting was very solemn and affecting. Many came afterwards to me, weeping and wishing that the blessing of Him that was separated from his Bretheren might rest upon me.

O Ipswich, thou hast been highly favored. May the bow of thy Ministers and people abide in strength, and the arms of their hands be strengthened by the hands of the Mighty God of Jacob. /99/

Saturday, Feb.:



Blessed be God for this last week's mercies, for in it I have seen some sweet days of the Son of Man.

On Monday I preached twice for the Rev'd Mr. Jewett of Rowley,<sup>41</sup> 3 miles from Ipswich, an hearty friend to the late times.

On Tuesday, for the Rev'd Mr. Chandler,<sup>42</sup> 6 miles from thence, who is like minded.

On Wednesday for the Rev'd Mr. Emerson<sup>43</sup> of Topsfield, of the same stamp, and on Thursday for the Rev'd Mr. Parsons<sup>44</sup> of Byfield, and on Fryday at Newbury.

At every place near 7 or 8 Dear Ministers of Jesus Christ accompanied me. Their presence strengthened me and [wonderfully] greatly satisfied the people. Our Saviour fed us as well as /100/ marrow and fatness and caused us to praise him with joyful lips. Each of the Ministers for whom I preached gave me delightful accounts of what God had done for their people. Mr. Emerson in particular told me there had been more

41 Rev. Jedediah Jewett, of Rowley. *Christian History*, I, 165.

42 Rev. James Chandler of the Second Church in Rowley. *Christian History*, I, 165. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 454 n.

43 Rev. John Emerson of Topsfield. *Christian History*, I, 165. 44 Rev. Moses Parsons of Byfield. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 448.

337

done for him and his flock in a year or two than for near twenty years before. At the same time they acknowledged there had been many imprudencies and I did not spare God's children in my sermons, but spoke home to them, and bid them beware that Jesus Christ was not wounded in the house of his friends. It seemed to cut them to the heart. /101/

I preached but little terror. It seemed best to tell them their Father would be angry with them. They looked, they heard, they sighd, and many wept bitterly. At Newbury I waited upon both the Ministers, who treated me civilly but would not consent to my preaching in their pulpits. I was therefore Obliged because it snowed very much on Fryday, having first consulted the ministers that were with me, to preach in a New Meetinghouse belonging to an Incorporated Society, separated by Council from the Rev'd Mr. T...p.<sup>45</sup>

These sent me an invitation and the Rev'd Mr. Webb advised me to comply with it. Notwithstanding, before sermon, I dedared that I did not preach in the /102/ congregation as a separate people, but only for conveniency on account of the weather.

Accordingly on Saturday, the weather being fair, I preached twice in a field belonging to Colonel Pearse with whom I lodged, and the Lord was pleased to melt down the people much.

This was my second time of preaching in the fields this winter. I do not remember that I ever was enabled to preach so frequently, with such short intermission before. For almost a whole fortnight together I preached twice every day, besides riding, with only about a half hours intermission. I found it hard /103/ for my body, but, as it seemed, better for the people's souls, and they could by this means return sooner to their families.

I thought I had a warrant to trust for strength, as my day was to that God, who causes those that wait on him to renew their strength.

45 Joshua Coffin, *A Sketch of the History of Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury* (Boston 1845), gives on p. 370 a list of all pastors in these churches. None fit the abbreviation T—p, but Whitefield in his usual misunderstanding of proper names might well have meant Rev. Christopher Toppan, D.D. The other pastors at this time were Rev. Theodore Barnard, Second Church, and Rev. John Lowell, Third Church, now First in Newbury-port.

This "Separated Church" was the Third Congregational Church, separated from the First in 1726. Shortly after Whitefield's visit it was again broken and divided and from it came the founders of the First Presbyterian Church, who called Rev. Jonathan Parsons of Lyme, Conn. for their pastor. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 339 and 340.

---

338

Who is (Psalm 103rd.)

Here I parted from [old Mr. White] my good friends, Mr. Jewet, Mr. Nathaniel Rogers Emerson and old Mr. White, who went with me to the Newbury Ministers, and has favored me with his company ever since I came to Cape Ann. Our parting was very affectionate for our fellowship had been very /104/ sweet, and we rejoiced at the prospect of meeting never to part any more, in the presence of that God who made his angels spirits and his Ministers a flaming fire. Make these Thy Dear Servants, O Lord, more and more such, for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen, and Amen.

Sunday, February:

Went in the morning to public worship at the Rev'd Mr. T...s, and in the afternoon to hear the Rev'd Mr. Lowell" and preached about 5 in the Evening to a very large congregation in a persons Court Yard belonging to the Town, where the Lord met both Preacher and Hearers /105/ by his spirit. Afterwards I conversed with several at [Col] my lodgings, that had been greatly comforted, and from all I could hear, had reason to believe Our Saviour had much people in and about New-bury who like New-born babes were desirous of being fed the sincere milk of the word. Lord give it to them for the Dear Son's sake, and grant they may grow thereby.

Saturday, February:

Left New-bury on Monday morning, tho it was somewhat difficult to part with so many souls. Stopped two places on the way and gave an exhortation at each place at the /106/ earnest desire of several. God was with us and also

brought me in good season to Portsmouth to dear Mr. S——'s where I expected to have been in a few days after I left Boston, little thinking of having so many invitations on the way. But it is not in man to guide his own steps.

When I came to my lodgings, my thoughts of what God had done for my body and soul, and the door He Himself had opened for my preaching the Everlasting Gospel since I lay there, in all appearance dying and breathing my last, cause

46 Rev. John Lowell, of the Third Church. Lowell's change of heart about Whitefield is described in Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 388. He was quite active in opposing the Episcopalians, notably the Rev. Matthias Plant of St. Paul's, Newbury, and the Rev. Arthur Browne of St. John's, Portsmouth. Whitefield mentions taking communion in the latter church.

339

me to draw near and breath out my soul to God. I thought it was like Jacob's coming to his pillar.

All received /107/ me with open hearts. I preached on Tuesday, and so every day, generally twice all the week, and redeemed as much time as I could to write to my Dear Friends at home.

This day I went to visit General Pepperell<sup>47</sup> and his Lady, who have always expressed great concern for me. At their desire I preached from the words out of Ecclesiastes:

(Blank space in the manuscript. Ed.)

And then returned to Portsmouth where I preached at their request also, another /108/ sermon to the Officers and Soldiers engaged in the Expedition [from these words] I spoke with much freedom, and have thought however some things have been not managed so well as some serious persons could have issue that good will come out of it to the people of God. Many of them were stirred up to God. I trust the Lord will deal with others for their sake.

A general fast was kept on Thursday, on which I preached twice. Under one sermon our Lord humbled the Hearers very much, and I trust He will send forth a prevailing spirit of repentance, and then according to my second text, "He will—/ 109/

(Blank space in the manuscript. Ed.) But also give us Cape Briton.

Lord prepare us either for Victory or defeat. But if it be thy will grant it may be a Garrison for Protestants and thy dear Children who will worship thee in spirit and in truth!

Saturday, March:

I received the Holy Sacrament at the Church of England Congregation, where I have attended once or twice before. Everything was managed with

decency and as much order as I have seen /110/ anywhere in America. Preached afterwards, and to large Congregations, in the two meeting houses,

47 Whitefield says, in a letter quoted in Tyerman, *op. cit.*, II, 150, that on this occasion Pepperell asked his advice about accepting command of the expedition, and on being encouraged, "he he commenced General." There was something displeasing to the soldiers on the occasion of these sermons. Probably Whitefield bore down too hard on their usual vices and predicted defeat unless they changed their ways.

Tyerman, quoting Glues, *op. cit.*, 106, says of Whitefield, "He began to move farther southward, and after preaching eastward as far as Casco Bay and North Yarmouth, he went through Plymouth, etc.," A natural confusion of directions to one who has not been "Down East." Northward and eastward is correct.

340

as also once on Monday Evening, for the Rev'd Mr. Shurtleff.<sup>48</sup> Went 5 miles out of town to Newington on Tuesday, and preached twice for the Rev'd Mr. Adams,<sup>49</sup> twice on Wednesday for the Rev'd Mr. Blunt on the Island,<sup>50</sup> and once at General Pepperell's, and twice for the Rev'd Mr. Rogers of Kittery on Thursday, twice for the Rev'd Mr. Pike<sup>51</sup> of Dover on Fryday. Once for the Rev'd Mr. Wise" at Berwick. All seemingly hearty friends to and great sharers in the late blessed work of God. Their accounts of it were very entertaining. Every time the Lord was with us, but he seemed to keep the good wine till the last, for on Saturday, many of God's people /111/ were filled exceedingly. On Fryday I preached, but the meeting house not being large enough to contain the Congregation, (Many Ministers were present) the weather still continued to be uncommonly moderate. Few ever knew so mild a winter in New England before.

O that the winter among God's people of God may be over, the springtime come on, and the voice of the turtle be heard again in the land. Blessed be God, the prospect is very promising. Behold the fields are white ready unto harvest.

Lord what am I that thou shouldst thrust me out as a Laborer into they harvest. Thou didst thrust me, guide, protect, and sanctify me and at last gather me and all thy faithful servants like so many ripe sheaf s of corn /112/ into thy heavenly Garner.

Saturday:

I preached twice last Lord's Day for Rev'd Mr. Rogers of Kittery, returned to Portsmouth on Monday Evening and preached once on Tuesday to a very large Auditory for the Rev'd Mr. Allen of (blank space. Ed.) and came back and preached once more to the Soldiers who are now at Portsmouth ready to embark.

48 Rev. William Shurtleff of Portsmouth, whose account is in the *Christian History*, I, 173.

Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 456, mentions him in a note.

49 Rev. James Adams of Newington, who signed the *Testimony*. *Christian History*, I, 166.

50 The Island, or New Castle Church, Rev. John Blunt, pastor, whose account is in the *Christian History*, I, 199.

51 Rev. Jeremiah Pike, who signs himself as pastor of Somersworth, not Dover, in the *Christian History*, I, 166. For a biographical note see Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 189 n.

52 Rev. Jeremiah Wise of Berwick, Maine, whose account of the revival is in the *Christian History*, I, 169. He was son of Rev. John Wise, author of *The Church's Quarrel Espoused*. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 189.

341

As I went along, one of the Captains, having a gun in his hand, wished that it was loaded for he would then [quick] in a few minutes send me either to heaven or hell.

Blessed be God, all that go are not of such spirit. Lord pity and convert all those that are.

On Wednesday morning, at their request, I prayed, sang, and gave a /113/ word of exhortation to a company of soldiers in Mr. Sherburn's yard, and then I went to Exeter, where there has been much of the power of God, and, what is uncommon as far as I can hear, it has prevailed chiefly among the rich. Many of them, (I cannot very well tell upon what occasion), have been separated by Council and formed into a Church. But I did not go to them as a separate body, but to preach to all in general.

That my conduct might be as justified as might be, I called upon the Rev'd Mr. Odling," the Seniouir Minister, and took with me a most unexceptionable man to introduce me. He went in and desired Mr. Odling to speak with me privately, I being come to ask his leave to preach in his pulpit. He declined it and as soon as He came into his parlor, which was about filled with people, after a kind salutation, He began with /114/ me and asked me whether I thought it for the Glory of God to preach in his Parish since it was so divided.

I answered, "Yes, for if there had been faults on both sides, preaching the love of God and the meekness of the Lord Jesus must necessarily sweeten both." I also told him that I had heard there was a great division in his parish lately about settling one of his Sons, nay that his being settled had at least increased the separation, and yet I supposed He thought if for the Glory to have him settled.

"Yes," says he, "but then" says He, "many that were against his son now were once more forward in inviting him."

I replied, by way of argumentum ad hominem, that my conduct in coming to preach at Exeter was then after that account yet more justifiable, for He himself /115/ about 4 years agoe had sent me an invitation to preach in Exeter by his Son who then set by him.

Soon after this, his Son, (who I supposed was his Father's Colleague), took me up and asked me what right I had to

<sup>53</sup> Joseph Belcher, *George Whitefield* (New York, 1857), 270–271, gives the name of this pastor as Odlin, and refers to a report in the March 25, 1745 issue of the *Boston Evening Post*.

342

preach in that Parish, since the people had entered into a Covenant.

I answered, that that was nothing to the purpose unless the people had entered into a Covenant when they chose him never to hear anyone besides himself. I also further told him that the people had a right to private judgement and that He could not, upon Protestant principles, deny the liberty of hearing for themselves. That He was welcome to preach and if He judged proper warn his people against me, but after he had done that, he had done all that He could do as a Christian /116/ Protestant Minister.

He further told me that my practise was contrary to that of the Apostle. "For," says He, "when Paul came into the Synagogue of the Jews, did Paul stand up and speak of his own accord? No, he waited till the Ruler of the Synagogue made a motion, and said, Bretheren if you have any word of Exhortation to the people say on."

I replied, "I thought that was quite foreign to the point in hand, unless I was to come into his Father's meeting house and stand up and preach without his leave. I rather thought it countenanced my proceedings, for Paul did preach, and the Rulers of the Synagogue disliked his preaching, and was Paul therefore silent? No, He /117/ separated the bretheren and disputed for a whole Year in the school of one Tyrannus."

"What," replied He, "will you countenance separations?"

"Nay, sir, you brought the quotation."

"But," says he, "that is not in the same chapter. If you please to examine you will find it so as I say."

Several other things passed pro and con till at last I freely told him that if he thought proper I would challenge him to dispute upon the point all the afternoon, publicly in the Meeting house, before the whole congregation and that I had authority to preach wherever souls were willing to hear, from that text, "whilst you have opportunity, do good unto all men," and from that general Commission, "Go ye into all the world and preach the /118/ Gospel to every Creature," for as we pleaded in prayer the latter part of the promise, "Lo I am with you always, even unto the end of the world," the former part no doubt must be applicable to this as well as the Apostolick age.

But this would not satisfy, neither did young Mr. Odling seem inclined to go into the meeting house, but debate the matter

343

there. That I refused, and whilst we were talking further, and they were charging me with making confusion, in came

Rev'd Mr. W...g and the Rev'd Mr. Y...r who was over-heard to say, "Let us go and take him bodily." /119/

Mr. W...r spoke very loud and told me what confusion

I had occasioned at Topsfield. "At Topsfield," said I, "Pray what confusion did I make there? I was called to preach by a vote of the Church and the Minister."

"But," said he, "Mr. Emerson was in a passion, and said He would lose his blood."

"Sir," replied I, "am I answerable for what Mr. Emerson said? Or will you speak against his being in a passion, when you are in such a ferment Yourself?"

"It is time," says He, "for us all to be in a ferment," or something to that purpose.

"But sir," said I, "are you Minister of Topsfield, or are you Minister of this Parish? Is it not time enough for me to talk with you when I /120/ come into Your Parish? I came here only to speak with Mr. Odling."

"No," replied He, "this is not my Parish, but by Mr. Odling's leave I will speak."

I told him He might if He pleased, but that I was going to preach and should not stay to hear him.

He told me I should hear him.

I replied, I would not, and so bowed and was going out, but He followed me and spoke many things very loudly, and just as I was going out He called me back and said to Mr. Odling, "Read the letter, read the letter."

I said, "What letter?" and said, "if it was a private letter, I desired I might have it privately, and if it was a publick letter, since they /121/ intended to read it before that company, they had as good let me have it from the press in a publick manner."

Upon this I took my leave and in about a quarter of an hour, after, one of Mr. Odling's sons brought me the following letter, which after having been told that it had not been read, I received.

(Here insert the letter). /122/

Upon reading it I could not help pitying the Gentlemen, that they should hold me in a party for above an hour, and then send me word they would hold no interview with me.

344

Surely, thought I, this wisdom and way of behaviour cometh not from above. This is never the way to keep a tottering Ark from falling.

Lord take it into thy hands, and it will be given over into the hands /123/ of the Philistines the Common Enemies of us all.

After this I preached twice in the New Meeting House, it being a very snowy day, to very crowded assemblies, and spoke of the things which make for peace. The God of Peace and love was with us, and we had great reason to say, it is good for us to have been here.

In the Evening I gave a private lecture to a Young Couple lately married, but both in all probability to launch soon into eternity. The sight was affecting, but the consideration that they both knew Jesus, made the prospect of their going, as it /124/ were hand in hand, to the marriage supper of the Lamb, very pleasant and delightful.

O that all were prepared and also *waiting* for that happy hour.

Wednesday:

Preached twice to very large assemblies at Durham, for the Rev'd Mr. Guilman, a holy man of God, remarkable for being an example of putting on the meekness and gentleness of Christ. He has always been reported a very moral man, but dates the time of his /125, 126, 127/

(Pages have been torn out here, Ed.)

hands, carry them in thy bosom and give them forever into the hands of devouring Wolves.

Saturday:

Preached yesterday twice with much of divine power to large Congregations for the Rev'd Mr. Cushing<sup>54</sup> at (Blank. Ed.) and today once for the Rev'd Mr. Main of Rochester<sup>55</sup> [utmost] outermost settlement in the province of New Hampshire, where they fetch Masts for the King of Great Briton. They lie most exposed to the Indians, and are obliged here and adjacent provinces to build Garrisons for their defense.

But I thought, the situation was very delightful, and could

<sup>54</sup> I identify this minister as Rev. James Cushing of Plaistow, N. H., who was son of Rev. Caleb Cushing and Elizabeth (Cotton) Cushing of Salisbury, Mass. See Cushing genealogy in Deane's *History of Soituate*, 258.

<sup>55</sup> Rev. Amos Main of Rochester signed the *Testimony*. *Christian History*, I, 166.

345

not help looking over the present uninhabited Woods, /128/ between this and Canada, with a believing prospect that these howling wildernesses



would, ere long, in God's time, be turned into fruitful fields, and that Jesus would take them as being given Him by the Father into his own possession.

I thought I felt something of what the Patriarch Abraham felt when he saw the Redeemer's day afar off, and rejoiced. We wait for thy visitation O Lord.

Monday:

Preached yesterday twice for the Rev'd Mr. Pike, and this morning once for /129/ the Rev'd Mr. Wise, of Berwick. All three Golden seasons whenever Jesus was pleased to lift up the light of his countenance upon many souls. The mentioning of the sudden death of a man lately crushed to death in an instant by the rolling of a great Log over his body, was blessed, I believe, to put many in mind of and to set them upon preparing for the latter end.

Lord grant that impressions made may be abiding and not prove as alas too too many do, like a morning cloud, or the early dew, that passeth away.

Set out last Monday, very weak in body, and after many discouragements in my mind, upon a new Circuit, Eastward, where I was under an engagement to go if ever I came again to New /130/ England."

The ground being just about to be broken up and the frost not gone out of it rendered riding dangerous.

But being apprehensive that take altogether this would be the most convenient season, and Messers Pike, Rogers, and Wise, with several other Friends being willing to accompany me, we went on in the strength of Jesus Christ, and found everything far beyond expectation.

By Saturday Evening we got as far as North Yarmouth, about a hundred and thirty miles East from Boston.

(There are two blank pages here, and then copies of several letters written in 1746, which end this book. Evidently it was never finished, and was never given to the printer. Ed.)

<sup>56</sup> Belcher, *op. cit.*, 270, says, "Early Early in March we find him making an excursion into the east, as we hear of him both at Berwick and Portland. In the latter place, he not only made powerful impression on the people but on their minister." Belcher then quotes from a *Journal* of Rev. Thomas Smith of Falmouth, Maine. See *Christian History*, I, 166. His father, Thomas Smith, merchant of Boston, married a woman with an Irish name, Mary Curran. Smith's Journal was kept from 1719 to 1788 and extracts published in 1821. Sprague, *op. cit.*, I, 328.

## CHAPTER XIII.

*From his Arrival at the Bermudas, to his Return to London in July*  
1748.

MR *Whitefield* met with the kindest reception at *Bermudas*, and for above a month, he preached generally twice a day, traversing the island from one end to the other: but his activity, usefulness, and treatment, will best appear by an extract from his manuscript Journal of that period.

The simplicity and plainness of the people, together with the pleasant situation of the island, much delighted me.—The Rev. Mr *Holiday*, minister of *Spanish-Point*, received me in a most affectionate Christian manner, and begged I would make his house my home.—In the evening, I expounded at the house of Mr *Savage* of *Port-Royal*, which was very commodious, and which also he would have me make my home.—I went with Mr *Savage*, in a boat lent us by Captain \_\_\_\_ to the town of *St George*, in order to pay our respects to the Governor. All along we had a most pleasant prospect of the other part of the island; but a more pleasant one I never saw. One Mrs Smith, of *St George's*, for whom I had a letter of recommendation from my dear old friend Mr Smith of *Charles-Town*, received me into her house. About noon, with one of the council and Mr *Savage*, I waited upon the Governor. He received us courteously, and invited us to dine with him and the council at a tavern. We accepted the invitation, and all behaved with great civility and respect. After the Governor rose from table, he desired, if I stayed in town on the *Sunday*, that I would dine with him at his own house.

“*Sunday, March 20*, read prayers, and preached twice this day, to what were esteemed here large auditories, in the morning at *Spanish-Point* church, and in the evening at *Brackish-pond* church, about two miles distant from each other. In the afternoon I spoke with greater freedom than in the morning, and I trust not altogether in vain. All were attentive—some wept. I dined with Colonel *Butterfield*, one of the council, and received several invitations to other gentlemen's houses. May GOD bless and reward them, and incline them to open their heart to receive the Lord *Jesus! Amen* and *Amen!*”

*Wednesday, March 23*, dined with Capt. *Gibbs*, and went from thence and expounded at the house of Capt. *F\_\_\_\_le*, at *Humbay*, about two miles distant. The company was here also large, attentive, and affected. Our Lord gave me utterance: I expounded on the first part of the 8th chapter of *Jeremiah*. After lecture, Mr *Riddle*, a counsellor, invited me to his house, as did Mr *Paul*, an aged presbyterian minister, to his pulpit; which I complied with upon condition

the report was true, that the Governor had served the ministers with an injunction that I should not preach in the churches.

*Friday, March 25.* Was prevented preaching yesterday by the rain, which continued from morning till night; but this afternoon GOD gave me another opportunity of declaring his eternal truths to a large company at the house of one Mr *B\_\_\_\_\_s*, who last night sent me a letter of invitation.

*Sunday, March 27.* Glory be to GOD! I hope this has been a profitable sabbath to many souls: It has been a pleasant one to mine. Both morning and afternoon I preached to a large auditory, for *Bermudas*, in Mr *Paul's* meeting-house, which I suppose contains above four hundred. Abundance of negroes, and many others, were in the vestry, porch, and about the house. The word seemed to be clothed with a convincing power, and to make its way into the hearts of the hearers. Between sermons, I was entertained very civilly in a neighbouring house: Judge *Bascom* and three more of the council came thither; each gave me an invitation to his house.—O how does the Lord make way for a poor stranger in a strange land!—After the second sermon, I dined with Mr *Paul*, and in the evening expounded to a very large company at Counsellor *Riddle's*.—My body was somewhat weak, but the Lord carried me through, and caused me to go to rest rejoicing. May I thus go to my grave, when my ceaseless uninterrupted rest shall begin!

*Monday, March 28.* Dined this day at Mrs *D\_\_\_\_\_l's*, mother-in-law to my dear friend the Rev. Mr Smith; and afterwards preached to more than a large house full of people, on *Matthew 9:12*. Towards the conclusion of the sermon, the hearers began to be more affected than I have yet seen them. Surely the Lord *Jesus* will give me some seals in this island! Grant this, O Redeemer, for thy infinite mercy's sake!

*Thursday, March 31.* Dined on *Tuesday* at Colonel *Corbusier's*; and on *Wednesday*, at Colonel *Gilbert's*, both of the council, and found, by what I could hear, that some good had been done, and many prejudices removed. Who shall hinder, if GOD will work? Went to an island this afternoon, called *Ireland*, upon which live a few families, and to my surprise, found a great many gentlemen and other people, with my friend Mr *Holyday*, who came from different quarters to hear me.—Before I began preaching, I went round to see a most remarkable cave, which very much displayed the exquisite workmanship of Him, who in his strength setteth fast the mountains, and is girded about with power. Whilst I was in the cave, quite unexpectedly I turned and saw Counsellor *Riddle*, who with his son came to hear me, and whilst we were in the boat told me, that he had been with the Governor, who declared he had no personal prejudice against me, and wondered I did

not come to town and preach there, for it was the desire of the people; and that any house in the town, the court- house not excepted, should be at my service. Thanks be to GOD for so much favour!—If his cause requires it, I shall have more.—He knows my heart: I value the favour of man no farther than as it makes room for the Gospel, and gives me a larger scope to promote the glory of GOD. There being no capacious house upon the island, I preached for the first time here in the open air. All heard very attentive, and it was very pleasant after sermon to see so many boats full of people returning from the worship of GOD. I talked seriously to some in our own boat, and began to sing a psalm, in which they readily joined.

*Sunday, April 3.* Preached twice this day at Mr *Paul's* meeting-house, as on the last sabbath, but with greater freedom and power, especially in the morning, and I think to as great, if not greater auditories. Dined with Colonel *H\_\_\_\_\_vy*, another of the council; visited a sick woman, where many came to hear, and expounded afterwards to a great company at Capt. *John Dorrells*, Mrs *D\_\_\_\_\_l's* son, who with his wife courteously entertained me, and desired me to make his house my home.—So true is that promise of our Lord's, 'That whosoever leaves father or mother, houses or lands, shall have in this life a hundred-fold with persecution, and in the world to come life everlasting.' Lord, I have experienced the one; in thy good time that I may experience the other also!

*Wednesday, April 6.* Preached yesterday at the house of Mr *Anthony Smith*, of *Baylis Bay*, with a considerable degree of warmth, and rode afterwards to *St George's*, the only town on the island. The gentlemen of the town had sent me an invitation by Judge *Bascome*, and he with several others came to visit me at my lodgings, and informed me, that the Governor desired to see me.—About ten I waited upon his Excellency, who received me with great civility, and told me he had no objection against my person or my principles, having never yet heard me, and he knew nothing, in respect to my conduct in moral life, that might prejudice him against me; but his instructions were, to let none preach in the island, unless he had a written licence to preach somewhere in *America* or the *West-Indies*: at the same time he acknowledged it was but a matter of mere form. I informed his Excellency, that I had been regularly inducted to the parish of *Savannah*; that I was ordained priest by letters dimissory from my Lord of *London*, and under no church censure from his Lordship; and would always read the church prayers, if the clergy would give me the use of their churches. I added farther, that a minister's pulpit was looked upon as his freehold, and that I knew one clergyman who had denied his own Diocesan the use of his pulpit. But I told his Excellency,

I was satisfied with the liberty he allowed me, and would not act contrary to his injunction. I then begged leave to be dismissed, because I was to preach at eleven o'clock. His excellency said he intended to do himself the pleasure to hear me. At eleven the church bell rung, the church-bible, prayer-book, and cushion were sent to the town-house.—The Governor, several of the council, the minister of the parish, and assembly-men, with a great number of the town's-people, assembled in great order. I was very sick, through a cold I caught last night, but I read the church prayers, (the first lesson was the 15th of the first book of *Samuel*) and preached on these words, "Righteousness exalteth a nation." Being weak and faint, and having much of the headache, I did not do that justice to my subject, as I sometimes am enabled to do; but the Lord so helped me, that, as I found afterwards, the Governor and the other gentlemen expressed their approbation, and acknowledged they did not expect to be so well entertained.—Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy free grace, be all the glory!

After sermon, Dr *F\_\_\_\_\_bs*, and Mr *P\_\_\_\_\_t*, the collector, came to me, and desired me to favour them and the gentlemen of the town with my company to dine with them. I accepted the invitation.—The Governor and the President and Judge *Bascome* were there. All wondered at my speaking so freely and fluently without notes. The Governor asked me whether I used minutes.—I answered, No. He said it was a great gift. At table his Excellency introduced something of religion, by asking me the meaning of the word *Hades*. Several other things were started about free-will, *Adam's* fall, predestination, &c. to all which GOD enabled me to answer so pertinently, and taught me to mix the *utile* and *dulce* so together, that all at table seemed highly pleased, shook me by the hand, and invited me to their respective houses. The Governor, in particular, asked me to dine with him on the morrow, and Dr *F\_\_\_\_\_b*, one of his particular intimates, invited me to drink tea in the afternoon. I thanked all, returned proper respects, and went to my lodgings with some degree of thankfulness for the assistance vouchsafed me, and abased before GOD at the consideration of my unspeakable unworthiness. In the afternoon, about five o'clock, I expounded the parable of the prodigal son to many people at a private house, and in the evening had liberty to speak freely and closely to those that supped with me. O that this may be the beginning of good gospel times to the inhabitants of this town! Lord, teach me to deal prudently with them, and cause them to melt under thy word!

*Friday, April 8.* Preached yesterday with great clearness and freedom, to about fourscore people at a house on *David's* island, over against St *George's*

town; went and lay at Mr *Holiday's*, who came in a boat to fetch me; and this day I heard him preach and read prayers, after which I took the sacrament from him. Honest man, he would have had me administer and officiate; but I chose not to do it, lest I should bring him into trouble after my departure. However, in the afternoon I preached at one Mr *Tod's*, in the same parish, to a very large company indeed. The Lord was with me. My heart was warm, and what went from the heart, I trust went to the heart, for many were affected. O that they may be converted also! Then will it be a good *Friday* indeed to their souls.

*Sunday, April 10.* Dined and conversed yesterday very agreeably with Judge *Bascome*; who seems to have the greatest insight into the difference between the *Arminian* and *Calvinistical* scheme of any one I have yet met with upon the island.—In the afternoon, I visited a sick paralytic, and this day I preached twice again at Mr *Paul's* meeting-house. The congregations were rather larger than ever, and the power of GOD seemed to be more amongst them. I think I see a visible alteration for the better every Lord's-day. Blessed be GOD! In the evening I expounded at Mr *Joseph Dorrell's*, (where I dined) to a very large company; then went to his kinsman's, my usual lodging on *Saturday* and *Sunday* evenings, who with his wife and other friends, seemed kinder and kinder daily.—Good measure pressed down and running over, may the Lord, both to spirituals and temporals, return into all their bosoms!

*Saturday, April 16.* Preached since Lord's-day at five different houses; to concerned and affected congregations, at different parts of the island, but was more indisposed one night after going to bed, than I had been for some time. On two of the days of this week; I dined with the President and Captain *Spafford*, one of the council, both which entertained me with the utmost civility.

*Sunday 17.* Still GOD magnifies his power and goodness more and more. This morning we had a pleasing sight at Mr *Paul's* meeting house. I began to preach, and the people to hear and be affected as in days of old at home. Indeed the prospect is encouraging. Praise the Lord, O my soul! After preaching twice to large congregations in the meeting-house, I at the desire of the parents, preached in the evening a sermon at the funeral of a little boy about five years of age. A great number of people attended, and the Lord enabled me so to speak as to affect many of the hearers., Blessed be the Lord for this day's work! Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy free grace be all the glory!

*Sunday, April 24.* The last week being rainy, preached only five times in private houses, and this day but once in the meeting-house; but I hope neither

time without effect. This evening expounded at Counsellor *Riddle's*, who with the other gentlemen, treats me with greater respect every day. Colonel *Gilbert*, one of the council, has lent me his horse during my stay, and Mr *D\_\_\_\_\_*ll this morning informed me of a design the gentlemen had, to raise a contribution to help me to discharge my arrears, and support my orphan family. Thanks be given to thy name, O GOD! Thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I want to owe no man any thing, but love and provide for *Bethesda* after my decease. Thou hast promised thou wilt fulfil the desires of them that fear thee. I believe, Lord, help my unbelief, that thou wilt fulfil this desire of my soul. Even so, *Amen!*

*Saturday, April 30.* Preached since Lord's day, two funeral sermons, and at five different houses in different parts of the island to still larger and larger auditories, and perceived the people to be affected more and more. Twice or thrice I preached without doors. Riding in the sun, and preaching very earnestly, a little fatigued me; so that this evening I was obliged to lie down for some time. *Faint, yet pursuing*; must be my motto still.

*Sunday, May, 1.* This morning was a little sick; but I trust GOD gave us a happy beginning of the new month. I preached twice with power, especially in the morning, to a very great congregation in the meeting-house; and in the evening, having given previous notice, I preached about four miles distant, in the fields, to a large company of negroes, and a number of white people who came to hear what I had to say to them. I believe, in all, there were near fifteen hundred people. As the sermon was intended for the negroes, I gave the auditory warning, that my discourse would be chiefly directed to them, and that I should endeavour to imitate the example of *Elijah*, who when he was about to raise the child, contracted himself to its length. The negroes seemed very sensible and attentive. When I asked them, whether all of them did not desire to go to heaven, one of them with a very audible voice said, 'Yes, Sir.' This caused a little smiling; but in general, every thing was carried on with great decency; and I believe the Lord enabled me so to discourse. as to touch the negroes, and yet not to give them the least umbrage to flight or behave imperiously to their masters. If ever a minister in preaching, need the wisdom of the serpent to be joined with the harmlessness of the dove, it must be when discoursing to negroes. Vouchsafe me this favour, O GOD, for thy dear Son's sake!

*Monday, May 2.* Upon enquiry, I found that some of the negroes did not like my preaching, because I told them of their cursing, swearing, thieving, and lying. One or two of the worst of them, as I was informed, went away. Some said, they would not go any more: They liked Mr *M\_\_\_\_\_r* better, for

he never told them of these things; and I said, their hearts were as black their faces, they expected, they said, to hear me speak against their masters. Blessed be GOD, that I was directed not to say any thing, this first time, to the masters at all, though my text led me to it. It might have been of bad consequence, to tell them their duty, or charge them too roundly with the neglect of it, before their slaves. They would mind all I said to their masters, and, perhaps, nothing that I said to them. Every thing is beautiful in its season. Lord, teach me always that due season, wherever I am called, to give either black or white, a portion of thy word! However, others of the poor creatures, I hear, were very thankful, and came home to their master's houses, saying, that they would strive to sin no more. Poor hearts! These different accounts, affected me; and upon the whole, I could not help rejoicing to find that their consciences were so far awake.

*Saturday, May 7.* In my conversation these two days, with some of my friends, I was diverted much, in hearing several things that passed among the poor negroes, since my preaching to them last *Sunday*. One of the women, it seems, said, 'That if the book I preached out of was the best book that was ever bought at, and come out of *London*, she was sure it had never all that in it, which I spoke to the negroes?' The old man, who spoke out loud last *Sunday*, and said, 'Yes,' when I asked them, Whether all the negroes would not go to heaven? Being questioned by somebody, Why he spoke out so? Answered, 'That the gentleman put the question once or twice to them, and the other fools had not the manners to make me any answer, till, at last, I seemed to point at him, and he was ashamed that no body should answer me, and therefore he did.' Another, wondering why I said, 'Negroes had black hearts;' was answered by his black brother thus 'Ah, thou fool, dost thou not understand it? He means black with sin.' Two more girls were overheard by their mistress, talking about religion, and they said, 'They knew, if they did not repent, they must be damned.' From all which I infer, that these *Bermudas* negroes are more knowing than I supposed; that their consciences are awake, and consequently prepared, in a good measure, for hearing the Gospel preached unto them.

*Sunday, May 8.* This also, I trust, has been a good sabbath. In the morning I was helped to preach powerfully to a melting, and rather a larger congregation than ever, in Mr *Paul's* Meeting-house; and in the evening, to almost as large a congregation of black and white as last *Sunday*, in the fields, near my hearty friend Mr *Hoyday's* house. To see so many black faces was affecting. They heard very attentively, and some of them now began to weep. May GOD grant them a godly sorrow, that worketh repentance not to be repented of!



*Friday, May 13.* This afternoon preached over the corpse of Mr *Paul's* eldest son, about twenty-four years of age; and by all I could hear and judge of by conversing with him, he did, indeed, die in the Lord. I visited him twice last Lord's-day, and was quite satisfied with what he said, though he had not much of the sensible presence of GOD. I find he was a preacher upon his death-bed. For he exhorted all his companions to love *Christ* in sincerity, and blessed his brother and sister, and, I think, his father and mother just before his departure. A great many people attended the funeral. I preached on *Luke 7:13*, 'And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, weep not.' Many were affected in the application of my discourse, and, I trust, some will be induced, by this young man's good example, to remember their Redeemer in the days of their youth. Grant it, O Lord, for thy dear Son's sake.

*Sunday, May 15.* Praise the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within thee praise his holy name! This morning I preached my farewell Sermon at Mr *Paul's* Meeting-house, it was quite full, and, as the President said, above a hundred and fifty whites, besides blacks, were round the house. Attention sat on every face; and when I came to take my leave, oh, what a sweet unaffected weeping was there to be seen every where. I believe there were few dry eyes. The negroes likewise without doors, I heard wept plentifully. My own heart was affected, and though I have parted from friends so often, yet I find every fresh parting almost unman's me, and very much affects my heart. Surely, a great work is begun in some souls at *Bermudas*. Carry it on, O Lord, and if it be thy will send me to this dear people again. Even so, Lord *Jesus*. Amen!

After sermon, I dined with three of the Council, and other Gentlemen and Ladies, at Captain *Bascomes*; and from thence we went to a funeral, at which Mr *M\_\_\_\_\_r* preached; and after that I expounded on our Lord's Transfiguration, at the house of one Mrs *Harvey*, sister to dear Mr *Smith* of *Charles-town*. The house was exceeding full, and it was supposed above three hundred stood in the yard. The Lord enabled me to lift up my voice like a trumpet. Many wept. Mr *M\_\_\_\_\_r* returned from the funeral with me, and attended the lecture, as did the three Counsellors, with whom I conversed very freely. May GOD reward them, and all the dear people of the island, for those many and great favours they have conferred on me, who am the chief of sinners, and less than the least of all saints!

*Sunday, May 22.* Blessed be GOD! the little leaven thrown into the three measures of meal begins to ferment, and work almost every day, for the week past. I have conversed with souls loaded with a sense of their sins, and, as far

as I can judge, really pricked to the heart. I preached only three times, but to almost three times larger auditories than usual. Indeed the fields are white, ready unto harvest. GOD has been pleased to bless private visits. Go where I will, upon the least notice, houses are crowded, and the poor souls that follow are soon drenched in tears. This day I took, as it were, another farewell. As the ship did not sail, I preached at *Somerset* in the morning, to a large congregation in the fields, and expounded in the evening to as large one at Mr *Harvey's* house, round which stood many hundreds of people. But in the morning and evening how did the poor souls weep. The Lord seemed to be with me in a peculiar manner, and though I was ready to die with heat and straining, yet I was enabled to speak louder, and with greater power, I think, than I have been before. Gifts and grace, especially in the evening, were both in exercise. After the service, when I lay down on the bed to rest, many came weeping bitterly around me, and took their last farewell. Though my body was very weak, yet my soul was full of comfort. It magnified the Lord, and my spirit rejoiced in GOD my Saviour. Abundance of prayers and blessings were put up for my safe passage to *England*, and speedy return to *Bermudas* again. May they enter into the ears of the Lord of *Sabaoth*! "For, GOD willing, I intend visiting these dear people once more. In the mean while, with all humility and thankfulness of heart will I here, O Lord, set up my *Ebenezer*. For hitherto surely thou hast helped me! I cannot help thinking that I was led to this Island by a peculiar providence. My dear friend, Mr *Smith* of *Charles-town*, has, been made especially instrumental thereto. Thanks be to the Lord for sending me hither. I have been received in a manner I dared not expect, and have met with little, very little opposition indeed. The inhabitants seem to be plain and open hearted. They have also been open-handed. For they have loaded me with provisions for my sea-store; and in the several parishes, by a private voluntary contribution, have raised me upwards of a hundred pounds *sterling*. This will pay a little of *Bethesda's* debt, and enable me to make such a remittance to my dear yoke-fellow, as may keep her from being embarrassed, or too much beholden in my absence. Blessed be GOD, for bringing me out of my embarrassments by degrees! May the Lord reward all my benefactors a thousand fold! I hear that what was given, was given exceeding heartily, and people only lamented that they could do no more."

*Gillies*: After having transmitted to *Georgia*, what was given to him for the Orphan-house, and dreading to go back to *America* in that season of heat, for fear of relapsing, and having pressing calls to *England*, he took the

opportunity of a brig, and in twenty-eight days arrived at *Deal*. The next evening, *June* 6, 1748, he reached *London*, after an absence of near four years.